

A History of Indian Philosophy, Volume 1 eBook

A History of Indian Philosophy, Volume 1 by Surendranath Dasgupta

The following sections of this BookRags Literature Study Guide is offprint from Gale's For Students Series: Presenting Analysis, Context, and Criticism on Commonly Studied Works: Introduction, Author Biography, Plot Summary, Characters, Themes, Style, Historical Context, Critical Overview, Criticism and Critical Essays, Media Adaptations, Topics for Further Study, Compare & Contrast, What Do I Read Next?, For Further Study, and Sources.

(c)1998-2002; (c)2002 by Gale. Gale is an imprint of The Gale Group, Inc., a division of Thomson Learning, Inc. Gale and Design and Thomson Learning are trademarks used herein under license.

The following sections, if they exist, are offprint from Beacham's Encyclopedia of Popular Fiction: "Social Concerns", "Thematic Overview", "Techniques", "Literary Precedents", "Key Questions", "Related Titles", "Adaptations", "Related Web Sites". (c)1994-2005, by Walton Beacham.

The following sections, if they exist, are offprint from Beacham's Guide to Literature for Young Adults: "About the Author", "Overview", "Setting", "Literary Qualities", "Social Sensitivity", "Topics for Discussion", "Ideas for Reports and Papers". (c)1994-2005, by Walton Beacham.

All other sections in this Literature Study Guide are owned and copyrighted by BookRags, Inc.

Contents

A History of Indian Philosophy, Volume 1 eBook.....	1
Contents.....	2
Table of Contents.....	20
Page 1.....	21
Page 2.....	23
Page 3.....	25
Page 4.....	27
Page 5.....	28
Page 6.....	30
Page 7.....	32
Page 8.....	33
Page 9.....	34
Page 10.....	35
Page 11.....	36
Page 12.....	37
Page 13.....	38
Page 14.....	40
Page 15.....	42
Page 16.....	43
Page 17.....	45
Page 18.....	47
Page 19.....	49
Page 20.....	51
Page 21.....	53
Page 22.....	55

Page 23.....	57
Page 24.....	59
Page 25.....	61
Page 26.....	62
Page 27.....	63
Page 28.....	65
Page 29.....	66
Page 30.....	68
Page 31.....	70
Page 32.....	72
Page 33.....	74
Page 34.....	76
Page 35.....	77
Page 36.....	79
Page 37.....	81
Page 38.....	83
Page 39.....	85
Page 40.....	87
Page 41.....	89
Page 42.....	90
Page 43.....	91
Page 44.....	93
Page 45.....	94
Page 46.....	96
Page 47.....	98
Page 48.....	100

Page 49.....	102
Page 50.....	104
Page 51.....	106
Page 52.....	108
Page 53.....	110
Page 54.....	112
Page 55.....	114
Page 56.....	115
Page 57.....	117
Page 58.....	118
Page 59.....	120
Page 60.....	122
Page 61.....	124
Page 62.....	126
Page 63.....	128
Page 64.....	129
Page 65.....	130
Page 66.....	132
Page 67.....	133
Page 68.....	134
Page 69.....	135
Page 70.....	136
Page 71.....	138
Page 72.....	140
Page 73.....	142
Page 74.....	144

Page 75.....	146
Page 76.....	148
Page 77.....	150
Page 78.....	152
Page 79.....	154
Page 80.....	155
Page 81.....	157
Page 82.....	159
Page 83.....	161
Page 84.....	163
Page 85.....	165
Page 86.....	167
Page 87.....	169
Page 88.....	171
Page 89.....	173
Page 90.....	175
Page 91.....	177
Page 92.....	178
Page 93.....	180
Page 94.....	182
Page 95.....	184
Page 96.....	186
Page 97.....	188
Page 98.....	190
Page 99.....	192
Page 100.....	194

Page 101.....	196
Page 102.....	198
Page 103.....	200
Page 104.....	202
Page 105.....	204
Page 106.....	205
Page 107.....	207
Page 108.....	208
Page 109.....	209
Page 110.....	211
Page 111.....	213
Page 112.....	215
Page 113.....	217
Page 114.....	218
Page 115.....	220
Page 116.....	222
Page 117.....	223
Page 118.....	225
Page 119.....	227
Page 120.....	229
Page 121.....	230
Page 122.....	231
Page 123.....	232
Page 124.....	233
Page 125.....	234
Page 126.....	236

Page 127.....	237
Page 128.....	239
Page 129.....	241
Page 130.....	242
Page 131.....	244
Page 132.....	246
Page 133.....	248
Page 134.....	250
Page 135.....	251
Page 136.....	253
Page 137.....	255
Page 138.....	257
Page 139.....	259
Page 140.....	261
Page 141.....	263
Page 142.....	265
Page 143.....	267
Page 144.....	269
Page 145.....	271
Page 146.....	273
Page 147.....	275
Page 148.....	276
Page 149.....	278
Page 150.....	279
Page 151.....	280
Page 152.....	281

Page 153.....	282
Page 154.....	283
Page 155.....	285
Page 156.....	287
Page 157.....	289
Page 158.....	291
Page 159.....	293
Page 160.....	295
Page 161.....	297
Page 162.....	299
Page 163.....	301
Page 164.....	302
Page 165.....	303
Page 166.....	305
Page 167.....	307
Page 168.....	308
Page 169.....	310
Page 170.....	312
Page 171.....	313
Page 172.....	315
Page 173.....	317
Page 174.....	318
Page 175.....	319
Page 176.....	321
Page 177.....	323
Page 178.....	325

Page 179.....	327
Page 180.....	328
Page 181.....	330
Page 182.....	332
Page 183.....	333
Page 184.....	334
Page 185.....	336
Page 186.....	338
Page 187.....	339
Page 188.....	340
Page 189.....	341
Page 190.....	343
Page 191.....	345
Page 192.....	346
Page 193.....	348
Page 194.....	350
Page 195.....	352
Page 196.....	354
Page 197.....	356
Page 198.....	358
Page 199.....	360
Page 200.....	362
Page 201.....	363
Page 202.....	365
Page 203.....	367
Page 204.....	368

Page 205.....	369
Page 206.....	371
Page 207.....	373
Page 208.....	375
Page 209.....	377
Page 210.....	379
Page 211.....	381
Page 212.....	382
Page 213.....	383
Page 214.....	385
Page 215.....	387
Page 216.....	389
Page 217.....	391
Page 218.....	393
Page 219.....	394
Page 220.....	396
Page 221.....	398
Page 222.....	400
Page 223.....	401
Page 224.....	402
Page 225.....	403
Page 226.....	404
Page 227.....	405
Page 228.....	406
Page 229.....	407
Page 230.....	409

Page 231.....	411
Page 232.....	413
Page 233.....	415
Page 234.....	416
Page 235.....	418
Page 236.....	420
Page 237.....	422
Page 238.....	424
Page 239.....	426
Page 240.....	428
Page 241.....	430
Page 242.....	432
Page 243.....	434
Page 244.....	436
Page 245.....	437
Page 246.....	439
Page 247.....	441
Page 248.....	443
Page 249.....	445
Page 250.....	447
Page 251.....	449
Page 252.....	450
Page 253.....	452
Page 254.....	454
Page 255.....	456
Page 256.....	458

Page 257.....	460
Page 258.....	462
Page 259.....	463
Page 260.....	465
Page 261.....	467
Page 262.....	469
Page 263.....	470
Page 264.....	472
Page 265.....	473
Page 266.....	474
Page 267.....	476
Page 268.....	477
Page 269.....	479
Page 270.....	481
Page 271.....	483
Page 272.....	485
Page 273.....	487
Page 274.....	488
Page 275.....	490
Page 276.....	492
Page 277.....	494
Page 278.....	496
Page 279.....	497
Page 280.....	499
Page 281.....	500
Page 282.....	501

Page 283.....	503
Page 284.....	505
Page 285.....	507
Page 286.....	508
Page 287.....	510
Page 288.....	512
Page 289.....	514
Page 290.....	516
Page 291.....	518
Page 292.....	520
Page 293.....	522
Page 294.....	523
Page 295.....	524
Page 296.....	526
Page 297.....	528
Page 298.....	529
Page 299.....	530
Page 300.....	532
Page 301.....	534
Page 302.....	536
Page 303.....	538
Page 304.....	540
Page 305.....	542
Page 306.....	543
Page 307.....	545
Page 308.....	546

Page 309.....	548
Page 310.....	550
Page 311.....	552
Page 312.....	554
Page 313.....	555
Page 314.....	556
Page 315.....	557
Page 316.....	559
Page 317.....	560
Page 318.....	562
Page 319.....	564
Page 320.....	566
Page 321.....	567
Page 322.....	568
Page 323.....	570
Page 324.....	571
Page 325.....	573
Page 326.....	575
Page 327.....	577
Page 328.....	578
Page 329.....	579
Page 330.....	581
Page 331.....	583
Page 332.....	584
Page 333.....	585
Page 334.....	587

Page 335.....	589
Page 336.....	590
Page 337.....	592
Page 338.....	594
Page 339.....	595
Page 340.....	596
Page 341.....	597
Page 342.....	599
Page 343.....	601
Page 344.....	602
Page 345.....	603
Page 346.....	604
Page 347.....	606
Page 348.....	608
Page 349.....	610
Page 350.....	612
Page 351.....	614
Page 352.....	616
Page 353.....	617
Page 354.....	619
Page 355.....	620
Page 356.....	622
Page 357.....	624
Page 358.....	626
Page 359.....	627
Page 360.....	629

Page 361.....	630
Page 362.....	631
Page 363.....	633
Page 364.....	635
Page 365.....	636
Page 366.....	637
Page 367.....	638
Page 368.....	639
Page 369.....	640
Page 370.....	642
Page 371.....	644
Page 372.....	645
Page 373.....	646
Page 374.....	647
Page 375.....	648
Page 376.....	649
Page 377.....	651
Page 378.....	652
Page 379.....	654
Page 380.....	655
Page 381.....	656
Page 382.....	658
Page 383.....	659
Page 384.....	661
Page 385.....	663
Page 386.....	664

Page 387.....	666
Page 388.....	667
Page 389.....	669
Page 390.....	671
Page 391.....	672
Page 392.....	673
Page 393.....	674
Page 394.....	675
Page 395.....	677
Page 396.....	679
Page 397.....	681
Page 398.....	682
Page 399.....	683
Page 400.....	685
Page 401.....	687
Page 402.....	688
Page 403.....	689
Page 404.....	690
Page 405.....	691
Page 406.....	693
Page 407.....	694
Page 408.....	695
Page 409.....	696
Page 410.....	697
Page 411.....	698
Page 412.....	699

Page 413.....	700
Page 414.....	701
Page 415.....	702
Page 416.....	703
Page 417.....	704
Page 418.....	705
Page 419.....	707
Page 420.....	709
Page 421.....	710
Page 422.....	711
Page 423.....	712
Page 424.....	713
Page 425.....	714
Page 426.....	715
Page 427.....	716
Page 428.....	718
Page 429.....	719
Page 430.....	720
Page 431.....	721
Page 432.....	723
Page 433.....	724
Page 434.....	726
Page 435.....	727
Page 436.....	729
Page 437.....	730
Page 438.....	731

Page 439.....	732
Page 440.....	734
Page 441.....	736
Page 442.....	737
Page 443.....	738
Page 444.....	739
Page 445.....	740
Page 446.....	742
Page 447.....	744

Table of Contents

Section	Table of Contents	Page
Start of eBook		1
BUDDHIST PHILOSOPHY		1
CHAPTER VI		1
CHAPTER VII		2
CHAPTER VIII		2
CHAPTER IX		3
CHAPTER X		3
CHAPTER I		4
CHAPTER II		11
CHAPTER III		27
CHAPTER IV		56
CHAPTER V		70
CHAPTER VI		154
CHAPTER VII		189
CHAPTER VIII		250
CHAPTER IX		336
CHAPTER X		370

Page 1

BUDDHIST PHILOSOPHY

1 The State of Philosophy in India before Buddha.....	78
2 Buddha: his Life.....	81
3 Early Buddhist Literature.....	82
4 The Doctrine of Causal Connection of early Buddhism.....	84
5 The Khandhas.....	93
6 Avijja and Asava.....	99
7 Sila and Samadhi.....	100
8 Kamma.....	106
9 Upani@sads and Buddhism.....	109
10 The Schools of Theravada Buddhism.....	112
11 Mahayanism.....	125
12 The Tathata Philosophy of As'vaghosa (80 A.D.).....	129
13 The Madhyamika or the Sunyavada school--Nihilism.....	138
14 Uncompromising Idealism or the School of Vijnanavada Buddhism.....	145
15 Sautrantika theory of Perception.....	151
16 Sautrantika theory of Inference.....	155
17 The Doctrine of Momentariness.....	158
18 The Doctrine of Momentariness and the Doctrine of Causal Efficiency (Arthakriyakaritva).....	163
19 Some Ontological Problems on which the Different Indian Systems diverged.....	164
20 Brief Survey of the Evolution of Buddhist Thought.....	166

CHAPTER VI

THE JAINA PHILOSOPHY

1 The Origin of Jainism.....	169
2 Two Sects of Jainism.....	170
3 The Canonical and other Literature of the Jains.....	171
4 Some General Characteristics of the Jains.....	172
5 Life of Mahavira.....	173
6 The Fundamental Ideas of Jaina Ontology.....	173



7 The Doctrine of Relative Pluralism (Anekantavada).....	175
8 The Doctrine of Nayas.....	176
9 The Doctrine of Syadvada.....	179
10 Knowledge, its value for us.....	181
11 Theory of Perception.....	183
12 Non-Perceptual knowledge.....	185
13 Knowledge as Revelation.....	186
14 The Jivas.....	188
15 Karma Theory.....	190
16 Karma, Asrava and Nirjara.....	192
17 Pudgala.....	195
18 Dharma, Adharma, Akas'a.....	197
19 Kala and Samaya.....	198
20 Jaina Cosmography.....	199
21 Jaina Yoga.....	199
22 Jaina Atheism.....	203
23 Mok@sa (emancipation).....	207



Page 2

CHAPTER VII

THE KAPILA AND THE PATANJALA SA@MKHYA (YOGA)

1 A Review.....	208
2 The Germs of Sa@mkhya in the Upani@sads.....	211
3 Sa@mkhya and Yoga Literature.....	212
4 An Early School of Sa@mkhya.....	213
5 Sa@mkhya karika, Sa@mkhya sutra, Vacaspati Mis'ra and Vijnana Bhiksu.....	222
6 Yoga and Patanjali.....	226
7 The Sa@mkhya and the Yoga doctrine of Soul or Purusa.....	238
8 Thought and Matter.....	241
9 Feelings, the Ultimate Substances.....	242
10 The Gunas.....	243
11 Prak@@rti and its evolution.....	245
12 Pralaya and the disturbance of the Prak@rti Equilibrium.....	247
13 Mahat and Ahamkara.....	248
14 The Tanmatras and the Paramanus.....	251
15 Principle of Causation and Conservation of Energy.....	254
16 Change as the formation of new collocations.....	255
17 Causation as Satkaryavada (the theory that the effect potentially exists before it is generated by the movement of the cause).....	257
18 Sa@mkhya Atheism and Yoga Theism.....	258
19 Buddhi and Purusa.....	259
20 The Cognitive Process and some characteristics of Citta.....	261
21 Sorrow and its Dissolution.....	264
22 Citta.....	268
23 Yoga Purificatory Practices (Parikarma).....	270
24 The Yoga Meditation.....	271

CHAPTER VIII

THE NYAYA-VAISESIKA PHILOSOPHY

1 Criticism of Buddhism and Sa@mkhya from the Nyaya standpoint...	274
2 Nyaya and Vais'e@sika sutras.....	276
3 Does Vais'e@sika represent an old school of Mima@msa?.....	280
4 Philosophy in the Vais'e@sika sutras.....	285
5 Philosophy in the Nyaya sutras.....	294
6 Philosophy of Nyaya sutras and Vais'e@sika sutras.....	301
7 The Vais'e@sika and Nyaya Literature.....	305
8 The main doctrine of the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika Philosophy.....	310
9 The six Padarthas: Dravya, Gu@na, Karma, Samanya, Vis'e@sa, Samavaya.....	313
10 The Theory of Causation.....	319
11 Dissolution (Pralaya) and Creation (S@r@s@ti).....	323
12 Proof of the Existence of Is'vara.....	325
13 The Nyaya-Vais'e@sika Physics.....	326



Page 3

14 The Origin of Knowledge (Prama@na).....	330
15 The four Prama@nas of Nyaya.....	332
16 Perception (Pratyak@sa).....	333
17 Inference.....	343
18 Upamana and S'abda.....	354
19 Negation in Nyaya-Vais'e@sika.....	355
20 The necessity of the Acquirement of debating devices for the seeker of Salvation.....	360
21 The Doctrine of Soul.....	362
22 Is'vara and Salvation.....	363

xvi

CHAPTER IX

MIMA@MSA PHILOSOPHY

1 A Comparative Review.....	367
2 The Mima@msa Literature.....	369
3 The Parata@h-prama@nya doctrine of Nyaya and the Svata@h-prama@nya doctrine of Mima@msa.....	372
4 The place of Sense-organs in Perception.....	375
5 Indeterminate and Determinate Perception.....	378
6 Some Ontological Problems connected with the Doctrine of Perception.....	379
7 The Nature of Knowledge.....	382
8 The Psychology of Illusion.....	384
9 Inference.....	387
10 Upamana, Arthapatti.....	391
11 S'abda-prama@na.....	394
12 The Prama@na of Non-perception (anupalabdh).....	397
13 Self, Salvation, and God.....	399
14 Mima@msa as Philosophy and Mima@msa as Ritualism.....	403



CHAPTER X

THE S'A@NKARA SCHOOL OF VEDANTA

1 Comprehension of the Philosophical Issues more essential than the Dialectic of Controversy.....	406
2 The philosophical situation: a Review.....	408
3 Vedanta Literature.....	418
4 Vedanta in Gau@dapada.....	420
5 Vedanta and Sa@nkara (788-820 A.D.).....	429
6 The main idea of the Vedanta philosophy.....	439
7 In what sense is the world-appearance false?.....	443
8 The nature of the world-appearance, phenomena.....	445
9 The Definition of Ajnana (nescience).....	452
10 Ajnana established by Perception and Inference.....	454
11 Locus and Object of Ajnana, Aha@mkara and Anta@hkara@na.....	457
12 Anirvacyavada and the Vedanta dialectic.....	461
13 The Theory of Causation.....	465
14 Vedanta theory of Perception and Inference.....	470
15 Atman, Jiva, Is'vara, Ekajivavada and D@r@s@tis@r@s@tivada....	474
16 Vedanta theory of Illusion.....	485
17 Vedanta Ethics and Vedanta Emancipation.....	489
18 Vedanta and other Indian systems.....	492
INDEX.....	495

Page 4

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTORY

The achievements of the ancient Indians in the field of philosophy are but very imperfectly known to the world at large, and it is unfortunate that the condition is no better even in India. There is a small body of Hindu scholars and ascetics living a retired life in solitude, who are well acquainted with the subject, but they do not know English and are not used to modern ways of thinking, and the idea that they ought to write books in vernaculars in order to popularize the subject does not appeal to them. Through the activity of various learned bodies and private individuals both in Europe and in India large numbers of philosophical works in Sanskrit and Pali have been published, as well as translations of a few of them, but there has been as yet little systematic attempt on the part of scholars to study them and judge their value. There are hundreds of Sanskrit works on most of the systems of Indian thought and scarcely a hundredth part of them has been translated. Indian modes of expression, entailing difficult technical philosophical terms are so different from those of European thought, that they can hardly ever be accurately translated. It is therefore very difficult for a person unacquainted with Sanskrit to understand Indian philosophical thought in its true bearing from translations. Pali is a much easier language than Sanskrit, but a knowledge of Pali is helpful in understanding only the earliest school of Buddhism, when it was in its semi-philosophical stage. Sanskrit is generally regarded as a difficult language. But no one from an acquaintance with Vedic or ordinary literary Sanskrit can have any idea of the difficulty of the logical and abstruse parts of Sanskrit philosophical literature. A man who can easily understand the Vedas, the Upanishads, the Puranas, the Law Books and the literary works, and is also well acquainted with European philosophical thought, may find it literally impossible to understand even small portions of a work of advanced Indian logic, or the dialectical Vedanta. This is due to two reasons, the use of technical terms and of great condensation in expression, and the hidden allusions to doctrines of other systems. The

2

tendency to conceiving philosophical problems in a clear and unambiguous manner is an important feature of Sanskrit thought, but from the ninth century onwards, the habit of using clear, definite, and precise expressions, began to develop in a very striking manner, and as a result of that a large number of technical terms began to be invented. These terms are seldom properly explained, and it is presupposed that the reader who wants to read the works should have a knowledge of them. Any one in olden times who took to the study of any system of philosophy, had to do so with a teacher, who explained those terms to him. The teacher himself had got it from his teacher, and he

Page 5

from his. There was no tendency to popularize philosophy, for the idea then prevalent was that only the chosen few who had otherwise shown their fitness, deserved to become fit students (*adhikari*) of philosophy, under the direction of a teacher. Only those who had the grit and high moral strength to devote their whole life to the true understanding of philosophy and the rebuilding of life in accordance with the high truths of philosophy were allowed to study it.

Another difficulty which a beginner will meet is this, that sometimes the same technical terms are used in extremely different senses in different systems. The student must know the meaning of each technical term with reference to the system in which it occurs, and no dictionary will enlighten him much about the matter [Footnote ref 1]. He will have to pick them up as he advances and finds them used. Allusions to the doctrines of other systems and their refutations during the discussions of similar doctrines in any particular system of thought are often very puzzling even to a well-equipped reader; for he cannot be expected to know all the doctrines of other systems without going through them, and so it often becomes difficult to follow the series of answers and refutations which are poured forth in the course of these discussions. There are two important compendiums in Sanskrit giving a summary of some of the principal systems of Indian thought, viz. the *Sarvadars'anasa@mgraha*, and the *_@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_* of Haribhadra with the commentary of Gu@naratna; but the former is very sketchy and can throw very little light on the understanding of the ontological or epistemological doctrines of any of the systems. It has been translated by Cowell and Gough, but I

[Footnote 1: Recently a very able Sanskrit dictionary of technical philosophical terms called *Nyayakos'a* has been prepared by M.M. Bhimacarya Jhalkikar, Bombay, Govt. Press.]

3

am afraid the translation may not be found very intelligible. Gu@naratna's commentary is excellent so far as Jainism is concerned, and it sometimes gives interesting information about other systems, and also supplies us with some short bibliographical notices, but it seldom goes on to explain the epistemological or ontological doctrines or discussions which are so necessary for the right understanding of any of the advanced systems of Indian thought. Thus in the absence of a book which could give us in brief the main epistemological, ontological, and psychological positions of the Indian thinkers,

it is difficult even for a good Sanskrit scholar to follow the advanced philosophical literature, even though he may be acquainted with many of the technical philosophical terms. I have spoken enough about the difficulties of studying Indian philosophy, but if once a person can get himself used to the technical

Page 6

terms and the general positions of the different Indian thinkers and their modes of expression, he can master the whole by patient toil. The technical terms, which are a source of difficulty at the beginning, are of inestimable value in helping us to understand the precise and definite meaning of the writers who used them, and the chances of misinterpreting or misunderstanding them are reduced to a minimum. It is I think well-known that avoidance of technical terms has often rendered philosophical works unduly verbose, and liable to misinterpretation. The art of clear writing is indeed a rare virtue and every philosopher cannot expect to have it. But when technical expressions are properly formed, even a bad writer can make himself understood. In the early days of Buddhist philosophy in the Pali literature, this difficulty is greatly felt. There are some technical terms here which are still very elastic and their repetition in different places in more or less different senses heighten the difficulty of understanding the real meaning intended to be conveyed.

But is it necessary that a history of Indian philosophy should be written? There are some people who think that the Indians never rose beyond the stage of simple faith and that therefore they cannot have any philosophy at all in the proper sense of the term. Thus Professor Frank Thilly of the Cornell University says in his *History of Philosophy* [Footnote ref 1], "A universal history of philosophy would include the philosophies of all peoples. Not all peoples, however

[Footnote 1: New York, 1914, p. 3.]

4

have produced real systems of thought, and the speculations of only a few can be said to have had a history. Many do not rise beyond the mythological stage. Even the theories of Oriental peoples, the Hindus, Egyptians, Chinese, consist, in the main, of mythological and ethical doctrines, and are not thoroughgoing systems of thought: they are shot through with poetry and faith. We shall, therefore, limit ourselves to the study of the Western countries, and begin with the philosophy of the ancient Greeks, on whose culture our own civilization in part, rests." There are doubtless many other people who hold such uninformed and untrue beliefs, which only show their ignorance of Indian matters. It is not necessary to say anything in order to refute these views, for what follows will I hope show the falsity of their beliefs. If they are not satisfied, and want to know more definitely and elaborately about the contents of the different

systems, I am afraid they will have to go to the originals referred to in the bibliographical notices of the chapters.

Page 7

There is another opinion, that the time has not yet come for an attempt to write a history of Indian philosophy. Two different reasons are given from two different points of view. It is said that the field of Indian philosophy is so vast, and such a vast literature exists on each of the systems, that it is not possible for anyone to collect his materials directly from the original sources, before separate accounts are prepared by specialists working in each of the particular systems. There is some truth in this objection, but although in some of the important systems the literature that exists is exceedingly vast, yet many of them are more or less repetitions of the same subjects, and a judicious selection of twenty or thirty important works on each of the systems could certainly be made, which would give a fairly correct exposition. In my own undertaking in this direction I have always drawn directly from the original texts, and have always tried to collect my materials from those sources in which they appear at their best. My space has been very limited and I have chosen the features which appeared to me to be the most important. I had to leave out many discussions of difficult problems and diverse important bearings of each of the systems to many interesting aspects of philosophy. This I hope may be excused in a history of philosophy which does not aim at completeness. There are indeed many defects and shortcomings, and

5

these would have been much less in the case of a writer abler than the present one. At any rate it may be hoped that the imperfections of the present attempt will be a stimulus to those whose better and more competent efforts will supersede it. No attempt ought to be called impossible on account of its imperfections.

In the second place it is said that the Indians had no proper and accurate historical records and biographies and it is therefore impossible to write a history of Indian philosophy. This objection is also partially valid. But this defect does not affect us so much as one would at first sight suppose; for, though the dates of the earlier beginnings are very obscure, yet, in later times, we are in a position to affirm some dates and to point out priority and posteriority in the case of other thinkers. As most of the systems developed side by side through many centuries their mutual relations also developed, and these could be well observed. The special nature of this development has been touched on in the fourth chapter. Most of the systems had very early beginnings and a continuous course of development through the succeeding centuries, and it is not possible to take the state of the philosophy of a particular system at a particular time and contrast it with the state of that system at a later time; for the later state did not supersede the previous state, but only showed a more coherent form of it, which was generally true to the original system but was more determinate. Evolution through

Page 8

history has in Western countries often brought forth the development of more coherent types of philosophic thought, but in India, though the types remained the same, their development through history made them more and more coherent and determinate. Most of the parts were probably existent in the earlier stages, but they were in an undifferentiated state; through the criticism and conflict of the different schools existing side by side the parts of each of the systems of thought became more and more differentiated, determinate, and coherent. In some cases this development has been almost imperceptible, and in many cases the earlier forms have been lost, or so inadequately expressed that nothing definite could be made out of them. Wherever such a differentiation could be made in the interests of philosophy, I have tried to do it. But I have never considered it desirable that the philosophical interest should be subordinated to the chronological. It is no

6

doubt true that more definite chronological information would be a very desirable thing, yet I am of opinion that the little chronological data we have give us a fair amount of help in forming a general notion about the growth and development of the different systems by mutual association and conflict. If the condition of the development of philosophy in India had been the same as in Europe, definite chronological knowledge would be considered much more indispensable. For, when one system supersedes another, it is indispensably necessary that we should know which preceded and which succeeded. But when the systems are developing side by side, and when we are getting them in their richer and better forms, the interest with regard to the conditions, nature and environment of their early origin has rather a historical than a philosophical interest. I have tried as best I could to form certain general notions as regards the earlier stages of some of the systems, but though the various features of these systems at these stages in detail may not be ascertainable, yet this, I think, could never be considered as invalidating the whole programme. Moreover, even if we knew definitely the correct dates of the thinkers of the same system we could not treat them separately, as is done in European philosophy, without unnecessarily repeating the same thing twenty times over; for they all dealt with the same system, and tried to bring out the same type of thought in more and more determinate forms.

The earliest literature of India is the Vedas. These consist mostly of hymns in praise of nature gods, such as fire, wind, *etc.* Excepting in some of the hymns of the later parts of the work (probably about 1000 B.C.), there is not much philosophy in them in our sense of the term. It is here that we first find intensely interesting philosophical questions of a more or less cosmological character expressed in terms of poetry and imagination. In the later Vedic works called the Brahmanas and

Page 9

the Aranyakas written mostly in prose, which followed the Vedic hymns, there are two tendencies, viz. one that sought to establish the magical forms of ritualistic worship, and the other which indulged in speculative thinking through crude generalizations. This latter tendency was indeed much feeble than the former, and it might appear that the ritualistic tendency had actually swallowed up what little of philosophy the later parts of the Vedic hymns were trying to express, but there are unmistakable marks that this tendency

7

existed and worked. Next to this come certain treatises written in prose and verse called the Upanishads, which contain various sorts of philosophical thoughts mostly monistic or singularistic but also some pluralistic and dualistic ones. These are not reasoned statements, but utterances of truths intuitively perceived or felt as unquestionably real and indubitable, and carrying great force, vigour, and persuasiveness with them. It is very probable that many of the earliest parts of this literature are as old as 500 B.C. to 700 B.C. Buddhist philosophy began with the Buddha from some time about 500 B.C. There is reason to believe that Buddhist philosophy continued to develop in India in one or other of its vigorous forms till some time about the tenth or eleventh century A.D. The earliest beginnings of the other Indian systems of thought are also to be sought chiefly between the age of the Buddha to about 200 B.C. Jaina philosophy was probably prior to the Buddha. But except in its earlier days, when it came in conflict with the doctrines of the Buddha, it does not seem to me that the Jaina thought came much in contact with other systems of Hindu thought. Excepting in some forms of Vaishnavite thought in later times, Jaina thought is seldom alluded to by the Hindu writers or later Buddhists, though some Jains like Haribhadra and Guptaraj tried to refute the Hindu and Buddhist systems. The non-aggressive nature of their religion and ideal may to a certain extent explain it, but there may be other reasons too which it is difficult for us to guess. It is interesting to note that, though there have been some dissensions amongst the Jains about dogmas and creeds, Jaina philosophy has not split into many schools of thought more or less differing from one another as Buddhist thought did.

The first volume of this work will contain Buddhist and Jaina philosophy and the six systems of Hindu thought. These six systems of orthodox Hindu thought are the Samkhya, the Yoga, the Nyaya, the Vaisheshika, the Mimamsa (generally known as Purva Mimamsa), and the Vedanta (known also as Uttara Mimamsa). Of these what is differently known as Samkhya and Yoga are but different schools of one system. The Vaisheshika and the Nyaya in later times became so mixed up that, though in early times the similarity of the former with Mimamsa was greater than that with Nyaya, they came to be regarded as fundamentally almost the same systems. Nyaya and Vaisheshika have therefore been treated

Page 10

8

together. In addition to these systems some theistic systems began to grow prominent from the ninth century A.D. They also probably had their early beginnings at the time of the Upani@sads. But at that time their interest was probably concentrated on problems of morality and religion. It is not improbable that these were associated with certain metaphysical theories also, but no works treating them in a systematic way are now available. One of their most important early works is the *Bhagavadgata*. This book is rightly regarded as one of the greatest masterpieces of Hindu thought. It is written in verse, and deals with moral, religious, and metaphysical problems, in a loose form. It is its lack of system and method which gives it its peculiar charm more akin to the poetry of the Upani@sads than to the dialectical and systematic Hindu thought. From the ninth century onwards attempts were made to supplement these loose theistic ideas which were floating about and forming integral parts of religious creeds, by metaphysical theories. Theism is often dualistic and pluralistic, and so are all these systems, which are known as different schools of Vai@s@nava philosophy. Most of the Vai@s@nava thinkers wished to show that their systems were taught in the Upani@sads, and thus wrote commentaries thereon to prove their interpretations, and also wrote commentaries on the *Brahmasutra*, the classical exposition of the philosophy of the Upani@sads. In addition to the works of these Vai@s@nava thinkers there sprang up another class of theistic works which were of a more eclectic nature. These also had their beginnings in periods as old as the Upani@sads. They are known as the S'aiva and Tantra thought, and are dealt with in the second volume of this work.

We thus see that the earliest beginnings of most systems of Hindu thought can be traced to some time between 600 B.C. to 100 or 200 B.C. It is extremely difficult to say anything about the relative priority of the systems with any degree of certainty. Some conjectural attempts have been made in this work with regard to some of the systems, but how far they are correct, it will be for our readers to judge. Moreover during the earliest manifestation of a system some crude outlines only are traceable. As time went on the systems of thought began to develop side by side. Most of them were taught from the time in which they were first conceived to about the seventeenth century A.D. in an unbroken chain of teachers and pupils. Even now each system of Hindu thought has its own adherents, though few people now

9

Page 11

care to write any new works upon them. In the history of the growth of any system of Hindu thought we find that as time went on, and as new problems were suggested, each system tried to answer them consistently with its own doctrines. The order in which we have taken the philosophical systems could not be strictly a chronological one. Thus though it is possible that the earliest speculations of some form of Sa@mkhya, Yoga, and Mima@msa were prior to Buddhism yet they have been treated after Buddhism and Jainism, because the elaborate works of these systems which we now possess are later than Buddhism. In my opinion the Vais'e@sika system is also probably pre-Buddhistic, but it has been treated later, partly on account of its association with Nyaya, and partly on account of the fact that all its commentaries are of a much later date. It seems to me almost certain that enormous quantities of old philosophical literature have been lost, which if found could have been of use to us in showing the stages of the early growth of the systems and their mutual relations. But as they are not available we have to be satisfied with what remains. The original sources from which I have drawn my materials have all been indicated in the brief accounts of the literature of each system which I have put in before beginning the study of any particular system of thought.

In my interpretations I have always tried to follow the original sources as accurately as I could. This has sometimes led to old and unfamiliar modes of expression, but this course seemed to me to be preferable to the adoption of European modes of thought for the expression of Indian ideas. But even in spite of this striking similarities to many of the modern philosophical doctrines and ideas will doubtless be noticed. This only proves that the human mind follows more or less the same modes of rational thought. I have never tried to compare any phase of Indian thought with European, for this is beyond the scope of my present attempt, but if I may be allowed to express my own conviction, I might say that many of the philosophical doctrines of European philosophy are essentially the same as those found in Indian philosophy. The main difference is often the difference of the point of view from which the same problems appeared in such a variety of forms in the two countries. My own view with regard to the net value of Indian philosophical development will be expressed in the concluding chapter of the second volume of the present work.

10

CHAPTER II

THE VEDAS, BRAHMANAS AND THEIR PHILOSOPHY

The Vedas and their antiquity.

Page 12

The sacred books of India, the Vedas, are generally believed to be the earliest literary record of the Indo-European race. It is indeed difficult to say when the earliest portions of these compositions came into existence. Many shrewd guesses have been offered, but none of them can be proved to be incontestably true. Max Mueller supposed the date to be 1200 B.C., Haug 2400 B.C. and Bal Ga@ngadhar Tilak 4000 B.C. The ancient Hindus seldom kept any historical record of their literary, religious or political achievements. The Vedas were handed down from mouth to mouth from a period of unknown antiquity; and the Hindus generally believed that they were never composed by men. It was therefore generally supposed that either they were taught by God to the sages, or that they were of themselves revealed to the sages who were the “seers” (*mantradra@s@ta*) of the hymns. Thus we find that when some time had elapsed after the composition of the Vedas, people had come to look upon them not only as very old, but so old that they had, theoretically at least, no beginning in time, though they were believed to have been revealed at some unknown remote period at the beginning of each creation.

The place of the Vedas in the Hindu mind.

When the Vedas were composed, there was probably no system of writing prevalent in India. But such was the scrupulous zeal of the Brahmins, who got the whole Vedic literature by heart by hearing it from their preceptors, that it has been transmitted most faithfully to us through the course of the last 3000 years or more with little or no interpolations at all. The religious history of India had suffered considerable changes in the latter periods, since the time of the Vedic civilization, but such was the reverence paid to the Vedas that they had ever remained as the highest religious authority for all sections of the Hindus at all times. Even at this day all the obligatory duties of the Hindus at birth, marriage, death, etc., are performed according to the old

11

Vedic ritual. The prayers that a Brahmin now says three times a day are the same selections of Vedic verses as were used as prayer verses two or three thousand years ago. A little insight into the life of an ordinary Hindu of the present day will show that the system of image-worship is one that has been grafted upon his life, the regular obligatory duties of which are ordered according to the old Vedic rites. Thus an orthodox Brahmin can dispense with image-worship if he likes, but not so with his daily Vedic prayers or other obligatory ceremonies. Even at this day there are persons who bestow immense sums of money for the performance and teaching of Vedic sacrifices and rituals. Most of the Sanskrit literatures that flourished after the Vedas base upon them their own validity, and appeal to them as authority. Systems of Hindu philosophy not only own their allegiance to the Vedas, but the adherents of each one of them

Page 13

would often quarrel with others and maintain its superiority by trying to prove that it and it alone was the faithful follower of the Vedas and represented correctly their views. The laws which regulate the social, legal, domestic and religious customs and rites of the Hindus even to the present day are said to be but mere systematized memories of old Vedic teachings, and are held to be obligatory on their authority. Even under British administration, in the inheritance of property, adoption, and in such other legal transactions, Hindu Law is followed, and this claims to draw its authority from the Vedas. To enter into details is unnecessary. But suffice it to say that the Vedas, far from being regarded as a dead literature of the past, are still looked upon as the origin and source of almost all literatures except purely secular poetry and drama. Thus in short we may say that in spite of the many changes that time has wrought, the orthodox Hindu life may still be regarded in the main as an adumbration of the Vedic life, which had never ceased to shed its light all through the past.

Classification of the Vedic literature.

A beginner who is introduced for the first time to the study of later Sanskrit literature is likely to appear somewhat confused when he meets with authoritative texts of diverse purport and subjects having the same generic name “Veda” or “S’ruti” (from *s’ru* to hear); for Veda in its wider sense is not the name of any

12

particular book, but of the literature of a particular epoch extending over a long period, say two thousand years or so. As this literature represents the total achievements of the Indian people in different directions for such a long period, it must of necessity be of a diversified character. If we roughly classify this huge literature from the points of view of age, language, and subject matter, we can point out four different types, namely the Sa@mhita or collection of verses (*sam* together, *hita* put), Brahma@nas, Ara@nyakas (“forest treatises”) and the Upani@sads. All these literatures, both prose and verse, were looked upon as so holy that in early times it was thought almost a sacrilege to write them; they were therefore learnt by heart by the Brahmins from the mouth of their preceptors and were hence called *s’ruti* (literally anything heard)[Footnote ref 1].

The Sa@mhitas.

There are four collections or Sa@mhitas, namely @Rg-Veda, Sama-Veda, Yajur-Veda and Atharva-Veda. Of these the @Rg-Veda is probably the earliest. The Sama-Veda has practically no independent value, for it consists of stanzas taken (excepting only 75) entirely from the @Rg-Veda, which were meant to be sung to certain fixed melodies, and may thus be called the book of chants. The Yajur-Veda however contains in

addition to the verses taken from the @Rg-Veda many original prose formulas. The arrangement of the verses of the Sama-Veda is solely with reference to their

Page 14

place and use in the Soma sacrifice; the contents of the Yajur-Veda are arranged in the order in which the verses were actually employed in the various religious sacrifices. It is therefore called the Veda of Yajus—sacrificial prayers. These may be contrasted with the arrangement in the @Rg-Veda in this, that there the verses are generally arranged in accordance with the gods who are adored in them. Thus, for example, first we get all the poems addressed to Agni or the Fire-god, then all those to the god Indra and so on. The fourth collection, the Atharva-Veda, probably attained its present form considerably later than the @Rg-Veda. In spirit, however, as Professor Macdonell says, “It is not only entirely different from the *Rigveda* but represents a much more primitive stage of thought. While the *Rigveda* deals almost exclusively with the higher gods as conceived by a

[Footnote 1: Pa@nini, III. iii. 94.]

13

comparatively advanced and refined sacerdotal class, the *Atharva-Veda* is, in the main a book of spells and incantations appealing to the demon world, and teems with notions about witchcraft current among the lower grades of the population, and derived from an immemorial antiquity. These two, thus complementary to each other in contents are obviously the most important of the four Vedas [Footnote ref 1].”

The Brahma@nas. [Footnote ref 2]

After the Sa@mhitas there grew up the theological treatises called the Brahma@nas, which were of a distinctly different literary type. They are written in prose, and explain the sacred significance of the different rituals to those who are not already familiar with them. “They reflect,” says Professor Macdonell, “the spirit of an age in which all intellectual activity is concentrated on the sacrifice, describing its ceremonies, discussing its value, speculating on its origin and significance.” These works are full of dogmatic assertions, fanciful symbolism and speculations of an unbounded imagination in the field of sacrificial details. The sacrificial ceremonials were probably never so elaborate at the time when the early hymns were composed. But when the collections of hymns were being handed down from generation to generation the ceremonials became more and more complicated. Thus there came about the necessity of the distribution of the different sacrificial functions among several distinct classes of priests. We may assume that this was a period when the caste system was becoming established, and when the only thing which could engage wise and religious minds was sacrifice and its elaborate rituals. Free speculative thinking was thus subordinated to

the service of the sacrifice, and the result was the production of the most fanciful sacramental and symbolic

[Footnote 1: A.A. Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 31.]

Page 15

[Footnote 2: Weber (*Hist. Ind. Lit.*, p. 11, note) says that the word *Brahma@na* signifies "that which relates to prayer *brahman*." Max Muller (*S.B.E.*, I.p. lxvi) says that *Brahma@na* meant "originally the sayings of Brahmins, whether in the general sense of priests, or in the more special sense of Brahmin-priests." Eggeling (*S.B.E.* XII. Introd. p. xxii) says that the *Brhama@nas* were so called "probably either because they were intended for the instruction and guidance of priests (*brahman*) generally; or because they were, for the most part, the authoritative utterances of such as were thoroughly versed in Vedic and sacrificial lore and competent to act as Brahmins or superintending priests." But in view of the fact that the *Brahma@nas* were also supposed to be as much revealed as the Vedas, the present writer thinks that Weber's view is the correct one.]

14

system, unparalleled anywhere but among the Gnostics. It is now generally believed that the close of the *Brahma@na* period was not later than 500 B.C.

The *Ara@nyakas*.

As a further development of the *Brahma@nas* however we get the *Ara@nyakas* or forest treatises. These works were probably composed for old men who had retired into the forest and were thus unable to perform elaborate sacrifices requiring a multitude of accessories and articles which could not be procured in forests. In these, meditations on certain symbols were supposed to be of great merit, and they gradually began to supplant the sacrifices as being of a superior order. It is here that we find that amongst a certain section of intelligent people the ritualistic ideas began to give way, and philosophic speculations about the nature of truth became gradually substituted in their place. To take an illustration from the beginning of the *B@rhada@nyaka* we find that instead of the actual performance of the horse sacrifice (*as'vamedha*) there are directions for meditating upon the dawn (*U@sas*) as the head of the horse, the sun as the eye of the horse, the air as its life, and so on. This is indeed a distinct advancement of the claims of speculation or meditation over the actual performance of the complicated ceremonials of sacrifice. The growth of the subjective speculation, as being capable of bringing the highest good, gradually resulted in the supersession of Vedic ritualism and the establishment of the claims of philosophic meditation and self-knowledge as the highest goal of life. Thus we find that the *Ara@nyaka* age was a period during which free thinking tried gradually to shake off the shackles of ritualism which had fettered it for a long time. It was thus that the *Ara@nyakas* could pave the way for the *Upani@sads*, revive the germs of philosophic speculation in the Vedas, and develop them in a manner which made the *Upani@sads* the source of all philosophy that arose in the world of Hindu thought.

The *@Rg-Veda*, its civilization.

Page 16

The hymns of the @Rg-Veda are neither the productions of a single hand nor do they probably belong to any single age. They were composed probably at different periods by different sages, and it is not improbable that some of them were composed

15

before the Aryan people entered the plains of India. They were handed down from mouth to mouth and gradually swelled through the new additions that were made by the poets of succeeding generations. It was when the collection had increased to a very considerable extent that it was probably arranged in the present form, or in some other previous forms to which the present arrangement owes its origin. They therefore reflect the civilization of the Aryan people at different periods of antiquity before and after they had come to India. This unique monument of a long vanished age is of great aesthetic value, and contains much that is genuine poetry. It enables us to get an estimate of the primitive society which produced it—the oldest book of the Aryan race. The principal means of sustenance were cattle-keeping and the cultivation of the soil with plough and harrow, mattock and hoe, and watering the ground when necessary with artificial canals. “The chief food consists,” as Kaegi says, “together with bread, of various preparations of milk, cakes of flour and butter, many sorts of vegetables and fruits; meat cooked on the spits or in pots, is little used, and was probably eaten only at the great feasts and family gatherings. Drinking plays throughout a much more important part than eating [Footnote ref 1].” The wood-worker built war-chariots and wagons, as also more delicate carved works and artistic cups. Metal-workers, smiths and potters continued their trade. The women understood the plaiting of mats, weaving and sewing; they manufactured the wool of the sheep into clothing for men and covering for animals. The group of individuals forming a tribe was the highest political unit; each of the different families forming a tribe was under the sway of the father or the head of the family. Kingship was probably hereditary and in some cases electoral. Kingship was nowhere absolute, but limited by the will of the people. Most developed ideas of justice, right and law, were present in the country. Thus Kaegi says, “the hymns strongly prove how deeply the prominent minds in the people were persuaded that the eternal ordinances of the rulers of the world were as inviolable in mental and moral matters as in the realm of nature, and that every wrong act, even the unconscious, was punished and the sin expiated.”[Footnote ref 2] Thus it is only right and proper to think that the Aryans had attained a pretty high degree

[Footnote 1: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, 1886 edition, p. 13.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p. 18.]

Page 17

of civilization, but nowhere was the sincere spirit of the Aryans more manifested than in religion, which was the most essential and dominant feature of almost all the hymns, except a few secular ones. Thus Kaegi says, "The whole significance of the Rigveda in reference to the general history of religion, as has repeatedly been pointed out in modern times, rests upon this, that it presents to us the development of religious conceptions from the earliest beginnings to the deepest apprehension of the godhead and its relation to man [Footnote ref 1]."

The Vedic Gods.

The hymns of the @Rg-Veda were almost all composed in praise of the gods. The social and other materials are of secondary importance, as these references had only to be mentioned incidentally in giving vent to their feelings of devotion to the god. The gods here are however personalities presiding over the diverse powers of nature or forming their very essence. They have therefore no definite, systematic and separate characters like the Greek gods or the gods of the later Indian mythical works, the Pura@nas. The powers of nature such as the storm, the rain, the thunder, are closely associated with one another, and the gods associated with them are also similar in character. The same epithets are attributed to different gods and it is only in a few specific qualities that they differ from one another. In the later mythological compositions of the Pura@nas the gods lost their character as hypostatic powers of nature, and thus became actual personalities and characters having their tales of joy and sorrow like the mortal here below. The Vedic gods may be contrasted with them in this, that they are of an impersonal nature, as the characters they display are mostly but expressions of the powers of nature. To take an example, the fire or Agni is described, as Kaegi has it, as one that "lies concealed in the softer wood, as in a chamber, until, called forth by the rubbing in the early morning hour, he suddenly springs forth in gleaming brightness. The sacrificer takes and lays him on the wood. When the priests pour melted butter upon him, he leaps up crackling and neighing like a horse—he whom men love to see increasing like their own prosperity. They wonder at him, when, decking himself with

[Footnote 1: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, p. 26.]

changing colors like a suitor, equally beautiful on all sides, he presents to all sides his front.

“All-searching is his beam, the gleaming of his light,
His, the all-beautiful, of beauteous face and glance,
The changing shimmer like that floats upon the stream,
So Agni’s rays gleam over bright and never cease.”

[Footnote ref 1] R.V.I. 143. 3.

They would describe the wind (Vata) and adore him and say

“In what place was he born, and from whence comes he?
The vital breath of gods, the world’s great offspring,
The God where’er he will moves at his pleasure:
His rushing sound we hear—what his appearance, no one.”

Page 18

[Footnote ref 2] R.V.X. 168. 3, 4.

It was the forces of nature and her manifestations, on earth here, the atmosphere around and above us, or in the Heaven beyond the vault of the sky that excited the devotion and imagination of the Vedic poets. Thus with the exception of a few abstract gods of whom we shall presently speak and some dual divinities, the gods may be roughly classified as the terrestrial, atmospheric, and celestial.

Polytheism, Henotheism and Monotheism.

The plurality of the Vedic gods may lead a superficial enquirer to think the faith of the Vedic people polytheistic. But an intelligent reader will find here neither polytheism nor monotheism but a simple primitive stage of belief to which both of these may be said to owe their origin. The gods here do not preserve their proper places as in a polytheistic faith, but each one of them shrinks into insignificance or shines as supreme according as it is the object of adoration or not. The Vedic poets were the children of nature. Every natural phenomenon excited their wonder, admiration or veneration. The poet is struck with wonder that “the rough red cow gives soft white milk.” The appearance or the setting of the sun sends a thrill into the minds of the Vedic sage and with wonder-gazing eyes he exclaims:

“Undropped beneath, not fastened firm, how comes it
That downward turned he falls not downward?
The guide of his ascending path,—who saw it?”

[Footnote Ref 1] R.V. IV. 13. 5.

The sages wonder how “the sparkling waters of all rivers flow into one ocean without ever filling it.” The minds of the Vedic

[Footnote 1: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, p. 35.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid*, p. 38.]

18

people as we find in the hymns were highly impressionable and fresh. At this stage the time was not ripe enough for them to accord a consistent and well-defined existence to the multitude of gods nor to universalize them in a monotheistic creed. They hypostatized unconsciously any force of nature that overawed them or filled them with

gratefulness and joy by its beneficent or aesthetic character, and adored it. The deity which moved the devotion or admiration of their mind was the most supreme for the time. This peculiar trait of the Vedic hymns Max Muller has called Henotheism or Kathenotheism: "a belief in single gods, each in turn standing out as the highest. And since the gods are thought of as specially ruling in their own spheres, the singers, in their special concerns and desires, call most of all on that god to whom they ascribe the most power in the matter,—to whose department if I may say so, their wish belongs. This god alone is present to the mind of the suppliant; with him for the time being is associated everything that can be said of a divine being;—he is

Page 19

the highest, the only god, before whom all others disappear, there being in this, however, no offence or depreciation of any other god [Footnote ref 1].” “Against this theory it has been urged,” as Macdonell rightly says in his *Vedic Mythology* [Footnote ref 2], “that Vedic deities are not represented as ‘independent of all the rest,’ since no religion brings its gods into more frequent and varied juxtaposition and combination, and that even the mightiest gods of the Veda are made dependent on others. Thus Varu@na and Surya are subordinate to Indra (I. 101), Varu@na and the As’vins submit to the power of Vi@s@nu (I. 156)....Even when a god is spoken of as unique or chief (*eka*), as is natural enough in laudations, such statements lose their temporarily monotheistic force, through the modifications or corrections supplied by the context or even by the same verse [Footnote Ref 3]. “Henotheism is therefore an appearance,” says Macdonell, “rather than a reality, an appearance produced by the indefiniteness due to undeveloped anthropomorphism, by the lack of any Vedic god occupying the position of a Zeus as the constant head of the pantheon, by the natural tendency of the priest or singer in extolling a particular god to exaggerate his greatness and to ignore other gods, and by the

[Footnote 1: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, p. 27.]

[Footnote 2: See *Ibid.* p. 33. See also Arrowsmith’s note on it for other references to Henotheism.]

[Footnote 3: Macdonell’s *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 16, 17.]

19

growing belief in the unity of the gods (cf. the refrain of 3, 35) each of whom might be regarded as a type of the divine [Footnote ref 1].” But whether we call it Henotheism or the mere temporary exaggeration of the powers of the deity in question, it is evident that this stage can neither be properly called polytheistic nor monotheistic, but one which had a tendency towards them both, although it was not sufficiently developed to be identified with either of them. The tendency towards extreme exaggeration could be called a monotheistic bias in germ, whereas the correlation of different deities as independent of one another and yet existing side by side was a tendency towards polytheism.

Growth of a Monotheistic tendency; Prajapati, Vis’vakarma.

This tendency towards extolling a god as the greatest and highest gradually brought forth the conception of a supreme Lord of all beings (Prajapati), not by a process of conscious generalization but as a necessary stage of development of the mind, able to imagine a deity as the repository of the highest moral and physical power, though its direct manifestation cannot be perceived. Thus the epithet Prajapati or the Lord of beings, which was originally an epithet for other deities, came to be recognized as a separate deity, the highest and the greatest. Thus it is said in R.V.x. 121 [Footnote Ref 2]:

Page 20

In the beginning rose Hira@nyagarbha,
Born as the only lord of all existence.
This earth he settled firm and heaven established:
What god shall we adore with our oblations?
Who gives us breath, who gives us strength, whose bidding
All creatures must obey, the bright gods even;
Whose shade is death, whose shadow life immortal:
What god shall we adore with our oblations?
Who by his might alone became the monarch
Of all that breathes, of all that wakes or slumbers,
Of all, both man and beast, the lord eternal:
What god shall we adore with our oblations?
Whose might and majesty these snowy mountains,
The ocean and the distant stream exhibit;
Whose arms extended are these spreading regions:
What god shall we adore with our oblations?
Who made the heavens bright, the earth enduring,
Who fixed the firmament, the heaven of heavens;
Who measured out the air's extended spaces:
What god shall we adore with our oblations?

[Footnote 1: Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, p. 17.]

[Footnote 2: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, pp. 88, 89.]

20

Similar attributes are also ascribed to the deity Vis'vakarma (All-creator) [Footnote ref 1]. He is said to be father and procreator of all beings, though himself uncreated. He generated the primitive waters. It is to him that the sage says,

Who is our father, our creator, maker,
Who every place doth know and every creature,
By whom alone to gods their names were given,
To him all other creatures go to ask him [Footnote ref 2]

R.V.x.82.3.

Brahma.

The conception of Brahman which has been the highest glory for the Vedanta philosophy of later days had hardly emerged in the @Rg-Veda from the associations of the sacrificial mind. The meanings that Saya@na the celebrated commentator of the Vedas gives of the word as collected by Haug are: (a) food, food offering, (b) the chant of the sama-singer, (c) magical formula or text, (d) duly completed ceremonies, (e) the chant and sacrificial gift together, (f) the recitation of the hot@r priest, (g) great. Roth says that it also means “the devotion which manifests itself as longing and satisfaction of the soul and reaches forth to the gods.” But it is only in the S’atapatha Brahma@na that the conception of Brahman has acquired a great significance as the supreme principle which is the moving force behind the gods. Thus the S’atapatha says, “Verily in the beginning this (universe) was the Brahman (neut.). It created the gods; and, having created the gods, it made them ascend these worlds: Agni this (terrestrial) world, Vayu the air, and Surya the sky.... Then

Page 21

the Brahman itself went up to the sphere beyond. Having gone up to the sphere beyond, it considered, 'How can I descend again into these worlds?' It then descended again by means of these two, Form and Name. Whatever has a name, that is name; and that again which has no name and which one knows by its form, 'this is (of a certain) form,' that is form: as far as there are Form and Name so far, indeed, extends this (universe). These indeed are the two great forces of Brahman; and, verily, he who knows these two great forces of Brahman becomes himself a great force [Footnote ref 3]. In another place Brahman is said to be the ultimate thing in the Universe and is identified with Prajapati, Puru@sa and Pra@na

[Footnote 1: See *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, p. 89, and also Muir's *Sanskrit Texts*, vol. IV. pp. 5-11.]

[Footnote 2: Kaegi's translation.]

[Footnote 3: See Eggeling's translation of S'atapatha Brahmana *S.B.E.* vol. XLIV. pp. 27, 28.]

21

(the vital air [Footnote ref 1]). In another place Brahman is described as being the Svayambhu (self-born) performing austerities, who offered his own self in the creatures and the creatures in his own self, and thus compassed supremacy, sovereignty and lordship over all creatures [Footnote ref 2]. The conception of the supreme man (Puru@sa) in the @Rg-Veda also supposes that the supreme man pervades the world with only a fourth part of Himself, whereas the remaining three parts transcend to a region beyond. He is at once the present, past and future [Footnote ref 3].

Sacrifice; the First Rudiments of the Law of Karma.

It will however be wrong to suppose that these monotheistic tendencies were gradually supplanting the polytheistic sacrifices. On the other hand, the complications of ritualism were gradually growing in their elaborate details. The direct result of this growth contributed however to relegate the gods to a relatively unimportant position, and to raise the dignity of the magical characteristics of the sacrifice as an institution which could give the desired fruits of themselves. The offerings at a sacrifice were not dictated by a devotion with which we are familiar under Christian or Vai@s@nava influence. The sacrifice taken as a whole is conceived as Haug notes "to be a kind of machinery in which every piece must tally with the other," the slightest discrepancy in



the performance of even a minute ritualistic detail, say in the pouring of the melted butter on the fire, or the proper placing of utensils employed in the sacrifice, or even the misplacing of a mere straw contrary to the injunctions was sufficient to spoil the whole sacrifice with whatsoever earnestness it might be performed. Even if a word was mispronounced the most dreadful results might follow. Thus when Tva@s@t@r performed a sacrifice for the production

Page 22

of a demon who would be able to kill his enemy Indra, owing to the mistaken accent of a single word the object was reversed and the demon produced was killed by Indra. But if the sacrifice could be duly performed down to the minutest detail, there was no power which could arrest or delay the fruition of the object. Thus the objects of a sacrifice were fulfilled not by the grace of the gods, but as a natural result of the sacrifice. The performance of the rituals invariably produced certain mystic or magical results by virtue of which the object desired

[Footnote 1: See *S.B.E.* XLIII. pp.59,60,400 and XLIV. p.409.]

[Footnote 2: See *Ibid.*, XLIV, p. 418.]

[Footnote 3: R.V.x.90, Puru@sa Sukta.]

22

by the sacrificer was fulfilled in due course like the fulfilment of a natural law in the physical world. The sacrifice was believed to have existed from eternity like the Vedas. The creation of the world itself was even regarded as the fruit of a sacrifice performed by the supreme Being. It exists as Haug says “as an invisible thing at all times and is like the latent power of electricity in an electrifying machine, requiring only the operation of a suitable apparatus in order to be elicited.” The sacrifice is not offered to a god with a view to propitiate him or to obtain from him welfare on earth or bliss in Heaven; these rewards are directly produced by the sacrifice itself through the correct performance of complicated and interconnected ceremonies which constitute the sacrifice. Though in each sacrifice certain gods were invoked and received the offerings, the gods themselves were but instruments in bringing about the sacrifice or in completing the course of mystical ceremonies composing it. Sacrifice is thus regarded as possessing a mystical potency superior even to the gods, who it is sometimes stated attained to their divine rank by means of sacrifice. Sacrifice was regarded as almost the only kind of duty, and it was also called *karma* or *kriya* (action) and the unalterable law was, that these mystical ceremonies for good or for bad, moral or immoral (for there were many kinds of sacrifices which were performed for injuring one's enemies or gaining worldly prosperity or supremacy at the cost of others) were destined to produce their effects. It is well to note here that the first recognition of a cosmic order or law prevailing in nature under the guardianship of the highest gods is to be found in the use of the word @Rta (literally the course of things). This word was also used, as Macdonell observes, to denote the “‘order’ in the moral world as truth and ‘right’ and in the religious world as sacrifice or ‘rite’[Footnote ref 1]” and its unalterable law of producing effects. It is

interesting to note in this connection that it is here that we find the first germs of the law of karma, which exercises such a dominating control over Indian thought up to the present day. Thus we find the simple faith and devotion of the Vedic hymns on one hand being supplanted by the growth of a complex system of sacrificial rites, and on the other bending their course towards a monotheistic or philosophic knowledge of the ultimate reality of the universe.

Page 23

[Footnote 1: Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, p. 11.]

23

Cosmogony—Mythological and philosophical.

The cosmogony of the @Rg-Veda may be looked at from two aspects, the mythological and the philosophical. The mythological aspect has in general two currents, as Professor Macdonell says, "The one regards the universe as the result of mechanical production, the work of carpenter's and joiner's skill; the other represents it as the result of natural generation [Footnote ref. 1]." Thus in the @Rg-Veda we find that the poet in one place says, "what was the wood and what was the tree out of which they built heaven and earth [Footnote ref. 2]?" The answer given to this question in Taittiriya-Brahma@na is "Brahman the wood and Brahman the tree from which the heaven and earth were made [Footnote ref 3]." Heaven and Earth are sometimes described as having been supported with posts [Footnote ref 4]. They are also sometimes spoken of as universal parents, and parentage is sometimes attributed to Aditi and Dak@sa.

Under this philosophical aspect the semi-pantheistic Man-hymn [Footnote ref 5] attracts our notice. The supreme man as we have already noticed above is there said to be the whole universe, whatever has been and shall be; he is the lord of immortality who has become diffused everywhere among things animate and inanimate, and all beings came out of him; from his navel came the atmosphere; from his head arose the sky; from his feet came the earth; from his ear the four quarters. Again there are other hymns in which the Sun is called the soul (*atman*) of all that is movable and all that is immovable [Footnote ref 6]. There are also statements to the effect that the Being is one, though it is called by many names by the sages [Footnote ref 7]. The supreme being is sometimes extolled as the supreme Lord of the world called the golden egg (Hira@nyagarbha [Footnote ref 8]). In some passages it is said "Brahma@naspati blew forth these births like a blacksmith. In the earliest age of the gods, the existent sprang from the non-existent. In the first age of the gods, the existent sprang from the non-existent: thereafter the regions sprang, thereafter, from Uttanapada [Footnote ref 9]." The most remarkable and sublime hymn in which the first germs of philosophic speculation

[Footnote 1: Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, p. 11.]

[Footnote 2: R.V.x. 81. 4.]

[Footnote 3: Taitt. Br. II. 8. 9. 6.]

[Footnote 4: Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, p. 11; also R.V. II. 15 and IV. 56.]

[Footnote 5: R.V.x. 90.]

[Footnote 6: R.V.I. 115.]

[Footnote 7: R.V.I. 164. 46.]

[Footnote 8: R.V.X. 121.]

[Footnote 9: Muir's translation of R.V.x. 72; Muir's *Sanskrit Texts*, vol. v.p. 48.]

Page 24

24

with regard to the wonderful mystery of the origin of the world are found is the 129th hymn of R.V.x.

1. Then there was neither being nor not-being.
The atmosphere was not, nor sky above it.
What covered all? and where? by what protected?
Was there the fathomless abyss of waters?
2. Then neither death nor deathless existed;
Of day and night there was yet no distinction.
Alone that one breathed calmly, self-supported,
Other than It was none, nor aught above It.
3. Darkness there was at first in darkness hidden;
The universe was undistinguished water.
That which in void and emptiness lay hidden
Alone by power of fervor was developed.
4. Then for the first time there arose desire,
Which was the primal germ of mind, within it.
And sages, searching in their heart, discovered
In Nothing the connecting bond of Being.
6. Who is it knows? Who here can tell us surely
From what and how this universe has risen?
And whether not till after it the gods lived?
Who then can know from what it has arisen?
7. The source from which this universe has risen,
And whether it was made, or uncreated,
He only knows, who from the highest heaven
Rules, the all-seeing lord—or does not He know [Footnote ref 1]?

The earliest commentary on this is probably a passage in the S'atapatha Brahma@na (x. 5. 3.1) which says that "in the beginning this (universe) was as it were neither non-existent nor existent; in the beginning this (universe) was as it were, existed and did not exist: there was then only that Mind. Wherefore it has been declared by the Rishi (@Rg-Veda X. 129. 1), 'There was then neither the non-existent nor the existent' for Mind was, as it were, neither existent nor non-existent. This Mind when created, wished to become manifest,—more defined, more substantial: it sought after a self (a body); it practised austerity: it acquired consistency [Footnote ref 2]." In the Atharva-Veda also

we find it stated that all forms of the universe were comprehended within the god Skambha [Footnote ref 3].

Thus we find that even in the period of the Vedas there sprang forth such a philosophic yearning, at least among some who could

[Footnote 1: *The Rigveda*, by Kaegi, p. 90. R.V.x. 129.]

[Footnote 2: See Eggeling's translation of *S'B.*, *S.B.E.* vol. XLIII. pp. 374, 375.]

[Footnote 3: *A.V.* x. 7. 10.]

25

Page 25

question whether this universe was at all a creation or not, which could think of the origin of the world as being enveloped in the mystery of a primal non-differentiation of being and non-being; and which could think that it was the primal One which by its inherent fervour gave rise to the desire of a creation as the first manifestation of the germ of mind, from which the universe sprang forth through a series of mysterious gradual processes. In the *Brahma@nas*, however, we find that the cosmogonic view generally requires the agency of a creator, who is not however always the starting point, and we find that the theory of evolution is combined with the theory of creation, so that Prajapati is sometimes spoken of as the creator while at other times the creator is said to have floated in the primeval water as a cosmic golden egg.

Eschatology; the Doctrine of Atman.

There seems to be a belief in the Vedas that the soul could be separated from the body in states of swoon, and that it could exist after death, though we do not find there any trace of the doctrine of transmigration in a developed form. In the *S'atapatha Brahma@na* it is said that those who do not perform rites with correct knowledge are born again after death and suffer death again. In a hymn of the *@Rg-Veda* (X. 58) the soul (*manas*) of a man apparently unconscious is invited to come back to him from the trees, herbs, the sky, the sun, *etc.* In many of the hymns there is also the belief in the existence of another world, where the highest material joys are attained as a result of the performance of the sacrifices and also in a hell of darkness underneath where the evil-doers are punished. In the *S'atapatha Brahma@na* we find that the dead pass between two fires which burn the evil-doers, but let the good go by [Footnote ref 1]; it is also said there that everyone is born again after death, is weighed in a balance, and receives reward or punishment according as his works are good or bad. It is easy to see that scattered ideas like these with regard to the destiny of the soul of man according to the sacrifice that he performs or other good or bad deeds form the first rudiments of the later doctrine of metempsychosis. The idea that man enjoys or suffers, either in another world or by being born in this world according to his good or bad deeds, is the first beginning of the moral idea, though in the Brahmanic days the good deeds were

[Footnote 1: See *S.B.* I. 9.3, and also Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 166, 167.]

Page 26

more often of the nature of sacrificial duties than ordinary good works. These ideas of the possibilities of a necessary connection of the enjoyments and sorrows of a man with his good and bad works when combined with the notion of an inviolable law or order, which we have already seen was gradually growing with the conception of @rta, and the unalterable law which produces the effects of sacrificial works, led to the Law of Karma and the doctrine of transmigration. The words which denote soul in the @Rg-Veda are *manas*, *atman* and *asu*. The word *atman* however which became famous in later Indian thought is generally used to mean vital breath. Manas is regarded as the seat of thought and emotion, and it seems to be regarded, as Macdonell says, as dwelling in the heart[Footnote ref 1]. It is however difficult to understand how atman as vital breath, or as a separable part of man going out of the dead man came to be regarded as the ultimate essence or reality in man and the universe. There is however at least one passage in the @Rg-Veda where the poet penetrating deeper and deeper passes from the vital breath (*asu*) to the blood, and thence to atman as the inmost self of the world; "Who has seen how the first-born, being the Bone-possessing (the shaped world), was born from the Boneless (the shapeless)? where was the vital breath, the blood, the Self (*atman*) of the world? Who went to ask him that knows it [Footnote ref 2]?" In Taittiriya Ara@nyaka I. 23, however, it is said that Prajapati after having created his self (as the world) with his own self entered into it. In Taittiriya Brahma@na the atman is called omnipresent, and it is said that he who knows him is no more stained by evil deeds. Thus we find that in the pre-Upani@sad Vedic literature atman probably was first used to denote "vital breath" in man, then the self of the world, and then the self in man. It is from this last stage that we find the traces of a growing tendency to looking at the self of man as the omnipresent supreme principle of the universe, the knowledge of which makes a man sinless and pure.

Conclusion.

Looking at the advancement of thought in the @Rg-Veda we find first that a fabric of thought was gradually growing which not only looked upon the universe as a correlation of parts or a

[Footnote 1: Macdonell's *Vedic Mythology*, p.166 and R.V. viii.89.]

[Footnote 2: R.V.i. 164. 4 and Deussen's article on Atman in *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics*.

Page 27

construction made of them, but sought to explain it as having emanated from one great being who is sometimes described as one with the universe and surpassing it, and at other times as being separate from it; the agnostic spirit which is the mother of philosophic thought is seen at times to be so bold as to express doubts even on the most fundamental questions of creation—"Who knows whether this world was ever created or not?" Secondly the growth of sacrifices has helped to establish the unalterable nature of the law by which the (sacrificial) actions produced their effects of themselves. It also lessened the importance of deities as being the supreme masters of the world and our fate, and the tendency of henotheism gradually diminished their multiple character and advanced the monotheistic tendency in some quarters. Thirdly, the soul of man is described as being separable from his body and subject to suffering and enjoyment in another world according to his good or bad deeds; the doctrine that the soul of man could go to plants, etc., or that it could again be reborn on earth, is also hinted at in certain passages, and this may be regarded as sowing the first seeds of the later doctrine of transmigration. The self (*atman*) is spoken of in one place as the essence of the world, and when we trace the idea in the *Brahma@nas* and the *Ara@nyakas* we see that *atman* has begun to mean the supreme essence in man as well as in the universe, and has thus approached the great *Atman* doctrine of the *Upani@sads*.

CHAPTER III

THE EARLIER UPANI@SADS [Footnote ref 1]. (700 B.C.-600 B.C.)

The place of the *Upani@sads* in Vedic literature.

Though it is generally held that the *Upani@sads* are usually attached as appendices to the *Ara@nyakas* which are again attached to the *Brahma@nas*, yet it cannot be said that their distinction as separate treatises is always observed. Thus we find in some cases that subjects which we should expect to be discussed in a *Brahma@na* are introduced into the *Ara@nyakas* and the *Ara@nyaka* materials are sometimes fused into the great bulk of *Upani@sad* teaching. This shows that these three literatures gradually grew up in one

[Footnote 1: There are about 112 *Upani@sads* which have been published by the "Nir@naya-Sagara" Press, Bombay, 1917. These are 1 *Isa*, 2 *Kena*, 3 *Katha*, 4 *Pras'na*, 5 *Mun@daka*, 6 *Ma@n@dukya*, 7 *Taittiriya*, 7 *Aitareya*, 9 *Chandogya*, 10 *B@rhudara@nyaka*, 11 *S'vetas'vatara*, 12 *Kau@sitaki*, 13 *Maitreyi*, 14 *Kaivalya*, 15

Jabala, 16 Brahmabindu, 17 Ha@msa, 18 Aru@nika, 19 Garbha, 20 Naraya@na, 21 Naraya@na, 22 Paramaha@msa, 23 Brahma, 24 Am@rtanada, 25 Atharvas'iras, 26 Atharvas'ikha, 27 Maitraya@ni, 28 B@rhajjabala, 29 N@rsi@mhapurvatapini, 30 N@rsi@mhotaratapini, 31 Kalagnirudra, 32 Subala, 33 K@surika, 34 Yantrika, 35 Sarvasara, 36 Niralamba, 37 S'ukarahasya,

Page 28

38 Vajrasucika, 39 Tejobindu, 40 Nadabindu, 41 Dhyanabindu, 42 Brahmaavidya, 43 Yogatattva, 44 Atmabodha, 45 Naradaparivrajaka, 46 Tris'ikhibrahma@na, 47 Sita, 48 Yogacu@dama@ni, 49 Nirvana, 50 Ma@ndalabrahma@na, 51 Dak@si@namurtti, 52 S'arabha, 53 Skanda, 54 Tripadvibhutimahanarya@na, 55 Advayataraka, 56 Ramarahasya, 57 Ramapurvatapini, 58 Ramottaratapini, 59 Vasudeva, 60 Mudgala, 61 Sa@n@dilya, 62 Pai@ngala, 63 Bhik@suka, Maha, 65 S'ariraka, 66 Yogas'ikha, 67 Turiyatita, 68 Sa@mnyasa, 69 Paramaha@msaparivrajaka, 70 Ak@samala, 71 Avyakta, 72 Ekak@sara, 73 Annapurna, 74 Surya, 75 Aksi, 76 Adhyatma, 77 Ku@n@dika, 78 Savitri, 79 Atman, 80 Pa'supatabrahma, 81 Parabrahma, 82 Avadhuta, 83 Tripurarapini, 84 Devi, 85 Tripura, 86 Ka@tharudra, 87 Bhavana, 88 Rudrah@rdaya, 89 Yogaku@n@dali, 90 Bhasmajabala, 91 Rudrak@sajabala, 92 Ga@napati, 93 Jabaladars'ana, 94 Taiasara, 95 Mahavakya, 96 Paficabrahma, 97 Pra@nagnihotra, 98 Gopalapurvatapini, 99 Gopalottaratapini, 100 K@r@s@na, 101 Yajnavalkya, 102 Varaha, 103 S'athyayaniya, 104 Hayagriva, 105 Dattatreya, 106 Garu@da, 107 Kalisantara@na, 108 Jabali, 109 Saubhagyalak@smi, 110 Sarasvatirahasya, 111 Bahvrca, 112 Muktika.

The collection of Upani@sads translated by Dara shiko, Aurangzeb's brother, contained 50 Upani@sads. The Muktika Upani@sad gives a list of 108 Upani@sads. With the exception of the first 13 Upani@sads most of them are of more or less later date. The Upani@sads dealt with in this chapter are the earlier ones. Amongst the later ones there are some which repeat the purport of these, there are others which deal with the S'aiva, S'akta, the Yoga and the Vai@s@nava doctrines. These will be referred to in connection with the consideration of those systems in Volume II. The later Upani@sads which only repeat the purport of those dealt with in this chapter do not require further mention. Some of the later Upani@sads were composed even as late as the fourteenth or the fifteenth century.]

29

process of development and they were probably regarded as parts of one literature, in spite of the differences in their subject-matter. Deussen supposes that the principle of this division was to be found in this, that the Brahma@nas were intended for the householders, the Ara@nyakas for those who in their old age withdrew into the solitude of the forests and the Upani@sads for those who renounced the world to attain ultimate salvation by meditation. Whatever might be said about these literary classifications the ancient philosophers of India looked upon the Upani@sads as being of an entirely different type from the rest of the Vedic literature as dictating the path of knowledge (*jnana-marga*) as opposed to the path of works (*karma-marga*) which forms the content of the latter. It is not out of place here to mention that the orthodox Hindu view holds that whatever may be written in the Veda is to be interpreted as commandments to perform certain actions (*vidhi*) or prohibitions against

Page 29

committing certain others (*ni@sedha*). Even the stories or episodes are to be so interpreted that the real objects of their insertion might appear as only to praise the performance of the commandments and to blame the commission of the prohibitions. No person has any right to argue why any particular Vedic commandment is to be followed, for no reason can ever discover that, and it is only because reason fails to find out why a certain Vedic act leads to a certain effect that the Vedas have been revealed as commandments and prohibitions to show the true path of happiness. The Vedic teaching belongs therefore to that of the Karma-marga or the performance of Vedic duties of sacrifice, etc. The Upani@sads however do not require the performance of any action, but only reveal the ultimate truth and reality, a knowledge of which at once emancipates a man. Readers of Hindu philosophy are aware that there is a very strong controversy on this point between the adherents of the Vedanta (*Upani@sads*) and those of the Veda. For the latter seek in analogy to the other parts of the Vedic literature to establish the principle that the Upani@sads should not be regarded as an exception, but that they should also be so interpreted that they might also be held out as commending the performance of duties; but the former dissociate the Upani@sads from the rest of the Vedic literature and assert that they do not make the slightest reference to any Vedic duties, but only delineate the ultimate reality which reveals the highest knowledge in the minds of the deserving.

30

S'a@nkara the most eminent exponent of the Upani@sads holds that they are meant for such superior men who are already above worldly or heavenly prosperities, and for whom the Vedic duties have ceased to have any attraction. Wheresoever there may be such a deserving person, be he a student, a householder or an ascetic, for him the Upani@sads have been revealed for his ultimate emancipation and the true knowledge. Those who perform the Vedic duties belong to a stage inferior to those who no longer care for the fruits of the Vedic duties but are eager for final emancipation, and it is the latter who alone are fit to hear the Upani@sads [Footnote ref 1].

The names of the Upani@sads; Non-Brahmanic influence.

The Upani@sads are also known by another name Vedanta, as they are believed to be the last portions of the Vedas (*veda-anta*, end); it is by this name that the philosophy of the Upani@sads, the Vedanta philosophy, is so familiar to us. A modern student knows that in language the Upani@sads approach the classical Sanskrit; the ideas preached also show that they are the culmination of the intellectual achievement of a great epoch. As they thus formed the concluding parts of the Vedas they retained their Vedic names which they took from the name of the different schools or branches (*s'akha*) among which the Vedas were studied [Footnote ref 2]. Thus the Upani@sads attached to the Brahma@nas of the Aitareya and Kau@sitaki schools are called respectively

Aitareya and Kau@sitaki Upani@sads. Those of the Ta@n@dins and Talavakaras of the Sama-veda are called the Chandogya and Talavakara (or Kena) Upani@sads. Those of the Taittiriya school of the Yajurveda

Page 30

[Footnote 1: This is what is called the difference of fitness (*adhikaribheda*). Those who perform the sacrifices are not fit to hear the Upani@sads and those who are fit to hear the Upani@sads have no longer any necessity to perform the sacrificial duties.]

[Footnote 2: When the Sa@mhita texts had become substantially fixed, they were committed to memory in different parts of the country and transmitted from teacher to pupil along with directions for the practical performance of sacrificial duties. The latter formed the matter of prose compositions, the Brahma@nas. These however were gradually liable to diverse kinds of modifications according to the special tendencies and needs of the people among which they were recited. Thus after a time there occurred a great divergence in the readings of the texts of the Brahma@nas even of the same Veda among different people. These different schools were known by the name of particular S'akhas (e.g. Aitareya, Kau@sitaki) with which the Brahma@nas were associated or named. According to the divergence of the Brahma@nas of the different S'akhas there occurred the divergences of content and the length of the Upani@sads associated with them.]

31

form the Taittiriya and Mahanaraya@na, of the Ka@tha school the Ka@thaka, of the Maitraya@ni school the Maitraya@ni. The B@rhadara@nyaka Upani@sad forms part of the S'atapatha Brahma@na of the Vajasaneyi schools. The Is'a Upani@sad also belongs to the latter school. But the school to which the S'vetas'vatara belongs cannot be traced, and has probably been lost. The presumption with regard to these Upani@sads is that they represent the enlightened views of the particular schools among which they flourished, and under whose names they passed. A large number of Upani@sads of a comparatively later age were attached to the Atharva-Veda, most of which were named not according to the Vedic schools but according to the subject-matter with which they dealt [Footnote ref 1].

It may not be out of place here to mention that from the frequent episodes in the Upani@sads in which the Brahmins are described as having gone to the K@sattriyas for the highest knowledge of philosophy, as well as from the disparateness of the Upani@sad teachings from that of the general doctrines of the Brahma@nas and from the allusions to the existence of philosophical speculations amongst the people in Pali works, it may be inferred that among the K@sattriyas in general there existed earnest philosophic enquiries which must be regarded as having exerted an important influence in the formation of the Upani@sad doctrines. There is thus some probability in the supposition that though the Upani@sads are found directly incorporated with the

Brahmanas it was not the production of the growth of Brahmanic dogmas alone, but that non-Brahmanic thought as well must have either set the Upanishad doctrines afoot, or have rendered fruitful assistance to their formulation and cultivation, though they achieved their culmination in the hands of the Brahmins.

Page 31

Brahma@nas and the Early Upani@sads.

The passage of the Indian mind from the Brahmanic to the Upani@sad thought is probably the most remarkable event in the history of philosophic thought. We know that in the later Vedic hymns some monotheistic conceptions of great excellence were developed, but these differ in their nature from the absolutism of the Upani@sads as much as the Ptolemaic and the Copernican

[Footnote 1: Garbha Upani@sad, Atman Upani@sad, Pras'na Upani@sad, etc. There were however some exceptions such as the Ma@n@dukya, Jabala, Pai@ngala, S'aunaka, etc.]

32

systems in astronomy. The direct translation of Vis'vakarman or Hira@nyagarbha into the atman and the Brahman of the Upani@sads seems to me to be very improbable, though I am quite willing to admit that these conceptions were swallowed up by the atman doctrine when it had developed to a proper extent. Throughout the earlier Upani@sads no mention is to be found of Vis'vakarman, Hira@nyagarbha or Brahma@naspati and no reference of such a nature is to be found as can justify us in connecting the Upani@sad ideas with those conceptions [Footnote ref 1]. The word puru@sa no doubt occurs frequently in the Upani@sads, but the sense and the association that come along with it are widely different from that of the puru@sa of the Puru@sasukta of the @Rg-Veda.

When the @Rg-Veda describes Vis'vakarman it describes him as a creator from outside, a controller of mundane events, to whom they pray for worldly benefits. "What was the position, which and whence was the principle, from which the all-seeing Vis'vakarman produced the earth, and disclosed the sky by his might? The one god, who has on every side eyes, on every side a face, on every side arms, on every side feet, when producing the sky and earth, shapes them with his arms and with his wings....Do thou, Vis'vakarman, grant to thy friends those thy abodes which are the highest, and the lowest, and the middle...may a generous son remain here to us [Footnote ref 2]"; again in R.V.X. 82 we find "Vis'vakarman is wise, energetic, the creator, the disposer, and the highest object of intuition....He who is our father, our creator, disposer, who knows all spheres and creatures, who alone assigns to the gods their names, to him the other creatures resort for instruction [Footnote ref 3]." Again about Hira@nyagarbha we find in R.V.I. 121, "Hira@nyagarbha arose in the beginning; born, he was the one lord of things existing. He established the earth and this sky; to

what god shall we offer our oblation?... May he not injure us, he who is the generator of the earth, who ruling by fixed ordinances, produced the heavens, who produced the great and brilliant waters!—to what god, *etc.*? Prajapati, no other than thou is lord over all these created things: may we obtain that, through desire of which we have invoked thee; may we become masters of riches [Footnote ref 4].” Speaking of the puru@sa the @Rg-Veda

Page 32

[Footnote 1: The name Vis'vakarma appears in S'vet. IV. 17. Hira@nyagarbha appears in S'vet. III. 4 and IV. 12, but only as the first created being. The phrase Sarvahammani Hira@nyagarbha which Deussen refers to occurs only in the later N@rsi@m@h. 9. The word Brahma@naspati does not occur at all in the Upani@sads.]

[Footnote 2: Muir's *Sanskrit Texts*, vol. IV. pp. 6, 7.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* p, 7.]

[Footnote 4: *Ibid.* pp. 16, 17.]

33

says "Purusha has a thousand heads...a thousand eyes, and a thousand feet. On every side enveloping the earth he transcended [it] by a space of ten fingers....He formed those aerial creatures, and the animals, both wild and tame [Footnote ref 1]," etc. Even that famous hymn (R.V.x. 129) which begins with "There was then neither being nor non-being, there was no air nor sky above" ends with saying "From whence this creation came into being, whether it was created or not—he who is in the highest sky, its ruler, probably knows or does not know."

In the Upani@sads however, the position is entirely changed, and the centre of interest there is not in a creator from outside but in the self: the natural development of the monotheistic position of the Vedas could have grown into some form of developed theism, but not into the doctrine that the self was the only reality and that everything else was far below it. There is no relation here of the worshipper and the worshipped and no prayers are offered to it, but the whole quest is of the highest truth, and the true self of man is discovered as the greatest reality. This change of philosophical position seems to me to be a matter of great interest. This change of the mind from the objective to the subjective does not carry with it in the Upani@sads any elaborate philosophical discussions, or subtle analysis of mind. It comes there as a matter of direct perception, and the conviction with which the truth has been grasped cannot fail to impress the readers. That out of the apparently meaningless speculations of the Brahma@nas this doctrine could have developed, might indeed appear to be too improbable to be believed.

On the strength of the stories of Balaki Ga'rgya and Ajatas'atru (B@rh. II. i), S'vetaketu and Pravaha@na Jaibali (Cha. V. 3 and B@rh. VI. 2) and Aru@ni and As'vapati Kaikeya (Cha. V. 11) Garbe thinks "that it can be proven that the Brahman's

profoundest wisdom, the doctrine of All-one, which has exercised an unmistakable influence on the intellectual life even of our time, did not have its origin in the circle of Brahmans at all [Footnote ref 2]" and that "it took its rise in the ranks of the warrior caste [Footnote ref 3]." This if true would of course lead the development of the Upani@sads away from the influence of the Veda, Brahma@nas and the Ara@nyakas. But do the facts prove this? Let us briefly examine the evidences that Garbe himself

Page 33

[Footnote 1: Muir's *Sanskrit Texts*, vol. v. pp. 368, 371.]

[Footnote 2: Garbe's article, "*Hindu Monism*," p. 68.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* p. 78.]

34

self has produced. In the story of Balaki Gargya and Ajatas'atru (B@rh. II. 1) referred to by him, Balaki Gargya is a boastful man who wants to teach the K@sattriya Ajatas'atru the true Brahman, but fails and then wants it to be taught by him. To this Ajatas'atru replies (following Garbe's own translation) "it is contrary to the natural order that a Brahman receive instruction from a warrior and expect the latter to declare the Brahman to him [Footnote ref 1]." Does this not imply that in the natural order of things a Brahmin always taught the knowledge of Brahman to the K@sattriyas, and that it was unusual to find a Brahmin asking a K@sattriya about the true knowledge of Brahman? At the beginning of the conversation, Ajatas'atru had promised to pay Balaki one thousand coins if he could tell him about Brahman, since all people used to run to Janaka to speak about Brahman [Footnote ref 2]. The second story of S'vetaketu and Pravaha@na Jaibali seems to be fairly conclusive with regard to the fact that the transmigration doctrines, the way of the gods (*devayana*) and the way of the fathers (*pit@ryana*) had originated among the K@sattriyas, but it is without any relevancy with regard to the origin of the superior knowledge of Brahman as the true self.

The third story of Aru@ni and As'vapati Kaikeya (Cha. V. 11) is hardly more convincing, for here five Brahmins wishing to know what the Brahman and the self were, went to Uddalaka Aru@ni; but as he did not know sufficiently about it he accompanied them to the K@sattriya king As'vapati Kaikeya who was studying the subject. But As'vapati ends the conversation by giving them certain instructions about the fire doctrine (*vaisvanara agni*) and the import of its sacrifices. He does not say anything about the true self as Brahman. We ought also to consider that there are only the few exceptional cases where K@sattriya kings were instructing the Brahmins. But in all other cases the Brahmins were discussing and instructing the atman knowledge. I am thus led to think that Garbe owing to his bitterness of feeling against the Brahmins as expressed in the earlier part of the essay had been too hasty in his judgment. The opinion of Garbe seems to have been shared to some extent by Winternitz also, and the references given by him to the Upani@sad passages are also the same as we

[Footnote 1: Garbe's article, "*Hindu Monism*," p. 74.]

[Footnote 2: B@rh. II., compare also B@rh. IV. 3, how Yajnavalkya speaks to Janaka about the *brahmavidya*.]

35

Page 34

just examined [Footnote ref 1]. The truth seems to me to be this, that the K@sattriyas and even some women took interest in the religio-philosophical quest manifested in the Upani@sads. The enquirers were so eager that either in receiving the instruction of Brahman or in imparting it to others, they had no considerations of sex and birth [Footnote ref 2]; and there seems to be no definite evidence for thinking that the Upani@sad philosophy originated among the K@sattriyas or that the germs of its growth could not be traced in the Brahma@nas and the Ara@nyakas which were the productions of the Brahmins.

The change of the Brahma@na into the Ara@nyaka thought is signified by a transference of values from the actual sacrifices to their symbolic representations and meditations which were regarded as being productive of various earthly benefits. Thus we find in the B@rhudara@nyaka (I.1) that instead of a horse sacrifice the visible universe is to be conceived as a horse and meditated upon as such. The dawn is the head of the horse, the sun is the eye, wind is its life, fire is its mouth and the year is its soul, and so on. What is the horse that grazes in the field and to what good can its sacrifice lead? This moving universe is the horse which is most significant to the mind, and the meditation of it as such is the most suitable substitute of the sacrifice of the horse, the mere animal. Thought-activity as meditation, is here taking the place of an external worship in the form of sacrifices. The material substances and the most elaborate and accurate sacrificial rituals lost their value and bare meditations took their place. Side by side with the ritualistic sacrifices of the generality of the Brahmins, was springing up a system where thinking and symbolic meditations were taking the place of gross matter and action involved in sacrifices. These symbols were not only chosen from the external world as the sun, the wind, etc., from the body of man, his various vital functions and the senses, but even arbitrary alphabets were taken up and it was believed that the meditation of these as the highest and the greatest was productive of great beneficial results. Sacrifice in itself was losing value in the eyes of these men and diverse mystical significances and imports were beginning to be considered as their real truth [Footnote ref 3].

[Footnote 1: Winternitz's *Geschichte der indischen Litteratur*, I. pp. 197 ff.]

[Footnote 2: The story of Maitryi and Yajnavalikya (B@rh. II. 4) and that of Satyakama son of Jabala and his teacher (Cha. IV. 4).]

[Footnote 3: Cha. V. II.]

Page 35

The Uktha (verse) of @Rg-Veda was identified in the Aitareya Ara@nyaka under several allegorical forms with the Pra@na [Footnote ref 1], the Udgitha of the Samaveda was identified with Om, Pra@na, sun and eye; in Chandogya II. the Saman was identified with Om, rain, water, seasons, Pra@na, etc., in Chandogya III. 16-17 man was identified with sacrifice; his hunger, thirst, sorrow, with initiation; laughing, eating, etc., with the utterance of the Mantras; and asceticism, gift, sincerity, restraint from injury, truth, with sacrificial fees (*dak@si@na*). The gifted mind of these cultured Vedic Indians was anxious to come to some unity, but logical precision of thought had not developed, and as a result of that we find in the Ara@nyakas the most grotesque and fanciful unifications of things which to our eyes have little or no connection. Any kind of instrumentality in producing an effect was often considered as pure identity. Thus in Ait. Ara@n. II. 1. 3 we find "Then comes the origin of food. The seed of Prajapati are the gods. The seed of the gods is rain. The seed of rain is herbs. The seed of herbs is food. The seed of food is seed. The seed of seed is creatures. The seed of creatures is the heart. The seed of the heart is the mind. The seed of the mind is speech. The seed of speech is action. The act done is this man the abode of Brahman [Footnote ref 2]."

The word Brahman according to Saya@na meant mantras (magical verses), the ceremonies, the hot@r priest, the great. Hillebrandt points out that it is spoken of in R.V. as being new, "as not having hitherto existed," and as "coming into being from the fathers." It originates from the seat of the @Rta, springs forth at the sound of the sacrifice, begins really to exist when the soma juice is pressed and the hymns are recited at the savana rite, endures with the help of the gods even in battle, and soma is its guardian (R.V. VIII. 37. 1, VIII. 69. 9, VI. 23. 5, 1. 47. 2, VII. 22. 9, VI. 52. 3, etc.). On the strength of these Hillebrandt justifies the conjecture of Haug that it signifies a mysterious power which can be called forth by various ceremonies, and his definition of it, as the magical force which is derived from the orderly cooperation of the hymns, the chants and the sacrificial gifts [Footnote ref 3]. I am disposed to think that this meaning is closely connected with the meaning as we find it in many passages in the Ara@nyakas and the Upani@sads. The meaning in many of these seems to be midway between

[Footnote 1: Ait. Ara@n. II 1-3.]

[Footnote 2: Keith's *Translation of Aitareya Aranyaka*.]

[Footnote 3: Hillebrandt's article on Brahman, *E.R.E.*.]

“magical force” and “great,” transition between which is rather easy. Even when the sacrifices began to be replaced by meditations, the old belief in the power of the sacrifices still remained, and as a result of that we find that in many passages of the Upani@sads people are thinking of meditating upon this great force “Brahman” as being identified with diverse symbols, natural objects, parts and functions of the body.

Page 36

When the main interest of sacrifice was transferred from its actual performance in the external world to certain forms of meditation, we find that the understanding of particular allegories of sacrifice having a relation to particular kinds of bodily functions was regarded as Brahman, without a knowledge of which nothing could be obtained. The fact that these allegorical interpretations of the Pancagnividya are so much referred to in the Upani@sads as a secret doctrine, shows that some people came to think that the real efficacy of sacrifices depended upon such meditations. When the sages rose to the culminating conception, that he is really ignorant who thinks the gods to be different from him, they thought that as each man was nourished by many beasts, so the gods were nourished by each man, and as it is unpleasant for a man if any of his beasts are taken away, so it is unpleasant for the gods that men should know this great truth. [Footnote ref 1].

In the Kena we find it indicated that all the powers of the gods such as that of Agni (fire) to burn, Vayu (wind) to blow, depended upon Brahman, and that it is through Brahman that all the gods and all the senses of man could work. The whole process of Upani@sad thought shows that the magic power of sacrifices as associated with @Rta (unalterable law) was being abstracted from the sacrifices and conceived as the supreme power. There are many stories in the Upani@sads of the search after the nature of this great power the Brahman, which was at first only imperfectly realized. They identified it with the dominating power of the natural objects of wonder, the sun, the moon, etc. with bodily and mental functions and with various symbolical representations, and deluded themselves for a time with the idea that these were satisfactory. But as these were gradually found inadequate, they came to the final solution, and the doctrine of the inner self of man as being the highest truth the Brahman originated.

[Footnote 1: B@rh. I. 4. 10.]

The meaning of the word Upani@sad.

The word Upani@sad is derived from the root *sad* with the prefix *ni* (to sit), and Max Muller says that the word originally meant the act of sitting down near a teacher and of submissively listening to him. In his introduction to the Upani@sads he says, "The history and the genius of the Sanskrit language leave little doubt that Upani@sad meant originally session, particularly a session consisting of pupils, assembled at a respectful distance round their teacher [Footnote ref 1]." Deussen points out that the word means

“secret” or “secret instruction,” and this is borne out by many of the passages of the Upani@sads themselves. Max Muller also agrees that the word was used in this sense in the Upani@sads [Footnote ref 2]. There we find that great injunctions of secrecy are to be

Page 37

observed for the communication of the doctrines, and it is said that it should only be given to a student or pupil who by his supreme moral restraint and noble desires proves himself deserving to hear them. S'ankara however, the great Indian exponent of the Upani@sads, derives the word from the root *sad* to destroy and supposes that it is so called because it destroys inborn ignorance and leads to salvation by revealing the right knowledge. But if we compare the many texts in which the word Upani@sad occurs in the Upani@sads themselves it seems that Deussen's meaning is fully justified [Footnote ref 3].

The composition and growth of diverse Upani@sads.

The oldest Upani@sads are written in prose. Next to these we have some in verses very similar to those that are to be found in classical Sanskrit. As is easy to see, the older the Upani@sad the more archaic is it in its language. The earliest Upani@sads have an almost mysterious forcefulness in their expressions at least to Indian ears. They are simple, pithy and penetrate to the heart. We can read and read them over again without getting tired. The lines are always as fresh as ever. As such they have a charm apart from the value of the ideas they intend to convey. The word Upani@sad was used, as we have seen, in the sense of "secret doctrine or instruction"; the Upani@sad teachings were also intended to be conveyed in strictest secrecy to earnest enquirers of high morals and superior self-restraint for the purpose of achieving

[Footnote 1: Max Muller's *Translation of the Upanishads*, S.B.E. vol. I.p. lxxxi.]

[Footnote 2: S. B.E. vol. I, p lxxxi.]

[Footnote 3: Deussen's *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, pp. 10-15.]

39

emancipation. It was thus that the Upani@sad style of expression, when it once came into use, came to possess the greatest charm and attraction for earnest religious people; and as a result of that we find that even when other forms of prose and verse had been adapted for the Sanskrit language, the Upani@sad form of composition had not stopped. Thus though the earliest Upani@sads were compiled by 500 B C., they continued to be written even so late as the spread of Mahommedan influence in India. The earliest and most important are probably those that have been commented upon by

S'ankara namely B@rhadara@nyaka, Chandogya, Aitareya, Taittiriya, Is'a, Kena, Katha, Pras'na, Mundaka and Mandukya [Footnote ref 1]. It is important to note in this connection that the separate Upani@sads differ much from one another with regard to their content and methods of exposition. Thus while some of them are busy laying great stress upon the monistic doctrine of the self as the only reality, there are others which lay stress upon the practice of Yoga, asceticism, the cult of S'iva, of Visnu and the philosophy or anatomy of the body, and may thus be respectively called the Yoga, S'aiva, Visnu and S'arira Upani@sads. These in all make up the number to one hundred and eight.

Page 38

Revival of Upani@sad studies in modern times.

How the Upani@sads came to be introduced into Europe is an interesting story. Dara Shiko, the eldest son of the Emperor Shah Jahan, heard of the Upani@sads during his stay in Kashmir in 1640. He invited several Pandits from Benares to Delhi, who undertook the work of translating them into Persian. In 1775 Anquetil Duperron, the discoverer of the Zend Avesta, received a manuscript of it presented to him by his friend Le Gentil, the French resident in Faizabad at the court of Shuja-uddaulah. Anquetil translated it into Latin which was published in 1801-1802. This translation though largely unintelligible was read by Schopenhauer with great enthusiasm. It had, as Schopenhauer himself admits, profoundly influenced his philosophy. Thus he

[Footnote 1: Deussen supposes that Kausitaki is also one of the earliest. Max Mueller and Schroeder think that Maitray@ni also belongs to the earliest group, whereas Deussen counts it as a comparatively later production. Winternitz divides the Upani@sads into four periods. In the first period he includes B@rhadara@nyaka, Chandogya, Taittiriya, Aitareya, Kausitaki and Kena. In that second he includes Ka@thaka, Is'a, S'vetas'vatara, Mu@ndaka, Mahanarayana, and in the third period he includes Pras'na, Maitraya@ni and Man@dukya. The rest of the Upani@sads he includes in the fourth period.]

40

writes in the preface to his *Welt als Wille und Vorstellung* [Footnote ref 1], "And if, indeed, in addition to this he is a partaker of the benefit conferred by the Vedas, the access to which, opened to us through the Upanishads, is in my eyes the greatest advantage which this still young century enjoys over previous ones, because I believe that the influence of the Sanskrit literature will penetrate not less deeply than did the revival of Greek literature in the fifteenth century: if, I say, the reader has also already received and assimilated the sacred, primitive Indian wisdom, then is he best of all prepared to hear what I have to say to him....I might express the opinion that each one of the individual and disconnected aphorisms which make up the Upanishads may be deduced as a consequence from the thought I am going to impart, though the converse, that my thought is to be found in the Upanishads is by no means the case." Again, "How does every line display its firm, definite, and throughout harmonious meaning! From every sentence deep, original, and sublime thoughts arise, and the whole is pervaded by a high and holy and earnest spirit....In the whole world there is no study, except that of the originals, so beneficial and so elevating as that of the Oupanikhat. It has been the solace of my life, it will be the solace of my death! [Footnote ref 2]"

Through Schopenhauer the study of the Upani@sads attracted much attention in Germany and with the growth of a general interest in the study of Sanskrit, they found their way into other parts of Europe as well.

Page 39

The study of the Upani@sads has however gained a great impetus by the earnest attempts of our Ram Mohan Roy who not only translated them into Bengali, Hindi and English and published them at his own expense, but founded the Brahma Samaj in Bengal, the main religious doctrines of which were derived directly from the Upani@sads.

[Footnote 1: Translation by Haldane and Kemp, vol. I. pp. xii and xiii.]

[Footnote 2: Max Muller says in his introduction to the Upanishada (-S.B.E. I p. lxii; see also pp. lx, lxi) "that Schopenhauer should have spoken of the Upanishads as 'products of the highest wisdom'...that he should have placed the pantheism there taught high above the pantheism of Bruno, Malebranche, Spinoza and Scotus Erigena, as brought to light again at Oxford in 1681, may perhaps secure a more considerate reception for those relics of ancient wisdom than anything that I could say in their favour."]

41

The Upani@sads and their interpretations.

Before entering into the philosophy of the Upani@sads it may be worth while to say a few words as to the reason why diverse and even contradictory explanations as to the real import of the Upani@sads had been offered by the great Indian scholars of past times. The Upani@sads, as we have seen, formed the concluding portion of the revealed Vedic literature, and were thus called the Vedanta. It was almost universally believed by the Hindus that the highest truths could only be found in the revelation of the Vedas. Reason was regarded generally as occupying a comparatively subservient place, and its proper use was to be found in its judicious employment in getting out the real meaning of the apparently conflicting ideas of the Vedas. The highest knowledge of ultimate truth and reality was thus regarded as having been once for all declared in the Upani@sads. Reason had only to unravel it in the light of experience. It is important that readers of Hindu philosophy should bear in mind the contrast that it presents to the ruling idea of the modern world that new truths are discovered by reason and experience every day, and even in those cases where the old truths remain, they change their hue and character every day, and that in matters of ultimate truths no finality can ever be achieved; we are to be content only with as much as comes before the purview of our reason and experience at the time. It was therefore thought to be extremely audacious that any person howsoever learned and brilliant he might be should have any right to say anything regarding the highest truths simply on the authority of his own opinion or the reasons that he might offer. In order to make himself

heard it was necessary for him to show from the texts of the Upani@sads that they supported him, and that their purport was also the same. Thus it was that most schools of Hindu philosophy found it one of their principal duties to interpret the Upani@sads in order to show that they alone represented the true Vedanta doctrines. Any one who should feel himself persuaded by the interpretations of any particular school might say that in following that school he was following the Vedanta.

Page 40

The difficulty of assuring oneself that any interpretation is absolutely the right one is enhanced by the fact that germs of diverse kinds of thoughts are found scattered over the Upani@sads

42

which are not worked out in a systematic manner. Thus each interpreter in his turn made the texts favourable to his own doctrines prominent and brought them to the forefront, and tried to repress others or explain them away. But comparing the various systems of Upani@sad interpretation we find that the interpretation offered by S'a@nkara very largely represents the view of the general body of the earlier Upani@sad doctrines, though there are some which distinctly foreshadow the doctrines of other systems, but in a crude and germinal form. It is thus that Vedanta is generally associated with the interpretation of S'a@nkara and S'a@nkara's system of thought is called the Vedanta system, though there are many other systems which put forth their claim as representing the true Vedanta doctrines.

Under these circumstances it is necessary that a modern interpreter of the Upani@sads should turn a deaf ear to the absolute claims of these exponents, and look upon the Upani@sads not as a systematic treatise but as a repository of diverse currents of thought—the melting pot in which all later philosophic ideas were still in a state of fusion, though the monistic doctrine of S'a@nkara, or rather an approach thereto, may be regarded as the purport of by far the largest majority of the texts. It will be better that a modern interpreter should not agree to the claims of the ancients that all the Upani@sads represent a connected system, but take the texts independently and separately and determine their meanings, though keeping an attentive eye on the context in which they appear. It is in this way alone that we can detect the germs of the thoughts of other Indian systems in the Upani@sads, and thus find in them the earliest records of those tendencies of thoughts.

The quest after Brahman: the struggle and the failures.

The fundamental idea which runs through the early Upani@sads is that underlying the exterior world of change there is an unchangeable reality which is identical with that which underlies the essence in man [Footnote ref 1]. If we look at Greek philosophy in Parmenides or Plato or at modern philosophy in Kant, we find the same tendency towards glorifying one unspeakable entity as the reality or the essence. I have said above that the Upani@sads are

[Footnote 1: B@rh. IV. 4. 5. 22.

43

no systematic treatises of a single hand, but are rather collations or compilations of floating monologues, dialogues or anecdotes. There are no doubt here and there simple discussions but there is no pedantry or gymnastics of logic. Even the most casual reader cannot but be struck with the earnestness and enthusiasm of the sages. They run from place to place with great eagerness in search of a teacher competent to instruct them about the nature of Brahman. Where is Brahman? What is his nature?

Page 41

We have noticed that during the closing period of the Sa@mhita there were people who had risen to the conception of a single creator and controller of the universe, variously called Prajapati, Vis'vakarman, Puru@sa, Brahma@naspasi and Brahman. But this divine controller was yet only a deity. The search as to the nature of this deity began in the Upani@sads. Many visible objects of nature such as the sun or the wind on one hand and the various psychological functions in man were tried, but none could render satisfaction to the great ideal that had been aroused. The sages in the Upani@sad had already started with the idea that there was a supreme controller or essence presiding over man and the universe. But what was its nature? Could it be identified with any of the deities of Nature, was it a new deity or was it no deity at all? The Upani@sads present to us the history of this quest and the results that were achieved.

When we look merely to this quest we find that we have not yet gone out of the Ara@nyaka ideas and of symbolic (*pratika*) forms of worship. *Pra@na* (vital breath) was regarded as the most essential function for the life of man, and many anecdotes are related to show that it is superior to the other organs, such as the eye or ear, and that on it all other functions depend. This recognition of the superiority of *pra@na* brings us to the meditations on *pra@na* as Brahman as leading to the most beneficial results. So also we find that owing to the presence of the exalting characters of omnipresence and eternity *akas'a* (space) is meditated upon as Brahman. So also *manas* and *Aditya* (sun) are meditated upon as Brahman. Again side by side with the visible material representation of Brahman as the pervading *Vayu*, or the sun and the immaterial representation as *akas'a*, *manas* or *pra@na*, we find also the various kinds of meditations as substitutes for actual sacrifice. Thus it is that there was an earnest quest after the discovery of Brahman. We find a stratum of thought

44

which shows that the sages were still blinded by the old ritualistic associations, and though meditation had taken the place of sacrifice yet this was hardly adequate for the highest attainment of Brahman.

Next to the failure of the meditations we have to notice the history of the search after Brahman in which the sages sought to identify Brahman with the presiding deity of the sun, moon, lightning, ether, wind, fire, water, *etc.*, and failed; for none of these could satisfy the ideal they cherished of Brahman. It is indeed needless here to multiply these examples, for they are tiresome not only in this summary treatment but in the original as well. They are of value only in this that they indicate how toilsome was the process by which the old ritualistic associations could be got rid of; what struggles and failures the sages had to undergo before they reached a knowledge of the true nature of Brahman.

Page 42

Unknowability of Brahman and the Negative Method.

It is indeed true that the magical element involved in the discharge of sacrificial duties lingered for a while in the symbolic worship of Brahman in which He was conceived almost as a deity. The minds of the Vedic poets so long accustomed to worship deities of visible manifestation could not easily dispense with the idea of seeking after a positive and definite content of Brahman. They tried some of the sublime powers of nature and also many symbols, but these could not render ultimate satisfaction. They did not know what the Brahman was like, for they had only a dim and dreamy vision of it in the deep craving of their souls which could not be translated into permanent terms. But this was enough to lead them on to the goal, for they could not be satisfied with anything short of the highest.

They found that by whatever means they tried to give a positive and definite content of the ultimate reality, the Brahman, they failed. Positive definitions were impossible. They could not point out what the Brahman was like in order to give an utterance to that which was unutterable, they could only say that it was not like aught that we find in experience. Yajnavalkya said "He the atman is not this, nor this (*neti neti*). He is inconceivable, for he cannot be conceived, unchangeable, for he is not changed, untouched, for nothing touches him; he cannot suffer by a stroke

45

of the sword, he cannot suffer any injury [Footnote ref 1]." He is *asat*, non-being, for the being which Brahman is, is not to be understood as such being as is known to us by experience; yet he is being, for he alone is supremely real, for the universe subsists by him. We ourselves are but he, and yet we know not what he is. Whatever we can experience, whatever we can express, is limited, but he is the unlimited, the basis of all. "That which is inaudible, intangible, invisible, indestructible, which cannot be tasted, nor smelt, eternal, without beginning or end, greater than the great (*mahat*), the fixed. He who knows it is released from the jaws of death [Footnote ref 2]." Space, time and causality do not appertain to him, for he at once forms their essence and transcends them. He is the infinite and the vast, yet the smallest of the small, at once here as there, there as here; no characterisation of him is possible, otherwise than by the denial to him of all empirical attributes, relations and definitions. He is independent of all limitations of space, time, and cause which rules all that is objectively presented, and therefore the empirical universe. When Bahva was questioned by Va@skali, he expounded the nature of Brahman to him by maintaining silence—"Teach me," said Va@skali, "most reverent sir, the nature of Brahman." Bahva however remained silent. But when the question was put forth a second or third time he answered, "I teach you indeed but you do not understand; the Atman is silence [Footnote ref 3]." The way to indicate it is thus by *neti neti*, it is not this, it is not this. We cannot describe it by any positive content which is always limited by conceptual thought.

Page 43

The Atman doctrine.

The sum and substance of the Upani@sad teaching is involved in the equation Atman=Brahman. We have already seen that the word Atman was used in the @Rg-Veda to denote on the one hand the ultimate essence of the universe, and on the other the vital breath in man. Later on in the Upani@sads we see that the word Brahman is generally used in the former sense, while the word Atman is reserved to denote the inmost essence in man, and the

[Footnote 1: B@rh. IV. 5. 15. Deussen, Max Muller and Roer have all misinterpreted this passage; *asito* has been interpreted as an adjective or participle, though no evidence has ever been adduced; it is evidently the ablative of *asi*, a sword.]

[Footnote 2: Ka@tha III. 15.]

[Footnote 3: Sa@nkara on *Brahmasutra*, III. 2. 17, and also Deussen, *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 156.]

46

Upani@sads are emphatic in their declaration that the two are one and the same. But what is the inmost essence of man? The self of man involves an ambiguity, as it is used in a variety of senses. Thus so far as man consists of the essence of food (i.e. the physical parts of man) he is called *annamaya*. But behind the sheath of this body there is the other self consisting of the vital breath which is called the self as vital breath (*pra@namaya atman*). Behind this again there is the other self “consisting of will” called the *manomaya atman*. This again contains within it the self “consisting of consciousness” called the *vijnanamaya atman*. But behind it we come to the final essence the self as pure bliss (the *anandamaya atman*). The texts say: “Truly he is the rapture; for whoever gets this rapture becomes blissful. For who could live, who could breathe if this space (*akas’a*) was not bliss? For it is he who behaves as bliss. For whoever in that Invisible, Self-surpassing, Unspeakable, Supportless finds fearless support, he really becomes fearless. But whoever finds even a slight difference, between himself and this Atman there is fear for him [Footnote ref 1].”

Again in another place we find that Prajapati said: “The self (*atman*) which is free from sin, free from old age, from death and grief, from hunger and thirst, whose desires are true, whose cogitations are true, that is to be searched for, that is to be enquired; he gets all his desires and all worlds who knows that self [Footnote ref 2].” The gods and

the demons on hearing of this sent Indra and Virocana respectively as their representatives to enquire of this self from Prajapati. He agreed to teach them, and asked them to look into a vessel of water and tell him how much of self they could find. They answered: "We see, this our whole self, even to the hair, and to the nails." And he said, "Well, that is the self, that is the

Page 44

deathless and the fearless, that is the Brahman.” They went away pleased, but Prajapati thought, “There they go away, without having discovered, without having realized the self.” Virocana came away with the conviction that the body was the self; but Indra did not return back to the gods, he was afraid and pestered with doubts and came back to Prajapati and said, “just as the self becomes decorated when the body is decorated, well-dressed when the body is well-dressed, well-cleaned when the body is well-cleaned, even so that image self will be blind when the body is blind, injured in one eye when the body is injured in one eye, and mutilated when the body is mutilated, and it perishes

[Footnote 1: Taitt. II. 7.]

[Footnote 2: Cha. VIII. 7. 1.]

47

when the body perishes, therefore I can see no good in this theory.” Prajapati then gave him a higher instruction about the self, and said, “He who goes about enjoying dreams, he is the self, this is the deathless, the fearless, this is Brahman.” Indra departed but was again disturbed with doubts, and was afraid and came back and said “that though the dream self does not become blind when the body is blind, or injured in one eye when the body is so injured and is not affected by its defects, and is not killed by its destruction, but yet it is as if it was overwhelmed, as if it suffered and as if it wept—in this I see no good.” Prajapati gave a still higher instruction: “When a man, fast asleep, in total contentment, does not know any dreams, this is the self, this is the deathless, the fearless, this is Brahman.” Indra departed but was again filled with doubts on the way, and returned again and said “the self in deep sleep does not know himself, that I am this, nor does he know any other existing objects. He is destroyed and lost. I see no good in this.” And now Prajapati after having given a course of successively higher instructions as self as the body, as the self in dreams and as the self in deep dreamless sleep, and having found that the enquirer in each case could find out that this was not the ultimate truth about the self that he was seeking, ultimately gave him the ultimate and final instruction about the full truth about the self, and said “this body is the support of the deathless and the bodiless self. The self as embodied is affected by pleasure and pain, the self when associated with the body cannot get rid of pleasure and pain, but pleasure and pain do not touch the bodiless self [Footnote ref 1].”

Page 45

As the anecdote shows, they sought such a constant and unchangeable essence in man as was beyond the limits of any change. This inmost essence has sometimes been described as pure subject-object-less consciousness, the reality, and the bliss. He is the seer of all seeing, the hearer of all hearing and the knower of all knowledge. He sees but is not seen, hears but is not heard, knows but is not known. He is the light of all lights. He is like a lump of salt, with no inner or outer, which consists through and through entirely of savour; as in truth this Atman has no inner or outer, but consists through and through entirely of knowledge. Bliss is not an attribute of it but it is bliss itself. The state of Brahman is thus likened unto the state of dreamless sleep. And he who has reached this bliss is beyond any fear. It is dearer to us than

[Footnote 1: Cha. VIII. 7-12.]

48

son, brother, wife, or husband, wealth or prosperity. It is for it and by it that things appear dear to us. It is the dearest *par excellence*, our inmost Atman. All limitation is fraught with pain; it is the infinite alone that is the highest bliss. When a man receives this rapture, then is he full of bliss; for who could breathe, who live, if that bliss had not filled this void (*akas'a*)? It is he who behaves as bliss. For when a man finds his peace, his fearless support in that invisible, supportless, inexpressible, unspeakable one, then has he attained peace.

Place of Brahman in the Upani@sads.

There is the atman not in man alone but in all objects of the universe, the sun, the moon, the world; and Brahman is this atman. There is nothing outside the atman, and therefore there is no plurality at all. As from a lump of clay all that is made of clay is known, as from an ingot of black iron all that is made of black iron is known, so when this atman the Brahman is known everything else is known. The essence in man and the essence of the universe are one and the same, and it is Brahman.

Now a question may arise as to what may be called the nature of the phenomenal world of colour, sound, taste, and smell. But we must also remember that the Upani@sads do not represent so much a conceptional system of philosophy as visions of the seers who are possessed by the spirit of this Brahman. They do not notice even the contradiction between the Brahman as unity and nature in its diversity. When the empirical aspect of diversity attracts their notice, they affirm it and yet declare that it is all Brahman. From Brahman it has come forth and to it will it return. He has himself created it out of himself

and then entered into it as its inner controller (*antaryamin*). Here is thus a glaring dualistic trait of the world of matter and Brahman as its controller, though in other places we find it asserted most emphatically

Page 46

that these are but names and forms, and when Brahman is known everything else is known. No attempts at reconciliation are made for the sake of the consistency of conceptual utterance, as S'a@nkara the great professor of Vedanta does by explaining away the dualistic texts. The universe is said to be a reality, but the real in it is Brahman alone. It is on account of Brahman that the fire burns and the wind blows. He is the active principle in the entire universe, and yet the most passive and unmoved. The

49

world is his body, yet he is the soul within. "He creates all, wills all, smells all, tastes all, he has pervaded all, silent and unaffected [Footnote ref 1]." He is below, above, in the back, in front, in the south and in the north, he is all this [Footnote ref 2]." These rivers in the east and in the west originating from the ocean, return back into it and become the ocean themselves, though they do not know that they are so. So also all these people coming into being from the Being do not know that they have come from the Being...That which is the subtlest that is the self, that is all this, the truth, that self thou art O S'vetaketu [Footnote ref 3]." "Brahman," as Deussen points out, "was regarded as the cause antecedent in time, and the universe as the effect proceeding from it; the inner dependence of the universe on Brahman and its essential identity with him was represented as a creation of the universe by and out of Brahman." Thus it is said in Mund. I.I. 7:

As a spider ejects and retracts (the threads),
As the plants shoot forth on the earth,
As the hairs on the head and body of the living man,
So from the imperishable all that is here.
As the sparks from the well-kindled fire,
In nature akin to it, spring forth in their thousands,
So, my dear sir, from the imperishable
Living beings of many kinds go forth,
And again return into him [Footnote ref 4].

Yet this world principle is the dearest to us and the highest teaching of the Upani@sads is "That art thou."

Again the growth of the doctrine that Brahman is the "inner controller" in all the parts and forces of nature and of mankind as the atman thereof, and that all the effects of the universe are the result of his commands which no one can outstep, gave rise to a theistic current of thought in which Brahman is held as standing aloof as God and controlling the world. It is by his ordaining, it is said, that the sun and moon are held together, and the sky and earth stand held together [Footnote ref 5]. God and soul are distinguished again in the famous verse of S'vetas'vatara [Footnote ref 6]:



Two bright-feathered bosom friends
Flit around one and the same tree;
One of them tastes the sweet berries,
The other without eating merely gazes down.

[Footnote 1: Cha. III. 14. 4.]

Page 47

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* VII. 25. i; also Mu@n@daka II. 2. ii.]

[Footnote 3: Cha. VI. 10.]

[Footnote 4: Deussen's translation in *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 164.]

[Footnote 5: B@rh. III. 8. i.]

[Footnote 6: S'vetas'vatara IV. 6, and Mu@n@daka III. i, 1, also Deussen's translation in *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 177.]

50

But in spite of this apparent theistic tendency and the occasional use of the word *Is'a* or *Is'ana*, there seems to be no doubt that theism in its true sense was never prominent, and this acknowledgement of a supreme Lord was also an offshoot of the exalted position of the atman as the supreme principle. Thus we read in Kau@sitaki Upani@sad 3. 9, "He is not great by good deeds nor low by evil deeds, but it is he makes one do good deeds whom he wants to raise, and makes him commit bad deeds whom he wants to lower down. He is the protector of the universe, he is the master of the world and the lord of all; he is my soul (*atman*).” Thus the lord in spite of his greatness is still my soul. There are again other passages which regard Brahman as being at once immanent and transcendent. Thus it is said that there is that eternally existing tree whose roots grow upward and whose branches grow downward. All the universes are supported in it and no one can transcend it. This is that, "...from its fear the fire burns, the sun shines, and from its fear Indra, Vayu and Death the fifth (with the other two) run on [Footnote ref 1]."

If we overlook the different shades in the development of the conception of Brahman in the Upani@sads and look to the main currents, we find that the strongest current of thought which has found expression in the majority of the texts is this that the Atman or the Brahman is the only reality and that besides this everything else is unreal. The other current of thought which is to be found in many of the texts is the pantheistic creed that identifies the universe with the Atman or Brahman. The third current is that of theism which looks upon Brahman as the Lord controlling the world. It is because these ideas were still in the melting pot, in which none of them were systematically worked out, that the later exponents of Vedanta, S'a@nkara, Ramanuja, and others quarrelled over the meanings of texts in order to develop a consistent systematic philosophy out of them. Thus it is that the doctrine of Maya which is slightly hinted at once in B@rhadara@nyaka and thrice in S'vetas'vatara, becomes the foundation of S'a@nkara's philosophy of the Vedanta in which Brahman alone is real and all else beside him is unreal [Footnote ref 2].

[Footnote 1: Ka@tha II. 6. 1 and 3.]

[Footnote 2: B@rh. II. 5. 19, S'vet. I. 10, IV. 9, 10.]

51

The World.

Page 48

We have already seen that the universe has come out of Brahman, has its essence in Brahman, and will also return back to it. But in spite of its existence as Brahman its character as represented to experience could not be denied. S'a@nkara held that the Upani@sads referred to the external world and accorded a reality to it consciously with the purpose of treating it as merely relatively real, which will eventually appear as unreal as soon as the ultimate truth, the Brahman, is known. This however remains to be modified to this extent that the sages had not probably any conscious purpose of according a relative reality to the phenomenal world, but in spite of regarding Brahman as the highest reality they could not ignore the claims of the exterior world, and had to accord a reality to it. The inconsistency of this reality of the phenomenal world with the ultimate and only reality of Brahman was attempted to be reconciled by holding that this world is not beside him but it has come out of him, it is maintained in him and it will return back to him.

The world is sometimes spoken of in its twofold aspect, the organic and the inorganic. All organic things, whether plants, animals or men, have souls [Footnote ref 1]. Brahman desiring to be many created fire (*tejas*), water (*ap*) and earth (*k@siti*). Then the self-existent Brahman entered into these three, and it is by their combination that all other bodies are formed [Footnote ref 2]. So all other things are produced as a result of an alloying or compounding of the parts of these three together. In this theory of the threefold division of the primitive elements lies the earliest germ of the later distinction (especially in the Sa@mkhya school) of pure infinitesimal substances (*tanmatra*) and gross elements, and the theory that each gross substance is composed of the atoms of the primary elements. And in Pras'na IV. 8 we find the gross elements distinguished from their subtler natures, e.g. earth (*p@rthivi*), and the subtler state of earth (*p@rthivimatra*). In the Taittiriya, II. 1, however, ether (*akas'a*) is also described as proceeding from Brahman, and the other elements, air, fire, water, and earth, are described as each proceeding directly from the one which directly preceded it.

[Footnote 1: Cha. VI.11.]

[Footnote 2: *ibid.* VI.2,3,4.]

firstborn of creation from the primeval waters. This being has twice been referred to in the S'vetas'vatara, in III. 4 and IV. 12. It is indeed very strange that this being is not referred to in any of the earlier Upani@sads. In the two passages in which he has been spoken of,

Page 49

his mythical character is apparent. He is regarded as one of the earlier products in the process of cosmic creation, but his importance from the point of view of the development of the theory of Brahman or Atman is almost nothing. The fact that neither the Puru@sa, nor the Vis'vakarma, nor the Hira@nyagarbha played an important part in the earlier development of the Upani@sads leads me to think that the Upani@sad doctrines were not directly developed from the monotheistic tendencies of the later @Rg-Veda speculations. The passages in S'vetas'vatara clearly show how from the supreme eminence that he had in R.V.X. 121, Hira@nyagarbha had been brought to the level of one of the created beings. Deussen in explaining the philosophical significance of the Hira@nyagarbha doctrine of the Upani@sads says that the "entire objective universe is possible only in so far as it is sustained by a knowing subject. This subject as a sustainer of the objective universe is manifested in all individual objects but is by no means identical with them. For the individual objects pass away but the objective universe continues to exist without them; there exists therefore the eternal knowing subject also (*hira@nyagarbha*) by whom it is sustained. Space and time are derived from this subject. It is itself accordingly not in space and does not belong to time, and therefore from an empirical point of view it is in general non-existent; it has no empirical but only a metaphysical reality [Footnote ref 1]." This however seems to me to be wholly irrelevant, since the Hira@nyagarbha doctrine cannot be supposed to have any philosophical importance in the Upani@sads.

The Theory of Causation.

There was practically no systematic theory of causation in the Upani@sads. S'a@nkara, the later exponent of Vedanta philosophy, always tried to show that the Upani@sads looked upon the cause

[Footnote 1: Deussen's *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 201.]

as mere ground of change which though unchanged in itself in reality had only an appearance of suffering change. This he did on the strength of a series of examples in the Chandogya Upani@sad (VI. 1) in which the material cause, e.g. the clay, is spoken of as the only reality in all its transformations as the pot, the jug or the plate. It is said that though there are so many diversities of appearance that one is called the plate, the other the pot, and the other the jug, yet these are only empty distinctions of name and

form, for the only thing real in them is the earth which in its essence remains ever the same whether you call it the pot, plate, or Jug. So it is that the ultimate cause, the unchangeable Brahman, remains ever constant, though it may appear to suffer change as the manifold world outside. This world is thus only an unsubstantial appearance, a mirage imposed upon Brahman, the real *par excellence*.

Page 50

It seems however that though such a view may be regarded as having been expounded in the Upani@sads in an imperfect manner, there is also side by side the other view which looks upon the effect as the product of a real change wrought in the cause itself through the action and combination of the elements of diversity in it. Thus when the different objects of nature have been spoken of in one place as the product of the combination of the three elements fire, water and earth, the effect signifies a real change produced by their compounding. This is in germ (as we shall see hereafter) the Pari@nama theory of causation advocated by the Sa@mkhya school [Footnote ref 1].

Doctrine of Transmigration.

When the Vedic people witnessed the burning of a dead body they supposed that the eye of the man went to the sun, his breath to the wind, his speech to the fire, his limbs to the different parts of the universe. They also believed as we have already seen in the recompense of good and bad actions in worlds other than our own, and though we hear of such things as the passage of the human soul into trees, *etc.*, the tendency towards transmigration had but little developed at the time.

In the Upani@sads however we find a clear development in the direction of transmigration in two distinct stages. In the one the Vedic idea of a recompense in the other world is combined with

[Footnote 1: Cha. VI. 2-4.]

54

the doctrine of transmigration, whereas in the other the doctrine of transmigration comes to the forefront in supersession of the idea of a recompense in the other world. Thus it is said that those who performed charitable deeds or such public works as the digging of wells, *etc.*, follow after death the way of the fathers (*pit@ryana*), in which the soul after death enters first into smoke, then into night, the dark half of the month, *etc.*, and at last reaches the moon; after a residence there as long as the remnant of his good deeds remains he descends again through ether, wind, smoke, mist, cloud, rain, herbage, food and seed, and through the assimilation of food by man he enters the womb of the mother and is born again. Here we see that the soul had not only a recompense in the world of the moon, but was re-born again in this world [Footnote ref 1].



The other way is the way of gods (*devayana*), meant for those who cultivate faith and asceticism (*tapas*). These souls at death enter successively into flame, day, bright half of the month, bright half of the year, sun, moon, lightning, and then finally into Brahman never to return. Deussen says that “the meaning of the whole is that the soul on the way of the gods reaches regions of ever-increasing light, in which is concentrated all that is bright and radiant as stations on the way to Brahman the ‘light of lights’” (*jyoti@sa@m jyoti@h*) [Footnote ref 2].

Page 51

The other line of thought is a direct reference to the doctrine of transmigration unmixed with the idea of reaping the fruits of his deeds (*karma*) by passing through the other worlds and without reference to the doctrine of the ways of the fathers and gods, the *Yanas*. Thus Yajnavalkya says, “when the soul becomes weak (apparent weakness owing to the weakness of the body with which it is associated) and falls into a swoon as it were, these senses go towards it. It (Soul) takes these light particles within itself and centres itself only in the heart. Thus when the person in the eye turns back, then the soul cannot know colour; (the senses) become one (with him); (people about him) say he does not see; (the senses) become one (with him), he does not smell, (the senses) become one (with him), he does not taste, (the senses) become one (with him), he does not speak, (the senses) become one (with him), he does not hear, (the senses) become one (with him), he does not think, (the senses) become one with him, he does not touch, (the senses) become one with him, he does not know, they say. The

[Footnote 1: Cha. V. 10.]

[Footnote 2: Deussen’s *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 335.]

55

tip of his heart shines and by that shining this soul goes out. When he goes out either through the eye, the head, or by any other part of the body, the vital function (*pra@na*) follows and all the senses follow the vital function (*pra@na*) in coming out. He is then with determinate consciousness and as such he comes out. Knowledge, the deeds as well as previous experience (*prajna*) accompany him. Just as a caterpillar going to the end of a blade of grass, by undertaking a separate movement collects itself, so this self after destroying this body, removing ignorance, by a separate movement collects itself. Just as a goldsmith taking a small bit of gold, gives to it a newer and fairer form, so the soul after destroying this body and removing ignorance fashions a newer and fairer form as of the *Pit@rs*, the *Gandharvas*, the gods, of *Prajapati* or *Brahma* or of any other being....As he acts and behaves so he becomes, good by good deeds, bad by bad deeds, virtuous by virtuous deeds and vicious by vice. The man is full of desires. As he desires so he wills, as he wills so he works, as the work is done so it happens. There is also a verse, being attached to that he wants to gain by karma that to which he was attached. Having reaped the full fruit (lit. gone to the end) of the karma that he does here, he returns back to this world for doing karma [Footnote ref 1]. So it is the case with those who have desires. He who has no desires, who had no desires, who has freed himself from all desires, is satisfied in his desires and in himself, his senses do not go out. He being *Brahma* attains *Brahmahood*. Thus the verse says, when all the

desires that are in his heart are got rid of, the mortal becomes immortal and attains Brahma here" (B@rh. IV. iv. 1-7).

Page 52

A close consideration of the above passage shows that the self itself destroyed the body and built up a newer and fairer frame by its own activity when it reached the end of the present life. At the time of death, the self collected within itself all senses and faculties and after death all its previous knowledge, work and experience accompanied him. The falling off of the body at the time of death is only for the building of a newer body either in this world or in the other worlds. The self which thus takes rebirth is regarded as an aggregation of diverse categories. Thus it is said that “he is of the essence of understanding,

[Footnote 1: It is possible that there is a vague and obscure reference here to the doctrine that the fruits of our deeds are reaped in other worlds.]

56

of the vital function, of the visual sense, of the auditory sense, of the essence of the five elements (which would make up the physical body in accordance with its needs) or the essence of desires, of the essence of restraint of desires, of the essence of anger, of the essence of turning off from all anger, of the essence of dharma, of the essence of adharma, of the essence of all that is this (manifest) and that is that (unmanifest or latent)” (B@rh. IV. iv. 5). The self that undergoes rebirth is thus a unity not only of moral and psychological tendencies, but also of all the elements which compose the physical world. The whole process of his changes follows from this nature of his; for whatever he desires, he wills and whatever he wills he acts, and in accordance with his acts the fruit happens. The whole logic of the genesis of karma and its fruits is held up within him, for he is a unity of the moral and psychological tendencies on the one hand and elements of the physical world on the other.

The self that undergoes rebirth being a combination of diverse psychological and moral tendencies and the physical elements holds within itself the principle of all its transformations. The root of all this is the desire of the self and the consequent fruition of it through will and act. When the self continues to desire and act, it reaps the fruit and comes again to this world for performing acts. This world is generally regarded as the field for performing karma, whereas other worlds are regarded as places where the fruits of karma are reaped by those born as celestial beings. But there is no emphasis in the Upani@sads on this point. The Pit@ryana theory is not indeed given up, but it seems only to form a part in the larger scheme of rebirth in other worlds and sometimes in this world too. All the course of these rebirths is effected by the self itself by its own desires, and if it ceases to desire, it suffers no rebirth and becomes immortal. The most distinctive feature of this doctrine is this, that it refers to desires as the cause of rebirth

and not karma. Karma only comes as the connecting link between desires and rebirth—for it is said that whatever a man desires he wills, and whatever he wills he acts.

Page 53

Thus it is said in another place “he who knowingly desires is born by his desires in those places (accordingly), but for him whose desires have been fulfilled and who has realized himself, all his desires vanish here” (Mu@n@d III. 2. 2). This destruction of desires is effected by the right knowledge of the self. “He who knows

57

his self as ‘I am the person’ for what wish and for what desire will he trouble the body,...even being here if we know it, well if we do not, what a great destruction” (B@rh. IV. iv. 12 and 14). “In former times the wise men did not desire sons, thinking what shall we do with sons since this our self is the universe” (B@rh. IV. iv. 22). None of the complexities of the karma doctrine which we find later on in more recent developments of Hindu thought can be found in the Upani@sads. The whole scheme is worked out on the principle of desire (*kama*) and karma only serves as the link between it and the actual effects desired and willed by the person.

It is interesting to note in this connection that consistently with the idea that desires (*kama*) led to rebirth, we find that in some Upani@sads the discharge of the semen in the womb of a woman as a result of desires is considered as the first birth of man, and the birth of the son as the second birth and the birth elsewhere after death is regarded as the third birth. Thus it is said, “It is in man that there comes first the embryo, which is but the semen which is produced as the essence of all parts of his body and which holds itself within itself, and when it is put in a woman, that is his first birth. That embryo then becomes part of the woman’s self like any part of her body; it therefore does not hurt her; she protects and develops the embryo within herself. As she protects (the embryo) so she also should be protected. It is the woman who bears the embryo (before birth) but when after birth the father takes care of the son always, he is taking care only of himself, for it is through sons alone that the continuity of the existence of people can be maintained. This is his second birth. He makes this self of his a representative for performing all the virtuous deeds. The other self of his after realizing himself and attaining age goes away and when going away he is born again that is his third birth” (Aitareya, II. 1-4) [Footnote ref 1]. No special emphasis is given in the Upani@sads to the sex-desire or the desire for a son; for, being called *kama*, whatever was the desire for a son was the same as the desire for money and the desire for money was the same as any other worldly desire (B@rh. IV. iv. 22), and hence sex-desires stand on the same plane as any other desire.

[Footnote 1: See also Kau@sitaki, II. 15.]

58

Emancipation.

Page 54

The doctrine which next attracts our attention in this connection is that of emancipation (*mukti*). Already we know that the doctrine of Devayana held that those who were faithful and performed asceticism (*tapas*) went by the way of the gods through successive stages never to return to the world and suffer rebirth. This could be contrasted with the way of the fathers (*pit@ryana*) where the dead were for a time recompensed in another world and then had to suffer rebirth. Thus we find that those who are faithful and perform *s'raddha* had a distinctly different type of goal from those who performed ordinary virtues, such as those of a general altruistic nature. This distinction attains its fullest development in the doctrine of emancipation. Emancipation or Mukti means in the Upani@sads the state of infiniteness that a man attains when he knows his own self and thus becomes Brahman. The ceaseless course of transmigration is only for those who are ignorant. The wise man however who has divested himself of all passions and knows himself to be Brahman, at once becomes Brahman and no bondage of any kind can ever affect him.

He who beholds that loftiest and deepest,
For him the fetters of the heart break asunder,
For him all doubts are solved,
And his works become nothingness [Footnote ref 1].

The knowledge of the self reveals the fact that all our passions and antipathies, all our limitations of experience, all that is ignoble and small in us, all that is transient and finite in us is false. We "do not know" but are "pure knowledge" ourselves. We are not limited by anything, for we are the infinite; we do not suffer death, for we are immortal. Emancipation thus is not a new acquisition, product, an effect, or result of any action, but it always exists as the Truth of our nature. We are always emancipated and always free. We do not seem to be so and seem to suffer rebirth and thousands of other troubles only because we do not know the true nature of our self. Thus it is that the true knowledge of self does not lead to emancipation but is emancipation itself. All sufferings and limitations are true only so long as we do not know our self. Emancipation is the natural and only goal of man simply because it represents the true nature and essence of man. It is the realization of our own nature that

[Footnote 1: Deussen's *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, p. 352.]

is called emancipation. Since we are all already and always in our own true nature and as such emancipated, the only thing necessary for us is to know that we are so. Self-

knowledge is therefore the only desideratum which can wipe off all false knowledge, all illusions of death and rebirth. The story is told in the Ka@tha Upani@sad that Yama, the lord of death, promised Naciketas, the son of Gautama,

Page 55

to grant him three boons at his choice. Naciketas, knowing that his father Gautama was offended with him, said, "O death let Gautama be pleased in mind and forget his anger against me." This being granted Naciketas asked the second boon that the fire by which heaven is gained should be made known to him. This also being granted Naciketas said, "There is this enquiry, some say the soul exists after the death of man; others say it does not exist. This I should like to know instructed by thee. This is my third boon." Yama said, "It was inquired of old, even by the gods; for it is not easy to understand it. Subtle is its nature, choose another boon. Do not compel me to this." Naciketas said, "Even by the gods was it inquired before, and even thou O Death sayest that it is not easy to understand it, but there is no other speaker to be found like thee. There is no other boon like this." Yama said, "Choose sons and grandsons who may live a hundred years, choose herds of cattle; choose elephants and gold and horses; choose the wide expanded earth, and live thyself as many years as thou wishest. Or if thou knowest a boon like this choose it together with wealth and far-extending life. Be a king on the wide earth. I will make thee the enjoyer of all desires. All those desires that are difficult to gain in the world of mortals, all those ask thou at thy pleasure; those fair nymphs with their chariots, with their musical instruments; the like of them are not to be gained by men. I will give them to thee, but do not ask the question regarding death." Naciketas replied, "All those enjoyments are of to-morrow and they only weaken the senses. All life is short, with thee the dance and song. Man cannot be satisfied with wealth, we could obtain wealth, as long as we did not reach you we live only as long as thou pleasest. The boon which I choose I have said." Yama said, "One thing is good, another is pleasant. Blessed is he who takes the good, but he who chooses the pleasant loses the object of man. But thou considering the objects of desire, hast abandoned them. These two, ignorance (whose object is

60

what is pleasant) and knowledge (whose object is what is good), are known to be far asunder, and to lead to different goals. Believing that this world exists and not the other, the careless youth is subject to my sway. That knowledge which thou hast asked is not to be obtained by argument. I know worldly happiness is transient for that firm one is not to be obtained by what is not firm. The wise by concentrating on the soul, knowing him whom it is hard to behold, leaves both grief and joy. Thee O Naciketas, I believe to be like a house whose door is open to Brahman. Brahman is deathless, whoever knows him obtains whatever he wishes. The wise man is not born; he does not die; he is not produced from anywhere. Unborn, eternal, the soul is not slain, though the body is slain; subtler than what is subtle, greater than what is great, sitting it

Page 56

goes far, lying it goes everywhere. Thinking the soul as unbodily among bodies, firm among fleeting things, the wise man casts off all grief. The soul cannot be gained by eloquence, by understanding, or by learning. It can be obtained by him alone whom it chooses. To him it reveals its own nature [Footnote ref 1].” So long as the Self identifies itself with its desires, he wills and acts according to them and reaps the fruits in the present and in future lives. But when he comes to know the highest truth about himself, that he is the highest essence and principle of the universe, the immortal and the infinite, he ceases to have desires, and receding from all desires realizes the ultimate truth of himself in his own infinitude. Man is as it were the epitome of the universe and he holds within himself the fine constituents of the gross body (*annamaya ko@sa*), the vital functions (*pranamaya ko@sa*) of life, the will and desire (*manomaya*) and the thoughts and ideas (*vijnanamaya*), and so long as he keeps himself in these spheres and passes through a series of experiences in the present life and in other lives to come, these experiences are willed by him and in that sense created by him. He suffers pleasures and pains, disease and death. But if he retires from these into his true unchangeable being, he is in a state where he is one with his experience and there is no change and no movement. What this state is cannot be explained by the use of concepts. One could only indicate it by pointing out that it is not any of those concepts found in ordinary knowledge; it is not

[Footnote 1: Ka@tha II. The translation is not continuous. There are some parts in the extract which may be differently interpreted.]

61

whatever one knows as this and this (*neti neti*). In this infinite and true self there is no difference, no diversity, no *meum* and *tuum*. It is like an ocean in which all our phenomenal existence will dissolve like salt in water. “Just as a lump of salt when put in water will disappear in it and it cannot be taken out separately but in whatever portion of water we taste we find the salt, so, Maitreyi, does this great reality infinite and limitless consisting only of pure intelligence manifesting itself in all these (phenomenal existences) vanish in them and there is then no phenomenal knowledge” (B@rh. II. 4. 12). The true self manifests itself in all the processes of our phenomenal existences, but ultimately when it retires back to itself, it can no longer be found in them. It is a state of absolute infinitude of pure intelligence, pure being, and pure blessedness.

62

CHAPTER IV

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE SYSTEMS OF INDIAN PHILOSOPHY

In what Sense is a History of Indian Philosophy possible?

Page 57

It is hardly possible to attempt a history of Indian philosophy in the manner in which the histories of European philosophy have been written. In Europe from the earliest times, thinkers came one after another and offered their independent speculations on philosophy. The work of a modern historian consists in chronologically arranging these views and in commenting upon the influence of one school upon another or upon the general change from time to time in the tides and currents of philosophy. Here in India, however, the principal systems of philosophy had their beginning in times of which we have but scanty record, and it is hardly possible to say correctly at what time they began, or to compute the influence that led to the foundation of so many divergent systems at so early a period, for in all probability these were formulated just after the earliest Upanishads had been composed or arranged.

The systematic treatises were written in short and pregnant half-sentences (*sutras*) which did not elaborate the subject in detail, but served only to hold before the reader the lost threads of memory of elaborate disquisitions with which he was already thoroughly acquainted. It seems, therefore, that these pithy half-sentences were like lecture hints, intended for those who had had direct elaborate oral instructions on the subject. It is indeed difficult to guess from the *sutras* the extent of their significance, or how far the discussions which they gave rise to in later days were originally intended by them. The *sutras* of the Vedanta system, known as the S'ariraka-*sutras* or Brahma-*sutras* of Badarayana for example were of so ambiguous a nature that they gave rise to more than half a dozen divergent interpretations, each one of which claimed to be the only faithful one. Such was the high esteem and respect in which these writers of the *sutras* were held by later writers that whenever they had any new speculations to

63

offer, these were reconciled with the doctrines of one or other of the existing systems, and put down as faithful interpretations of the system in the form of commentaries. Such was the hold of these systems upon scholars that all the orthodox teachers since the foundation of the systems of philosophy belonged to one or other of these schools. Their pupils were thus naturally brought up in accordance with the views of their teachers. All the independence of their thinking was limited and enchained by the faith of the school to which they were attached. Instead of producing a succession of free-lance thinkers having their own systems to propound and establish, India had brought forth schools of pupils who carried the traditionary views of particular systems from generation to generation, who explained and expounded them, and defended them against the attacks of other rival schools which they constantly attacked in order to establish the superiority of the system to which they adhered. To take an example, the Nyaya system

Page 58

of philosophy consisting of a number of half-sentences or sutras is attributed to Gautama, also called Ak@sapada. The earliest commentary on these sutras, called the *Vatsyayana bha@sya*, was written by Vatsyayana. This work was sharply criticized by the Buddhist Di@nnaga, and to answer these criticisms Udyotakara wrote a commentary on this commentary called the *Bha@syavattika* [Footnote ref 1]. As time went on the original force of this work was lost, and it failed to maintain the old dignity of the school. At this Vacaspati Mis'ra wrote a commentary called *Varttika-tatparya@tika* on this second commentary, where he tried to refute all objections against the Nyaya system made by other rival schools and particularly by the Buddhists. This commentary, called *Nyaya-tatparya@tika*, had another commentary called *Nyaya-tatparya@tika-paris'uddhi* written by the great Udayana. This commentary had another commentary called *Nyaya-nibandha-prakas'a* written by Varddhamana the son of the illustrious Ga@nges'a. This again had another commentary called *Varddha-manendu* upon it by Padmanabha Mis'ra, and this again had another named *Nyaya-tatparyama@n@dana* by S'a@nkara Mis'ra. The names of Vatsyayana, Vacaspati, and Udayana are indeed very great, but even they contented themselves by writing commentaries on commentaries, and did not try to formulate any

[Footnote 1: I have preferred to spell Di@nnaga after Vacaspati's *Tatparyatika* (p. I) and not Dignnaga as it is generally spelt.]

64

original system. Even S'a@nkara, probably the greatest man of India after Buddha, spent his life in writing commentaries on the *Brahma-sutras*, the *Upani@sads*, and the *Bhagavadgita*.

As a system passed on it had to meet unexpected opponents and troublesome criticisms for which it was not in the least prepared. Its adherents had therefore to use all their ingenuity and subtlety in support of their own positions, and to discover the defects of the rival schools that attacked them. A system as it was originally formulated in the sutras had probably but few problems to solve, but as it fought its way in the teeth of opposition of other schools, it had to offer consistent opinions on other problems in which the original views were more or less involved but to which no attention had been given before.

The contributions of the successive commentators served to make each system more and more complete in all its parts, and stronger and stronger to enable it to hold its own successfully against the opposition and attacks of the rival schools. A system in the

sutras is weak and shapeless as a newborn babe, but if we take it along with its developments down to the beginning of the seventeenth century it appears as a fully developed man strong and harmonious in all its limbs. It is therefore not possible to

Page 59

write any history of successive philosophies of India, but it is necessity that each system should be studied and interpreted in all the growth it has acquired through the successive ages of history from its conflicts with the rival systems as one whole [Footnote ref 1]. In the history of Indian philosophy we have no place for systems which had their importance only so long as they lived and were then forgotten or remembered only as targets of criticism. Each system grew and developed by the untiring energy of its adherents through all the successive ages of history, and a history of this growth is a history of its conflicts. No study of any Indian system is therefore adequate unless it is taken throughout all the growth it attained by the work of its champions, the commentators whose selfless toil for it had kept it living through the ages of history.

[Footnote 1: In the case of some systems it is indeed possible to suggest one or two earlier phases of the system, but this principle cannot be carried all through, for the supplementary information and arguments given by the later commentators often appear as harmonious elaborations of the earlier writings and are very seldom in conflict with them.]

65

Growth of the Philosophic Literature.

It is difficult to say how the systems were originally formulated, and what were the influences that led to it. We know that a spirit of philosophic enquiry had already begun in the days of the earliest Upani@sads. The spirit of that enquiry was that the final essence or truth was the atman, that a search after it was our highest duty, and that until we are ultimately merged in it we can only feel this truth and remain uncontented with everything else and say that it is not the truth we want, it is not the truth we want (*neti neti*). Philosophical enquires were however continuing in circles other than those of the Upani@sads. Thus the Buddha who closely followed the early Upani@sad period, spoke of and enumerated sixty-two kinds of heresies [Footnote ref 1], and these can hardly be traced in the Upani@sads. The Jaina activities were also probably going on contemporaneously but in the Upani@sads no reference to these can be found. We may thus reasonably suppose that there were different forms of philosophic enquiry in spheres other than those of the Upani@sad sages, of which we have but scanty records. It seems probable that the Hindu systems of thought originated among the sages who though attached chiefly to the Upani@sad circles used to take note of the discussions and views of the antagonistic and heretical philosophic circles. In the assemblies of these sages and their pupils, the views of the heretical circles were

probably discussed and refuted. So it continued probably for some time when some illustrious member of the assembly such as Gautama or Kanada collected the purport of

Page 60

these discussions on various topics and problems, filled up many of the missing links, classified and arranged these in the form of a system of philosophy and recorded it in sutras. These sutras were intended probably for people who had attended the elaborate oral discussions and thus could easily follow the meaning of the suggestive phrases contained in the aphorisms. The sutras thus contain sometimes allusions to the views of the rival schools and indicate the way in which they could be refuted. The commentators were possessed of the general drift of the different discussions alluded to and conveyed from generation to generation through an unbroken chain of succession of teachers and pupils. They were however free to supplement these traditionary explanations with their own

[Footnote 1: *Brahmajala-sutta, Digha*, 1. p. 12 ff.]

66

views or to modify and even suppress such of the traditionary views with which they did not agree or which they found it difficult to maintain. Brilliant oppositions from the opposing schools often made it necessary for them to offer solutions to new problems unthought of before, but put forward by some illustrious adherent of a rival school. In order to reconcile these new solutions with the other parts of the system, the commentators never hesitated to offer such slight modifications of the doctrines as could harmonize them into a complete whole. These elaborations or modifications generally developed the traditionary system, but did not effect any serious change in the system as expounded by the older teachers, for the new exponents always bound themselves to the explanations of the older teachers and never contradicted them. They would only interpret them to suit their own ideas, or say new things only in those cases where the older teachers had remained silent. It is not therefore possible to describe the growth of any system by treating the contributions of the individual commentators separately. This would only mean unnecessary repetition. Except when there is a specially new development, the system is to be interpreted on the basis of the joint work of the commentators treating their contributions as forming one whole.

The fact that each system had to contend with other rival systems in order to hold its own has left its permanent mark upon all the philosophic literatures of India which are always written in the form of disputes, where the writer is supposed to be always faced with objections from rival schools to whatever he has got to say. At each step he supposes certain objections put forth against him which he answers, and points out the defects of the objector or shows that the objection itself is ill founded. It is thus through

interminable byways of objections, counter-objections and their answers that the writer can wend his way to his destination. Most often the objections

Page 61

of the rival schools are referred to in so brief a manner that those only who know the views can catch them. To add to these difficulties the Sanskrit style of most of the commentaries is so condensed and different from literary Sanskrit, and aims so much at precision and brevity, leading to the use of technical words current in the diverse systems, that a study of these becomes often impossible without the aid of an expert preceptor; it is difficult therefore for all who are not widely read in all the different systems to follow any advanced

67

work of any particular system, as the deliberations of that particular system are expressed in such close interconnection with the views of other systems that these can hardly be understood without them. Each system of India has grown (at least in particular epochs) in relation to and in opposition to the growth of other systems of thought, and to be a thorough student of Indian philosophy one should study all the systems in their mutual opposition and relation from the earliest times to a period at which they ceased to grow and came to a stop—a purpose for which a work like the present one may only be regarded as forming a preliminary introduction.

Besides the sutras and their commentaries there are also independent treatises on the systems in verse called *karikas*, which try to summarize the important topics of any system in a succinct manner; the *Sa@mkhya karika* may be mentioned as a work of this kind. In addition to these there were also long dissertations, commentaries, or general observations on any system written in verses called the *vartikas*; the *S'lokavarttika*, of Kumarila or the *Varttika* of Sures'vara may be mentioned as examples. All these of course had their commentaries to explain them. In addition to these there were also advanced treatises on the systems in prose in which the writers either nominally followed some selected sutras or proceeded independently of them. Of the former class the *Nyayamanjari* of Jayanta may be mentioned as an example and of the latter the *Pras'astapada bha@sya*, the *Advaitasiddhi* of Madhusudana Sarasvati or the *Vedanta-paribha@sa* of Dharmarajadhvarindra. The more remarkable of these treatises were of a masterly nature in which the writers represented the systems they adhered to in a highly forcible and logical manner by dint of their own great mental powers and genius. These also had their commentaries to explain and elaborate them. The period of the growth of the philosophic literatures of India begins from about 500 B.C. (about the time of the Buddha) and practically ends in the later half of the seventeenth century, though even now some minor publications are seen to come out.

The Indian Systems of Philosophy.

The Hindus classify the systems of philosophy into two classes, namely, the *nastika* and the *astika*. The *nastika* (*na asti* “it is not”) views are those which neither regard the Vedas as infallible

Page 62

68

nor try to establish their own validity on their authority. These are principally three in number, the Buddhist, Jaina and the Carvaka. The astika-mata or orthodox schools are six in number, Sa@mkhya, Yoga, Vedanta, Mima@msa, Nyaya and Vais'e@sika, generally known as the six systems (_@sa@ddars'ana_ [Footnote ref 1]).

The Sa@mkhya is ascribed to a mythical Kapila, but the earliest works on the subject are probably now lost. The Yoga system is attributed to Patanjali and the original sutras are called the *Patanjala Yoga sutras*. The general metaphysical position of these two systems with regard to soul, nature, cosmology and the final goal is almost the same, and the difference lies in this that the Yoga system acknowledges a god (*Is'vara*) as distinct from Atman and lays much importance on certain mystical practices (commonly known as Yoga practices) for the achievement of liberation, whereas the Sa@mkhya denies the existence of *Is'vara* and thinks that sincere philosophic thought and culture are sufficient to produce the true conviction of the truth and thereby bring about liberation. It is probable that the system of Sa@mkhya associated with Kapila and the Yoga system associated with Patanjali are but two divergent modifications of an original Sa@mkhya school, of which we now get only references here and there. These systems therefore though generally counted as two should more properly be looked upon as two different schools of the same Sa@mkhya system—one may be called the Kapila Sa@mkhya and the other Patanjala Sa@mkhya.

The Purva Mima@msa (from the root *man* to think—rational conclusions) cannot properly be spoken of as a system of philosophy. It is a systematized code of principles in accordance with which the Vedic texts are to be interpreted for purposes of sacrifices.

[Footnote 1: The word "*dars'ana*" in the sense of true philosophic knowledge has its earliest use in the *Vais'e@sika sutras* of Ka@nada (IX. ii. 13) which I consider as pre-Buddhist. The Buddhist pi@takas (400 B.C.) called the heretical opinions "*ditthi*" (Sanskrit—dr@sti from the same root *d@rs'* from which *dars'ana* is formed). Haribhadra (fifth century A.D.) uses the word *Dars'ana* in the sense of systems of philosophy (*sarvadars'anavacyo' rtha@h—@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya* I.). Ratnakirtti (end of the tenth century A.D.) uses the word also in the same sense ("*Yadi nama dars'ane dars'ane nanaprakaram sattvatak-@sanam uktamasti.*" *K@sa@nabha@ngasiddhi* in *Six Buddhist Nyaya tracts*, p.20). Madhava (1331 A.D.) calls his Compendium of all systems of philosophy, *Sarvadars'anasa@mgra@na*. The word "*mata*" (opinion or view) was also freely used in quoting the views of other systems. But there is no word to denote 'philosophers' in the technical sense. The

Buddhists used to call those who held heretical views "*tairthika*." The words "siddha," "*jnanin*," *etc.* do not denote philosophers, in the modern sense, they are used rather in the sense of "seers" or "perfects."]

Page 63

69

The Vedic texts were used as mantras (incantations) for sacrifices, and people often disputed as to the relation of words in a sentence or their mutual relative importance with reference to the general drift of the sentence. There were also differences of view with regard to the meaning of a sentence, the use to which it may be applied as a mantra, its relative importance or the exact nature of its connection with other similar sentences in a complex Vedic context. The Mima@msa formulated some principles according to which one could arrive at rational and uniform solutions for all these difficulties. Preliminary to these its main objects, it indulges in speculations with regard to the external world, soul, perception, inference, the validity of the Vedas, or the like, for in order that a man might perform sacrifices with mantras, a definite order of the universe and its relation to man or the position and nature of the mantras of the Veda must be demonstrated and established. Though its interest in such abstract speculations is but secondary yet it briefly discusses these in order to prepare a rational ground for its doctrine of the mantras and their practical utility for man. It is only so far as there are these preliminary discussions in the Mima@msa that it may be called a system of philosophy. Its principles and maxims for the interpretation of the import of words and sentences have a legal value even to this day. The sutras of Mima@msa are attributed to Jaimini, and S'abara wrote a bha@sya upon it. The two great names in the history of Mima@msa literature after Jaimini and S'abara are Kumarila Bha@t@ta and his pupil Prabhakara, who criticized the opinions of his master so much, that the master used to call him guru (master) in sarcasm, and to this day his opinions pass as *guru-mata*, whereas the views of Kumarila Bha@t@ta pass as *bha@t@ta-mata* [Footnote ref 1]. It may not be out of place to mention here that Hindu Law (*sm@rti*) accepts without any reservation the maxims and principles settled and formulated by the Mima@msa.

[Footnote 1: There is a story that Kumarila could not understand the meaning of a Sanskrit sentence "*Atra tunoktam tatrapinoktam iti paunaraktam*" (hence spoken twice). *Tunoktam* phonetically admits of two combinations, *tu noktam* (but not said) and *tunauktam* (said by the particle *tu*) and *tatrapinoktam* as *tatra api na uktam* (not said also there) and *tatra apina uktam* (said there by the particle *api*). Under the first interpretation the sentence would mean, "Not spoken here, not spoken there, it is thus spoken twice." This puzzled Kumarila, when Prabhakara taking the second meaning pointed out to him that the meaning was "here it is indicated by *tu* and there by *api*, and so it is indicated twice." Kumarila was so pleased that he called his pupil "Guru" (master) at this.]

Page 64

70

The *Vedanta sutras*, also called Uttara Mima@msa, written by Badaraya@na, otherwise known as the *Brahma-sutras*, form the original authoritative work of Vedanta. The word Vedanta means “end of the Veda,” i.e. the Upani@sads, and the *Vedanta sutras* are so called as they are but a summarized statement of the general views of the Upani@sads. This work is divided into four books or adhyayas and each adhyaya is divided into four padas or chapters. The first four sutras of the work commonly known as *Catu@hsutri* are (1) How to ask about Brahman, (2) From whom proceed birth and decay, (3) This is because from him the Vedas have come forth, (4) This is shown by the harmonious testimony of the Upani@sads. The whole of the first chapter of the second book is devoted to justifying the position of the Vedanta against the attacks of the rival schools. The second chapter of the second book is busy in dealing blows at rival systems. All the other parts of the book are devoted to settling the disputed interpretations of a number of individual Upani@sad texts. The really philosophical portion of the work is thus limited to the first four sutras and the first and second chapters of the second book. The other portions are like commentaries to the Upani@sads, which however contain many theological views of the system. The first commentary of the *Brahma-sutra* was probably written by Baudhayana, which however is not available now. The earliest commentary that is now found is that of the great S’a@nkara. His interpretations of the *Brahma-sutras* together with all the commentaries and other works that follow his views are popularly known as Vedanta philosophy, though this philosophy ought more properly to be called Vis’uddhadvaitavada school of Vedanta philosophy (i.e. the Vedanta philosophy of the school of absolute monism). Variant forms of dualistic philosophy as represented by the Vai@s@navas, S’aivas, Ramayatas, etc., also claim to express the original purport of the Brahma sutras. We thus find that apostles of dualistic creeds such as Ramanuja, Vallabha, Madhva, S’rika@n@tha, Baladeva, etc., have written independent commentaries on the *Brahma-sutra* to show that the philosophy as elaborated by themselves is the view of the Upani@sads and as summarized in the *Brahma-sutras*. These differed largely and often vehemently attacked S’a@nkara’s interpretations of the same sutras. These systems as expounded by them also pass by the name of Vedanta as these are also claimed to be the real interpretations intended by the Vedanta (Upani@sads)

71

and the *Vedanta sutras*. Of these the system of Ramanuja has great philosophical importance.

Page 65

The *Nyaya sutras* attributed to Gautama, called also Ak@sapada, and the *Vais'e@sika sutras* attributed to Ka@nada, called also Uluka, represent the same system for all practical purposes. They are in later times considered to differ only in a few points of minor importance. So far as the sutras are concerned the *Nyaya sutras* lay particular stress on the cultivation of logic as an art, while the *Vais'e@sika sutras* deal mostly with metaphysics and physics. In addition to these six systems, the Tantras had also philosophies of their own, which however may generally be looked upon largely as modifications of the Sa@mkhya and Vedanta systems, though their own contributions are also noteworthy.

Some fundamental Points of Agreement.

I. *The Karma Theory.*

It is, however, remarkable that with the exception of the Carvaka materialists all the other systems agree on some fundamental points of importance. The systems of philosophy in India were not stirred up merely by the speculative demands of the human mind which has a natural inclination for indulging in abstract thought, but by a deep craving after the realization of the religious purpose of life. It is surprising to note that the postulates, aims and conditions for such a realization were found to be identical in all the conflicting systems. Whatever may be their differences of opinion in other matters, so far as the general postulates for the realization of the transcendent state, the *summum bonum* of life, were concerned, all the systems were practically in thorough agreement. It may be worth while to note some of them at this stage.

First, the theory of Karma and rebirth. All the Indian systems agree in believing that whatever action is done by an individual leaves behind it some sort of potency which has the power to ordain for him joy or sorrow in the future according as it is good or bad. When the fruits of the actions are such that they cannot be enjoyed in the present life or in a human life, the individual has to take another birth as a man or any other being in order to suffer them.

The Vedic belief that the mantras uttered in the correct accent at the sacrifices with the proper observance of all ritualistic

72

details, exactly according to the directions without the slightest error even in the smallest trifle, had something like a magical virtue automatically to produce the desired object immediately or after a lapse of time, was probably the earliest form of the Karma doctrine. It postulates a semi-conscious belief that certain mystical actions can produce at a distant time certain effects without the ordinary process of the instrumentality of visible agents of ordinary cause and effect. When the sacrifice is performed, the action

leaves such an unseen magical virtue, called the *ad@r@s@ta* (the unseen) or the *apurva* (new), that by it the desired object will be achieved

Page 66

in a mysterious manner, for the *modus operandi* of the *apurva* is unknown. There is also the notion prevalent in the Sa@mhitas, as we have already noticed, that he who commits wicked deeds suffers in another world, whereas he who performs good deeds enjoys the highest material pleasures. These were probably associated with the conception of _@rta_, the inviolable order of things. Thus these are probably the elements which built up the Karma theory which we find pretty well established but not emphasized in the Upani@sads, where it is said that according to good or bad actions men will have good or bad births.

To notice other relevant points in connection with the Karma doctrine as established in the astika systems we find that it was believed that the unseen (*ad@r@s@ta*) potency of the action generally required some time before it could be fit for giving the doer the merited punishment or enjoyment. These would often accumulate and prepare the items of suffering and enjoyment for the doer in his next life. Only the fruits of those actions which are extremely wicked or particularly good could be reaped in this life. The nature of the next birth of a man is determined by the nature of pleasurable or painful experiences that have been made ready for him by his maturing actions of this life. If the experiences determined for him by his action are such that they are possible to be realized in the life of a goat, the man will die and be born as a goat. As there is no ultimate beginning in time of this world process, so there is no time at which any person first began his actions or experiences. Man has had an infinite number of past lives of the most varied nature, and the instincts of each kind of life exist dormant in the life of every individual, and thus whenever he has any particular birth as this or that animal or man,

73

the special instincts of that life (technically called *vasana*) come forth. In accordance with these *vasanas* the person passes through the painful or pleasurable experiences as determined for him by his action. The length of life is also determined by the number and duration of experiences as preordained by the fructifying actions of his past life. When once certain actions become fit for giving certain experiences, these cannot be avoided, but those actions which have not matured are uprooted once for all if the person attains true knowledge as advocated by philosophy. But even such an emancipated (*mukta*) person has to pass through the pleasurable or painful experiences ordained for him by the actions just ripened for giving their fruits. There are four kinds of actions, white or virtuous (*s'ukla*), black or wicked (*k@r@s@na*), white-black or partly virtuous and partly vicious (*s'ukla-k@r@s@na*) as most of our actions are, neither black nor white (*as'uklak@r@s@na*), i.e. those acts of self-renunciation or meditation which are not associated

Page 67

with any desires for the fruit. It is only when a person can so restrain himself as to perform only the last kind of action that he ceases to accumulate any new karma for giving fresh fruits. He has thus only to enjoy the fruits of his previous karmas which have ripened for giving fruits. If in the meantime he attains true knowledge, all his past accumulated actions become destroyed, and as his acts are only of the as'uklak@r@s@na type no fresh karma for ripening is accumulated, and thus he becomes divested of all karma after enjoying the fruits of the ripened karmas alone.

The Jains think that through the actions of body, speech and mind a kind of subtle matter technically called karma is produced. The passions of a man act like a viscous substance that attracts this karma matter, which thus pours into the soul and sticks to it. The karma matter thus accumulated round the soul during the infinite number of past lives is technically called *karmas'arira*, which encircles the soul as it passes on from birth to birth. This karma matter sticking to the soul gradually ripens and exhausts itself in ordaining the sufferance of pains or the enjoyment of pleasures for the individual. While some karma matter is being expended in this way, other karma matters are accumulating by his activities, and thus keep him in a continuous process of suffering and enjoyment. The karma matter thus accumulated in the soul produces a kind of coloration called *les'ya*, such as white, black, etc., which marks the character of the soul. The

74

idea of the s'ukla and k@r@s@na karmas of the Yoga system was probably suggested by the Jaina view. But when a man is free from passions, and acts in strict compliance with the rules of conduct, his actions produce karma which lasts but for a moment and is then annihilated. Every karma that the sage has previously earned has its predestined limits within which it must take effect and be purged away. But when by contemplation and the strict adherence to the five great vows, no new karma is generated, and when all the karmas are exhausted the worldly existence of the person rapidly draws towards its end. Thus in the last stage of contemplation, all karma being annihilated, and all activities having ceased, the soul leaves the body and goes up to the top of the universe, where the liberated souls stay for ever.

Buddhism also contributes some new traits to the karma theory which however being intimately connected with their metaphysics will be treated later on.

2. *The Doctrine of Mukti.*

Page 68

Not only do the Indian systems agree as to the cause of the inequalities in the share of sufferings and enjoyments in the case of different persons, and the manner in which the cycle of births and rebirths has been kept going from beginningless time, on the basis of the mysterious connection of one's actions with the happenings of the world, but they also agree in believing that this beginningless chain of karma and its fruits, of births and rebirths, this running on from beginningless time has somewhere its end. This end was not to be attained at some distant time or in some distant kingdom, but was to be sought within us. Karma leads us to this endless cycle, and if we could divest ourselves of all such emotions, ideas or desires as lead us to action we should find within us the actionless self which neither suffers nor enjoys, neither works nor undergoes rebirth. When the Indians, wearied by the endless bustle and turmoil of worldly events, sought for and believed that somewhere a peaceful goal could be found, they generally hit upon the self of man. The belief that the soul could be realized in some stage as being permanently divested of all action, feelings or ideas, led logically to the conclusion that the connection of the soul with these worldly elements was extraneous, artificial or even illusory. In its true nature the soul is untouched by the impurities of our ordinary life, and it is through ignorance

75

and passion as inherited from the cycle of karma from beginningless time that we connect it with these. The realization of this transcendent state is the goal and final achievement of this endless cycle of births and rebirths through karma. The Buddhists did not admit the existence of soul, but recognized that the final realization of the process of karma is to be found in the ultimate dissolution called Nirva@na, the nature of which we shall discuss later on.

3. *The Doctrine of Soul.*

All the Indian systems except Buddhism admit the existence of a permanent entity variously called atman, puru@sa or jiva. As to the exact nature of this soul there are indeed divergences of view. Thus while the Nyaya calls it absolutely qualityless and characterless, indeterminate unconscious entity, Sa@mkhya describes it as being of the nature of pure consciousness, the Vedanta says that it is that fundamental point of unity implied in pure consciousness (*cit*), pure bliss (*ananda*), and pure being (*sat*). But all agree in holding that it is pure and unsullied in its nature and that all impurities of action or passion do not form a real part of it. The *summum bonum* of life is attained when all impurities are removed and the pure nature of the self is thoroughly and permanently apprehended and all other extraneous connections with it are absolutely dissociated.

The Pessimistic Attitude towards the World and the
Optimistic Faith in the end.

Page 69

Though the belief that the world is full of sorrow has not been equally prominently emphasized in all systems, yet it may be considered as being shared by all of them. It finds its strongest utterance in Sa@mkhya, Yoga, and Buddhism. This interminable chain of pleasurable and painful experiences was looked upon as nearing no peaceful end but embroiling and entangling us in the meshes of karma, rebirth, and sorrow. What appear as pleasures are but a mere appearance for the attempt to keep them steady is painful, there is pain when we lose the pleasures or when we are anxious to have them. When the pleasures are so much associated with pains they are but pains themselves. We are but duped when we seek pleasures, for they are sure to lead us to pain. All our experiences are essentially sorrowful and ultimately sorrow-begetting. Sorrow is the ultimate truth of this process of the

76

world. That which to an ordinary person seems pleasurable appears to a wise person or to a yogin who has a clearer vision as painful. The greater the knowledge the higher is the sensitiveness to sorrow and dissatisfaction with world experiences. The yogin is like the pupil of the eye to which even the smallest grain of disturbance is unbearable. This sorrow of worldly experiences cannot be removed by bringing in remedies for each sorrow as it comes, for the moment it is remedied another sorrow comes in. It cannot also be avoided by mere inaction or suicide, for we are continually being forced to action by our nature, and suicide will but lead to another life of sorrow and rebirth. The only way to get rid of it is by the culmination of moral greatness and true knowledge which uproot sorrow once for all. It is our ignorance that the self is intimately connected with the experiences of life or its pleasures, that leads us to action and arouses passion in us for the enjoyment of pleasures and other emotions and activities. Through the highest moral elevation a man may attain absolute dispassion towards world-experiences and retire in body, mind, and speech from all worldly concerns. When the mind is so purified, the self shines in its true light, and its true nature is rightly conceived. When this is once done the self can never again be associated with passion or ignorance. It becomes at this stage ultimately dissociated from *citta* which contains within it the root of all emotions, ideas, and actions. Thus emancipated the self for ever conquers all sorrow. It is important, however, to note in this connection that emancipation is not based on a general aversion to intercourse with the world or on such feelings as a disappointed person may have, but on the appreciation of the state of mukti as the supremely blessed one. The details of the pessimistic creed of each system have developed from the logical necessity peculiar to each system. There was never the slightest tendency to shirk the duties of this life, but to rise above them through right performance and right

Page 70

understanding. It is only when a man rises to the highest pinnacle of moral glory that he is fit for aspiring to that realization of selfhood in comparison with which all worldly things or even the joys of Heaven would not only shrink into insignificance, but appear in their true character as sorrowful and loathsome. It is when his mind has thus turned from all ordinary joys that he can strive towards his ideal of salvation. In fact it seems to me that a sincere religious craving after some

77

ideal blessedness and quiet of self-realization is indeed the fundamental fact from which not only her philosophy but many of the complex phenomena of the civilization of India can be logically deduced. The sorrow around us has no fear for us if we remember that we are naturally sorrowless and blessed in ourselves. The pessimistic view loses all terror as it closes in absolute optimistic confidence in one's own self and the ultimate destiny and goal of emancipation.

Unity in Indian Sadhana (philosophical, religious and ethical endeavours).

As might be expected the Indian systems are all agreed upon the general principles of ethical conduct which must be followed for the attainment of salvation. That all passions are to be controlled, no injury to life in any form should be done, and that all desire for pleasures should be checked, are principles which are almost universally acknowledged. When a man attains a very high degree of moral greatness he has to strengthen and prepare his mind for further purifying and steadying it for the attainment of his ideal; and most of the Indian systems are unanimous with regard to the means to be employed for the purpose. There are indeed divergences in certain details or technical names, but the means to be adopted for purification are almost everywhere essentially the same as those advocated by the Yoga system. It is only in later times that devotion (*bhakti*) is seen to occupy a more prominent place specially in Vai@s@nava schools of thought. Thus it was that though there were many differences among the various systems, yet their goal of life, their attitude towards the world and the means for the attainment of the goal (*sadhana*) being fundamentally the same, there was a unique unity in the practical sadhana of almost all the Indian systems. The religious craving has been universal in India and this uniformity of sadhana has therefore secured for India a unity in all her aspirations and strivings.

78

CHAPTER V

BUDDHIST PHILOSOPHY

Many scholars are of opinion that the Sa@mkhya and the Yoga represent the earliest systematic speculations of India. It is also suggested that Buddhism drew much of its inspiration from them. It may be that there is some truth in such a view, but the systematic Sa@mkhya and Yoga treatises as we have them had decidedly been written after Buddhism. Moreover it is well-known to every student of Hindu philosophy that a conflict with the Buddhists has largely stimulated philosophic enquiry in most of the systems of Hindu thought. A knowledge of Buddhism is therefore indispensable for a right understanding of the different systems in their mutual relation and opposition to Buddhism. It seems desirable therefore that I should begin with Buddhism first.

Page 71

The State of Philosophy in India before the Buddha.

It is indeed difficult to give a short sketch of the different philosophical speculations that were prevalent in India before Buddhism. The doctrines of the Upani@sads are well known, and these have already been briefly described. But these were not the only ones. Even in the Upani@sads we find references to diverse atheistical creeds [Footnote ref 1]. We find there that the origin of the world and its processes were sometimes discussed, and some thought that “time” was the ultimate cause of all, others that all these had sprung forth by their own nature (*svabhava*), others that everything had come forth in accordance with an inexorable destiny or a fortuitous concourse of accidental happenings, or through matter combinations in general. References to diverse kinds of heresies are found in Buddhist literature also, but no detailed accounts of these views are known. Of the Upani@sad type of materialists the two schools of Carvakas (Dhurrta and Sus’ik@sita) are referred to in later literature, though the time in which these flourished cannot rightly be discovered [Footnote ref 2]. But it seems

[Footnote 1: S’vetas’vatara, I. 2, *kala@h svabhabo niyatiryad@rccha bhutani yoni@h puru@sa iti cintyam*.]

[Footnote 2: Lokayata (literally, that which is found among people in general) seems to have been the name by which all carvaka doctrines were generally known. See Gu@naratna on the Lokayatas.]

79

probable however that the allusion to the materialists contained in the Upani@sads refers to these or to similar schools. The Carvakas did not believe in the authority of the Vedas or any other holy scripture. According to them there was no soul. Life and consciousness were the products of the combination of matter, just as red colour was the result of mixing up white with yellow or as the power of intoxication was generated in molasses (*madas’akti*). There is no after-life, and no reward of actions, as there is neither virtue nor vice. Life is only for enjoyment. So long as it lasts it is needless to think of anything else, as everything will end with death, for when at death the body is burnt to ashes there cannot be any rebirth. They do not believe in the validity of inference. Nothing is trustworthy but what can be directly perceived, for it is impossible to determine that the distribution of the middle term (*hetu*) has not depended upon some extraneous condition, the absence of which might destroy the validity of any particular piece of inference. If in any case any inference comes to be true, it is only an accidental

fact and there is no certitude about it. They were called Carvaka because they would only eat but would not accept any other religious or moral responsibility. The word comes from *carv* to eat. The Dhurttā Carvakas held

Page 72

that there was nothing but the four elements of earth, water, air and fire, and that the body was but the result of atomic combination. There was no self or soul, no virtue or vice. The Sus'ik@sitā Carvakas held that there was a soul apart from the body but that it also was destroyed with the destruction of the body. The original work of the Carvakas was written in sutras probably by B@rhaspati. Jayanta and Gu@naratna quote two sutras from it. Short accounts of this school may be found in Jayanta's *Nyayamanjari*, Madhava's *Sarvadars'anasa@mgraha* and Gu@naratna's *Tarkarahasyadipika*. *Mahabharata* gives an account of a man called Carvaka meeting Yudhi@s@thira.

Side by side with the doctrine of the Carvaka materialists we are reminded of the Ajivakas of which Makkhali Gosala, probably a renegade disciple of the Jain saint Mahavira and a contemporary of Buddha and Mahavira, was the leader. This was a thorough-going determinism denying the free will of man and his moral responsibility for any so-called good or evil. The essence of Makkhali's system is this, that "there is no cause, either proximate or remote, for the depravity of beings or for their purity. They

80

become so without any cause. Nothing depends either on one's own efforts or on the efforts of others, in short nothing depends on any human effort, for there is no such thing as power or energy, or human exertion. The varying conditions at any time are due to fate, to their environment and their own nature [Footnote ref 1]."

Another sophistical school led by Ajita Kesakambali taught that there was no fruit or result of good or evil deeds; there is no other world, nor was this one real; nor had parents nor any former lives any efficacy with respect to this life. Nothing that we can do prevents any of us alike from being wholly brought to an end at death [Footnote ref 2].

There were thus at least three currents of thought: firstly the sacrificial Karma by the force of the magical rites of which any person could attain anything he desired; secondly the Upani@sad teaching that the Brahman, the self, is the ultimate reality and being, and all else but name and form which pass away but do not abide. That which permanently abides without change is the real and true, and this is self. Thirdly the nihilistic conceptions that there is no law, no abiding reality, that everything comes into being by a fortuitous concourse of circumstances or by some unknown fate. In each of these schools, philosophy had probably come to a deadlock. There were the Yoga practices prevalent in the country and these were accepted partly on the strength of traditional custom among certain sections, and partly by virtue of the great spiritual, intellectual and physical power which they gave to those who performed them. But

these had no rational basis behind them on which they could lean for support. These were probably then just tending towards being affiliated to the

Page 73

nebulous Sa@mkhya doctrines which had grown up among certain sections. It was at this juncture that we find Buddha erecting a new superstructure of thought on altogether original lines which thenceforth opened up a new avenue of philosophy for all posterity to come. If the Being of the Upani@sads, the superlatively motionless, was the only real, how could it offer scope for further new speculations, as it had already discarded all other matters of interest? If everything was due to a reasonless fortuitous concourse of circumstances, reason could not proceed further in the direction to create any philosophy of the unreason. The magical

[Footnote 1: *Samannaphala-sutta*, *Digha*, II. 20. Hoernle's article on the Ajivakas, E.R.E.]

[Footnote 2: *Samannaphala-sutta*, II. 23.]

81

force of the hocus-pocus of sorcery or sacrifice had but little that was inviting for philosophy to proceed on. If we thus take into account the state of Indian philosophic culture before Buddha, we shall be better able to understand the value of the Buddhistic contribution to philosophy.

Buddha: his Life.

Gautama the Buddha was born in or about the year 560 B.C. in the Lumbini Grove near the ancient town of Kapilavastu in the now dense terai region of Nepal. His father was Sudhodana, a prince of the Sakya clan, and his mother Queen Mahamaya. According to the legends it was foretold of him that he would enter upon the ascetic life when he should see "A decrepit old man, a diseased man, a dead man, and a monk." His father tried his best to keep him away from these by marrying him and surrounding him with luxuries. But on successive occasions, issuing from the palace, he was confronted by those four things, which filled him with amazement and distress, and realizing the impermanence of all earthly things determined to forsake his home and try if he could to discover some means to immortality to remove the sufferings of men. He made his "Great Renunciation" when he was twenty-nine years old. He travelled on foot to Rajag@rha (Rajgir) and thence to Uruvela, where in company with other five ascetics he entered upon a course of extreme self-discipline, carrying his austerities to such a length that his body became utterly emaciated and he fell down senseless and was believed to be dead. After six years of this great struggle he was convinced that the truth was not to be won by the way of extreme asceticism, and resuming an ordinary

course of life at last attained absolute and supreme enlightenment. Thereafter the Buddha spent a life prolonged over forty-five years in travelling from place to place and preaching the doctrine to all who would listen. At the age of over eighty years Buddha realized that the time drew near for him to die. He then entered into Dhyana and passing through its successive stages attained nirvana [Footnote ref 1]. The vast developments which the system of this great teacher underwent in the succeeding centuries in India and in other countries have not been thoroughly studied, and it will probably take yet many years more before even the materials for

Page 74

[Footnote 1: *Mahaparinibbanasuttanta*, *Digha*, XVI. 6, 8, 9.]

82

such a study can be collected. But from what we now possess it is proved incontestably that it is one of the most wonderful and subtle productions of human wisdom. It is impossible to overestimate the debt that the philosophy, culture and civilization of India owe to it in all her developments for many succeeding centuries.

Early Buddhist Literature.

The Buddhist Pali Scriptures contain three different collections: the Sutta (relating to the doctrines), the Vinaya (relating to the discipline of the monks) and the Abhidhamma (relating generally to the same subjects as the suttas but dealing with them in a scholastic and technical manner). Scholars of Buddhist religious history of modern times have failed as yet to fix any definite dates for the collection or composition of the different parts of the aforesaid canonical literature of the Buddhists. The suttas were however composed before the Abhidhamma and it is very probable that almost the whole of the canonical works were completed before 241 B.C., the date of the third council during the reign of King Asoka. The suttas mainly deal with the doctrine (Dhamma) of the Buddhist faith whereas the Vinaya deals only with the regulations concerning the discipline of the monks. The subject of the Abhidhamma is mostly the same as that of the suttas, namely, the interpretation of the Dhamma. Buddhaghosa in his introduction to *Atthasalini*, the commentary on the *Dhammasaṅgani*, says that the Abhidhamma is so called (*abhi* and *dhamma*) because it describes the same Dhammas as are related in the suttas in a more intensified (*dhammatireka*) and specialized (*dhammavisesatthena*) manner. The Abhidhammas do not give any new doctrines that are not in the suttas, but they deal somewhat elaborately with those that are already found in the suttas. Buddhaghosa in distinguishing the special features of the suttas from the Abhidhammas says that the acquirement of the former leads one to attain meditation (*samādhi*) whereas the latter leads one to attain wisdom (*paññasampadam*). The force of this statement probably lies in this, that the dialogues of the suttas leave a chastening effect on the mind, the like of which is not to be found in the Abhidhammas, which busy themselves in enumerating the Buddhist doctrines and defining them in a technical manner, which is more fitted to produce a reasoned

85

insight into the doctrines than directly to generate a craving for following the path of meditation for the extinction of sorrow. The Abhidhamma known as the *Kathavatthu* differs from the other Abhidhammas in this, that it attempts to reduce the views of the heterodox schools to absurdity. The discussions proceed in the form of questions and answers, and the answers of the opponents are often shown to be based on contradictory assumptions.

Page 75

The suttas contain five groups of collections called the Nikayas. These are (1) *Digha Nikaya*, called so on account of the length of the suttas contained in it; (2) *Majjhima Nikaya* (middling Nikaya), called so on account of the middling extent of the suttas contained in it; (3) *Sa@myutta Nikaya* (Nikayas relating to special meetings), called sa@myutta on account of their being delivered owing to the meetings (sa@myoga) of special persons which were the occasions for them; (4) *A@nguttara Nikaya*, so called because in each succeeding book of this work the topics of discussion increase by one [Footnote ref 1]; (5) *Khuddaka Nikaya* containing *Khuddaka pa@tha*, *Dhammapada*, *Udana*, *Itivuttaka*, *Sutta Nipata*, *Vimana-vatthu*, *Petavatthu*, *Theragatha*, *Therigatha*, *Jataka*, *Niddesa*, *Pa@tisambhidamagga*, *Apadana*, *Buddhava@msa*, *Caryapi@taka*.

The Abhidhammas are *Pa@t@thana*, *Dhammasa@nga@ni*, *Dhatukatha*, *Puggalapannatti*, *Vibha@nga*, *Yamaka* and *Kathavatthu*. There exists also a large commentary literature on diverse parts of the above works known as *atthakatha*. The work known as *Milinda Panha* (questions of King Milinda), of uncertain date, is of considerable philosophical value.

The doctrines and views incorporated in the above literature is generally now known as Sthaviravada or Theravada. On the origin of the name Theravada (the doctrine of the elders) *Dipava@msa* says that since the Theras (elders) met (at the first council) and collected the doctrines it was known as the Thera Vada [Footnote ref 2]. It does not appear that Buddhism as it appears in this Pali literature developed much since the time of *Buddhagho@sa* (400 A.D.), the writer of *Visuddhimagga* (a compendium of theravada doctrines) and the commentator of *Dighanikaya*, *Dhammasa@nga@ni*, etc.

Hindu philosophy in later times seems to have been influenced by the later offshoots of the different schools of Buddhism, but it does not appear that Pali Buddhism had any share in it. I

[Footnote 1: See *Buddhagho@sa's Atthasalini*, p. 25.]

[Footnote 2: Oldenberg's *Dipava@msa*, p. 31.]

have not been able to discover any old Hindu writer who could be considered as being acquainted with Pali.

The Doctrine of Causal Connection of early Buddhism [Footnote ref 1].

The word Dhamma in the Buddhist scriptures is used generally in four senses: (1) Scriptural texts, (2) quality (*gu@na*), (3) cause (*hetu*) and (4) unsubstantial and soulless (*nissatta nijjiva* [Footnote ref 2]). Of these it is the last meaning which is particularly important, from the point of view of Buddhist philosophy. The early Buddhist philosophy did not accept any fixed entity as determining all reality; the only things with it were the unsubstantial

Page 76

phenomena and these were called dhammas. The question arises that if there is no substance or reality how are we to account for the phenomena? But the phenomena are happening and passing away and the main point of interest with the Buddha was to find out “What being what else is,” “What happening what else happens” and “What not being what else is not.” The phenomena are happening in a series and we see that there being certain phenomena there become some others; by the happening of some events others also are produced. This is called (*pa@ticca-samuppada*) dependent origination. But it is difficult to understand what is the exact nature of this dependence. The question as *Sa@myutta Nikaya* (II. 5) has it with which the Buddha started before attaining Buddhahood was this: in what miserable condition are the people! they are born, they decay, they die, pass away and are born again; and they do not know the path of escape from this decay, death and misery.

How to know the Way to escape from this misery of decay and death. Then it occurred to him what being there, are decay and death, depending on what do they come? As he thought deeply into the root of the matter, it occurred to him that decay and death can only occur when there is birth (*jati*), so they depend

[Footnote 1: There are some differences of opinion as to whether one could take the doctrine of the twelve links of causes as we find it in the *Sa@myutta Nikaya* as the earliest Buddhist view, as *Sa@myutta* does not represent the oldest part of the suttas. But as this doctrine of the twelve causes became regarded as a fundamental Buddhist doctrine and as it gives us a start in philosophy I have not thought it fit to enter into conjectural discussions as to the earliest form. Dr E.J. Thomas drew my attention to this fact.]

[Footnote 2: *Atthasatini*, p. 38. There are also other senses in which the word is used, as *dhamma-desana* where it means religious teaching. The *La@nkavatara* described Dhamma as *gu@nadravyapurvaka dhamma*, i.e. Dharmmas are those which are associated as attributes and substances.]

85

on birth. What being there, is there birth, on what does birth depend? Then it occurred to him that birth could only be if there were previous existence (*bhava*) [Footnote ref 1]. But on what does this existence depend, or what being there is there *bhava*. Then it occurred to him that there could not be existence unless there were holding fast

(*upadana*) [Footnote ref 2]. But on what did *upadana* depend? It occurred to him that it was desire (*ta@nha*) on which *upadana* depended. There can be *upadana* if there is desire (*tanha*) [Footnote ref 3]. But what being there, can there be desire? To this question it occurred to him that there must be feeling (*vedana*) in order

Page 77

that there may be desire. But on what does vedana depend, or rather what must be there, that there may be feeling (*vedana*)? To this it occurred to him that there must be a sense-contact (*phassa*) in order that there may be feeling [Footnote ref 4]. If there should be no sense-contact there would be no feeling. But on what does sense-contact depend? It occurred to him that as there are six sense-contacts, there are the six fields of contact (*ayatana*) [Footnote ref 5]. But on what do the six ayatanas depend? It occurred to him that there must be the mind and body (*namarupa*) in order that there may be the six fields of contact [Footnote ref 6]; but on what does namarupa depend? It occurred to him that without consciousness (*vinna*) there could be no namarupa [Footnote ref 8]. But what being there would there

[Footnote 1: This word bhava is interpreted by Candrakirti in his *Madhyamika v@rtti*, p. 565 (La Vallee Poussin's edition) as the deed which brought about rebirth (*punarbhavajanaka@m karma samutthapayali kayena vaca manasa ca*).]

[Footnote 2: *Atthasalini*, p. 385, upadanantida@lhagaha@na@m. Candrakirti in explaining upadana says that whatever thing a man desires he holds fast to the materials necessary for attaining it (*yatra vastuni sat@r@s@nastasya vastuno 'rjanaya vi@dhapanaya upadanamupadatte tatra tatra prarthayate*). *Madhyamika v@rtti*, p. 565.]

[Footnote 3: Candrakirti describes t@r@s@na as *asvadanabhinandanadhyavasanaathanadatmapriyarupairviyogo ma bhut, nityamaparityago bhavediti, yeyam prarthana*—the desire that there may not ever be any separation from those pleasures, etc., which are dear to us. *Ibid.* 565.]

[Footnote 4: We read also of phassayatana and phassakaya. *M. N.* II. 261, III. 280, etc. Candrakirti says that _@sa@dbhirayatanadvarai@h k@rtyaprak@riya@h pravarttante prajayante. tannamarupapratyaya@m @sa@dayatanamucyate. sa@dbhyas`cayatanebhya@h @sa@tspars`akaya@h pravarttante. *M.V.* 565.]

[Footnote 5: Ayatana means the six senses together with their objects. Ayatana literally is "Field of operation." Sa@layatana means six senses as six fields of operation. Candrakirti has *ayatanadvarai@h*.]

[Footnote 6: I have followed the translation of Aung in rendering namarupa as mind and body, *Compendium*, p. 271. This seems to me to be fairly correct. The four skandhas are called nama in each birth. These together with rupa (matter) give us namarupa (mind and body) which being developed render the activities through the six sense-gates possible so that there may be knowledge. Cf. *M. V.* 564. Govindananda, the

commentator on S'a@nkara's bhasya on the *Brahma sutras* (II. ii. 19), gives a different interpretation of Namarupa which may probably

Page 78

refer to the Vijñānavāda view though we have no means at hand to verify it. He says— To think the momentary as the permanent is Avidyā; from there come the saṃskāras of attachment, antipathy or anger, and infatuation; from there the first vijñāna or thought of the foetus is produced, from that alayavijñāna, and the four elements (which are objects of name and are hence called nāma) are produced, and from those are produced the white and black, semen and blood called rūpa. Both Vacaspati and Amalananda agree with Govindananda in holding that nāma signifies the semen and the ovum while rūpa means the visible physical body built out of them. Vijñāna entered the womb and on account of it namarūpa were produced through the association of previous karma. See *Vedantakalpataru*, pp 274, 275. On the doctrine of the entrance of vijñāna into the womb compare *D N* II. 63.]

86

be viññāna. Here it occurred to him that in order that there might be viññāna there must be the conformations (*sa@nkhara*) [Footnote ref 1]. But what being there are there the *sa@nkhara*s? Here it occurred to him that the *sa@nkhara*s can only be if there is ignorance (*avijjā*). If *avijjā* could be stopped then the *sa@nkhara*s will be stopped, and if the *sa@nkhara*s could be stopped viññāna could be stopped and so on [Footnote ref 2].

It is indeed difficult to be definite as to what the Buddha actually wished to mean by this cycle of dependence of existence sometimes called Bhavacakra (wheel of existence). Decay and death (*jaramarana*) could not have happened if there was no birth [Footnote ref 3]. This seems to be clear. But at this point the difficulty begins. We must remember that the theory of rebirth was

[Footnote 1: It is difficult to say what is the exact sense of the word here. The Buddha was one of the first few earliest thinkers to introduce proper philosophical terms and phraseology with a distinct philosophical method and he had often to use the same word in more or less different senses. Some of the philosophical terms at least are therefore rather elastic when compared with the terms of precise and definite meaning which we find in later Sanskrit thought. Thus in *S N* III. p. 87, “*Sankhata@m abdisa@nkharaṇṭa*,” *sa@nkhara* means that which synthesises the complexes. In the *Compendium* it is translated as will, action. Mr. Aung thinks that it means the same as karma; it is here used in a different sense from what we find in the word *sa@nkhata khandha* (viz mental states). We get a list of 51 mental states forming *sa@nkhata*

khandha in *Dhamma Sangam*, p 18, and another different set of 40 mental states in *Dharmasamgraha*, p. 6. In addition to these forty *cittasamprayuktasa@mskara*, it also counts thirteen *cittaviprayuktasa@mskara*. Candrakirti interprets it as meaning attachment, antipathy and infatuation, p 563. Govindananda, the commentator on S'a@nkara's *Brahma sutra* (II. ii. 19), also interprets the word in connection with the doctrine of *Pratityasamutpada* as attachment, antipathy and infatuation.]

Page 79

[Footnote 2: *Samyutta Nikaya*, II. 7-8.]

[Footnote 3: Jara and marana bring in s'oka (grief), paridevana (lamentation), duhkha (suffering), daurmanasya (feeling of wretchedness and miserableness) and upayasa (feeling of extreme destitution) at the prospect of one's death or the death of other dear ones. All these make up suffering and are the results of jati (birth). M. V. (B.T.S.p. 208). S'a@nkara in his bhasya counted all the terms from jara, separately. The whole series is to be taken as representing the entirety of dukhaskandha.]

87

enunciated in the Upani@sads. The B@rhadara@nyaka says that just as an insect going to the end of a leaf of grass by a new effort collects itself in another so does the soul coming to the end of this life collect itself in another. This life thus presupposes another existence. So far as I remember there has seldom been before or after Buddha any serious attempt to prove or disprove the doctrine of rebirth [Footnote ref 1]. All schools of philosophy except the Carvakas believed in it and so little is known to us of the Carvaka sutras that it is difficult to say what they did to refute this doctrine. The Buddha also accepts it as a fact and does not criticize it. This life therefore comes only as one which had an infinite number of lives before, and which except in the case of a few emancipated ones would have an infinite number of them in the future. It was strongly believed by all people, and the Buddha also, when he came to think to what our present birth might be due, had to fall back upon another existence (*bhava*). If *bhava* means karma which brings rebirth as Candrakirti takes it to mean, then it would mean that the present birth could only take place on account of the works of a previous existence which determined it. Here also we are reminded of the Upani@sad note "as a man does so will he be born" (*Yat karma kurute tadabhisampadyate*, Brh IV. iv. 5). Candrakirti's interpretation of "bhava" as Karma (*punarbhavajanakam karma*) seems to me to suit better than "existence." The word was probably used rather loosely for *kammabhava*. The word *bhava* is not found in the earlier Upani@sads and was used in the Pali scriptures for the first time as a philosophical term. But on what does this *bhava* depend? There could not have been a previous existence if people had not betaken themselves to things or works they desired. This betaking oneself to actions or things in accordance with desire is called *upadana*. In the Upani@sads we read, "whatever one betakes himself to, so does he work" (*Yatkraturbhavati tatkarma kurute*, B@rh. IV. iv. 5). As this betaking to the thing depends upon desire {*t@r@s@na*}, it is said that in order that there may be *upadana* there must be *tanha*. In the Upani@sads also we read "Whatever one desires so does he betake himself to" (*sa yathakamo bhavati tatkraturbhavati*). Neither the word *upadana* nor *t@rs@na* (the Sanskrit word corresponding

Page 80

[Footnote 1: The attempts to prove the doctrine of rebirth in the Hindu philosophical works such as the Nyaya, etc., are slight and inadequate.]

88

to ta@nha) is found in the earlier Upani@sads, but the ideas contained in them are similar to the words “*kratu*” and “*kama*.” Desire (ta@nha) is then said to depend on feeling or sense-contact. Sense-contact presupposes the six senses as fields of operation [Footnote ref 1]. These six senses or operating fields would again presuppose the whole psychosis of the man (the body and the mind together) called namarupa. We are familiar with this word in the Upani@sads but there it is used in the sense of determinate forms and names as distinguished from the indeterminate indefinable reality [Footnote ref 2]. Buddhagho@sa in the *Visuddhimagga* says that by “Name” are meant the three groups beginning with sensation (i.e. sensation, perception and the predisposition); by “Form” the four elements and form derivative from the four elements [Footnote ref 3]. He further says that name by itself can produce physical changes, such as eating, drinking, making movements or the like. So form also cannot produce any of those changes by itself. But like the cripple and the blind they mutually help one another and effectuate the changes [Footnote ref 4]. But there exists no heap or collection of material for the production of Name and Form; “but just as when a lute is played upon, there is no previous store of sound; and when the sound comes into existence it does not come from any such store; and when it ceases, it does not go to any of the cardinal or intermediate points of the compass;...in exactly the same way all the elements of being both those with form and those without, come into existence after having previously been non-existent and having come into existence pass away [Footnote ref 5].” Namarupa taken in this sense will not mean the whole of mind and body, but only the sense functions and the body which are found to operate in the six doors of sense (*sa@layatana*). If we take namarupa in this sense, we can see that it may be said to depend upon the vinnana (consciousness). Consciousness has been compared in the *Milinda Panha* with a watchman at the middle of

[Footnote 1: The word ayatana is found in many places in the earlier Upani@sads in the sense of “field or place,” Cha. I. 5, B@rh. III. 9. 10, but @sa@dayatana does not occur.]

[Footnote 2: Candrakirti interprets nama as *Vedanadayo' rupi@nas'catvara@h skandhastatra tatra bhave namayantili nama. saha rupaskandhena ca nama rupam ceti namarupamucyate*. The four skandhas in each specific birth act as name. These together with rupa make namarupa. *M.* V. 564.]

[Footnote 3: Warren's *Buddhism in Translations*, p. 184.]

Page 81

[Footnote 4: *Ibid.* p. 185, *Visuddhimagga*, Ch. XVII.]

[Footnote 5: *Ibid.* pp. 185-186, *Visuddhimagga*, Ch. XVII.]

89

the cross-roads beholding all that come from any direction [Footnote ref 1].
Buddhagho@sa in the *Atthasalini* also says that consciousness means that which thinks its object. If we are to define its characteristics we must say that it knows (*vijanana*), goes in advance (*pubba@ngama*), connects (*sandhana*), and stands on namarupa (*namarupapada@t@thanam*). When the consciousness gets a door, at a place the objects of sense are discerned (*arammana-vibhavana@t@thane*) and it goes first as the precursor. When a visual object is seen by the eye it is known only by the consciousness, and when the dhammas are made the objects of (mind) *mano*, it is known only by the consciousness [Footnote ref 2]. Buddhagho@sa also refers here to the passage in the *Milinda Panha* we have just referred to. He further goes on to say that when states of consciousness rise one after another, they leave no gap between the previous state and the later and consciousness therefore appears as connected. When there are the aggregates of the five khandhas it is lost; but there are the four aggregates as namarupa, it stands on nama and therefore it is said that it stands on namarupa. He further asks, Is this consciousness the same as the previous consciousness or different from it? He answers that it is the same. Just so, the sun shows itself with all its colours, *etc.*, but he is not different from those in truth; and it is said that just when the sun rises, its collected heat and yellow colour also rise then, but it does not mean that the sun is different from these. So the citta or consciousness takes the phenomena of contact, *etc.*, and cognizes them. So though it is the same as they are yet in a sense it is different from them [Footnote ref 3].

To go back to the chain of twelve causes, we find that jati (birth) is the cause of decay and death, *jaramara@na*, *etc.* Jati is the appearance of the body or the totality of the five skandhas [Footnote ref 4]. Coming to bhava which determines jati, I cannot think of any better rational explanation of bhava, than that I have already

[Footnote 1: Warren's *Buddhism in Translations*, p. 182, *Milinda Panha* (628).]

[Footnote 2: *Atthasalini*, p. 112...]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* p. 113, *Yatha hi rupadini upadaya pannatta suriyadayo na atthato rupadihi anne honti ten' eva yasmin samaye suriyo udeti tasmin samaye tassa teja-*



*sa@nkhatam rupa@m piti eva@m vuccamane pi na rupadihi anno suriyo nama atthi.
Tatha cittam phassadayo dhamme upadaya pannapiyati. Atthato pan' ettha tehi annam
eva. Tena yasmin samaye cittam uppanna@m hoti eka@msen eva tasmin samaye
phassadihi atthato annad eva hoti ti.]*

Page 82

[Footnote 4: “*Jatirdehajanma pancaskandhasamudaya@h*,” Govindananda’s *Ratnaprabha* on S’a@nkara’s *bha@sya*, II. ii. 19.]

90

suggested, namely, the works (*karma*) which produce the birth [Footnote ref 1]. Upadana is an advanced t@r@s@na leading to positive clinging [Footnote ref 2]. It is produced by t@r@s@na (desire) which again is the result of vedana (pleasure and pain). But this vedana is of course vedana with ignorance (*avidya*), for an Arhat may have also vedana but as he has no *avidya*, the vedana cannot produce t@r@s@na in turn. On its development it immediately passes into upadana. Vedana means pleasurable, painful or indifferent feeling. On the one side it leads to t@r@s@na (desire) and on the other it is produced by sense-contact (*spars’a*). Prof. De la Vallee Poussin says that S’rilabha distinguishes three processes in the production of vedana. Thus first there is the contact between the sense and the object; then there is the knowledge of the object, and then there is the vedana. Depending on *Majjhima Nikaya*, iii. 242, Poussin gives the other opinion that just as in the case of two sticks heat takes place simultaneously with rubbing, so here also vedana takes place simultaneously with *spars’a* for they are “produits par un meme complexe de causes (*samagri*)” [Footnote ref 3].”

Spars’a is produced by @sa@dayatana, @sa@dayatana by *namarupa*, and *namarupa* by *vijnana*, and is said to descend in the womb of the mother and produce the five skandhas as *namarupa*, out of which the six senses are specialized.

Vijnana in this connection probably means the principle or germ of consciousness in the womb of the mother upholding the five elements of the new body there. It is the product of the past karmas (*sa@nkhara*) of the dying man and of his past consciousness too.

We sometimes find that the Buddhists believed that the last thoughts of the dying man determined the nature of his next

[Footnote 1: Govindananda in his *Ratnaprabha* on S’a@nkara’s *bha@sya*, II. ii. 19, explains “bhava” as that from which anything becomes, as merit and demerit (*dharmadi*). See also *Vibhanga*, p. 137 and Warren’s *Buddhism in Translations*, p. 201. Mr Aung says in *Abhidhammatthasa@ngaha*, p. 189, that *bhavo* includes *kammabhavo* (the active side of an existence) and *upapattibhavo* (the passive side). And the commentators say that *bhava* is a contraction of “*kammabhava*” or Karma-becoming *i.e.* karmic activity.]

[Footnote 2: Prof. De la Vallee Poussin in his *Theoric des Douze Causes*, p. 26, says that *S'alistambhasutra* explains the word “upadana” as “t@r@s@navaipulya” or hyper-t@r@s@na and Candrakirti also gives the same meaning, *M. V.* (B.T.S.p. 210). Govmdananda explains “upadana” as prav@rtti (movement) generated by t@r@s@na (desire), *i.e.* the active tendency in pursuance of desire. But if upadana means “support” it would denote all the five skandhas. Thus *Madhyamaka v@rtti* says *upadanam pancaskandhalak@sa@nam...pancopadanaskandhakhyam upadanam. M.V. XXVII. 6.*]

Page 83

[Footnote 3: Poussin's *Theorie des Douze Causes*, p. 23.

91

birth [Footnote ref 1]. The manner in which the vijnana produced in the womb is determined by the past vijnana of the previous existence is according to some authorities of the nature of a reflected image, like the transmission of learning from the teacher to the disciple, like the lighting of a lamp from another lamp or like the impress of a stamp on wax. As all the skandhas are changing in life, so death also is but a similar change; there is no great break, but the same uniform sort of destruction and coming into being. New skandhas are produced as simultaneously as the two scale pans of a balance rise up and fall, in the same manner as a lamp is lighted or an image is reflected. At the death of the man the vijnana resulting from his previous karmas and vijnanas enters into the womb of that mother (animal, man or the gods) in which the next skandhas are to be matured. This vijnana thus forms the principle of the new life. It is in this vijnana that name (*nama*) and form (*rupa*) become associated.

The vijnana is indeed a direct product of the sa@mskaras and the sort of birth in which vijnana should bring down (*namayati*) the new existence (*upapatti*) is determined by the sa@mskaras [Footnote ref 2], for in reality the happening of death (*mara@nabhava*) and the instillation of the vijnana as the beginning of the new life (*upapattibhava*) cannot be simultaneous, but the latter succeeds just at the next moment, and it is to signify this close succession that they are said to be simultaneous. If the vijnana had not entered the womb then no namarupa could have appeared [Footnote ref 3].

This chain of twelve causes extends over three lives. Thus avidya and sa@mskara of the past life produce the vijnana, namarupa,

[Footnote 1: The deities of the gardens, the woods, the trees and the plants, finding the master of the house, Citta, ill said "make your resolution, 'May I be a cakravartti king in a next existence,'" *Sa@myutta*, IV. 303.]

[Footnote 2: "*sa cedanandavijnana@m matu@hkuk@sim navakrameta, na tat kalalam kalalatvaya sannivartteta*," *M.* V. 552. Compare *Caraka*, *S'arira*, III. 5-8, where he speaks of a "upapiduka sattva" which connects the soul with body and by the absence of which the character is changed, the senses become affected and life ceases, when it is in a pure condition one can remember even the previous births; character, purity, antipathy, memory, fear, energy, all mental qualities are produced out of it. Just as a chariot is made by the combination of many elements, so is the foetus.]

[Footnote 3: *Madhyamaka v@riti* (B.T.S. 202-203). Poussin quotes from *Digha*, II. 63, “si le vijñana ne descendait pas dans le sein maternel la namarupa s’y constituerait-il?” Govindananda on S’a@nkara’s commentary on the *Brahma-sutras* (II. ii. 19) says that the first consciousness (vijñana) of the foetus is produced by the sa@mskaras of the previous birth, and from that the four elements (which he calls nama) and from that the white and red, semen and ovum, and the first stage of the foetus (*kalala-budbudavastha*) is produced.]

Page 84

92

@sa@dayatana, spars'a, vedana, t@r@s@na, upadana and the bhava (leading to another life) of the present actual life. This bhava produces the jati and jaramara@na of the next life [Footnote ref 1].

It is interesting to note that these twelve links in the chain extending in three sections over three lives are all but the manifestations of sorrow to the bringing in of which they naturally determine one another. Thus *Abhidhammatthasa@ngaha* says "each of these twelve terms is a factor. For the composite term 'sorrow,' etc. is only meant to show incidental consequences of birth. Again when 'ignorance' and 'the actions of the mind' have been taken into account, craving (*t@r@s@na*), grasping (*upadana*) and (*karma*) becoming (*bhava*) are implicitly accounted for also. In the same manner when craving, grasping and (*karma*) becoming have been taken into account, ignorance and the actions of the mind are (implicitly) accounted for, also; and when birth, decay, and death are taken into account, even the fivefold fruit, to wit (rebirth), consciousness, and the rest are accounted for. And thus:

Five causes in the Past and Now a fivefold 'fruit.'

Five causes Now and yet to come a fivefold 'fruit' make up the Twenty Modes, the Three Connections (1. sa@nkhara and vinnana, 2. vedana and tanha, 3. bhava and jati) and the four groups (one causal group in the Past, one resultant group in the Present, one causal group in the Present and one resultant group in the Future, each group consisting of five modes) [Footnote ref 2]."

These twelve interdependent links (*dvadas'a@nga*) represent the pa@tिकासamuppada (*pratityasamutpada*) doctrines (dependent origination) [Footnote ref 3] which are themselves but sorrow and lead to cycles of sorrow. The term pa@tिकासamuppada or pratityasamutpada has been differently interpreted in later Buddhist literature [Footnote ref 4].

[Footnote 1: This explanation probably cannot be found in the early Pali texts; but Buddhagho@sa mentions it in *Suma@ngalavilasini* on *Mahanidana suttanta*. We find it also in *Abhidhammatthasa@ngaha*, VIII. 3. Ignorance and the actions of the mind belong to the past; "birth," "decay and death" to the future; the intermediate eight to the present. It is styled as tri@ka@n@daka (having three branches) in *Abhidkarmakos'a*, III. 20-24. Two in the past branch, two in the future and eight in the middle "sa

pratityasamutpado dvadas'a@ngastrika@n@daka@h purvaparantayordve dve madhye@s@tau."]

[Footnote 2: Aung and Mrs Rhys Davids' translation of *Abhidhammatthasa@ngaha*, pp. 189-190.]

[Footnote 3: The twelve links are not always constant. Thus in the list given in the *Dialogues of the Buddha*, II. 23 f., *avijja* and *sa@nkhara* have been omitted and the start has been made with consciousness, and it has been said that "Cognition turns back from name and form; it goes not beyond."]

Page 85

[Footnote 4: *M. V. p. 5 f.*]

93

Samutpada means appearance or arising (*pradurbhdava*) and pratitya means after getting (*prati+i+ya*); combining the two we find, arising after getting (something). The elements, depending on which there is some kind of arising, are called hetu (cause) and paccaya (ground). These two words however are often used in the same sense and are interchangeable. But paccaya is also used in a specific sense. Thus when it is said that avijja is the paccaya of sa@nkhara it is meant that avijja is the ground (_@thiti_) of the origin of the sa@nkhara, is the ground of their movement, of the instrument through which they stand (*nimitta@t@thiti*), of their ayuhana (conglomeration), of their interconnection, of their intelligibility, of their conjoint arising, of their function as cause and of their function as the ground with reference to those which are determined by them. Avijja in all these nine ways is the ground of sa@nkhara both in the past and also in the future, though avijja itself is determined in its turn by other grounds [Footnote ref 1]. When we take the betu aspect of the causal chain, we cannot think of anything else but succession, but when we take the paccaya aspect we can have a better vision into the nature of the cause as ground. Thus when avijja is said to be the ground of the sa@nkhara in the nine ways mentioned above, it seems reasonable to think that the sa@nkhara were in some sense regarded as special manifestations of avijja [Footnote ref 2]. But as this point was not further developed in the early Buddhist texts it would be unwise to proceed further with it.

The Khandhas.

The word khandha (Skr. skandha) means the trunk of a tree and is generally used to mean group or aggregate [Footnote ref 3]. We have seen that Buddha said that there was no atman (soul). He said that when people held that they found the much spoken of soul, they really only found the five khandhas together or any one of them. The khandhas are aggregates of bodily and psychical states which are immediate with us and are divided into five

[Footnote 1: See *Pa@tisambhidamagga*, vol. I.p. 50; see also *Majjhima Nikaya*, I. 67, *sa@nkhara...avijjanidana avijjasamudaya avijjajatika avijjapabhava*.]

[Footnote 2: In the Yoga derivation of asmita (egoism), raga (attachment), dve@sa (antipathy) and abhinives'a (self love) from avidya we find also that all the five are regarded as the five special stages of the growth of avidya (*pancaparvi avidya*).]

[Footnote 3: The word skandha is used in Chandogya, II. 23 (*trayo dharmaskandha@h yajna@h adhyayanam danam*) in the sense of branches and in almost the same sense in Maitri, VII. II.]

94

classes: (1) rupa (four elements, the body, the senses), sense data, *etc.*, (2) vedana (feeling—pleasurable, painful and indifferent), (3) sanna (conceptual knowledge), (4) sa@nkhara (synthetic mental states and the synthetic functioning of compound sense-affections, compound feelings and compound concepts), (5) vinnana (consciousness) [Footnote ref 1].

Page 86

All these states rise depending one upon the other (*pa@ticcasamuppanna*) and when a man says that he perceives the self he only deludes himself, for he only perceives one or more of these. The word *rupa* in *rupakhandha* stands for matter and material qualities, the senses, and the sense data [Footnote ref 2]. But “*rupa*” is also used in the sense of pure organic affections or states of mind as we find in the *Khandha Yamaka*, I.p. 16, and also in *Sa@myutta Nikaya*, III. 86. *Rupaskandha* according to *Dhammasa@mgraha* means the aggregate of five senses, the five sensations, and the implicatory communications associated in sense perceptions (*vijnapti*).

The elaborate discussion of *Dhammasa@nga@ni* begins by defining *rupa* as “*cattaro ca mahabhuta catunna mahabhntanam upadaya rupam*” (the four mahabhutas or elements and that proceeding from the grasping of that is called *rupa*) [Footnote ref 3]. *Buddhagho@sa* explains it by saying that *rupa* means the four mahabhutas and those which arise depending (*nissaya*) on them as a modification of them. In the *rupa* the six senses including their affections are also included. In explaining why the four elements are called mahabhutas, *Buddhagho@sa* says: “Just as a magician (*mayakara*) makes the water which is not hard appear as hard, makes the stone which is not gold appear as gold; just as he himself though not a ghost nor a bird makes himself appear as a ghost or a bird, so these elements though not themselves blue make themselves appear as blue (*nilam upada rupam*), not yellow, red, or white make themselves appear as yellow, red or white (*odanam upadarupam*), so on account of their similarity to the appearances created by the magician they are called mahabhuta [Footnote ref 4].”

In the *Sa@myutta Nikaya* we find that the Buddha says, “O Bhikkhus it is called *rupam* because it manifests (*rupyati*); how

[Footnote 1: *Sa@myutta Nikaya*, III. 86, etc.]

[Footnote 2: *Abhidhammatthasangaha*, J.P.T.S. 1884, p. 27 ff.]

[Footnote 3: *Dhammasa@nga@ni*, pp. 124-179.]

[Footnote 4: *Atthasalini*, p. 299.]

does it manifest? It manifests as cold, and as heat, as hunger and as thirst, it manifests as the touch of gnats, mosquitos, wind, the sun and the snake; it manifests, therefore it is called *rupa* [Footnote ref 1].”

If we take the somewhat conflicting passages referred to above for our consideration and try to combine them so as to understand what is meant by rupa, I think we find that that which manifested itself to the senses and organs was called rupa. No distinction seems to have been made between the sense-data as colours, smells, *etc.*, as existing in the physical world and their appearance as sensations. They were only numerically different and the appearance of the

Page 87

sensations was dependent upon the sense-data and the senses but the sense-data and the sensations were “rupa.” Under certain conditions the sense-data were followed by the sensations. Buddhism did not probably start with the same kind of division of matter and mind as we now do. And it may not be out of place to mention that such an opposition and duality were found neither in the Upani@sads nor in the Sa@mkhya system which is regarded by some as pre-Buddhistic. The four elements manifested themselves in certain forms and were therefore called rupa; the forms of affection that appeared were also called rupa; many other mental states or features which appeared with them were also called rupa [Footnote ref 2]. The ayatanas or the senses were also called rupa [Footnote ref 3]. The mahabhutas or four elements were themselves but changing manifestations, and they together with all that appeared in association with them were called rupa and formed the rupa khandha (the classes of sense-materials, sense-data, senses and sensations).

In *Sa@myutta Nikaya* (III. 101) it is said that “the four mahabhutas were the hetu and the paccaya for the communication of the rupakkhandha (*rupakkhandhassa pannapanaya*). Contact (sense-contact, phassa) is the cause of the communication of feelings (*vedana*); sense-contact was also the hetu and paccaya for the communication of the sannakkhandha; sense-contact is also the hetu and paccaya for the communication of the sa@nkharakkhandha. But namarupa is the hetu and the paccaya for the communication of the vinnanakkhandha.” Thus not only feelings arise on account of the sense-contact but sanna and sa@nkhara also arise therefrom. Sanna is that where specific knowing or

[Footnote 1: *Sa@myutta Nikaya*, III. 86.]

[Footnote 2: *Khandhayamaka*.]

[Footnote 3: *Dhammasanga@ni*, p. 124 ff.]

conceiving takes place. This is the stage where the specific distinctive knowledge as the yellow or the red takes place.

Mrs. Rhys Davids writing on sanna says: “In editing the second book of the *Abhidhamma pi@taka* I found a classification distinguishing between sanna as cognitive

assimilation on occasion of sense, and sanna as cognitive assimilation of ideas by way of naming. The former is called perception of resistance, or opposition (*patigha-sanna*). This, writes Buddhaghoṣa, is perception on occasion of sight, hearing, etc., when consciousness is aware of the impact of impressions; of external things as different, we might say. The latter is called perception of the equivalent word or name (*adhivachana-sanna*) and is exercised by the *sensus communis* (mano), when e.g. 'one is seated...and asks another who is thoughtful: "What are you thinking of?" one perceives through his speech.' Thus there are two stages of sanna-consciousness, 1. contemplating sense-impressions, 2. ability to know what they are by naming [Footnote ref 1]."

Page 88

About sa@nkhara we read in *Sa@myutta Nikaya* (III. 87) that it is called sa@nkhara because it synthesises (*abhisa@nkharonti*), it is that which conglomerated rupa as rupa, conglomerated sanna as sanna, sa@nkhara as sa@nkhara and consciousness (*vinnana*) as consciousness. It is called sa@nkhara because it synthesises the conglomerated (*sa@nkhatam abhisa@nkharonti*). It is thus a synthetic function which synthesises the passive rupa, sanna, sa@nkhara and vinnana elements. The fact that we hear of 52 sa@nkhara states and also that the sa@nkhara exercises its synthetic activity on the conglomerated elements in it, goes to show that probably the word sa@nkhara is used in two senses, as mental states and as synthetic activity.

Vinnana or consciousness meant according to Buddhagho@sa, as we have already seen in the previous section, both the stage at which the intellectual process started and also the final resulting consciousness.

Buddhagho@sa in explaining the process of Buddhist psychology says that “consciousness(*citta*) first comes into touch (*phassa*) with its object (*aramma@na*) and thereafter feeling, conception (*sanna*) and volition (*cetana*) come in. This contact is like the pillars of a palace, and the rest are but the superstructure built upon it (*dabbasambharasadisa*). But it should not be thought that contact

[Footnote 1: *Buddhist Psychology*, pp. 49, 50.]

97

is the beginning of the psychological processes, for in one whole consciousness (*ekacittasmi@m*) it cannot be said that this comes first and that comes after, so we can take contact in association with feeling (*vedana*), conceiving (*sanna*) or volition (*cetana*); it is itself an immaterial state but yet since it comprehends objects it is called contact.” “There is no impinging on one side of the object (as in physical contact), nevertheless contact causes consciousness and object to be in collision, as visible object and visual organs, sound and hearing; thus impact is its *function*; or it has impact as its *essential property* in the sense of attainment, owing to the impact of the physical basis with the mental object. For it is said in the Commentary:—“contact in the four planes of existence is never without the characteristic of touch with the object; but the function of impact takes place in the five doors. For to sense, or five-door contact, is given the name ‘having the characteristic of touch’ as well as ‘having the function of impact.’ But to contact in the mind-door there is only the characteristic of touch, but not the function of impact. And then this Sutta is quoted ‘As if, sire, two rams were to fight, one ram to

represent the eye, the second the visible object, and their collision contact. And as if, sire, two cymbals were to

Page 89

strike against each other, or two hands were to clap against each other; one hand would represent the eye, the second the visible object and their collision contact. Thus contact has the characteristic of touch and the function of impact [Footnote ref 1]'. Contact is the manifestation of the union of the three (the object, the consciousness and the sense) and its effect is feeling (*vedana*); though it is generated by the objects it is felt in the consciousness and its chief feature is experiencing (*anubhava*) the taste of the object. As regards enjoying the taste of an object, the remaining associated states enjoy it only partially. Of contact there is (the function of) the mere touching, of perception the mere noting or perceiving, of volition the mere coordinating, of consciousness the mere cognizing. But feeling alone, through governance, proficiency, mastery, enjoys the taste of an object. For feeling is like the king, the remaining states are like the cook. As the cook, when he has prepared food of diverse tastes, puts it in a basket, seals it, takes it to the king, breaks the seal, opens the basket, takes the best of all the soup and curries, puts them in a dish, swallows (a portion) to find out

[Footnote 1: *Atthasalini*, p. 108; translation, pp. 143-144.]

98

whether they are faulty or not and afterwards offers the food of various excellent tastes to the king, and the king, being lord, expert, and master, eats whatever he likes, even so the mere tasting of the food by the cook is like the partial enjoyment of the object by the remaining states, and as the cook tastes a portion of the food, so the remaining states enjoy a portion of the object, and as the king, being lord, expert and master, eats the meal according to his pleasure so feeling being lord expert, and master, enjoys the taste of the object and therefore it is said that enjoyment or experience is its function [Footnote ref 1]."

The special feature of *sanna* is said to be the recognizing (*paccabhinna*) by means of a sign (*abhinnanena*). According to another explanation, a recognition takes place by the inclusion of the totality (of aspects)—*sabbasaṅgahikavasena*. The work of volition (*cetana*) is said to be coordination or binding together (*abhisandahana*). "Volition is exceedingly energetic and makes a double effort, a double exertion. Hence the Ancients said 'Volition is like the nature of a landowner, a cultivator who taking fifty-five strong men, went down to the fields to reap. He was exceedingly energetic and exceedingly strenuous; he doubled his strength and said "Take your sickles" and so forth, pointed out the portion to be reaped, offered them drink, food, scent, flowers, etc., and took an equal share of the work.' The simile should be thus applied: volition is like the cultivator, the fifty-five moral states which arise as factors of consciousness are like

the fifty-five strong men; like the time of doubling strength, doubling effort by the cultivator is the doubled strength, doubled effort of volition as regards activity in moral and immoral acts [Footnote ref 2].” It seems that probably the active side operating in sa@nkhara was separately designated as cetana (volition).

Page 90

“When one says ‘I,’ what he does is that he refers either to all the khandhas combined or any one of them and deludes himself that that was ‘I.’ Just as one could not say that the fragrance of the lotus belonged to the petals, the colour or the pollen, so one could not say that the rupa was ‘I’ or that the vedana was ‘I’ or any of the other khandhas was ‘I.’ There is nowhere to be found in the khandhas ‘I am [Footnote ref 3].”

[Footnote 1: *Atthasalini*, pp. 109-110; translation, pp. 145-146.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p. 111; translation, pp. 147-148.]

[Footnote 3: *Samyutta Nikaya*, III. 130.]

99

Avijja and Asava.

As to the question how the avijja (ignorance) first started there can be no answer, for we could never say that either ignorance or desire for existence ever has any beginning [Footnote ref 1]. Its fruition is seen in the cycle of existence and the sorrow that comes in its train, and it comes and goes with them all. Thus as we can never say that it has any beginning, it determines the elements which bring about cycles of existence and is itself determined by certain others. This mutual determination can only take place in and through the changing series of dependent phenomena, for there is nothing which can be said to have any absolute priority in time or stability. It is said that it is through the coming into being of the asavas or depravities that the avijja came into being, and that through the destruction of the depravities (*asava*) the avijja was destroyed [Footnote ref 2]. These asavas are classified in the *Dhammasaṅgani* as kamasava, bhavasava, diṭṭhasava and avijjasava. Kamasava means desire, attachment, pleasure, and thirst after the qualities associated with the senses; bhavasava means desire, attachment and will for existence or birth; diṭṭhasava means the holding of heretical views, such as, the world is eternal or non-eternal, or that the world will come to an end or will not come to an end, or that the body and the soul are one or are different; avijjasava means the ignorance of sorrow, its cause, its extinction and its means of extinction. *Dhammasaṅgani* adds four more supplementary ones, viz. ignorance about the nature of anterior mental khandhas, posterior mental khandhas, anterior and posterior together, and their mutual dependence [Footnote ref 3]. Kamasava and bhavasava can as Buddhaghoṣa says be counted as one, for they are both but depravities due to attachment [Footnote ref 4].

[Footnote 1: Warren's *Buddhism in Translations* (*Visuddhimagga*, chap. XVII.), p. 175.]

Page 91

[Footnote 2: *M. N.* I.p. 54. Childers translates “asava” as “depravities” and Mrs Rhys Davids as “intoxicants.” The word “asava” in Skr. means “old wine.” It is derived from “su” to produce by Buddhagho@sa and the meaning that he gives to it is “*cira parivasika@t@thena*” (on account of its being stored up for a long time like wine). They work through the eye and the mind and continue to produce all beings up to Indra. As those wines which are kept long are called “asavas” so these are also called asavas for remaining a long time. The other alternative that Buddhagho@sa gives is that they are called asava on account of their producing sa@msaradukkha (sorrows of the world), *Atthasalini*, p. 48. Contrast it with Jaina asrava (flowing in of karma matter). Finding it difficult to translate it in one word after Buddhagho@sa, I have translated it as “depravities,” after Childers.]

[Footnote 3: See *Dhammasa@nga@ni*, p. 195.]

[Footnote 4: Buddhagho@sa’s *Atthasalini*, p. 371.]

100

The di@t@thasavas by clouding the mind with false metaphysical views stand in the way of one’s adopting the true Buddhistic doctrines. The kamasavas stand in the way of one’s entering into the way of Nirva@na (*anagamimagga*) and the bhavasavas and avijjasavas stand in the way of one’s attaining arha or final emancipation. When the *Majjhima Nikaya* says that from the rise of the asavas avijja rises, it evidently counts avijja there as in some sense separate from the other asavas, such as those of attachment and desire of existence which veil the true knowledge about sorrow.

The afflictions (*kilesas*) do not differ much from the asavas for they are but the specific passions in forms ordinarily familiar to us, such as covetousness (*lobha*), anger or hatred (*dosa*), infatuation (*moha*), arrogance, pride or vanity (*mana*), heresy (*di@t@thi*), doubt or uncertainty (*vicikiccha*), idleness (*thina*), boastfulness (*udhacca*), shamelessness (*ahirika*) and hardness of heart (*anottapa*); these kilesas proceed directly as a result of the asavas. In spite of these varieties they are often counted as three (*lobha, dosa, moha*) and these together are called kilesa. They are associated with the vedanakkhandha, sannakkhandha, sa@nkharakkhandha and vinnanakkhandha. From these arise the three kinds of actions, of speech, of body, and of mind [Footnote ref 1].

Sila and Samadhi.

We are intertwined all through outside and inside by the tangles of desire (*ta@nha ja@ta*), and the only way by which these may be loosened is by the practice of right discipline (*sila*), concentration (*samadhi*) and wisdom (*panna*). Sila briefly means the desisting from committing all sinful deeds (*sabbapapassa akara@nam*). With sila therefore the first start has to be made, for by it one ceases to do all actions prompted by bad desires

Page 92

and thereby removes the inrush of dangers and disturbances. This serves to remove the kilesas, and therefore the proper performance of the sila would lead one to the first two successive stages of sainthood, viz. the sotapannabhava (the stage in which one is put in the right current) and the sakadagamibhava (the stage when one has only one more birth to undergo). Samadhi is a more advanced effort, for by it all the old roots of the old kilesas are destroyed and the ta@nha or desire is removed and

[Footnote 1: *Dhammasa@nga@ni*, p. 180.]

101

by it one is led to the more advanced states of a saint. It directly brings in panna (true wisdom) and by panna the saint achieves final emancipation and becomes what is called an arhat [Footnote ref 1]. Wisdom (*panna*) is right knowledge about the four ariya saccas, viz. sorrow, its cause, its destruction and its cause of destruction.

Sila means those particular volitions and mental states, etc. by which a man who desists from committing sinful actions maintains himself on the right path. Sila thus means 1. right volition (*cetana*), 2. the associated mental states (*cetasika*), 3. mental control (*sa@mvara*) and 4. the actual non-transgression (in body and speech) of the course of conduct already in the mind by the preceding three silas called avitikkama. Sa@mvara is spoken of as being of five kinds, 1. Pa@timokkhasa@mvara (the control which saves him who abides by it), 2. Satisa@mvara (the control of mindfulness), 3. Nanasa@mvara (the control of knowledge), 4. Khantisa@mvara (the control of patience), 5. Viriyasa@mvara (the control of active self-restraint). Pa@timokkhasa@mvara means all self-control in general. Satisa@mvara means the mindfulness by which one can bring in the right and good associations when using one's cognitive senses. Even when looking at any tempting object he will by virtue of his mindfulness (*sati*) control himself from being tempted by avoiding to think of its tempting side and by thinking on such aspects of it as may lead in the right direction. Khantisa@mvara is that by which one can remain unperturbed in heat and cold. By the proper adherence to sila all our bodily, mental and vocal activities (*kamma*) are duly systematized, organized, stabilized (*samadhanam*, *upadhara@na@m*, *pati@t@tha*) [Footnote ref 2].

The sage who adopts the full course should also follow a number of healthy monastic rules with reference to dress, sitting, dining, etc., which are called the dhuta@ngas or pure disciplinary parts [Footnote ref 3]. The practice of sila and the dhutangas help the sage to adopt the course of samadhi. Samadhi as we have seen means the

concentration of the mind bent on right endeavours (*kusalacittakaggata samadhi@h*) together with its states upon one particular object (*ekamma@na*) so that they may completely cease to shift and change (*samma ca avikkhipamana*) [Footnote ref 4].

Page 93

[Footnote 1: *Visuddhimagga Nidanadikatha*.]

[Footnote 2: *Visuddhimagga-silaniddeso*, pp. 7 and 8.]

[Footnote 3: *Visuddhimagga*, II.]

[Footnote 4: *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 84-85.]

102

The man who has practised sila must train his mind first in particular ways, so that it may be possible for him to acquire the chief concentration of meditation called jhana (fixed and steady meditation). These preliminary endeavours of the mind for the acquirement of jhanasamadhi eventually lead to it and are called upacara samadhi (preliminary samadhi) as distinguished from the jhanasamadhi called the appanasamadhi (achieved samadhi) [Footnote ref 1]. Thus as a preparatory measure, firstly he has to train his mind continually to view with disgust the appetitive desires for eating and drinking (*ahare pa@tikkulasanna*) by emphasizing in the mind the various troubles that are associated in seeking food and drink and their ultimate loathsome transformations as various nauseating bodily elements. When a man continually habituates himself to emphasize the disgusting associations of food and drink, he ceases to have any attachment to them and simply takes them as an unavoidable evil, only awaiting the day when the final dissolution of all sorrows will come [Footnote ref 2]. Secondly he has to habituate his mind to the idea that all the parts of our body are made up of the four elements, k@siti (earth), ap (water), tejas (fire) and wind (air), like the carcass of a cow at the butcher's shop. This is technically called catudhatuvavatthanabhavana (the meditation of the body as being made up of the four elements) [Footnote ref 3]. Thirdly he has to habituate his mind to think again and again (*anussati*) about the virtues or greatness of the Buddha, the sa@ngaha (the monks following the Buddha), the gods and the law (*dhamma*) of the Buddha, about the good effects of sila, and the making of gifts (*caganussati*), about the nature of death (*mara@nanussati*) and about the deep nature and qualities of the final extinction of all phenomena (*upasamanussati*) [Footnote ref 4].

[Footnote 1: As it is not possible for me to enter into details, I follow what appears to me to be the main line of division showing the interconnection of jhana (Skr. *dhyana*) with its accessory stages called parikammas (*Visuddhimagga*, pp. 85 f.).]

[Footnote 2: *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 341-347; mark the intense pessimistic attitude, “*Iman ca pana ahare pa@tikulasanna@m anuyuttassa bhikkhu@no rasata@nhaya cittam pa@tiliyati, pa@tiku@t@tati, pa@tiva@t@tati; so, kantaranitthara@na@t@thiko viya puttama@msa@m vigatamado ahara@m ahareti yavad eva dukkhassa ni@t@thara@natthaya*,” p. 347. The mind of him who inspires himself with this supreme disgust to all food, becomes free from all desires for palatable tastes, and turns its back to them and flies off from them. As a means of getting rid of all sorrow he takes his food without any attachment as one would eat the flesh of his own son to sustain himself in crossing a forest.]

Page 94

[Footnote 3: *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 347-370.]

[Footnote 4: *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 197-294.]

103

Advancing further from the preliminary meditations or preparations called the upacara samadhi we come to those other sources of concentration and meditation called the appanasamadhi which directly lead to the achievement of the highest samadhi. The processes of purification and strengthening of the mind continue in this stage also, but these represent the last attempts which lead the mind to its final goal Nibbana. In the first part of this stage the sage has to go to the cremation grounds and notice the diverse horrifying changes of the human carcasses and think how nauseating, loathsome, unsightly and impure they are, and from this he will turn his mind to the living human bodies and convince himself that they being in essence the same as the dead carcasses are as loathsome as they [Footnote ref.1] This is called asubhakamma or the endeavour to perceive the impurity of our bodies. He should think of the anatomical parts and constituents of the body as well as their processes, and this will help him to enter into the first jhana by leading his mind away from his body. This is called the kayagatasati or the continual mindfulness about the nature of the body [Footnote ref 2]. As an aid to concentration the sage should sit in a quiet place and fix his mind on the inhaling (*passasa*) and the exhaling (*assasa*) of his breath, so that instead of breathing in a more or less unconscious manner he may be aware whether he is breathing quickly or slowly; he ought to mark it definitely by counting numbers, so that by fixing his mind on the numbers counted he may fix his mind on the whole process of inhalation and exhalation in all stages of its course. This is called the anapanasati or the mindfulness of inhalation and exhalation [Footnote ref 3]

Next to this we come to Brahmavihara, the fourfold meditation of metta (universal friendship), karuṇā (universal pity), mudita (happiness in the prosperity and happiness of all) and upekkhā (indifference to any kind of preferment of oneself, his friend, enemy or a third party). In order to habituate oneself to the meditation on universal friendship, one should start with thinking how he should himself like to root out all misery and become happy, how he should himself like to avoid death and live cheerfully, and then pass over to the idea that other beings would also have the same desires. He should thus habituate himself to think that his friends, his enemies, and all those with whom he is not

[Footnote 1: *Visuddhimagga*, VI.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* pp. 239-266.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* pp. 266-292.]

104

Page 95

connected might all live and become happy. He should fix himself to such an extent in this meditation that he would not find any difference between the happiness or safety of himself and of others. He should never become angry with any person. Should he at any time feel himself offended on account of the injuries inflicted on him by his enemies, he should think of the futility of doubling his sadness by becoming sorry or vexed on that account. He should think that if he should allow himself to be affected by anger, he would spoil all his sila which he was so carefully practising. If anyone has done a vile action by inflicting injury, should he himself also do the same by being angry at it? If he were finding fault with others for being angry, could he himself indulge in anger? Moreover he should think that all the dhammas are momentary (*kha@nikatta*); that there no longer existed the khandhas which had inflicted the injury, and moreover the infliction of any injury being only a joint product, the man who was injured was himself an indispensable element in the production of the infliction as much as the man who inflicted the injury, and there could not thus be any special reason for making him responsible and of being angry with him. If even after thinking in this way the anger does not subside, he should think that by indulging in anger he could only bring mischief on himself through his bad deeds, and he should further think that the other man by being angry was only producing mischief to himself but not to him. By thinking in these ways the sage would be able to free his mind from anger against his enemies and establish himself in an attitude of universal friendship [Footnote ref 1]. This is called the metta-bhavana. In the meditation of universal pity (*karu@na*) also one should sympathize with the sorrows of his friends and foes alike. The sage being more keen-sighted will feel pity for those who are apparently leading a happy life, but are neither acquiring merits nor endeavouring to proceed on the way to Nibbana, for they are to suffer innumerable lives of sorrow [Footnote ref 2].

We next come to the jhanas with the help of material things as objects of concentration called the Kasi@nam. These objects of concentration may either be earth, water, fire, wind, blue colour, yellow colour, red colour, white colour, light or limited space (*paricchinakasa*). Thus the sage may take a brown ball of earth and concentrate his mind upon it as an earth ball, sometimes

[Footnote 1: *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 295-314.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* pp. 314-315.]

with eyes open and sometimes with eyes shut. When he finds that even in shutting his eyes he can visualize the object in his mind, he may leave off the object and retire to another place to concentrate upon the image of the earth ball in his mind.

Page 96

In the first stages of the first meditation (*pathamam jhanam*) the mind is concentrated on the object in the way of understanding it with its form and name and of comprehending it with its diverse relations. This state of concentration is called *vitakka* (discursive meditation). The next stage of the first meditation is that in which the mind does not move in the object in relational terms but becomes fixed and settled in it and penetrates into it without any quivering. This state is called *vicara* (steadily moving). The first stage *vitakka* has been compared in Buddhaghoṣa's *Visuddhimagga* to the flying of a kite with its wings flapping, whereas the second stage is compared to its flying in a sweep without the least quiver of its wings. These two stages are associated with a buoyant exaltation (*piti*) and a steady inward bliss called *sukha* [Footnote ref 1] instilling the mind. The formation of this first jhana roots out five ties of *avijja*, *kamacchando* (dallying with desires), *vyapado* (hatred), *thinamiddham* (sloth and torpor), *uddhaccakukkuccam* (pride and restlessness), and *vicikiccha* (doubt). The five elements of which this jhana is constituted are *vitakka*, *vicara*, *piti*, *sukham* and *ekaggata* (one pointedness).

When the sage masters the first jhana he finds it defective and wants to enter into the second meditation (*dutiyam jhanam*), where there is neither any *vitakka* nor *vicara* of the first jhana, but the mind is in one unruffled state (*ekodibhavam*). It is a much steadier state and does not possess the movement which characterized the *vitakka* and the *vicara* stages of the first jhana and is therefore a very placid state (*vitakka-vicarakkhobha-viraheṇa ativiya acalata suppasannata ca*). It is however associated with *piti*, *sukha* and *ekaggata* as the first jhana was.

When the second jhana is mastered the sage becomes disinclined towards the enjoyment of the *piti* of that stage and becomes indifferent to them (*upekkhako*). A sage in this stage sees the objects but is neither pleased nor displeased. At this stage all the *asavas* of the sage become loosened (*khiṇasava*). The enjoyment of *sukha* however still remains in the stage and the

[Footnote 1: Where there is *piti* there is *sukha*, but where there is *sukha* there may not necessarily be *piti*. *Visuddhimagga*, p. 145.]

mind if not properly and carefully watched would like sometimes to turn back to the enjoyment of *piti* again. The two characteristics of this jhana are *sukha* and *ekaggata*. It should however be noted that though there is the feeling of highest *sukha* here, the mind is not only not attached to it but is indifferent to it (*atimadhhurasukhe*

sukhaparamippatte pi tatiyajjhane upekkhako, na tattha sukhabhisangena aka@d@dhiyati) [Footnote ref 1]. The earth ball (*pa@thavi*) is however still the object of the jhana.

Page 97

In the fourth or the last jhana both the sukha (happiness) and the dukkha (misery) vanish away and all the roots of attachment and antipathies are destroyed. This state is characterized by supreme and absolute indifference (*upekkha*) which was slowly growing in all the various stages of the jhanas. The characteristics of this jhana are therefore *upekkha* and *ekaggata*. With the mastery of this jhana comes final perfection and total extinction of the citta called *cetovimutti*, and the sage becomes thereby an *arhat* [Footnote ref 2]. There is no further production of the *khandhas*, no rebirth, and there is the absolute cessation of all sorrows and sufferings—*Nibbana*.

Kamma.

In the Katha (II. 6) Yama says that “a fool who is blinded with the infatuation of riches does not believe in a future life; he thinks that only this life exists and not any other, and thus he comes again and again within my grasp.” In the Digha Nikaya also we read how Payasi was trying to give his reasons in support of his belief that “Neither is there any other world, nor are there beings, reborn otherwise than from parents, nor is there fruit or result of deeds well done or ill done [Footnote ref 3].” Some of his arguments were that neither the vicious nor the virtuous return to tell us that they suffered or enjoyed happiness in the other world, that if the virtuous had a better life in store, and if they believed in it, they would certainly commit suicide in order to get it at the earliest opportunity, that in spite of taking the best precautions we do not find at the time of the death of any person that his soul goes out, or that his body weighs less on account of the departure of his soul, and so on. Kassapa refutes his arguments with apt illustrations. But in spite of a few agnostics of

[Footnote 1: *Visuddhimagga*, p. 163.]

[Footnote 2: *Majjhima Nikaya*, I.p. 296, and *Visuddhimagga*, pp. 167-168.]

[Footnote 3: *Dialogues of the Buddha*, II. p. 349; *D. N.* II. pp. 317 ff.]

107

Payasi's type, we have every reason to believe that the doctrine of rebirth in other worlds and in this was often spoken of in the Upani@sads and taken as an accepted fact by the Buddha. In the *Milinda Panha*, we find Nagasena saying “it is through a difference in their karma that men are not all alike, but some long lived, some short lived, some healthy and some sickly, some handsome and some ugly, some powerful and some weak, some rich and some poor, some of high degree and some of low

degree, some wise and some foolish [Footnote ref 1].” We have seen in the third chapter that the same soil of views was enunciated by the Upani@sad sages.

Page 98

But karma could produce its effect in this life or any other life only when there were covetousness, antipathy and infatuation. But “when a man’s deeds are performed without covetousness, arise without covetousness and are occasioned without covetousness, then inasmuch as covetousness is gone these deeds are abandoned, uprooted, pulled out of the ground like a palmyra tree and become non-existent and not liable to spring up again in the future [Footnote ref 2].” Karma by itself without craving (*ta@nha*) is incapable of bearing good or bad fruits. Thus we read in the *Mahasatipa@t@thana sutta*, “even this craving, potent for rebirth, that is accompanied by lust and self-indulgence, seeking satisfaction now here, now there, to wit, the craving for the life of sense, the craving for becoming (renewed life) and the craving for not becoming (for no new rebirth) [Footnote ref 3].” “Craving for things visible, craving for things audible, craving for things that may be smelt, tasted, touched, for things in memory recalled. These are the things in this world that are dear, that are pleasant. There does craving take its rise, there does it dwell [Footnote ref 4].” Pre-occupation and deliberation of sensual gratification giving rise to craving is the reason why sorrow comes. And this is the first arya satya (noble truth).

The cessation of sorrow can only happen with “the utter cessation of and disenchantment about that very craving, giving it up, renouncing it and emancipation from it [Footnote ref 5].”

When the desire or craving (*ta@nha*) has once ceased the sage becomes an arhat, and the deeds that he may do after that will bear no fruit. An arhat cannot have any good or bad

[Footnote 1: Warren’s *Buddhism in Translations*, p. 215.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* pp. 216-217.]

[Footnote 3: *Dialogues of the Buddha*, II. p. 340.]

[Footnote 4: *Ibid.* p. 341.]

[Footnote 5: *Ibid.* p. 341.]

fruits of whatever he does. For it is through desire that karma finds its scope of giving fruit. With the cessation of desire all ignorance, antipathy and grasping cease and consequently there is nothing which can determine rebirth. An arhat may suffer the

effects of the deeds done by him in some previous birth just as Moggallana did, but in spite of the remnants of his past karma an arhat was an emancipated man on account of the cessation of his desire [Footnote ref 1].

Page 99

Kammas are said to be of three kinds, of body, speech and mind (*kayika*, *vacika* and *manasika*). The root of this kamma is however volition (*cetana*) and the states associated with it [Footnote ref 2]. If a man wishing to kill animals goes out into the forest in search of them, but cannot get any of them there even after a long search, his misconduct is not a bodily one, for he could not actually commit the deed with his body. So if he gives an order for committing a similar misdeed, and if it is not actually carried out with the body, it would be a misdeed by speech (*vacika*) and not by the body. But the merest bad thought or ill will alone whether carried into effect or not would be a kamma of the mind (*manasika*) [Footnote ref 3]. But the mental kamma must be present as the root of all bodily and vocal kammas, for if this is absent, as in the case of an arhat, there cannot be any kammas at all for him.

Kammas are divided from the point of view of effects into four classes, viz. (1) those which are bad and produce impurity, (2) those which are good and productive of purity, (3) those which are partly good and partly bad and thus productive of both purity and impurity, (4) those which are neither good nor bad and productive neither of purity nor of impurity, but which contribute to the destruction of kammas [Footnote ref 4].

Final extinction of sorrow (*nibbana*) takes place as the natural result of the destruction of desires. Scholars of Buddhism have tried to discover the meaning of this ultimate happening, and various interpretations have been offered. Professor De la Vallee Poussin has pointed out that in the Pali texts Nibbana has sometimes been represented as a happy state, as pure annihilation, as an inconceivable existence or as a changeless state [Footnote ref 5].

[Footnote 1: See *Kathavatthu* and Warren's *Buddhism in Translations*, pp, 221 ff.]

[Footnote 2: *Atthasalini*, p. 88.]

[Footnote 3: See *Atthasalini*, p. 90.]

[Footnote 4: See *Atthasalini*, p. 89.]

[Footnote 5: Prof. De la Vallae Poussin's article in the *E. R.E.* on Nirva@na. See also *Cullavagga*, IX. i. 4; Mrs Rhys Davids's *Psalm of the early Buddhists*, I. and II., Introduction, p. xxxvii; *Digha*, II. 15; *Udana*, VIII.; *Sa@myutta*, III. 109.]

Mr Schrader, in discussing Nibbana in *Pali Text Society Journal*, 1905, says that the Buddha held that those who sought to become identified after death with the soul of the world as infinite space (*akasa*) or consciousness (*vinnana*) attained to a state in which they had a corresponding feeling of infiniteness without having really lost their individuality. This latter interpretation of Nibbana seems to me

Page 100

to be very new and quite against the spirit of the Buddhistic texts. It seems to me to be a hopeless task to explain Nibbana in terms of worldly experience, and there is no way in which we can better indicate it than by saying that it is a cessation of all sorrow; the stage at which all worldly experiences have ceased can hardly be described either as positive or negative. Whether we exist in some form eternally or do not exist is not a proper Buddhistic question, for it is a heresy to think of a Tathagata as existing eternally (*s'as'vata*) or not-existing (*as'as'vata*) or whether he is existing as well as not existing or whether he is neither existing nor non-existing. Any one who seeks to discuss whether Nibbana is either a positive and eternal state or a mere state of non-existence or annihilation, takes a view which has been discarded in Buddhism as heretical. It is true that we in modern times are not satisfied with it, for we want to know what it all means. But it is not possible to give any answer since Buddhism regarded all these questions as illegitimate.

Later Buddhistic writers like Nagarjuna and Candrakirti took advantage of this attitude of early Buddhism and interpreted it as meaning the non-essential character of all existence. Nothing existed, and therefore any question regarding the existence or non-existence of anything would be meaningless. There is no difference between the worldly stage (*sa@msara*) and Nibbana, for as all appearances are non-essential, they never existed during the *sa@msara* so that they could not be annihilated in Nibbana.

Upani@sads and Buddhism.

The Upani@sads had discovered that the true self was ananda (bliss) [Footnote ref 1]. We could suppose that early Buddhism tacitly presupposes some such idea. It was probably thought that if there was the self (*atta*) it must be bliss. The Upani@sads had asserted that the self(*atman*) was indestructible and eternal [Footnote ref 2]. If we are allowed

[Footnote 1: Tait, II.5.]

[Footnote 2: B@rh. IV. 5. 14. Ka@tha V. 13.]

to make explicit what was implicit in early Buddhism we could conceive it as holding that if there was the self it must be bliss, because it was eternal. This causal connection has



not indeed been anywhere definitely pronounced in the Upani@sads, but he who carefully reads the Upani@sads cannot but think that the reason why the Upani@sads speak of the self as bliss is that it is eternal. But the converse statement that what was not eternal was sorrow does not appear to be emphasized clearly in the Upani@sads. The important postulate of the Buddha is that that which is changing is sorrow, and whatever is sorrow is not self [Footnote ref 1]. The point at which Buddhism parted from the Upani@sads lies in the experiences of the self. The Upani@sads doubtless considered

Page 101

that there were many experiences which we often identify with self, but which are impermanent. But the belief is found in the Upani@sads that there was associated with these a permanent part as well, and that it was this permanent essence which was the true and unchangeable self, the blissful. They considered that this permanent self as pure bliss could not be defined as this, but could only be indicated as not this, not this (*neti neti*) [Footnote ref 2]. But the early Pali scriptures hold that we could nowhere find out such a permanent essence, any constant self, in our changing experiences. All were but changing phenomena and therefore sorrow and therefore non-self, and what was non-self was not mine, neither I belonged to it, nor did it belong to me as my self [Footnote ref 3].

The true self was with the Upani@sads a matter of transcendental experience as it were, for they said that it could not be described in terms of anything, but could only be pointed out as “there,” behind all the changing mental categories. The Buddha looked into the mind and saw that it did not exist. But how was it that the existence of this self was so widely spoken of as demonstrated in experience? To this the reply of the Buddha was that what people perceived there when they said that they perceived the self was but the mental experiences either individually or together. The ignorant ordinary man did not know the noble truths and was not trained in the way of wise men, and considered himself to be endowed with form (*rupa*) or found the forms in his self or the self in the forms. He

[Footnote 1: *Sa@myutta Nikaya*, III. pp. 44-45 ff.]

[Footnote 2: See B@rh. IV. iv. Chandogya, VIII. 7-12.]

[Footnote 3: *Sa@myutta Nikaya*, III 45.]

111

experienced the thought (of the moment) as it were the self or experienced himself as being endowed with thought, or the thought in the self or the self in the thought. It is these kinds of experiences that he considered as the perception of the self [Footnote ref 1].

The Upani@sads did not try to establish any school of discipline or systematic thought. They revealed throughout the dawn of an experience of an immutable Reality as the self

of man, as the only abiding truth behind all changes. But Buddhism holds that this immutable self of man is a delusion and a false knowledge. The first postulate of the system is that impermanence is sorrow. Ignorance about sorrow, ignorance about the way it originates, ignorance about the nature of the extinction of sorrow, and ignorance about the means of bringing about this extinction represent the fourfold ignorance (*avijja*) [Footnote ref 2]. The *avidya*, which is equivalent to the Pali word *avijja*, occurs in the Upani@sads also, but there it means ignorance about the atman doctrine, and it is sometimes contrasted with *vidya* or true knowledge

Page 102

about the self (*atman*) [Footnote ref 3]. With the Upani@sads the highest truth was the permanent self, the bliss, but with the Buddha there was nothing permanent; and all was change; and all change and impermanence was sorrow [Footnote ref 4]. This is, then, the cardinal truth of Buddhism, and ignorance concerning it in the above fourfold ways represented the fourfold ignorance which stood in the way of the right comprehension of the fourfold cardinal truths (*ariya sacca*)—sorrow, cause of the origination of sorrow, extinction of sorrow, and the means thereto.

There is no Brahman or supreme permanent reality and no self, and this ignorance does not belong to any ego or self as we may ordinarily be led to suppose.

Thus it is said in the *Visuddhimagga* “inasmuch however as ignorance is empty of stability from being subject to a coming into existence and a disappearing from existence...and is empty of a self-determining Ego from being subject to dependence, —...or in other words inasmuch as ignorance is not an Ego, and similarly with reference to Karma and the rest—therefore is it to be understood of the wheel of existence that it is empty with a twelvefold emptiness [Footnote ref 5].”

[Footnote 1: *Samyutta Nikaya*, II. 46.]

[Footnote 2: *Majjhima Nikaya*, I.p. 54.]

[Footnote 3: Cha. I.i. 10. B@rh. IV. 3.20. There are some passages where vidya and avidya have been used in a different and rather obscure sense, I's'a 9-11.]

[Footnote 4: *A@ng. Nikaya*, III. 85.]

[Footnote 5 Warren's *Buddhism in Translations* (*Visuddhimagga*, chap. XVII.), p. 175.]

112

The Schools of Theravada Buddhism.

There is reason to believe that the oral instructions of the Buddha were not collected until a few centuries after his death. Serious quarrels arose amongst his disciples or rather amongst the successive generations of the disciples of his disciples about his doctrines and other monastic rules which he had enjoined upon his followers. Thus we find that when the council of Vesali decided against the V@rjin monks, called also the

Vajjiputtakas, they in their turn held another great meeting (Mahasa@ngha) and came to their own decisions about certain monastic rules and thus came to be called as the Mahasa@nghikas [Footnote ref 1]. According to Vasumitra as translated by Vassilief, the Mahasa@nghikas seceded in 400 B.C. and during the next one hundred years they gave rise first to the three schools Ekavyavaharikas, Lokottaravadins, and Kukkulikas and after that the Bahu's'rutiyas. In the course of the next one hundred years, other schools rose out of it namely the Prajnaptivadin, Caityikas, Aparas'ailas and Uttaras'ailas. The Theravada or the Sthaviravada school which had convened the council of Vesali developed during the

Page 103

second and first century B.C. into a number of schools, viz. the Haimavatas, Dharmaguptikas, Mahis'asakas, Kas'yapiyas, Sa@nkrantikas (more well known as Sautrantikas) and the Vatsiputriyas which latter was again split up into the Dharmottariyas, Bhadranyayas, Sammitiyas and Channagarikas. The main branch of the Theravada school was from the second century downwards known as the Hetuvadins or Sarvastivadins [Footnote ref 2]. The *Mahabodhiva@msa* identifies the Theravada school with the Vibhajjavadins. The commentator of the *Kathavatthu* who probably lived according to Mrs Rhys Davids sometime in the fifth century A.D. mentions a few other schools of Buddhists. But of all these Buddhist schools we know very little. Vasumitra (100 A.D.) gives us some very meagre accounts of

[Footnote 1: The *Mahava@msa* differs from *Dipava@msa* in holding that the Vajjiputtakas did not develop into the Mahasa@nghikas, but it was the Mahasa@nghikas who first seceded while the Vajjiputtakas seceded independently of them. The *Mahabodhiva@msa*, which according to Professor Geiger was composed 975 A.D.—1000 A.D., follows the Mahava@msa in holding the Mahasa@nghikas to be the first seceders and Vajjiputtakas to have seceded independently.

Vasumitra confuses the council of Vesali with the third council of Pa@taliputra. See introduction to translation of *Kathavatthu* by Mrs Rhys Davids.]

[Footnote 2: For other accounts of the schism see Mr Aung and Mrs Rhys Davids's translation of *Kathavatthu*, pp. xxxvi-xlv.]

113

certain schools, of the Mahasa@nghikas, Lokottaravadins, Ekavyavaharikas, Kakkulikas, Prajnaptivadins and Sarvastivadins, but these accounts deal more with subsidiary matters of little philosophical importance. Some of the points of interest are (1) that the Mahasa@nghikas were said to believe that the body was filled with mind (*citta*) which was represented as sitting, (2) that the Prajnaptivadins held that there was no agent in man, that there was no untimely death, for it was caused by the previous deeds of man, (3) that the Sarvastivadins believed that everything existed. From the discussions found in the *Kathavatthu* also we may know the views of some of the schools on some points which are not always devoid of philosophical interest. But there is nothing to be found by which we can properly know the philosophy of these schools. It is quite possible however that these so-called schools of Buddhism were not so many different systems but only differed from one another on some points of dogma or practice which were considered as being of sufficient interest to them, but which to us

now appear to be quite trifling. But as we do not know any of their literatures, it is better not to make any unwarrantable surmises. These schools are however not very important for a history

Page 104

of later Indian Philosophy, for none of them are even referred to in any of the systems of Hindu thought. The only schools of Buddhism with which other schools of philosophical thought came in direct contact, are the Sarvastivadins including the Sautrantikas and the Vaibhasikas, the Yogacara or the Vijnanavadins and the Madhyamikas or the S'unyavadins. We do not know which of the diverse smaller schools were taken up into these four great schools, the Sautrantika, Vaibhasika, Yogacara and the Madhyamika schools. But as these schools were most important in relation to the development of the different systems in Hindu thought, it is best that we should set ourselves to gather what we can about these systems of Buddhistic thought.

When the Hindu writers refer to the Buddhist doctrine in general terms such as "the Buddhists say" without calling them the Vijnanavadins or the Yogacaras and the S'unyavadins, they often refer to the Sarvastivadins by which they mean both the Sautrantikas and the Vaibhasikas, ignoring the difference that exists between these two schools. It is well to mention that there is hardly any evidence to prove that the Hindu writers were acquainted with the Theravada doctrines

114

as expressed in the Pali works. The Vaibhasikas and the Sautrantikas have been more or less associated with each other. Thus the *Abhidharmakos'as'astra* of Vasubandhu who was a Vaibhasika was commented upon by Yas'omitra who was a Sautrantika. The difference between the Vaibhasikas and the Sautrantikas that attracted the notice of the Hindu writers was this, that the former believed that external objects were directly perceived, whereas the latter believed that the existence of the external objects could only be inferred from our diversified knowledge [Footnote ref 1]. Gu'naratna (fourteenth century A.D.) in his commentary *Tarkarahasyadipika on Sa'dars'anasamuccaya* says that the Vaibhasika was but another name of the Aryasammitiya school. According to Gu'naratna the Vaibhasikas held that things existed for four moments, the moment of production, the moment of existence, the moment of decay and the moment of annihilation. It has been pointed out in Vasubandhu's *Abhidharmakos'a* that the Vaibhasikas believed these to be four kinds of forces which by coming in combination with the permanent essence of an entity produced its impermanent manifestations in life (see Prof. Stcherbatsky's translation of Yas'omitra on *Abhidharmakos'a karika*, V. 25). The self called pudgala also possessed those characteristics. Knowledge was formless and was produced along with its object by the very same conditions (*arthasahabhasi ekasamagryadhinah*). The Sautrantikas according to Gu'naratna held that there was no soul but only the five skandhas. These skandhas transmigrated. The past, the future, annihilation, dependence on cause, akasa and pudgala are but names (*sa'mjnamatram*), mere assertions (*pratijnamatram*), mere limitations (*samvartamatram*) and mere phenomena (*vyavaharamatram*). By pudgala they meant that which other people called eternal and

all pervasive soul. External objects are never directly perceived but are only inferred as existing for explaining the diversity of knowledge. Definite cognitions are valid; all compounded things are momentary (*k@sa@nikah sarvasa@mskarah*).

Page 105

[Footnote 1: Madhavacarya's *Sarvadars'anasa@mgraha*, chapter II. *S'astradipika*, the discussions on Pratyak@sa, Amalananda's commentary (on *Bhamati*) *Vedantakalpataru*, p 286. "vaibha@sikasya bahyo'rtha@h pratyak@sa@h, sautrantikasya jnanagatakaravaicitrye@n anumeya@h." The nature of the inference of the Sautrantikas is shown thus by Amalananda (1247-1260 A.D.) "ye yasmin satyapi kadacitka@h te tadatiriktapek@sa@h" (those [i.e. cognitions] which in spite of certain unvaried conditions are of unaccounted diversity must depend on other things in addition to these, i.e. the external objects) *Vedantakalpataru*, p. 289.]

115

The atoms of colour, taste, smell and touch, and cognition are being destroyed every moment. The meanings of words always imply the negations of all other things, excepting that which is intended to be signified by that word (*anyapoha@h s'abdartha@h*). Salvation (*mok@sa*) comes as the result of the destruction of the process of knowledge through continual meditation that there is no soul [Footnote ref 1].

One of the main differences between the Vibhajjavadins, Sautrantikas and the Vaibha@sikas or the Sarvastivadins appears to refer to the notion of time which is a subject of great interest with Buddhist philosophy. Thus *Abhidharmakos'a* (v. 24...) describes the Sarvastivadins as those who maintain the universal existence of everything past, present and future. The Vibhajjavadins are those "who maintain that the present elements and those among the past that have not yet produced their fruition, are existent, but they deny the existence of the future ones and of those among the past that have already produced fruition." There were four branches of this school represented by Dharmatrata, Gho@sa, Vasumitra and Buddhadeva. Dharmatrata maintained that when an element enters different times, its existence changes but not its essence, just as when milk is changed into curd or a golden vessel is broken, the form of the existence changes though the essence remains the same. Gho@sa held that "when an element appears at different times, the past one retains its past aspects without being severed from its future and present aspects, the present likewise retains its present aspect without completely losing its past and future aspects," just as a man in passionate love with a woman does not lose his capacity to love other women though he is not actually in love with them. Vasumitra held that an entity is called present, past and future according as it produces its efficiency, ceases to produce after having once produced it or has not yet begun to produce it. Buddhadeva maintained the view that just as the same woman may be called mother, daughter, wife, so the same entity may be called present, past or future in accordance with its relation to the preceding or the succeeding moment.

Page 106

All these schools are in some sense Sarvastivadins, for they maintain universal existence. But the Vaibha@sika finds them all defective excepting the view of Vasumitra. For Dharmatrata's

[Footnote 1: Gu@naratna's *Tarkarahasyadipika*, pp. 46-47.]

116

view is only a veiled Sa@mkhya doctrine; that of Gho@sa is a confusion of the notion of time, since it presupposes the coexistence of all the aspects of an entity at the same time, and that of Buddhadeva is also an impossible situation, since it would suppose that all the three times were found together and included in one of them. The Vaibha@sika finds himself in agreement with Vasumitra's view and holds that the difference in time depends upon the difference of the function of an entity; at the time when an entity does not actually produce its function it is future; when it produces it, it becomes present; when after having produced it, it stops, it becomes past; there is a real existence of the past and the future as much as of the present. He thinks that if the past did not exist and assert some efficiency it could not have been the object of my knowledge, and deeds done in past times could not have produced its effects in the present time. The Sautrantika however thought that the Vaibha@sika's doctrine would imply the heretical doctrine of eternal existence, for according to them the stuff remained the same and the time-difference appeared in it. The true view according to him was, that there was no difference between the efficiency of an entity, the entity and the time of its appearance. Entities appeared from non-existence, existed for a moment and again ceased to exist. He objected to the Vaibha@sika view that the past is to be regarded as existent because it exerts efficiency in bringing about the present on the ground that in that case there should be no difference between the past and the present, since both exerted efficiency. If a distinction is made between past, present and future efficiency by a second grade of efficiencies, then we should have to continue it and thus have a vicious infinite. We can know non-existent entities as much as we can know existent ones, and hence our knowledge of the past does not imply that the past is exerting any efficiency. If a distinction is made between an efficiency and an entity, then the reason why efficiency started at any particular time and ceased at another would be inexplicable. Once you admit that there is no difference between efficiency and the entity, you at once find that there is no time at all and the efficiency, the entity and the moment are all one and the same. When we remember a thing of the past we do not know it as existing in the past, but in the same way in which we knew it when it was present. We are

117

never attracted to past passions as the Vaibha@sika suggests, but past passions leave residues which become the causes of new passions of the present moment [Footnote ref.1].

Page 107

Again we can have a glimpse of the respective positions of the Vatsiputriyas and the Sarvastivadins as represented by Vasubandhu if we attend to the discussion on the subject of the existence of soul in *Abhidharmakos'a*. The argument of Vasubandhu against the existence of soul is this, that though it is true that the sense organs may be regarded as a determining cause of perception, no such cause can be found which may render the inference of the existence of soul necessary. If soul actually exists, it must have an essence of its own and must be something different from the elements or entities of a personal life. Moreover, such an eternal, uncaused and unchanging being would be without any practical efficiency (*arthakriyakaritva*) which alone determines or proves existence. The soul can thus be said to have a mere nominal existence as a mere object of current usage. There is no soul, but there are only the elements of a personal life. But the Vatsiputriya school held that just as fire could not be said to be either the same as the burning wood or as different from it, and yet it is separate from it, so the soul is an individual (*pudgala*) which has a separate existence, though we could not say that it was altogether different from the elements of a personal life or the same as these. It exists as being conditioned by the elements of personal life, but it cannot further be defined. But its existence cannot be denied, for wherever there is an activity, there must be an agent (e.g. Devadatta walks). To be conscious is likewise an action, hence the agent who is conscious must also exist. To this Vasubandhu replies that Devadatta (the name of a person) does not represent an unity. "It is only an unbroken continuity of momentary forces (flashing into existence), which simple people believe to be a unity and to which they give the name Devadatta. Their belief that Devadatta moves is conditioned, and is based on an analogy with their own experience, but their own continuity of life consists in constantly moving from one place to another. This movement, though regarded as

[Footnote 1: I am indebted for the above account to the unpublished translation from Tibetan of a small portion of *Abhidharmakośa* by my esteemed friend Prof. Th. Stcherbatsky of Petrograd. I am grateful to him that he allowed me to utilize it.]

118

belonging to a permanent entity, is but a series of new productions in different places, just as the expressions 'fire moves,' 'sound spreads' have the meaning of continuities (of new productions in new places). They likewise use the words 'Devadatta cognises' in order to express the fact that a cognition (takes place in the present moment) which has a cause (in the former moments, these former moments coming in close succession being called Devadatta)."



Page 108

The problem of memory also does not bring any difficulty, for the stream of consciousness being one throughout, it produces its recollections when connected with a previous knowledge of the remembered object under certain conditions of attention, *etc.*, and absence of distractive factors, such as bodily pains or violent emotions. No agent is required in the phenomena of memory. The cause of recollection is a suitable state of mind and nothing else. When the Buddha told his birth stories saying that he was such and such in such and such a life, he only meant that his past and his present belonged to one and the same lineage of momentary existences. Just as when we say “this same fire which had been consuming that has reached this object,” we know that the fire is not identical at any two moments, but yet we overlook the difference and say that it is the same fire. Again, what we call an individual can only be known by descriptions such as “this venerable man, having this name, of such a caste, of such a family, of such an age, eating such food, finding pleasure or displeasure in such things, of such an age, the man who after a life of such length, will pass away having reached an age.” Only so much description can be understood, but we have never a direct acquaintance with the individual; all that is perceived are the momentary elements of sensations, images, feelings, *etc.*, and these happening at the former moments exert a pressure on the later ones. The individual is thus only a fiction, a mere nominal existence, a mere thing of description and not of acquaintance; it cannot be grasped either by the senses or by the action of pure intellect. This becomes evident when we judge it by analogies from other fields. Thus whenever we use any common noun, *e.g.* milk, we sometimes falsely think that there is such an entity as milk, but what really exists is only certain momentary colours, tastes, *etc.*, fictitiously unified as milk; and “just as milk and water are

119

conventional names (for a set of independent elements) for some colour, smell (taste and touch) taken together, so is the designation ‘individual’ but a common name for the different elements of which it is composed.”

The reason why the Buddha declined to decide the question whether the “living being is identical with the body or not” is just because there did not exist any living being as “individual,” as is generally supposed. He did not declare that the living being did not exist, because in that case the questioner would have thought that the continuity of the elements of a life was also denied. In truth the “living being” is only a conventional name for a set of constantly changing elements [Footnote ref 1].

The only book of the Sammitiyas known to us and that by name only is the *Sammitiyas’astra* translated into Chinese between 350 A.D. to 431 A.D.; the original Sanskrit works are however probably lost [Footnote ref 2].

Page 109

The Vaibha@sikas are identified with the Sarvastivadins who according to *Dipava@msa* V. 47, as pointed out by Takakusu, branched off from the Mahis'asakas, who in their turn had separated from the Theravada school.

From the *Kathavatthu* we know (1) that the Sabbatthivadins believed that everything existed, (2) that the dawn of right attainment was not a momentary flash of insight but by a gradual process, (3) that consciousness or even samadhi was nothing but

[Footnote 1: This account is based on the translation of *A@s@tamakos'asthananibaddha@h pudgolavinis'caya@h*, a special appendix to the eighth chapter of *Abhidharmakos'a*, by Prof Th. Stcherbatsky, *Bulletin de l'Academie des Sciences de Russie*, 1919.]

[Footnote 2: Professor De la Vallee Poussin has collected some of the points of this doctrine in an article on the Sammitiyas in the *E. R.E.* He there says that in the *Abhidharmakos'avyakhya* the Sammitiyas have been identified with the Vatsiputtriyas and that many of its texts were admitted by the Vaibha@sikas of a later age. Some of their views are as follows: (1) An arhat in possession of nirvana can fall away; (2) there is an intermediate state between death and rebirth called *antarabhava*; (3) merit accrues not only by gift (*tyaganvaya*) but also by the fact of the actual use and advantage reaped by the man to whom the thing was given (*paribhoganvaya pu@nya*); (4) not only abstention from evil deeds but a declaration of intention to that end produces merit by itself alone; (5) they believe in a pudgala (soul) as distinct from the skandhas from which it can be said to be either different or non-different. "The pudgala cannot be said to be transitory (*anitye*) like the skandhas since it transmigrates laying down the burden (*skandhas*) shouldering a new burden; it cannot be said to be permanent, since it is made of transitory constituents." This pudgala doctrine of the Sammitiyas as sketched by Professor De la Vallee Poussin is not in full agreement with the pudgala doctrine of the Sammitiyas as sketched by Gu@naratna which we have noticed above.]

120

a flux and (4) that an arhat (saint) may fall away [Footnote ref 1]. The Sabbatthivadins or Sarvastivadins have a vast Abhidharma literature still existing in Chinese translations which is different from the Abhidharma of the Theravada school which we have already mentioned [Footnote ref 2]. These are 1. *Jnanaprasthana S'astra* of Katyayaniputra which passed by the name of *Maha Vibha@sa* from which the Sabbatthivadins who followed it are called Vaibha@sikas [Footnote ref 3]. This work is said to have been

given a literary form by As'vagho@sa. 2. *Dharmaskandha* by S'ariputtra. 3. *Dhatukaya* by Pur@na. 4. *Prajñaptis'āstra* by Maudgalyayana. 5. *Vijñānakaya* by Devak@sema. 6. *Sa@ṅgītiparyyaya*

Page 110

by Sariputra and *Prakara@napada* by Vasumitra. Vasubandhu (420 A.D.-500 A.D.) wrote a work on the Vaibha@sika [Footnote ref 4] system in verses (*karika*) known as the *Abhidharmakos'a*, to which he appended a commentary of his own which passes by the name *Abhidharma Kos'abha@sya* in which he pointed out some of the defects of the Vaibha@sika school from the Sautrantika point of view [Footnote ref 5]. This work was commented upon by Vasumitra and Gu@namati and later on by Yas'omitra who was himself a Sautrantika and called his work *Abhidharmakos'a vyakhya*; Sa@nghabhadra a contemporary of Vasubandhu wrote *Samayapradipa* and *Nyayanusara* (Chinese translations of which are available) on strict Vaibha@sika lines. We hear also of other Vaibha@sika writers such as Dharmatrata, Gho@saka, Vasumitra and Bhadanta, the writer of *Sa@myuktabhidharmas'astra* and *Mahavibha@sa*. Di@nnaga(480 A.D.), the celebrated logician, a Vaibha@sika or a Sautrantika and reputed to be a pupil of Vasubandhu, wrote his famous work *Prama@nasamuccaya* in which he established Buddhist logic and refuted many of the views of Vatsyayana the celebrated commentator of the *Nyaya sutras*; but we regret

[Footnote 1: See Mrs Rhys Davids's translation *Kathavatthu*, p. xix, and Sections I.6,7; II. 9 and XI. 6.]

[Footnote 2: *Mahavyutpatti* gives two names for Sarvastivada, viz. Mulasarvastivada and Ayyasarvastivada. Itsing (671-695 A.D.) speaks of Ayyamulasarvastivada and Mulasarvastivada. In his time he found it prevailing in Magadha, Guzrat, Sind, S. India, E. India. Takakusu says (*P.T.S.* 1904-1905) that Paramartha, in his life of Vasubandhu, says that it was propagated from Kashmere to Middle India by Vasubhadra, who studied it there.]

[Footnote 3: Takakusu says (*P.T.S.* 1904-1905) that Katyayaniputra's work was probably a compilation from other Vibha@sas which existed before the Chinese translations and Vibha@sa texts dated 383 A.D.]

[Footnote 4: See Takakusu's article *J.R.A.S.* 1905.]

[Footnote 5: The Sautrantikas did not regard the Abhidharmas of the Vaibha@sikas as authentic and laid stress on the suddanta doctrines as given in the Suttapi@taka.]

to say that none of the above works are available in Sanskrit, nor have they been retranslated from Chinese or Tibetan into any of the modern European or Indian languages.

The Japanese scholar Mr Yamakami Sogen, late lecturer at Calcutta University, describes the doctrine of the Sabbatthivadins from the Chinese versions of the *Abhidharmakos'a*, *Mahavibha@sas'astra*, etc., rather elaborately [Footnote ref 1]. The following is a short sketch, which is borrowed mainly from the accounts given by Mr Sogen.

Page 111

The Sabbatthivadins admitted the five skandhas, twelve ayatanas, eighteen dhatus, the three asa@msk@rta dharmas of pratisa@mkhyanirodha apratisa@mkhyanirodha and akas'a, and the sa@msk@rta dharmas (things composite and interdependent) of rupa (matter), citta (mind), caitta (mental) and cittaviprayukta (non-mental) [Footnote ref 2]. All effects are produced by the coming together (sa@msk@rta) of a number of causes. The five skandhas, and the rupa, citta, etc., are thus called sa@msk@rta dharmas (composite things or collocations—*sambhuyakari*). The rupa dharmas are eleven in number, one citta dharma, 46 caitta dharmas and 14 cittaviprayukta sa@mskara dharmas (non-mental composite things); adding to these the three asa@msk@rta dharmas we have the seventy-five dharmas. Rupa is that which has the capacity to obstruct the sense organs. Matter is regarded as the collective organism or collocation, consisting of the fourfold substratum of colour, smell, taste and contact. The unit possessing this fourfold substratum is known as parama@nu, which is the minutest form of rupa. It cannot be pierced through or picked up or thrown away. It is indivisible, unanalysable, invisible, inaudible, untastable and intangible. But yet it is not permanent, but is like a momentary flash into being. The simple atoms are called *dravyaparama@nu* and the compound ones *sa@mghataparama@nu*. In the words of Prof. Stcherbatsky "the universal elements of matter are manifested in their actions or functions. They are consequently more energies than substances." The organs of sense are also regarded as modifications of atomic matter. Seven such parama@nus combine together to form an a@nu, and it is in this combined form only that they become perceptible. The combination takes place in the form of a cluster having one atom at the centre and

[Footnote 1: *Systems of Buddhistic Thought*, published by the Calcutta University.]

[Footnote 2: S'a@nkara in his meagre sketch of the doctrine of the Sarvastivadins in his bha@sya on the *Brahma-sutras* II. 2 notices some of the categories mentioned by Sogen.]

others around it. The point which must be remembered in connection with the conception of matter is this, that the qualities of all the mahabhutas are inherent in the parama@nus. The special characteristics of roughness (which naturally belongs to earth), viscousness (which naturally belongs to water), heat (belonging to fire), movableness (belonging to wind), combine together to form each of the elements; the difference between the different elements consists only in this, that in each of them its own special characteristics were predominant and active, and other characteristics

though present remained only in a potential form. The mutual resistance of material things is due to the quality of earth or the solidness inherent in

Page 112

them; the mutual attraction of things is due to moisture or the quality of water, and so forth. The four elements are to be observed from three aspects, namely, (1) as things, (2) from the point of view of their natures (such as activity, moisture, *etc.*), and (3) function (such as *dh@rti* or attraction, *sa@mgraha* or cohesion, *pakti* or chemical heat, and *vyuhana* or clustering and collecting). These combine together naturally by other conditions or causes. The main point of distinction between the Vaibha@sika Sarvastivadins and other forms of Buddhism is this, that here the five skandhas and matter are regarded as permanent and eternal; they are said to be momentary only in the sense that they are changing their phases constantly, owing to their constant change of combination. Avidya is not regarded here as a link in the chain of the causal series of prativityasamutpada; nor is it ignorance of any particular individual, but is rather identical with “moha” or delusion and represents the ultimate state of immaterial dharmas. Avidya, which through *sa@miskara*, *etc.*, produces namarupa in the case of a particular individual, is not his avidya in the present existence but the avidya of his past existence bearing fruit in the present life.

“The cause never perishes but only changes its name, when it becomes an effect, having changed its state.” For example, clay becomes jar, having changed its state; and in this case the name clay is lost and the name jar arises [Footnote ref 1]. The Sarvastivadins allowed simultaneousness between cause and effect only in the case of composite things (*sa@mprayukta hetu*) and in the case of

[Footnote 1: Sogen’s quotation from Kumarajiva’s Chinese version of Aryadeva’s commentary on the *Madhyamika s’astra* (chapter XX. Karika 9).]

123

the interaction of mental and material things. The substratum of “vijñana” or “consciousness” is regarded as permanent and the aggregate of the five senses (*indriyas*) is called the perceiver. It must be remembered that the *indriyas* being material had a permanent substratum, and their aggregate had therefore also a substratum formed of them.

The sense of sight grasps the four main colours of blue, yellow, red, white, and their combinations, as also the visual forms of appearance (*sa@msthana*) of long, short, round, square, high, low, straight, and crooked. The sense of touch (*kayendriya*) has for its object the four elements and the qualities of smoothness, roughness, lightness,

heaviness, cold, hunger and thirst. These qualities represent the feelings generated in sentient beings by the objects of touch, hunger, thirst, *etc.*, and are also counted under it, as they are the organic effects produced by a touch which excites the physical frame at a time when the energy of wind becomes active in our body

Page 113

and predominates over other energies; so also the feeling of thirst is caused by a touch which excites the physical frame when the energy of the element of fire becomes active and predominates over the other energies. The indriyas (senses) can after grasping the external objects arouse thought (*viñāna*); each of the five senses is an agent without which none of the five *viñānas* would become capable of perceiving an external object. The essence of the senses is entirely material. Each sense has two subdivisions, namely, the principal sense and the auxiliary sense. The substratum of the principal senses consists of a combination of *paramāṇus*, which are extremely pure and minute, while the substratum of the latter is the flesh, made of grosser materials. The five senses differ from one another with respect to the manner and form of their respective atomic combinations. In all sense-acts, whenever an act is performed and an idea is impressed, a latent energy is impressed on our person which is designated as *avijñapti rūpa*. It is called *rūpa* because it is a result or effect of *rūpa*-contact; it is called *avijñapti* because it is latent and unconscious; this latent energy is bound sooner or later to express itself in karma effects and is the only bridge which connects the cause and the effect of karma done by body or speech. Karma in this school is considered as twofold, namely, that as thought (*cetana karma*) and that as activity (*caitasika karma*). This last, again, is of two kinds, viz.

124

that due to body-motion (*kāyika karma*) and speech (*vācika karma*). Both these may again be latent (*avijñapti*) and patent (*viñapti*), giving us the *kāyika-vijñapti karma*, *kāyikavijñapti karma*, *vācika-vijñapti karma* and *vācikavijñapti karma*. *Avijñapti rūpa* and *avijñapti karma* are what we should call in modern phraseology sub-conscious ideas, feelings and activity. Corresponding to each conscious sensation, feeling, thought or activity there is another similar sub-conscious state which expresses itself in future thoughts and actions; as these are not directly known but are similar to those which are known, they are called *avijñapti*.

The mind, says Vasubandhu, is called *citta*, because it wills (*cetati*), *manas* because it thinks (*manvate*) and *viñāna* because it discriminates (*nirṇīṣṭi*). The discrimination may be of three kinds: (1) *svabhāva nirṇīṣṭa* (natural perceptual discrimination), (2) *pratyakṣa nirṇīṣṭa* (actual discrimination as present, past and future), and (3) *anūsmṛti nirṇīṣṭa* (reminiscent discrimination referring only to the past). The senses only possess the *svabhāva nirṇīṣṭa*, the other two belong exclusively to *manovijñāna*. Each of the *viñānas* as associated with its specific sense discriminates its particular object and perceives its general characteristics; the six *viñānas* combine to form what is known as the *Vijñānaskandha*, which is presided over by mind (*mano*).

Page 114

There are forty-six caitta sa@msk@rta dharmas. Of the three asa@msk@rta dharmas akas'a (ether) is in essence the freedom from obstruction, establishing it as a permanent omnipresent immaterial substance (*nirupakhya*, non-rupa). The second asa@msk@rta dharma, apratisa@mkhya nirodha, means the non-perception of dharmas caused by the absence of pratyayas or conditions. Thus when I fix my attention on one thing, other things are not seen then, not because they are non-existent but because the conditions which would have made them visible were absent. The third asa@msk@rta dharma, pratisa@mkhya nirodha, is the final deliverance from bondage. Its essential characteristic is everlastingness. These are called asa@msk@rta because being of the nature of negation they are non-collocative and hence have no production or dissolution. The eightfold noble path which leads to this state consists of right views, right aspirations, right speech, right conduct, right livelihood, right effort, right mindfulness, right rapture [Footnote ref 1].

[Footnote 1: Mr Sogen mentions the name of another Buddhist Hinayana thinker (about 250 A.D.), Harivarman, who founded a school known as Satyasiddhi school, which propounded the same sort of doctrines as those preached by Nagarjuna. None of his works are available in Sanskrit and I have never come across any allusion to his name by Sanskrit writers.]

125

Mahayanism.

It is difficult to say precisely at what time Mahayanism took its rise. But there is reason to think that as the Mahasa@nghikas separated themselves from the Theravadins probably some time in 400 B.C. and split themselves up into eight different schools, those elements of thoughts and ideas which in later days came to be labelled as Mahayana were gradually on the way to taking their first inception. We hear in about 100 A.D. of a number of works which are regarded as various Mahayana sutras, some of which are probably as old as at least 100 B.C. (if not earlier) and others as late as 300 or 400 A.D.[Footnote ref 1]. These Mahayanassutras, also called the Vaipulyasutras, are generally all in the form of instructions given by the Buddha. Nothing is known about their authors or compilers, but they are all written in some form of Sanskrit and were probably written by those who seceded from the Theravada school.

The word Hinayana refers to the schools of Theravada, and as such it is contrasted with Mahayana. The words are generally translated as small vehicle (*hina* = small, *yana* = vehicle) and great vehicle (*maha* = great, *yana* = vehicle). But this translation by no

means expresses what is meant by Mahayana and Hinayana [Footnote ref 2].
Asa@nga (480 A.D.) in his *Mahayanasutrala@mkara* gives

Page 115

[Footnote 1: Quotations and references to many of these sutras are found in Candrakirti's commentary on the *Madhyamika karikas* of Nagarjuna; some of these are the following: *A@s@tasahasrikaprajnaparamita* (translated into Chinese 164 A.D.-167 A.D.), *S'atasahasrikaprajnaparamita*, *Gaganaganja*, *Samadhisutra*, *Tathagataguhyasutra*, *D@r@dhadhyas'ayasancodanasutra*, *Dhyayitamu@s@tisutra*, *Pitaputrasamagamasutra*, *Mahayanasutra*, *Maradamanasutra*, *Ratnaku@tasutra*, *Ratnacu@daparip@rcchasutra*, *Ratnameghasutra*, *Ratnara'sutra*, *Ratnakarasutra*, *Ra@s@trapalaparip@rcchasutra*, *La@nkavatarasutra*, *Lalitavistasutra*, *Vajracchedikasutra*, *Vimalakirtinirdes'asutra*, *S'alistambhasutra*, *Samadhirajasutra*, *Sukhavativyuha*, *Suvar@naprabhasasutra*, *Saddharmapu@n@darika* (translated into Chinese A.D. 255), *Amitayurdhyanasutra*, *Hastikakhyasutra*, etc.]

[Footnote 2: The word Yana is generally translated as vehicle, but a consideration of numerous contexts in which the word occurs seems to suggest that it means career or course or way, rather than vehicle (*Lalitavistara*, pp. 25, 38; *Prajnaparamita*, pp. 24, 319; *Samadhirajasutra*, p. 1; *Karu@napu@ndarika*, p. 67; *La@nkavatarasutra*, pp. 68, 108, 132). The word Yana is as old as the Upani@sads where we read of Devayana and Pit@ryana. There is no reason why this word should be taken in a different sense. We hear in *La@nkavatara* of S'ravakayana (career of the S'ravakas or the Theravadin Buddhists), Pratyekabuddhayana (the career of saints before the coming of the Buddha), Buddha yana (career of the Buddhas), Ekayana (one career), Devayana (career of the gods), Brahmayana (career of becoming a Brahma), Tathagatayana (career of a Tathagata). In one place *Lankavatara* says that ordinarily distinction is made between the three careers and one career and no career, but these distinctions are only for the ignorant (*Lankavatara*, p. 68).]

126

us the reason why one school was called Hinayana whereas the other, which he professed, was called Mahayana. He says that, considered from the point of view of the ultimate goal of religion, the instructions, attempts, realization, and time, the Hinayana occupies a lower and smaller place than the other called Maha (great) Yana, and hence it is branded as Hina (small, or low). This brings us to one of the fundamental points of distinction between Hinayana and Mahayana. The ultimate good of an adherent of the Hinayana is to attain his own nirva@na or salvation, whereas the ultimate goal of those who professed the Mahayana creed was not to seek their own salvation but to seek the salvation of all beings. So the Hinayana goal was lower, and in consequence of that the instructions that its followers received, the attempts they undertook, and the results they achieved were narrower than that of the Mahayana adherents. A Hinayana man had

only a short business in attaining his own salvation, and this could be done in three lives, whereas a Mahayana adherent was prepared to work for infinite time in helping all beings to attain salvation. So the Hinayana adherents required only a short period of work and may from that point of view also be called *hina*, or lower.

Page 116

This point, though important from the point of view of the difference in the creed of the two schools, is not so from the point of view of philosophy. But there is another trait of the Mahayanists which distinguishes them from the Hinayanists from the philosophical point of view. The Mahayanists believed that all things were of a non-essential and indefinable character and void at bottom, whereas the Hinayanists only believed in the impermanence of all things, but did not proceed further than that.

It is sometimes erroneously thought that Nagarjuna first preached the doctrine of S'unyavada (essencelessness or voidness of all appearance), but in reality almost all the Mahayana sutras either definitely preach this doctrine or allude to it. Thus if we take some of those sutras which were in all probability earlier than Nagarjuna, we find that the doctrine which Nagarjuna expounded

127

with all the rigour of his powerful dialectic was quietly accepted as an indisputable truth. Thus we find Subhuti saying to the Buddha that vedana (feeling), samjna (concepts) and the sa@mskaras (conformations) are all maya (illusion) [Footnote ref 1]. All the skandhas, dhaetus (elements) and ayatanas are void and absolute cessation. The highest knowledge of everything as pure void is not different from the skandhas, dhatus and ayatanas, and this absolute cessation of dharmas is regarded as the highest knowledge (*prajnaparamita*) [Footnote ref 2]. Everything being void there is in reality no process and no cessation. The truth is neither eternal (*s'as'vata*) nor non-eternal (*as'as'vata*) but pure void. It should be the object of a saint's endeavour to put himself in the "thatness" (*tathata*) and consider all things as void. The saint (*bodhisattva*) has to establish himself in all the virtues (*paramita*), benevolence (*danaparamita*), the virtue of character (*s'ilaparamita*), the virtue of forbearance (*k@santiparamita*), the virtue of tenacity and strength (*viryyaparamita*) and the virtue of meditation (*dhyanaparamita*). The saint (*bodhisattva*) is firmly determined that he will help an infinite number of souls to attain nirva@na. In reality, however, there are no beings, there is no bondage, no salvation; and the saint knows it but too well, yet he is not afraid of this high truth, but proceeds on his career of attaining for all illusory beings illusory emancipation from illusory bondage. The saint is actuated with that feeling and proceeds in his work on the strength of his paramitas, though in reality there is no one who is to attain salvation in reality and no one who is to help him to attain it [Footnote ref 3]. The true *prajnaparamita* is the absolute cessation of all appearance (*ya@h anupalambha@h sarvadharma@nam sa prajnaparamita ityucyate*) [Footnote ref 4].

Page 117

The Mahayana doctrine has developed on two lines, viz. that of S'unyavada or the Madhyamika doctrine and Vijnanavada. The difference between S'unyavada and Vijnanavada (the theory that there is only the appearance of phenomena of consciousness) is not fundamental, but is rather one of method. Both of them agree in holding that there is no truth in anything, everything is only passing appearance akin to dream or magic. But while the S'unyavadins were more busy in showing this indefinableness of all phenomena, the Vijnanavadins, tacitly accepting

[Footnote 1: A@s@tesahasiihaprajnaparamita, p. 16.]

[Footnote 2: Ibid p. 177.]

[Footnote 3: Ibid p. 21.]

[Footnote 4: Ibid p. 177.]

128

the truth preached by the S'unyavadins, interested themselves in explaining the phenomena of consciousness by their theory of beginningless illusory root-ideas or instincts of the mind (*vasana*).

As'vagho@sa (100 A.D.) seems to have been the greatest teacher of a new type of idealism (*vijnanavada*) known as the Tathata philosophy. Trusting in Suzuki's identification of a quotation in As'vagho@sa's *S'raddhotpadas'astra* as being made from *La@nkavatarasutra*, we should think of the *La@nkavatarasutra* as being one of the early works of the Vijnanavadins [Footnote ref 1]. The greatest later writer of the Vijnanavada school was Asa@nga (400 A.D.), to whom are attributed the *Saptadas'abhumi sutra*, *Mahayana sutra*, *Upades'a*, *Mahayanasamparigraha s'astra*, *Yogacarabhumi s'astra* and *Mahayanasutrala@mkara*. None of these works excepting the last one is available to readers who have no access to the Chinese and Tibetan manuscripts, as the Sanskrit originals are in all probability lost. The Vijnanavada school is known to Hindu writers by another name also, viz. Yogacara, and it does not seem an improbable supposition that Asa@nga's *Yogacarabhumi s'astra* was responsible for the new name. Vasubandhu, a younger brother of Asa@nga, was, as Paramartha (499-569) tells us, at first a liberal Sarvastivadin, but was converted to Vijnanavada, late in his life, by Asa@nga. Thus Vasubandhu, who wrote in his early life the great standard work of the Sarvastivadins, *Abhidharmakos'a*, devoted himself in his later life to Vijnanavada [Footnote ref 2]. He is said to have commented upon a number of

Mahayana sutras, such as *Avatamsaka*, *Nirvana*, *Saddharmapundarika*, *Prajnaparamita*, *Vimalakirti* and *Srimalasiṃhanada*, and compiled some Mahayana sutras, such as *Vijñānamātrasiddhi*, *Ratnatraya*, etc. The school of Vijñānavada continued for at least a century or two after Vasubandhu, but we are not in possession of any work of great fame of this school after him.

We have already noticed that the Śūnyavāda formed the fundamental principle of all schools of Mahayana. The most powerful exponent of this doctrine was Nagarjuna (100 A.D.), a brief account of whose system will be given in its proper place. Nagarjuna's *karikas* (verses) were commented upon by Aryadeva, a disciple of his, Kumarajiva (383 A.D.). Buddhapaṇita and Candrakīrti (550 A.D.). Aryadeva in addition to this commentary wrote at

Page 118

[Footnote 1: Dr S.C. Vidyabhushana thinks that *Lankavatana* belongs to about 300 A.D.]

[Footnote 2: Takakusu's "A study of the Paramartha's life of Vasubandhu," J.R.A.S. 1905.]

129

least three other books, viz. *Catu@hs'ataka*, *Hastabalaprakara@nav@rtti* and *Cittavis'uddhiprakara@na* [Footnote ref 1]. In the small work called *Hastabalaprakara@nav@rtti* Aryyadeva says that whatever depends for its existence on anything else may be proved to be illusory; all our notions of external objects depend on space perceptions and notions of part and whole and should therefore be regarded as mere appearance. Knowing therefore that all that is dependent on others for establishing itself is illusory, no wise man should feel attachment or antipathy towards these mere phenomenal appearances. In his *Cittavis'uddhiprakara@na* he says that just as a crystal appears to be coloured, catching the reflection of a coloured object, even so the mind though in itself colourless appears to show diverse colours by coloration of imagination (*vikalpa*). In reality the mind (*citta*) without a touch of imagination (*kalpana*) in it is the pure reality.

It does not seem however that the S'unyavadins could produce any great writers after Candrakirti. References to S'unyavada show that it was a living philosophy amongst the Hindu writers until the time of the great Mima@msa authority Kumarila who flourished in the eighth century; but in later times the S'unyavadins were no longer occupying the position of strong and active disputants.

The Tathataa Philosophy of As'vagho@sa (80 A.D.) [Footnote ref 2].

As'vagho@sa was the son of a Brahmin named Sai@mhaguhya who spent his early days in travelling over the different parts of India and defeating the Buddhists in open debates. He was probably converted to Buddhism by Par@sva who was an important person in the third Buddhist Council promoted, according to some authorities, by the King of Kashmere and according to other authorities by Pu@nyayas'as [Footnote ref 3].



[Footnote 1: Aryyadeva's *Hastabalaprakara@nav@rtti* has been reclaimed by Dr. F.W. Thomas. Fragmentary portions of his *Cittavis'uddhiprakara@na* were published by Mahamahopadhyaya Haraprasada s'astri in the Bengal Asiatic Society's journal, 1898.]

[Footnote 2: The above section is based on the *Awakening of Faith*, an English translation by Suzuki of the Chinese version of *S'raddhotpadas`astra* by As'vagho@sa, the Sanskrit original of which appears to have been lost. Suzuki has brought forward a mass of evidence to show that As'vagho@sa was a contemporary of Kani@ska.]

Page 119

[Footnote 3: Taranatha says that he was converted by Aryadeva, a disciple of Nagarjuna, *Geschichte des Buddhismus*, German translation by Schiefner, pp. 84-85. See Suzuki's *Awakening of Faith*, pp. 24-32. As'vaghosha wrote the *Buddhacaritakavya*, of great poetical excellence, and the *Mahala-mkara'sastra*. He was also a musician and had invented a musical instrument called Rastavara that he might by that means convert the people of the city. "Its melody was classical, mournful, and melodious, inducing the audience to ponder on the misery, emptiness, and non-atmanness of life." Suzuki, p. 35.]

130

He held that in the soul two aspects may be distinguished —the aspect as thatness (*bhutatathata*) and the aspect as the cycle of birth and death (*saṃsāra*). The soul as *bhutatathata* means the oneness of the totality of all things (*dharmadhātu*). Its essential nature is uncreate and external. All things simply on account of the beginningless traces of the incipient and unconscious memory of our past experiences of many previous lives (*saṃskṛti*) appear under the forms of individuation [Footnote ref 1]. If we could overcome this *saṃskṛti* "the signs of individuation would disappear and there would be no trace of a world of objects." "All things in their fundamental nature are not nameable or explicable. They cannot be adequately expressed in any form of language. They possess absolute sameness (*samata*). They are subject neither to transformation nor to destruction. They are nothing but one soul" —thatness (*bhutatathata*). This "thatness" has no attribute and it can only be somehow pointed out in speech as "thatness." As soon as you understand that when the totality of existence is spoken of or thought of, there is neither that which speaks nor that which is spoken of, there is neither that which thinks nor that which is thought of, "this is the stage of thatness." This *bhutatathata* is neither that which is existence, nor that which is non-existence, nor that which is at once existence and non-existence, nor that which is not at once existence and non-existence; it is neither that which is plurality, nor that which is at once unity and plurality, nor that which is not at once unity and plurality. It is a negative concept in the sense that it is beyond all that is conditional and yet it is a positive concept in the sense that it holds all within it. It cannot be comprehended by any kind of particularization or distinction. It is only by transcending the range of our intellectual categories of the comprehension of the limited range of finite phenomena that we can get a glimpse of it. It cannot be comprehended by the particularizing consciousness of all beings, and we thus may call it negation, "śūnyata," in this sense. The truth is that which

[Footnote 1: I have ventured to translate “*sm@rti*” in the sense of *vasana* in preference to Suzuki’s “confused subjectivity” because *sm@rti* in the sense of *vasana* is not unfamiliar to the readers of such Buddhist works as *La@nkavatara*. The word “subjectivity” seems to be too European a term to be used as a word to represent the Buddhist sense.]



Page 120

131

subjectively does not exist by itself, that the negation (*s'unyata*) is also void (*s'unya*) in its nature, that neither that which is negated nor that which negates is an independent entity. It is the pure soul that manifests itself as eternal, permanent, immutable, and completely holds all things within it. On that account it may be called affirmation. But yet there is no trace of affirmation in it, because it is not the product of the creative instinctive memory (*sm@rti*) of conceptual thought and the only way of grasping the truth—the thatness, is by transcending all conceptual creations.

“The soul as birth and death (*sa@msara*) comes forth from the Tathagata womb (*tathagatagarbha*), the ultimate reality. But the immortal and the mortal coincide with each other. Though they are not identical they are not duality either. Thus when the absolute soul assumes a relative aspect by its self-affirmation it is called the all-conserving mind (*alayavijnana*). It embraces two principles, (1) enlightenment, (2) non-enlightenment. Enlightenment is the perfection of the mind when it is free from the corruptions of the creative instinctive incipient memory (*sm@rti*). It penetrates all and is the unity of all (*dharmadhatu*). That is to say, it is the universal dharmakaya of all Tathagatas constituting the ultimate foundation of existence.

“When it is said that all consciousness starts from this fundamental truth, it should not be thought that consciousness had any real origin, for it was merely phenomenal existence—a mere imaginary creation of the perceivers under the influence of the delusive *sm@rti*. The multitude of people (*bahujana*) are said to be lacking in enlightenment, because ignorance (*avidya*) prevails there from all eternity, because there is a constant succession of *sm@rti* (past confused memory working as instinct) from which they have never been emancipated. But when they are divested of this *sm@rti* they can then recognize that no states of mentation, *viz.* their appearance, presence, change and disappearance, have any reality. They are neither in a temporal nor in a spatial relation with the one soul, for they are not self-existent.

“This high enlightenment shows itself imperfectly in our corrupted phenomenal experience as *prajna* (wisdom) and *karma* (incomprehensible activity of life). By pure wisdom we understand that when one, by virtue of the perfuming power of *dharma*, disciplines himself truthfully (i.e. according to the *dharma*), and accomplishes meritorious deeds, the mind (i.e. the *alayavijnana*)

132

Page 121

which implicates itself with birth and death will be broken down and the modes of the evolving consciousness will be annulled, and the pure and the genuine wisdom of the Dharmakaya will manifest itself. Though all modes of consciousness and mentation are mere products of ignorance, ignorance in its ultimate nature is identical and non-identical with enlightenment; and therefore ignorance is in one sense destructible, though in another sense it is indestructible. This may be illustrated by the simile of the water and the waves which are stirred up in the ocean. Here the water can be said to be both identical and non-identical with the waves. The waves are stirred up by the wind, but the water remains the same. When the wind ceases the motion of the waves subsides, but the water remains the same. Likewise when the mind of all creatures, which in its own nature is pure and clean, is stirred up by the wind of ignorance (*avidya*), the waves of mentality (*vijnana*) make their appearance. These three (i.e. the mind, ignorance, and mentality) however have no existence, and they are neither unity nor plurality. When the ignorance is annihilated, the awakened mentality is tranquillized, whilst the essence of the wisdom remains unmolested." The truth or the enlightenment "is absolutely unobtainable by any modes of relativity or by any outward signs of enlightenment. All events in the phenomenal world are reflected in enlightenment, so that they neither pass out of it, nor enter into it, and they neither disappear nor are destroyed." It is for ever cut off from the hindrances both affectional (*kles'avara@na*) and intellectual (*jneyavara@na*), as well as from the mind (i.e. *alayavijnana*) which implicates itself with birth and death, since it is in its true nature clean, pure, eternal, calm, and immutable. The truth again is such that it transforms and unfolds itself wherever conditions are favourable in the form of a tathagata or in some other forms, in order that all beings may be induced thereby to bring their virtue to maturity.

"Non-enlightenment has no existence of its own aside from its relation with enlightenment *a priori*." But enlightenment *a priori* is spoken of only in contrast to non-enlightenment, and as non-enlightenment is a non-entity, true enlightenment in turn loses its significance too. They are distinguished only in mutual relation as enlightenment or non-enlightenment. The manifestations of non-enlightenment are made in three ways: (1) as a disturbance of the mind (*alayavijnana*), by the avidyakarma (ignorant

Page 122

action), producing misery (*du@hkha*); (2) by the appearance of an ego or of a perceiver; and (3) by the creation of an external world which does not exist in itself, independent of the perceiver. Conditioned by the unreal external world six kinds of phenomena arise in succession. The first phenomenon is intelligence (sensation); being affected by the external world the mind becomes conscious of the difference between the agreeable and the disagreeable. The second phenomenon is succession. Following upon intelligence, memory retains the sensations, agreeable as well as disagreeable, in a continuous succession of subjective states. The third phenomenon is clinging. Through the retention and succession of sensations, agreeable as well as disagreeable, there arises the desire of clinging. The fourth phenomenon is an attachment to names or ideas (*sa@mjna*), etc. By clinging the mind hypostatizes all names whereby to give definitions to all things. The fifth phenomenon is the performance of deeds (*karma*). On account of attachment to names, etc., there arise all the variations of deeds, productive of individuality. "The sixth phenomenon is the suffering due to the fetter of deeds. Through deeds suffering arises in which the mind finds itself entangled and curtailed of its freedom." All these phenomena have thus sprung forth through avidya.

The relation between this truth and avidya is in one sense a mere identity and may be illustrated by the simile of all kinds of pottery which though different are all made of the same clay [Footnote ref 1]. Likewise the undefiled (*anasrava*) and ignorance (*avidya*) and their various transient forms all come from one and the same entity. Therefore Buddha teaches that all beings are from all eternity abiding in Nirva@na.

It is by the touch of ignorance (*avidya*) that this truth assumes all the phenomenal forms of existence.

In the all-conserving mind (*alayavijnana*) ignorance manifests itself; and from non-enlightenment starts that which sees, that which represents, that which apprehends an objective world, and that which constantly particularizes. This is called ego (*manas*). Five different names are given to the ego (according to its different modes of operation). The first name is activity-consciousness (*karmavijnana*) in the sense that through the agency of ignorance an unenlightened mind begins to be disturbed (or

[Footnote 1: Compare Chandogya, VI. 1. 4.]

Page 123

awakened). The second name is evolving-consciousness (*prav@rttiivijnana*) in the sense that when the mind is disturbed, there evolves that which sees an external world. The third name is representation-consciousness in the sense that the ego (*manas*) represents (or reflects) an external world. As a clean mirror reflects the images of all description, it is even so with the representation-consciousness. When it is confronted, for instance, with the objects of the five senses, it represents them instantaneously and without effort. The fourth is particularization-consciousness, in the sense that it discriminates between different things defiled as well as pure. The fifth name is succession-consciousness, in the sense that continuously directed by the awakening consciousness of attention (*manaskara*) it (*manas*) retains all experiences and never loses or suffers the destruction of any karma, good as well as evil, which had been sown in the past, and whose retribution, painful or agreeable, it never fails to mature, be it in the present or in the future, and also in the sense that it unconsciously recollects things gone by and in imagination anticipates things to come. Therefore the three domains (*kamaloka*, domain of feeling—*rupaloka*, domain of bodily existence—*arupaloka*, domain of incorporeality) are nothing but the self manifestation of the mind (i.e. *alayavijnana* which is practically identical with *bhutatahata*). Since all things, owing the principle of their existence to the mind (*alayavijnana*), are produced by *sm@rti*, all the modes of particularization are the self-particularizations of the mind. The mind in itself (or the soul) being however free from all attributes is not differentiated. Therefore we come to the conclusion that all things and conditions in the phenomenal world, hypostatized and established only through ignorance (*avidya*) and memory (*sm@rti*), have no more reality than the images in a mirror. They arise simply from the ideality of a particularizing mind. When the mind is disturbed, the multiplicity of things is produced; but when the mind is quieted, the multiplicity of things disappears. By ego-consciousness (*manovijnana*) we mean the ignorant mind which by its succession-consciousness clings to the conception of I and Not-I and misapprehends the nature of the six objects of sense. The ego-consciousness is also called separation-consciousness, because it is nourished by the perfuming influence of the prejudices (*asrava*), intellectual as well as affectional. Thus believing in the external world produced by memory, the mind becomes

135

oblivious of the principle of sameness (*samata*) that underlies all things which are one and perfectly calm and tranquil and show no sign of becoming.

Non-enlightenment is the *raison d'être* of samsara. When this is annihilated the conditions—the external world—are also annihilated and with them the state of an interrelated mind is also annihilated. But this annihilation does not mean the annihilation of the mind but of its modes only. It becomes calm like an unruffled sea when all winds which were disturbing it and producing the waves have been annihilated.

Page 124

In describing the relation of the interaction of avidya (ignorance), karmavijnana (activity-consciousness—the subjective mind), vi@saya (external world—represented by the senses) and the tathata (suchness), As'vaghosa says that there is an interperfuming of these elements. Thus As'vaghosa says, "By perfuming we mean that while our worldly clothes (viz. those which we wear) have no odour of their own, neither offensive nor agreeable, they can yet acquire one or the other odour according to the nature of the substance with which they are perfumed. Suchness (*tathata*) is likewise a pure dharma free from all defilements caused by the perfuming power of ignorance. On the other hand ignorance has nothing to do with purity. Nevertheless we speak of its being able to do the work of purity because it in its turn is perfumed by suchness. Determined by suchness ignorance becomes the *raison d'etre* of all forms of defilement. And this ignorance perfumes suchness and produces sm@rti. This sm@rti in its turn perfumes ignorance. On account of this (reciprocal) perfuming, the truth is misunderstood. On account of its being misunderstood an external world of subjectivity appears. Further, on account of the perfuming power of memory, various modes of individuation are produced. And by clinging to them various deeds are done, and we suffer as the result miseries mentally as well as bodily." Again "suchness perfumes ignorance, and in consequence of this perfuming the individual in subjectivity is caused to loathe the misery of birth and death and to seek after the blessing of Nirvana. This longing and loathing on the part of the subjective mind in turn perfumes suchness. On account of this perfuming influence we are enabled to believe that we are in possession within ourselves of suchness whose essential nature is pure and immaculate; and we also recognize that all phenomena in the world are nothing

136

but the illusory manifestations of the mind (*alayavijnana*) and have no reality of their own. Since we thus rightly understand the truth, we can practise the means of liberation, can perform those actions which are in accordance with the dharma. We should neither particularize, nor cling to objects of desire. By virtue of this discipline and habituation during the lapse of innumerable asa@nkhya@kalpas [Footnote ref 1] we get ignorance annihilated. As ignorance is thus annihilated, the mind (*alayavijnana*) is no longer disturbed, so as to be subject to individuation. As the mind is no longer disturbed, the particularization of the surrounding world is annihilated. When in this wise the principle and the condition of defilement, their products, and the mental disturbances are all annihilated, it is said that we attain Nirva@na and that various spontaneous displays of activity are accomplished." The Nirva@na of the tathata philosophy is not nothingness, but tathata (suchness or thatness) in its purity unassociated with any kind of disturbance which produces all the diversity of experience.

Page 125

To the question that if all beings are uniformly in possession of suchness and are therefore equally perfumed by it, how is it that there are some who do not believe in it, while others do, As'vaghosha's reply is that though all beings are uniformly in possession of suchness, the intensity of ignorance and the principle of individuation, that work from all eternity, vary in such manifold grades as to outnumber the sands of the Ganges, and hence the difference. There is an inherent perfuming principle in one's own being which, embraced and protected by the love (*maitri*) and compassion (*karuṇā*) of all Buddhas and Bodhisattvas, is caused to loathe the misery of birth and death, to believe in nirvāṇa, to cultivate the root of merit (*kus'alamula*), to habituate oneself to it and to bring it to maturity. In consequence of this, one is enabled to see all Buddhas and Bodhisattvas and, receiving instructions from them, is benefited, gladdened and induced to practise good deeds, etc., till one can attain to Buddhahood and enter into Nirvāṇa. This implies that all beings have such perfuming power in them that they may be affected by the good wishes of the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas for leading them to the path of virtue, and thus it is that sometimes hearing the Bodhisattvas and sometimes seeing them, "all beings thereby acquire (spiritual) benefits (*hitata*)" and "entering into the samadhi of purity, they

[Footnote 1: Technical name for a very vast period of time.]

137

destroy hindrances wherever they are met with and obtain all-penetrating insight that enables them to become conscious of the absolute oneness (*samata*) of the universe (*sarvaloka*) and to see innumerable Buddhas and Bodhisattvas."

There is a difference between the perfuming which is not in unison with suchness, as in the case of s'ravakas (theravadin monks), pratyekabuddhas and the novice bodhisattvas, who only continue their religious discipline but do not attain to the state of non-particularization in unison with the essence of suchness. But those bodhisattvas whose perfuming is already in unison with suchness attain to the state of non-particularization and allow themselves to be influenced only by the power of the dharma. The incessant perfuming of the defiled dharma (ignorance from all eternity) works on, but when one attains to Buddhahood one at once puts an end to it. The perfuming of the pure dharma (i.e. suchness) however works on to eternity without any interruption. For this suchness or thatness is the effulgence of great wisdom, the universal illumination of the dharmadhatu (universe), the true and adequate knowledge, the mind pure and clean in its own nature, the eternal, the blessed, the self-regulating

and the pure, the tranquil, the inimitable and the free, and this is called the tathagatagarbha or the dharmakaya. It may be objected

Page 126

that since thatness or suchness has been described as being without characteristics, it is now a contradiction to speak of it as embracing all merits, but it is held, that in spite of its embracing all merits, it is free in its nature from all forms of distinction, because all objects in the world are of one and the same taste; and being of one reality they have nothing to do with the modes of particularization or of dualistic character. "Though all things in their (metaphysical) origin come from the soul alone and in truth are free from particularization, yet on account of non-enlightenment there originates a subjective mind (*alayavijnana*) that becomes conscious of an external world." This is called ignorance or *avidya*. Nevertheless the pure essence of the mind is perfectly pure and there is no awakening of ignorance in it. Hence we assign to suchness this quality, the effulgence of great wisdom. It is called universal illumination, because there is nothing for it to illumine. This perfuming of suchness therefore continues for ever, though the stage of the perfuming of *avidya* comes to an end with the Buddhas when they attain to *nirvana*. All Buddhas while at

138

the stage of discipline feel a deep compassion (*mahakaruna*) for all beings, practise all virtues (*paramitas*) and many other meritorious deeds, treat others as their own selves, and wish to work out a universal salvation of mankind in ages to come, through limitless numbers of *kalpas*, recognize truthfully and adequately the principle of equality (*samata*) among people; and do not cling to the individual existence of a sentient being. This is what is meant by the activity of *tathata*. The main idea of this *tathata* philosophy seems to be this, that this transcendent "thatness" is at once the quintessence of all thought and activity; as *avidya* veils it or perfumes it, the world-appearance springs forth, but as the pure thatness also perfumes the *avidya* there is a striving for the good as well. As the stage of *avidya* is passed its luminous character shines forth, for it is the ultimate truth which only illusorily appeared as the many of the world.

This doctrine seems to be more in agreement with the view of an absolute unchangeable reality as the ultimate truth than that of the nihilistic idealism of *Lañkavatara*. Considering the fact that As'vagho'sa was a learned Brahmin scholar in his early life, it is easy to guess that there was much Upanisadic influence in this interpretation of Buddhism, which compares so favourably with the Vedanta as interpreted by S'ankara. The *Lañkavatara* admitted a reality only as a make-believe to attract the Tairthikas (heretics) who had a prejudice in favour of an unchangeable self (*atman*). But As'vagho'sa plainly admitted an unspeakable reality as the ultimate truth. Nagarjuna's Madhyamika doctrines which eclipsed the profound philosophy of As'vagho'sa seem to be more faithful to the traditional Buddhist creed and to the Vijñānavāda creed of Buddhism as explained in the *Lañkavatara* [Footnote ref 1].

Page 127

The Madhyamika or the S'untavada school.—Nihilism.

Candrakirti, the commentator of Nagarjuna's verses known as "*Madhyamika karika*," in explaining the doctrine of dependent origination (*pratityasamutpada*) as described by Nagarjuna starts with two interpretations of the word. According to one the word *pratityasamutpada* means the origination (*utpada*) of the nonexistent (*abhava*) depending on (*pratitya*) reasons and causes

[Footnote 1: As I have no access to the Chinese translation of As'vagho's *S'raddhotpada S'astra*, I had to depend entirely on Suzuki's expressions as they appear in his translation.]

139

(hetupratyaya). According to the other interpretation *pratitya* means each and every destructible individual and *pratityasamutpada* means the origination of each and every destructible individual. But he disapproves of both these meanings. The second meaning does not suit the context in which the Pali Scriptures generally speak of *pratityasamutpada* (e.g. *cak@su@h pratitya rupani ca utpadyante cak@survijnanam*) for it does not mean the origination of each and every destructible individual, but the originating of specific individual phenomena (e.g. perception of form by the operation in connection with the eye) depending upon certain specific conditions.

The first meaning also is equally unsuitable. Thus for example if we take the case of any origination, e.g. that of the visual percept, we see that there cannot be any contact between visual knowledge and physical sense, the eye, and so it would not be intelligible that the former should depend upon the latter. If we interpret the maxim of *pratityasamutpada* as this happening that happens, that would not explain any specific origination. All origination is false, for a thing can neither originate by itself nor by others, nor by a co-operation of both nor without any reason. For if a thing exists already it cannot originate again by itself. To suppose that it is originated by others would also mean that the origination was of a thing already existing. If again without any further qualification it is said that depending on one the other comes into being, then depending on anything any other thing could come into being—from light we could have darkness! Since a thing could not originate from itself or by others, it could not also be originated by a combination of both of them together. A thing also could not originate without any cause, for then all things could come into being at all times. It is therefore to be acknowledged that wherever the Buddha spoke of this so-called dependent origination (*pratityasamutpada*) it was referred to as illusory manifestations

appearing to intellects and senses stricken with ignorance. This dependent origination is not thus a real law, but only an appearance due to ignorance (*avidya*). The only thing which is not lost (*amo@sadharma*) is nirva@na; but all other forms of knowledge and phenomena (*sa@mskara*) are false and are lost with their appearances (*sarvasa@mskaras'ca m@r@samo@sadharma@na@h*).

Page 128

It is sometimes objected to this doctrine that if all appearances

140

are false, then they do not exist at all. There are then no good or bad works and no cycle of existence, and if such is the case, then it may be argued that no philosophical discussion should be attempted. But the reply to such an objection is that the nihilistic doctrine is engaged in destroying the misplaced confidence of the people that things are true. Those who are really wise do not find anything either false or true, for to them clearly they do not exist at all and they do not trouble themselves with the question of their truth or falsehood. For him who knows thus there are neither works nor cycles of births (*sa@msara*) and also he does not trouble himself about the existence or non-existence of any of the appearances. Thus it is said in the Ratnaku@tasutra that howsoever carefully one may search one cannot discover consciousness (*citta*); what cannot be perceived cannot be said to exist, and what does not exist is neither past, nor future, nor present, and as such it cannot be said to have any nature at all; and that which has no nature is subject neither to origination nor to extinction. He who through his false knowledge (*viparyyasa*) does not comprehend the falsehood of all appearances, but thinks them to be real, works and suffers the cycles of rebirth (*sa@msara*). Like all illusions, though false these appearances can produce all the harm of rebirth and sorrow.

It may again be objected that if there is nothing true according to the nihilists (*s'unyavadins*), then their statement that there is no origination or extinction is also not true. Candrakirti in replying to this says that with *s'unyavadins* the truth is absolute silence. When the *S'unyavadin* sages argue, they only accept for the moment what other people regard as reasons, and deal with them in their own manner to help them to come to a right comprehension of all appearances. It is of no use to say, in spite of all arguments tending to show the falsehood of all appearances, that they are testified by our experience, for the whole thing that we call "our experience" is but false illusion inasmuch as these phenomena have no true essence.

When the doctrine of *pratityasamutpada* is described as "this being that is," what is really meant is that things can only be indicated as mere appearances one after another, for they have no essence or true nature. Nihilism (*s'unyavada*) also means just this. The true meaning of *pratityasamutpada* or *s'unyavada* is this, that there is no truth, no essence in all phenomena that

141

appear [Footnote ref 1]. As the phenomena have no essence they are neither produced nor destroyed; they really neither come nor go. They are merely the appearance of *maya* or illusion. The void (*s'unya*) does not mean pure negation, for that is relative to

some kind of position. It simply means that none of the appearances have any intrinsic nature of their own (*ni@hsvabhavatvam*).

Page 129

The Madhyamaka or S'unya system does not hold that anything has any essence or nature (svabhava) of its own; even heat cannot be said to be the essence of fire; for both the heat and the fire are the result of the combination of many conditions, and what depends on many conditions cannot be said to be the nature or essence of the thing. That alone may be said to be the true essence or nature of anything which does not depend on anything else, and since no such essence or nature can be pointed out which stands independently by itself we cannot say that it exists. If a thing has no essence or existence of its own, we cannot affirm the essence of other things to it (*parabhava*). If we cannot affirm anything of anything as positive, we cannot consequently assert anything of anything as negative. If anyone first believes in things positive and afterwards discovers that they are not so, he no doubt thus takes his stand on a negation (*abhava*), but in reality since we cannot speak of anything positive, we cannot speak of anything negative either [Footnote ref 2].

It is again objected that we nevertheless perceive a process going on. To this the Madhyamaka reply is that a process of change could not be affirmed of things that are permanent. But we can hardly speak of a process with reference to momentary things; for those which are momentary are destroyed the next moment after they appear, and so there is nothing which can continue to justify a process. That which appears as being neither comes from anywhere nor goes anywhere, and that which appears as destroyed also does not come from anywhere nor go anywhere, and so a process (*sa@msara*) cannot be affirmed of them. It cannot be that when the second moment arose, the first moment had suffered a change in the process, for it was not the same as the second, as there is no so-called cause-effect connection. In fact there being no relation between the two, the temporal determination as prior and later is wrong. The supposition that there is a self which suffers changes is also not valid, for howsoever we

[Footnote 1: See *Madhyamikav@rtti* (B.T.S.), p. 50.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* pp. 93-100.]

may search we find the five skandhas but no self. Moreover if the soul is a unity it cannot undergo any process or progression, for that would presuppose that the soul abandons one character and takes up another at the same identical moment which is inconceivable [Footnote ref 1].

Page 130

But then again the question arises that if there is no process, and no cycle of worldly existence of thousands of afflictions, what is then the nirva@na which is described as the final extinction of all afflictions (*kles'a*)? To this the Madhyamaka reply is that it does not agree to such a definition of nirva@na. Nirva@na on the Madhyamaka theory is the absence of the essence of all phenomena, that which cannot be conceived either as anything which has ceased or as anything which is produced (*aniruddham anntpannam*). In nirva@na all phenomena are lost; we say that the phenomena cease to exist in nirva@na, but like the illusory snake in the rope they never existed [Footnote ref 2]. Nirva@na cannot be any positive thing or any sort of state of being (*bhava*), for all positive states or things are joint products of combined causes (*sa@msk@rta*) and are liable to decay and destruction. Neither can it be a negative existence, for since we cannot speak of any positive existence, we cannot speak of a negative existence either. The appearances or the phenomena are communicated as being in a state of change and process coming one after another, but beyond that no essence, existence, or truth can be affirmed of them. Phenomena sometimes appear to be produced and sometimes to be destroyed, but they cannot be determined as existent or non-existent. Nirva@na is merely the cessation of the seeming phenomenal flow (*prapancaprav@rtti*). It cannot therefore be designated either as positive or as negative for these conceptions belong to phenomena (*na caprav@rttimatram bhavabhaveti parikalpitum paryyate evam na bhavabhavanirva@nam*, M.V. 197). In this state there is nothing which is known, and even the knowledge that the phenomena have ceased to appear is not found. Even the Buddha himself is a phenomenon, a mirage or a dream, and so are all his teachings [Footnote ref 3].

It is easy to see that in this system there cannot exist any bondage or emancipation; all phenomena are like shadows, like the mirage, the dream, the maya, and the magic without any real nature (*ni@hsvabhava*). It is mere false knowledge to suppose that

[Footnote 1: See *Madhyamikav@rtti* (B.T.S.), pp. 101-102.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p. 194.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* pp.162 and 201.]

one is trying to win a real nirva@na [Footnote ref 1]. It is this false egoism that is to be considered as avidya. When considered deeply it is found that there is not even the slightest trace of any positive existence. Thus it is seen that if there were no ignorance

(*avidya*), there would have been no conformations (*sa@mskaras*), and if there were no conformations there would have been no consciousness, and so on; but it cannot be said of the ignorance “I am generating the *sa@mskaras*,” and it can be said of the *sa@mskaras* “we are being produced by the *avidya*.” But there being *avidya*, there come the *sa@mskaras* and so on with other categories too. This character of the *pratityasamutpada* is known as the coming of the consequent depending on an antecedent reason (*hetupanibandha*).

Page 131

It can be viewed from another aspect, namely that of dependence on conglomeration or combination (*pratyayopanibandh*). It is by the combination (*samavaya*) of the four elements, space (*akas'a*) and consciousness (*vijnana*) that a man is made. It is due to earth (*p@rthivi*) that the body becomes solid, it is due to water that there is fat in the body, it is due to fire that there is digestion, it is due to wind that there is respiration; it is due to *akas'a* that there is porosity, and it is due to *vijnana* that there is mind-consciousness. It is by their mutual combination that we find a man as he is. But none of these elements think that they have done any of the functions that are considered to be allotted to them. None of these are real substances or beings or souls. It is by ignorance that these are thought of as existents and attachment is generated for them. Through ignorance thus come the *sa@mskaras*, consisting of attachment, antipathy and thoughtlessness (*raga, dve@sa, moha*); from these proceed the *vijnana* and the four *skandhas*. These with the four elements bring about name and form (*namarupa*), from these proceed the senses (*_@sa@dayatana_*), from the coming together of those three comes contact (*spars'a*); from that feelings, from that comes desire (*tr@s@na*) and so on. These flow on like the stream of a river, but there is no essence or truth behind them all or as the ground of them all [Footnote ref 2]. The phenomena therefore cannot be said to be either existent or non-existent, and no truth can be affirmed of either eternalism (*s'as'vatavada*) or nihilism (*ucchedavada*), and it is for this reason

[Footnote 1: See *Madhyamikav@rtti* (B.T.S.), pp. 101-108.]

[Footnote: *Ibid.* pp. 209-211, quoted from *Salistambhasutra*. Vacaspatimis'ra also quotes this passage in his *Bhamati* on S'a@nkara's *Brahma-sutra*.]

144

that this doctrine is called the middle doctrine (*madhyamaka*) [Footnote ref 1]. Existence and non-existence have only a relative truth (*samv@rtisatya*) in them, as in all phenomena, but there is no true reality (*paramarthasatya*) in them or anything else. Morality plays as high a part in this nihilistic system as it does in any other Indian system. I quote below some stanzas from Nagarjuna's *Suk@rllekha* as translated by Wenzel (P.T.S. 1886) from the Tibetan translation.

6. Knowing that riches are unstable and void (*asara*) give according to the moral precepts, to Bhikshus, Brahmins, the poor and friends for there is no better friend than giving.



7. Exhibit morality (*s'ila*) faultless and sublime, unmixed and spotless, for morality is the supporting ground of all eminence, as the earth is of the moving and immovable.
8. Exercise the imponderable, transcendental virtues of charity, morality, patience, energy, meditation, and likewise wisdom, in order that, having reached the farther shore of the sea of existence, you may become a Jina prince.

Page 132

9. View as enemies, avarice (*matsaryya*), deceit (*s'a@thya*), duplicity (*maya*), lust, indolence (*kausidya*), pride (*mana*), greed (*raga*), hatred (*dve@sa*) and pride (*mada*) concerning family, figure, glory, youth, or power.

15. Since nothing is so difficult of attainment as patience, open no door for anger; the Buddha has pronounced that he who renounces anger shall attain the degree of an anagamin (a saint who never suffers rebirth).

21. Do not look after another's wife; but if you see her, regard her, according to age, like your mother, daughter or sister.

24. Of him who has conquered the unstable, ever moving objects of the six senses and him who has overcome the mass of his enemies in battle, the wise praise the first as the greater hero.

29. Thou who knowest the world, be equanimous against the eight worldly conditions, gain and loss, happiness and suffering, fame and dishonour, blame and praise, for they are not objects for your thoughts.

37. But one (a woman) that is gentle as a sister, winning as a friend, careful of your well being as a mother, obedient as a servant her (you must) honour as the guardian god(dess) of the family.

40. Always perfectly meditate on (turn your thoughts to) kindness, pity, joy and indifference; then if you do not obtain a higher degree you (certainly) will obtain the happiness of Brahman's world (*brahmavihara*).

41. By the four dhyanas completely abandoning desire (*kama*), reflection (*vicara*), joy (*priti*), and happiness and pain (*sukha, du@hkha*) you will obtain as fruit the lot of a Brahman.

49. If you say "I am not the form, you thereby will understand I am not endowed with form, I do not dwell in form, the form does not dwell in me; and in like manner you will understand the voidness of the other four aggregates."

50. The aggregates do not arise from desire, nor from time, nor from

[Footnote 1: See *Madhyamikav@rtti* (B.T.S.), p. 160.]



nature (*prak@rti*), not from themselves (*svabhavat*), nor from the Lord (*is'vara*), nor yet are they without cause; know that they arise from ignorance (*avidya*) and desire (*t@r@s@na*).

51. Know that attachment to religious ceremonies (*s'ilabrataparamars'a*), wrong views (*mithyad@r@s@ti*) and doubt (*vicikitsa*) are the three fetters.

53. Steadily instruct yourself (more and more) in the highest morality, the highest wisdom and the highest thought, for the hundred and fifty one rules (of the *pratimok@sa*) are combined perfectly in these three.

58. Because thus (as demonstrated) all this is unstable (*anitya*) without substance (*anatma*) without help (*as'ara@na*) without protector (*anatha*) and without abode (*asthana*) thou O Lord of men must become discontented with this worthless (*asara*) kadali-tree of the orb.

Page 133

104. If a fire were to seize your head or your dress you would extinguish and subdue it, even then endeavour to annihilate desire, for there is no other higher necessity than this.

105. By morality, knowledge and contemplation, attain the spotless dignity of the quieting and the subduing nirva@na not subject to age, death or decay, devoid of earth, water, fire, wind, sun and moon.

107. Where there is no wisdom (*prajna*) there is also no contemplation (*dhyana*), where there is no contemplation there is also no wisdom; but know that for him who possesses these two the sea of existence is like a grove.

Uncompromising Idealism or the School
of Vijnanavada Buddhism.

The school of Buddhist philosophy known as the Vijnanavada or Yogacara has often been referred to by such prominent teachers of Hindu thought as Kumarila and S'a@nkara. It agrees to a great extent with the S'unyavadins whom we have already described. All the dharmas (qualities and substances) are but imaginary constructions of ignorant minds. There is no movement in the so-called external world as we suppose, for it does not exist. We construct it ourselves and then are ourselves deluded that it exists by itself (*nirmmitapratimohi*) [Footnote ref 1]. There are two functions involved in our consciousness, viz. that which holds the perceptions (*khyati vijnana*), and that which orders them by imaginary constructions (*vastuprativikalpavijnana*). The two functions however mutually determine each other and cannot be separately distinguished (*abhinnalak@sa@ne anyonyahetuke*). These functions are set to work on account of the beginningless instinctive tendencies inherent in them in relation to the world of appearance (*anadikala-prapanca-vasanahetukanca*) [Footnote ref 2].

All sense knowledge can be stopped only when the diverse

[Footnote 1: *Lankavatarasutra*, pp. 21-22.]

[Footnote 2 *Ibid.* p. 44.]

unmanifested instincts of imagination are stopped (*abhuta-parikalpa-vasana-vaicitra-nirodha*) [Footnote ref 1]. All our phenomenal knowledge is without any essence or truth

(*nihsvabhava*) and is but a creation of maya, a mirage or a dream. There is nothing which may be called external, but all is the imaginary creation of the mind (*svacitta*), which has been accustomed to create imaginary appearances from beginningless time. This mind by whose movement these creations take place as subject and object has no appearance in itself and is thus without any origination, existence and extinction (*utpadasthitibha^{ng}avarjjam*) and is called the alayavijnana. The reason why this alayavijnana itself is said to be without origination, existence, and extinction is probably this, that it is always a hypothetical state which merely explains all the phenomenal states that appear, and therefore it has no existence in the sense in which the term is used and we could not affirm any special essence of it.

Page 134

We do not realize that all visible phenomena are of nothing external but of our own mind (*svacitta*), and there is also the beginningless tendency for believing and creating a phenomenal world of appearance. There is also the nature of knowledge (which takes things as the perceiver and the perceived) and there is also the instinct in the mind to experience diverse forms. On account of these four reasons there are produced in the alayavijnana (mind) the ripples of our sense experiences (*prav@rttivijnana*) as in a lake, and these are manifested as sense experiences. All the five skandhas called *panchavijnanakaya* thus appear in a proper synthetic form. None of the phenomenal knowledge that appears is either identical or different from the alayavijnana just as the waves cannot be said to be either identical or different from the ocean. As the ocean dances on in waves so the citta or the alayavijnana is also dancing as it were in its diverse operations (*v@rtti*). As citta it collects all movements (*karma*) within it, as manas it synthesizes (*vidhiyate*) and as vijnana it constructs the fivefold perceptions (*vijnanan vijanati d@rs'yam kalpate pancabhi@h*) [Footnote ref 2].

It is only due to maya (illusion) that the phenomena appear in their twofold aspect as subject and object. This must always be regarded as an appearance (*samv@rtisatyata*) whereas in the real aspect we could never say whether they existed (*bhava*) or did not exist [Footnote ref 3].

[Footnote 1: *Pancavatarasutra*, p. 44.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.*, pp. 50-55.]

[Footnote 3: Asa@nga's *Mahayanasutrala@mkara*, pp. 58-59.]

147

All phenomena both being and non-being are illusory (*sadasanta@h mayopama@h*). When we look deeply into them we find that there is an absolute negation of all appearances, including even all negations, for they are also appearances. This would make the ultimate truth positive. But this is not so, for it is that in which the positive and negative are one and the same (*bhavabhavasamanata*) [Footnote ref 1]. Such a state which is complete in itself and has no name and no substance had been described in the *La@nkavatarasutra* as thatness (*tathata*) [Footnote ref 2]. This state is also described in another place in the *La@nkavatara* as voidness (*s'unyata*) which is one and has no origination and no essence [Footnote ref 3]. In another place it is also designated as tathagatagarbha [Footnote ref 4].

Page 135

It may be supposed that this doctrine of an unqualified ultimate truth comes near to the Vedantic atman or Brahman like the tathata doctrine of As'vaghosa; and we find in Laṅkāvatara that Ravana asks the Buddha "How can you say that your doctrine of tathagatagarbha was not the same as the atman doctrine of the other schools of philosophers, for those heretics also consider the atman as eternal, agent, unqualified, all pervading and unchanged?" To this the Buddha is found to reply thus—"Our doctrine is not the same as the doctrine of those heretics; it is in consideration of the fact that the instruction of a philosophy which considered that there was no soul or substance in anything (nairatmya) would frighten the disciples, that I say that all things are in reality the tathagatagarbha. This should not be regarded as atman. Just as a lump of clay is made into various shapes, so it is the non-essential nature of all phenomena and their freedom from all characteristics (*sarvavikalpalakṣaṇa*) that is variously described as the garbha or the nairatmya (essencelessness). This explanation of tathagatagarbha as the ultimate truth and reality is given in order to attract to our creed those heretics who are superstitiously inclined to believe in the atman doctrine [Footnote ref 5]."

So far as the appearance of the phenomena was concerned, the idealistic Buddhists (*vijñānavādins*) agreed to the doctrine of pratītyasamutpāda with certain modifications. There was with them an external pratītyasamutpāda just as it appeared in the

[Footnote 1: Asaṅga's *Mahāyānasūtrālaṅkāra*, p. 65.]

[Footnote 2: *Lankāvatārasūtra*, p. 70.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* p. 78.]

[Footnote 4: *Ibid.* p. 80.]

[Footnote 5: *Ibid.* pp. 80-81.]

148

objective aspect and an internal pratītyasamutpāda. The external pratītyasamutpāda (dependent origination) is represented in the way in which material things (e.g. a jug) came into being by the co-operation of diverse elements—the lump of clay, the potter, the wheel, etc. The internal (*adhyātmika*) pratītyasamutpāda was represented by avidyā, tārāṇa, karma, the skandhas, and the āyatana produced out of them [Footnote ref 1].

Our understanding is composed of two categories called the *pravichayabuddhi* and the *vikalpalak@sa@nagraha bhinives'apрати@s@thapikabuddhi*. The *pravicayabuddhi* is that which always seeks to take things in either of the following four ways, that they are either this or the other (*ekatvanyaiva*); either both or not both (*ubhayanubhaya*), either are or are not (*astinasti*), either eternal or non-eternal (*nityanitya*). But in reality none of these can be affirmed of the phenomena. The second category consists of that habit of the

Page 136

mind by virtue of which it constructs diversities and arranges them (created in their turn by its own constructive activity—*parikalpa*) in a logical order of diverse relations of subject and predicate, causal and other relations. He who knows the nature of these two categories of the mind knows that there is no external world of matter and that they are all experienced only in the mind. There is no water, but it is the sense construction of smoothness (*sneha*) that constructs the water as an external substance; it is the sense construction of activity or energy that constructs the external substance of fire; it is the sense construction of movement that constructs the external substance of air. In this way through the false habit of taking the unreal as the real (*mithyasatyabhinives'a*) five skandhas appear. If these were to appear all together, we could not speak of any kind of causal relations, and if they appeared in succession there could be no connection between them, as there is nothing to bind them together. In reality there is nothing which is produced or destroyed, it is only our constructive imagination that builds up things as perceived with all their relations, and ourselves as perceivers. It is simply a convention (*vyavahara*) to speak of things as known [Footnote ref 2]. Whatever we designate by speech is mere speech-construction (*vagvikalpa*) and unreal. In speech one could not speak of anything without relating things in some kind of causal

[Footnote 1: *La@nkavatarasutra*, p. 85.]

[Footnote 2: *Lankavatarasutra*, p. 87, compare the term “vyavaharika” as used of the phenomenal and the conventional world in almost the same sense by S'a@nkara.]

149

relation, but none of these characters may be said to be true; the real truth (*paramartha*) can never be referred to by such speech-construction.

The nothingness (*s'unyata*) of things may be viewed from seven aspects—(1) that they are always interdependent, and hence have no special characteristics by themselves, and as they cannot be determined in themselves they cannot be determined in terms of others, for, their own nature being undetermined, a reference to an “other” is also undetermined, and hence they are all indefinable (*laksanas'unyata*); (2) that they have no positive essence (*bhavasvabhavas'unyata*), since they spring up from a natural non-existence (*svabhavabhavotpatti*); (3) that they are of an unknown type of non-existence (*apracaritas'unyata*), since all the skandhas vanish in the nirvana; (4) that they appear phenomenally as connected though non-existent (*pracaritas'unyata*), for their skandhas have no reality in themselves nor are they related to others, but yet they appear to be

somehow causally connected; (5) that none of the things can be described as having any definite nature, they are all undemonstrable by language (*nirabhilapyas'unyata*); (6) that there cannot be any knowledge about them except that which is brought about by the long-standing defects of desires which pollute all our vision; (7) that things are also non-existent in the sense that we affirm them to be in a particular place and time in which they are not (*itaretaras'unyata*).

Page 137

There is thus only non-existence, which again is neither eternal nor destructible, and the world is but a dream and a maya; the two kinds of negation (*nirodha*) are akas'a (space) and nirvana; things which are neither existent nor non-existent are only imagined to be existent by fools.

This view apparently comes into conflict with the doctrine of this school, that the reality is called the tathagatagarbha (the womb of all that is merged in thatness) and all the phenomenal appearances of the clusters (*skandhas*), elements (*dhatus*), and fields of sense operation (*ayatanas*) only serve to veil it with impurities, and this would bring it nearer to the assumption of a universal soul as the reality. But the *La@nkavatara* attempts to explain away this conflict by suggesting that the reference to the tathagatagarbha as the reality is only a sort of false bait to attract those who are afraid of listening to the nairatmya (non-soul doctrine) [Footnote ref 1].

[Footnote 1: *La@nkavatarasutra*, p. 80.

150

The Bodhisattvas may attain their highest by the fourfold knowledge of (1) *svacittad@rs'hyabhavana*, (2) *utpadasthitibha@ngavivarjjanata*, (3) *bahyabhavabhavopalak@sa@nata* and (4) *svapratyaryajnanadhigamabhinnalak@sa@nata*. The first means that all things are but creations of the imagination of one's mind. The second means that as things have no essence there is no origination, existence or destruction. The third means that one should know the distinctive sense in which all external things are said either to be existent or non-existent, for their existence is merely like the mirage which is produced by the beginningless desire (*vasana*) of creating and perceiving the manifold. This brings us to the fourth one, which means the right comprehension of the nature of all things.

The four dhyanas spoken of in the *Lankavatara* seem to be different from those which have been described in connection with the Theravada Buddhism. These dhyanas are called (1) *balopacarika*, (2) *arthapravichaya*, (3) *tathatalambana* and (4) *tathagata*. The first one is said to be that practised by the s'ravakas and the pratyekabuddhas. It consists in concentrating upon the doctrine that there is no soul (*pudgalanairatmya*), and that everything is transitory, miserable and impure. When considering all things in this way from beginning to end the sage advances on till all conceptual knowing ceases (*asa@mjananirodhat*); we have what is called the valopacarika dhyana (the meditation for beginners).

The second is the advanced state where not only there is full consciousness that there is no self, but there is also the comprehension that neither these nor the doctrines of other heretics may be said to exist, and that there is none of the dharmas that appears. This is called the *arthapravicayadhyana*, for the sage concentrates here on the subject of thoroughly seeking out (*pravichaya*) the nature of all things (*artha*).

Page 138

The third dhyana, that in which the mind realizes that the thought that there is no self nor that there are the appearances, is itself the result of imagination and thus lapses into the thatness (*tathata*). This dhyana is called *tathatalambana*, because it has for its object *tathata* or thatness.

The last or the fourth dhyana is that in which the lapse of the mind into the state of thatness is such that the nothingness and incomprehensibility of all phenomena is perfectly realized;

151

and nirvana is that in which all root desires (*vasana*) manifesting themselves in knowledge are destroyed and the mind with knowledge and perceptions, making false creations, ceases to work. This cannot be called death, for it will not have any rebirth and it cannot be called destruction, for only compounded things (*sa@msk@rta*) suffer destruction, so that it is different from either death or destruction. This nirvana is different from that of the s'ravakas and the pratyekabuddhas for they are satisfied to call that state nirva@na, in which by the knowledge of the general characteristics of all things (transitoriness and misery) they are not attached to things and cease to make erroneous judgments [Footnote ref 1].

Thus we see that there is no cause (in the sense of ground) of all these phenomena as other heretics maintain. When it is said that the world is maya or illusion, what is meant to be emphasized is this, that there is no cause, no ground. The phenomena that seem to originate, stay, and be destroyed are mere constructions of tainted imagination, and the *tathata* or thatness is nothing but the turning away of this constructive activity or nature of the imagination (*vikalpa*) tainted with the associations of beginningless root desires (*vasana*) [Footnote ref 2]. The *tathata* has no separate reality from illusion, but it is illusion itself when the course of the construction of illusion has ceased. It is therefore also spoken of as that which is cut off or detached from the mind (*cittavimukta*), for here there is no construction of imagination (*sarvakalpanavirahitam*) [Footnote ref 3].

Sautrantika Theory of Perception.

Dharmottara (847 A.D.), a commentator of Dharmakirti's [Footnote ref 4] (about 635 A.D.) *Nyayabindu*, a Sautrantika logical and epistemological work, describes right knowledge (*samyagjnana*) as an invariable antecedent to the accomplishment of all that a man

[Footnote 1: *Lankavatarasutra*, p. 100.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p. 109.]

[Footnote 3: This account of the Vijñānavāda school is collected mainly from *Lankavatarasutra*, as no other authentic work of the Vijñānavāda school is available. Hindu accounts and criticisms of this school may be had in such books as Kumārila's *S'loka varttika* or Śāṅkara's *bhāṣya*, II. ii, etc. Asaṅga's *Mahāyānasūtrālamkāra* deals more with the duties concerning the career of a saint (*Bodhisattva*) than with the metaphysics of the system.]

Page 139

[Footnote 4: Dharmakirti calls himself an adherent of Vijñānavāda in his *Santanantarasiddhi*, a treatise on solipsism, but his *Nyayabindu* seems rightly to have been considered by the author of *Nyayabindu@tika@tippani* (p. 19) as being written from the Sautrantika point of view.]

152

desires to have (*samyagjñānapurvika sarvapuru@sarthasiddhi*) [Footnote ref 1]. When on proceeding, in accordance with the presentation of any knowledge, we get a thing as presented by it we call it right knowledge. Right knowledge is thus the knowledge by which one can practically acquire the thing he wants to acquire (*arthadhigati*). The process of knowledge, therefore, starts with the perceptual presentation and ends with the attainment of the thing represented by it and the fulfilment of the practical need by it (*arthadhigamat samapta@h prama@navyaparah*). Thus there are three moments in the perceptual acquirement of knowledge: (1) the presentation, (2) our prompting in accordance with it, and (3) the final realization of the object in accordance with our endeavour following the direction of knowledge. Inference is also to be called right knowledge, as it also serves our practical need by representing the presence of objects in certain connections and helping us to realize them. In perception this presentation is direct, while in inference this is brought about indirectly through the *li@nga* (reason). Knowledge is sought by men for the realization of their ends, and the subject of knowledge is discussed in philosophical works only because knowledge is sought by men. Any knowledge, therefore, which will not lead us to the realization of the object represented by it could not be called right knowledge. All illusory perceptions, therefore, such as the perception of a white conch-shell as yellow or dream perceptions, are not right knowledge, since they do not lead to the realization of such objects as are presented by them. It is true no doubt that since all objects are momentary, the object which was perceived at the moment of perception was not the same as that which was realized at a later moment. But the series of existents which started with the first perception of a blue object finds itself realized by the realization of other existents of the same series (*niladau ya eva santana@h paricchinnō nilajñanena sa eva tena prapita@h tena nilajñanam prama@nam*) [Footnote ref 2].

When it is said that right knowledge is an invariable antecedent of the realization of any desirable thing or the retarding of any undesirable thing, it must be noted that it is not meant

[Footnote 1: Brief extracts from the opinions of two other commentators of *Nyayabindu*, Vinitadeva and Śāntabhadra (seventh century), are found in

Nyayabindu@tikatippani, a commentary of *Nyayabindutika* of Dharmmottara, but their texts are not available to us.]

Page 140

[Footnote 2: *Nyayabindu@tika@tippani*, p. 11.]

153

that right knowledge is directly the cause of it; for, with the rise of any right perception, there is a memory of past experiences, desire is aroused, through desire an endeavour in accordance with it is launched, and as a result of that there is realization of the object of desire. Thus, looked at from this point of view, right knowledge is not directly the cause of the realization of the object. Right knowledge of course directly indicates the presentation, the object of desire, but so far as the object is a mere presentation it is not a subject of enquiry. It becomes a subject of enquiry only in connection with our achieving the object presented by perception.

Perception (*pratyaks'a*) has been defined by Dharmakirti as a presentation, which is generated by the objects alone, unassociated by any names or relations (*kalpana*) and which is not erroneous (*kalpanapo@dhamabhphantam*) [Footnote ref 1]. This definition does not indeed represent the actual nature (*svarupa*) of perception, but only shows the condition which must be fulfilled in order that anything may be valid perception. What is meant by saying that a perception is not erroneous is simply this, that it will be such that if one engages himself in an endeavour in accordance with it, he will not be baffled in the object which was presented to him by his perception (*tasmadgrahye arthe vasturupe yadaviparyastam tadabhphantamiha veditavyam*). It is said that a right perception could not be associated with names (*kalpana* or *abhilapa*). This qualification is added only with a view of leaving out all that is not directly generated by the object. A name is given to a thing only when it is associated in the mind, through memory, as being the same as perceived before. This cannot, therefore, be regarded as being produced by the object of perception. The senses present the objects by coming in contact with them, and the objects also must of necessity allow themselves to be presented as they are when they are in contact with the proper senses. But the work of recognition or giving names is not what is directly produced by the objects themselves, for this involves the unification of previous experiences, and this is certainly not what is presented

[Footnote 1: The definition first given in the *Pramanasamucaya* (not available in Sanskrit) of Di@nnaga (500 A.D.) was "*Kalpanapodham*." According to Dharmakirti it is the indeterminate knowledge (*nirvikalpa jnana*) consisting only of the copy of the object presented to the senses that constitutes the valid element presented to perception. The determinate knowledge (*savikalpa jnana*), as formed by the conceptual activity of the

mind identifying the object with what has been experienced before, cannot be regarded as truly representing what is really presented to the senses.]

Page 141

154

to the sense (*purvad@r@s@taparad@r@s@tancarthamekikurv
advijnanamamasannihitavi@sayam purvad@r@s@tasyasannihitvat*). In all illusory perceptions it is the sense which is affected either by extraneous or by inherent physiological causes. If the senses are not perverted they are bound to present the object correctly. Perception thus means the correct presentation through the senses of an object in its own uniqueness as containing only those features which are its and its alone (*svalak@sa@nam*). The validity of knowledge consists in the sameness that it has with the objects presented by it (*arthena saha yatsarupyam sad@rs'yamasya jnanasya tatprama@namiha*). But the objection here is that if our percept is only similar to the external object then this similarity is a thing which is different from the presentation, and thus perception becomes invalid. But the similarity is not different from the percept which appears as being similar to the object. It is by virtue of their sameness that we refer to the object by the percept (*taditi sarupyam tasya vas'at*) and our perception of the object becomes possible. It is because we have an awareness of blueness that we speak of having perceived a blue object. The relation, however, between the notion of similarity of the perception with the blue object and the indefinite awareness of blue in perception is not one of causation but of a determinant and a determinate (*vyavasthapyavyavasthapakabhavena*). Thus it is the same cognition which in one form stands as signifying the similarity with the object of perception and is in another indefinite form the awareness as the percept (*tata ekasya vastuna@h kincidrupam prama@nam kincitprama@naphalam na virudhyate*). It is on account of this similarity with the object that a cognition can be a determinant of the definite awareness (*vyavasthapanaheturhi sarupyam*), so that by the determinate we know the determinant and thus by the similarity of the sense-datum with the object {prama@na} we come to think that our awareness has this particular form as "blue" (*prama@naphala*). If this sameness between the knowledge and its object was not felt we could not have spoken of the object from the awareness (*sarupyamanubhutam vyavasthapanahetu@h*). The object generates an awareness similar to itself, and it is this correspondence that can lead us to the realization of the object so presented by right knowledge [Footnote ref I].

[Footnote 1: See also pp. 340 and 409. It is unfortunate that, excepting the *Nyayabindu*, *Nyayabindu@tika*, *Nyayabindu@tika@tippani* (St Petersburg, 1909), no other works dealing with this interesting doctrine of perception are available to us. *Nyayabindu* is probably one of the earliest works in which we hear of the doctrine of *arthakriyakaritva* (practical fulfilment of our desire as a criterion of right knowledge). Later on it was regarded as a criterion of existence, as Ratnakirti's works and the

profuse references by Hindu writers to the Buddhistic doctrines prove. The word *arthakriya* is found in Candrakirti's commentary on Nagarjuna and also in such early works as *Lalitavistara* (pointed out to me by Dr E.J. Thomas of the Cambridge University Library) but the word has no philosophical significance there.]

Page 142

155

Sautrantika theory of Inference [Footnote ref 1].

According to the Sautrantika doctrine of Buddhism as described by Dharmakirti and Dharmmottara which is probably the only account of systematic Buddhist logic that is now available to us in Sanskrit, inference (*anumana*) is divided into two classes, called *svarthanumana* (inferential knowledge attained by a person arguing in his own mind or judgments), and *pararthanumana* (inference through the help of articulated propositions for convincing others in a debate). The validity of inference depended, like the validity of perception, on copying the actually existing facts of the external world. Inference copied external realities as much as perception did; just as the validity of the immediate perception of blue depends upon its similarity to the external blue thing perceived, so the validity of the inference of a blue thing also, so far as it is knowledge, depends upon its resemblance to the external fact thus inferred (*sarupyavas'addhi tannilapratitirupam sidhyati*).

The reason by which an inference is made should be such that it may be present only in those cases where the thing to be inferred exists, and absent in every case where it does not exist. It is only when the reason is tested by both these joint conditions that an unfailing connection (*pratibandha*) between the reason and the thing to be inferred can be established. It is not enough that the reason should be present in all cases where the thing to be inferred exists and absent where it does not exist, but it is necessary that it should be present only in the above case. This law (*niyama*) is essential for establishing the unfailing condition necessary for inference [Footnote ref 2]. This unfailing natural connection (*svabhavapratibandha*) is found in two types

[Footnote 1: As the *Pramanasamuccaya* of Dinnaga is not available in Sanskrit, we can hardly know anything of developed Buddhist logic except what can be got from the *Nyayabindu-tika* of Dharmmottara.]

[Footnote 2: *tasmat niyamavatorevanvayavyatirekayo'h prayoga'h kartavya'h yena pratibandho gamyeta sadhanyasa sadhyena. Nyayabindu-tika*, p. 24.]

156

of cases. The first is that where the nature of the reason is contained in the thing to be inferred as a part of its nature, *i.e.* where the reason stands for a species of which the thing to be inferred is a genus; thus a stupid person living in a place full of tall pines may

come to think that pines are called trees because they are tall and it may be useful to point out to him that even a small pine plant is a tree because it is pine; the quality of pineness forms a part of the essence of treeness, for the former being a species is contained in the latter as a genus; the nature of the species being identical with the

Page 143

nature of the genus, one could infer the latter from the former but not *vice versa*; this is called the unfailing natural connection of identity of nature (*tadatmya*). The second is that where the cause is inferred from the effect which stands as the reason of the former. Thus from the smoke the fire which has produced it may be inferred. The ground of these inferences is that reason is naturally indissolubly connected with the thing to be inferred, and unless this is the case, no inference is warrantable.

This natural indissoluble connection (*svabhavapratibandha*), be it of the nature of identity of essence of the species in the genus or inseparable connection of the effect with the cause, is the ground of all inference [Footnote ref 1]. The *svabhavapratibandha* determines the inseparability of connection (*avinabhavaniyama*) and the inference is made not through a series of premisses, but directly by the *li@nga* (reason) which has the inseparable connection [Footnote ref 2].

The second type of inference known as *pararthanumana* agrees with *svarthanumana* in all essential characteristics; the main difference between the two is this, that in the case of *pararthanumana*, the inferential process has to be put verbally in premisses.

Pandit Ratnakarasanti, probably of the ninth or the tenth century A.D., wrote a paper named *Antarvyaptisamarthana* in which

[Footnote 1: *na hi yo yatra svabhavena na pratibaddha@h sa tam apratibaddhavi@sayamavs'yameva na vyabhicaratiti nasti tayoravyabhicaraniyama. Nyayabindu@tika*, p. 29.]

[Footnote 2: The inseparable connection determining inference is only possible when the *li@nga* satisfies the three following conditions, viz. (1) *pak@sasattva* (existence of the *li@nga* in the *pak@sa*—the thing about which something is inferred); (2) *sapak@sasattva* (existence of the *li@nga* in those cases where the *sadhya* or probandum existed), and (3) *vipak@sasattva* (its non-existence in all those places where the *sadhya* did not exist). The Buddhists admitted three propositions in a syllogism, e.g. The hill has fire, because it has smoke, like a kitchen but unlike a lake.]

he tried to show that the concomitance is not between those cases which possess the *li@nga* or reason with the cases which possess the *sadhya* (probandum) but between

that which has the characteristics of the li@nga with that which has the characteristics of the sadhya (probandum); or in other words the concomitance is not between the places containing the smoke such as kitchen, etc., and the places containing fire but between that which has the characteristic of the li@nga, viz. the smoke, and that which has the characteristic of the sadhya, viz. the fire. This view of the nature of concomitance is known as inner concomitance (*antarvyapti*), whereas the former, viz. the concomitance between the thing possessing li@nga and that possessing sadhya, is known as outer concomitance (*bahirvyapti*) and generally accepted by the Nyaya school of thought. This antarvyapti doctrine of concomitance is indeed a later Buddhist doctrine.

Page 144

It may not be out of place here to remark that evidences of some form of Buddhist logic probably go back at least as early as the *Kathavatthu* (200 B.C.). Thus Aung on the evidence of the *Yamaka* points out that Buddhist logic at the time of As'oka "was conversant with the distribution of terms" and the process of conversion. He further points out that the logical premisses such as the *udahara@na* (*Yo yo aggima so so dhumava*—whatever is fiery is smoky), the *upanayana* (*ayam pabbato dhumava*—this hill is smoky) and the *niggama* (*tasmadayam aggima*—therefore that is fiery) were also known. (Aung further sums up the method of the arguments which are found in the *Kathavatthu* as follows:

“Adherent. Is *A B*? (*_@thapana_*).

Opponent. Yes.

Adherent. Is *C D*? (*papana*).

Opponent. No.

Adherent. But if *A* be *B* then (you should have said) *C* is *D*.

That *B* can be affirmed of *A* but *D* of *C* is false.

Hence your first answer is refuted.”)

The antecedent of the hypothetical major premiss is termed *@thapana*, because the opponent's position, *A is B*, is conditionally established for the purpose of refutation.

The consequent of the hypothetical major premiss is termed *papana* because it is got from the antecedent. And the conclusion

158

is termed *ropa@na* because the regulation is placed on the opponent. Next:

“If *D* be derived of *C*. Then *B* should have been derived of *A*. But you affirmed *B* of *A*. (therefore) That *B* can be affirmed of *A* but not of *D* or *C* is wrong.”

This is the *pa@tiloma*, inverse or indirect method, as contrasted with the former or direct method, *anuloma*. In both methods the consequent is derived. But if we reverse the hypothetical major in the latter method we get

“If *A is B C is D*.

But *A is B*.

Therefore *C is D*.

By this indirect method the opponent's second answer is reestablished [Footnote ref 1].”

The Doctrine of Momentariness.

Ratnakirti (950 A.D.) sought to prove the momentariness of all existence (*sattva*), first, by the concomitance discovered by the method of agreement in presence (*anvayavyapti*), and then by the method of difference by proving that the production of effects could not be justified on the assumption of things being permanent and hence accepting the doctrine of momentariness as the only alternative. Existence is defined as the capacity of producing anything (*arthakriyakaritva*). The form of the first type of argument by *anvayavyapti* may be given thus: “Whatever exists is momentary, by virtue of its existence, as for example the jug; all things about the momentariness of which

Page 145

we are discussing are existents and are therefore momentary.” It cannot be said that the jug which has been chosen as an example of an existent is not momentary; for the jug is producing certain effects at the present moment; and it cannot be held that these are all identical in the past and the future or that it is producing no effect at all in the past and future, for the first is impossible, for those which are done now could not be done again in the future; the second is impossible, for if it has any capacity to

[Footnote: 1: See introduction to the translation of *Kathavatthu (Points of Controversy)* by Mrs Rhys Davids.]

159

produce effects it must not cease doing so, as in that case one might as well expect that there should not be any effect even at the present moment. Whatever has the capacity of producing anything at any time must of necessity do it. So if it does produce at one moment and does not produce at another, this contradiction will prove the supposition that the things were different at the different moments. If it is held that the nature of production varies at different moments, then also the thing at those two moments must be different, for a thing could not have in it two contradictory capacities.

Since the jug does not produce at the present moment the work of the past and the future moments, it cannot evidently do so, and hence is not identical with the jug in the past and in the future, for the fact that the jug has the capacity and has not the capacity as well, proves that it is not the same jug at the two moments (*s'aktas'aktasvabhavataya pratik@sa@nam bheda@h*). The capacity of producing effects (*arthakriyas'akti*), which is but the other name of existence, is universally concomitant with momentariness (*k@sa@nikatvavyapta*).

The Nyaya school of philosophy objects to this view and says that the capacity of anything cannot be known until the effect produced is known, and if capacity to produce effects be regarded as existence or being, then the being or existence of the effect cannot be known, until that has produced another effect and that another *ad infinitum*. Since there can be no being that has not capacity of producing effects, and as this capacity can demonstrate itself only in an infinite chain, it will be impossible to know any being or to affirm the capacity of producing effects as the definition of existence. Moreover if all things were momentary there would be no permanent perceiver to observe the change, and there being nothing fixed there could hardly be any means even of taking to any kind of inference. To this Ratnakirti replies that capacity (*saamarthya*) cannot be denied, for it is demonstrated even in making the denial. The

observation of any concomitance in agreement in presence, or agreement in absence, does not require any permanent observer, for under certain conditions of agreement there is the knowledge of the concomitance of agreement in presence, and in other conditions there is the knowledge of the concomitance in absence. This knowledge of concomitance at the succeeding moment holds within

Page 146

160

itself the experience of the conditions of the preceding moment, and this alone is what we find and not any permanent observer.

The Buddhist definition of being or existence (*sattva*) is indeed capacity, and we arrived at this when it was observed that in all proved cases capacity was all that could be defined of being;—seed was but the capacity of producing shoots, and even if this capacity should require further capacity to produce effects, the fact which has been perceived still remains, viz. that the existence of seeds is nothing but the capacity of producing the shoots and thus there is no vicious infinite [Footnote ref 1]. Though things are momentary, yet we could have concomitance between things only so long as their apparent forms are not different (*atadrupaparav@rttayoreva sadhyasadhanayo@h pratyak@se@na vyaptigraha@nat*). The vyapti or concomitance of any two things (e.g. the fire and the smoke) is based on extreme similarity and not on identity.

Another objection raised against the doctrine of momentariness is this, that a cause (e.g. seed) must wait for a number of other collocations of earth, water, etc., before it can produce the effect (e.g. the shoots) and hence the doctrine must fail. To this Ratnakirti replies that the seed does not exist before and produce the effect when joined by other collocations, but such is the special effectiveness of a particular seed-moment, that it produces both the collocations or conditions as well as the effect, the shoot. How a special seed-moment became endowed with such special effectiveness is to be sought in other causal moments which preceded it, and on which it was dependent. Ratnakirti wishes to draw attention to the fact that as one perceptual moment reveals a number of objects, so one causal moment may produce a number of effects. Thus he says that the inference that whatever has being is momentary is valid and free from any fallacy.

It is not important to enlarge upon the second part of Ratnakirti's arguments in which he tries to show that the production of effects could not be explained if we did not suppose

[Footnote 1: The distinction between vicious and harmless infinities was known to the Indians at least as early as the sixth or the seventh century. Jayanta quotes a passage which differentiates the two clearly (*Nyayamanjari*, p. 22):

“*mulak@satikarimahuranavastham hi du@sa@nam. mulasiddhau tvarucyapi nanavastha nivaryate.*”



The infinite regress that has to be gone through in order to arrive at the root matter awaiting to be solved destroys the root and is hence vicious, whereas if the root is saved there is no harm in a regress though one may not be willing to have it.]

161

all things to be momentary, for this is more an attempt to refute the doctrines of Nyaya than an elaboration of the Buddhist principles.

Page 147

The doctrine of momentariness ought to be a direct corollary of the Buddhist metaphysics. But it is curious that though all dharmas were regarded as changing, the fact that they were all strictly momentary (*k@sa@nika*—i.e. existing only for one moment) was not emphasized in early Pali literature. As *vagho@sa* in his *S'raddhotpadas'astra* speaks of all skandhas as *k@sa@nika* (Suzuki's translation, p. 105). Buddhaghosa also speaks of the meditation of the khandhas as *kha@nika* in his *Visuddhimagga*. But from the seventh century A.D. till the tenth century this doctrine together with the doctrine of arthakriyakaritva received great attention at the hands of the Sautrantikas and the Vaibha@sikas. All the Nyaya and Vedanta literature of this period is full of refutations and criticisms of these doctrines. The only Buddhist account available of the doctrine of momentariness is from the pen of Ratnakirti. Some of the general features of his argument in favour of the view have been given above. Elaborate accounts of it may be found in any of the important Nyaya works of this period such as *Nynyamanjari*, *Tatparyya@tika* of Vacaspati Mis'ra, etc.

Buddhism did not at any time believe anything to be permanent. With the development of this doctrine they gave great emphasis to this point. Things came to view at one moment and the next moment they were destroyed. Whatever is existent is momentary. It is said that our notion of permanence is derived from the notion of permanence of ourselves, but Buddhism denied the existence of any such permanent selves. What appears as self is but the bundle of ideas, emotions, and active tendencies manifesting at any particular moment. The next moment these dissolve, and new bundles determined by the preceding ones appear and so on. The present thought is thus the only thinker. Apart from the emotions, ideas, and active tendencies, we cannot discover any separate self or soul. It is the combined product of these ideas, emotions, etc., that yield the illusory appearance of self at any moment. The consciousness of self is the resultant product as it were of the combination of ideas, emotions, etc., at any particular moment. As these ideas, emotions, etc., change every moment there is no such thing as a permanent self.

The fact that I remember that I have been existing for

162

a long time past does not prove that a permanent self has been existing for such a long period. When I say this is that book, I perceive the book with my eye at the present moment, but that "this book" is the same as "that book" (i.e. the book arising in memory), cannot be perceived by the senses. It is evident that the "that book" of memory refers to a book seen in the past, whereas "this book" refers to the book which is before my eyes. The feeling of identity which is adduced to prove permanence is thus due to a confusion between an object of memory referring

Page 148

to a past and different object with the object as perceived at the present moment by the senses [Footnote ref 1]. This is true not only of all recognition of identity and permanence of external objects but also of the perception of the identity of self, for the perception of self-identity results from the confusion of certain ideas or emotions arising in memory with similar ideas of the present moment. But since memory points to an object of past perception, and the perception to another object of the present moment, identity cannot be proved by a confusion of the two. Every moment all objects of the world are suffering dissolution and destruction, but yet things appear to persist, and destruction cannot often be noticed. Our hair and nails grow and are cut, but yet we think that we have the same hair and nail that we had before, in place of old hairs new ones similar to them have sprung forth, and they leave the impression as if the old ones were persisting. So it is that though things are destroyed every moment, others similar to these often rise into being and are destroyed the next moment and so on, and these similar things succeeding in a series produce the impression that it is one and the same thing which has been persisting through all the passing moments [Footnote ref 2]. Just as the flame of a candle is changing every moment and yet it seems to us as if we have been perceiving the same flame all the while, so all our bodies, our ideas, emotions, etc., all external objects around us are being destroyed every moment, and new ones are being generated at every succeeding moment, but so long as the objects of the succeeding moments are similar to those of the preceding moments, it appears to us that things have remained the same and no destruction has taken place.

[Footnote 1: See pratyabhijnanirasa of the Buddhists, *Nyayamanjari*, V.S. Series, pp. 449, etc.]

[Footnote 2: See *Tarkarahasyadipika* of Gu@naratna, p. 30, and also *Nyayamanjari*, V.S. edition, p. 450.]

163

The Doctrine of Momentariness and the Doctrine
of Causal Efficiency (Arthakriyakaritva).

It appears that a thing or a phenomenon may be defined from the Buddhist point of view as being the combination of diverse characteristics [Footnote ref 1]. What we call a thing is but a conglomeration of diverse characteristics which are found to affect, determine or influence other conglomerations appearing as sentient or as inanimate bodies. So long as the characteristics forming the elements of any conglomeration remain perfectly the same, the conglomeration may be said to be the same. As soon as

any of these characteristics is supplanted by any other new characteristic, the conglomeration is to be called a new one [Footnote ref 2]. Existence or being of things means the work that any conglomeration does or the influence

Page 149

that it exerts on other conglomerations. This in Sanskrit is called *arthakriyakaritva* which literally translated means—the power of performing actions and purposes of some kind [Footnote ref 3]. The criterion of existence or being is the performance of certain specific actions, or rather existence means that a certain effect has been produced in some way (causal efficiency). That which has produced such an effect is then called existent or *sat*. Any change in the effect thus produced means a corresponding change of existence. Now, that selfsame definite specific effect

[Footnote 1: Compare *Milindapanha*, II. I. 1—The Chariot Simile.]

[Footnote 2: Compare *Tarkarahasyadipika* of Gu@naratna, A.S.'s edition, pp. 24, 28 and *Nyayamanjari*, V.S. edition, pp. 445, etc., and also the paper on *K@sa@nabha@ngasiddhi* by Ratnakirti in *Six Buddhist Nyaya tracts*.]

[Footnote 3: This meaning of the word “arthakriyakaritva” is different from the meaning of the word as we found in the section “sautrantika theory of perception.” But we find the development of this meaning both in Ratnakirti as well as in Nyaya writers who referred to this doctrine. With Vinitadeva (seventh century A.D.) the word “*arthakriyasiddhi*” meant the fulfilment of any need such as the cooking of rice by fire (*arthas'abdena prayojanamucyate puru@sasya prayajana@m darupakadi tasya siddhi@h ni@spatti@h*—the word *artha* means need; the need of man such as cooking by logs, etc.; *siddhi* of that, means accomplishment). With Dharmottara who flourished about a century and a half later *arthasiddhi* means action (*anu@s@thiti*) with reference to undesirable and desirable objects (*heyopadeyarthavi@saya*). But with Ratnakirti (950 A.D.) the word *arthakriyakaritva* has an entirely different sense. It means with him efficiency of producing any action or event, and as such it is regarded as the characteristic definition of existence *sattva*). Thus he says in his *K@sa@nabha@ngasiddhi*, pp. 20, 21, that though in different philosophies there are different definitions of existence or being, he will open his argument with the universally accepted definition of existence as *arthakriyakaritva* (efficiency of causing any action or event). Whenever Hindu writers after Ratnakirti refer to the Buddhist doctrine of *arthakriyakaritva* they usually refer to this doctrine in Ratnakirti's sense.]

Page 150

which is produced now was never produced before, and cannot be repeated in the future, for that identical effect which is once produced cannot be produced again. So the effects produced in us by objects at different moments of time may be similar but cannot be identical. Each moment is associated with a new effect and each new effect thus produced means in each case the coming into being of a correspondingly new existence of things. If things were permanent there would be no reason why they should be performing different effects at different points of time. Any difference in the effect produced, whether due to the thing itself or its combination with other accessories, justifies us in asserting that the thing has changed and a new one has come in its place. The existence of a jug for example is known by the power it has of forcing itself upon our minds; if it had no such power then we could not have said that it existed. We can have no notion of the meaning of existence other than the impression produced on us; this impression is nothing else but the power exerted by things on us, for there is no reason why one should hold that beyond such powers as are associated with the production of impressions or effects there should be some other permanent entity to which the power adhered, and which existed even when the power was not exerted. We perceive the power of producing effects and define each unit of such power as amounting to a unit of existence. And as there would be different units of power at different moments, there should also be as many new existences, *i.e.* existents must be regarded as momentary, existing at each moment that exerts a new power. This definition of existence naturally brings in the doctrine of momentariness shown by Ratnakirti.

Some Ontological Problems on which the Different Indian Systems Diverged.

We cannot close our examination of Buddhist philosophy without briefly referring to its views on some ontological problems which were favourite subjects of discussion in almost all philosophical circles of India. These are in brief: (1) the relation of cause and effect, (2) the relation of the whole (*avayavi*) and the part (*avayava*), (3) the relation of generality (*samanya*) to the specific individuals, (4) the relation of attributes or qualities and the substance and the problem of the relation of inherence, (5) the

165

relation of power (*s'akti*) to the power-possessor (*s'aktiman*). Thus on the relation of cause and effect, S'a@nkara held that cause alone was permanent, real, and all effects as such were but impermanent illusions due to ignorance, Sa@mkhya held that there was no difference between cause and effect, except that the former was only the earlier stage which when transformed through certain changes became the effect. The history of any causal activity is the history of the transformation of the cause into the effects. Buddhism holds everything to

Page 151

be momentary, so neither cause nor effect can abide. One is called the effect because its momentary existence has been determined by the destruction of its momentary antecedent called the cause. There is no permanent reality which undergoes the change, but one change is determined by another and this determination is nothing more than "that happening, this happened." On the relation of parts to whole, Buddhism does not believe in the existence of wholes. According to it, it is the parts which illusorily appear as the whole, the individual atoms rise into being and die the next moment and thus there is no such thing as "whole [Footnote ref 1]. The Buddhists hold again that there are no universals, for it is the individuals alone which come and go. There are my five fingers as individuals but there is no such thing as fingerness (*anugulitva*) as the abstract universal of the fingers. On the relation of attributes and substance we know that the Sautrantika Buddhists did not believe in the existence of any substance apart from its attributes; what we call a substance is but a unit capable of producing a unit of sensation. In the external world there are as many individual simple units (atoms) as there are points of sensations. Corresponding to each unit of sensation there is a separate simple unit in the objective world. Our perception of a thing is thus the perception of the assemblage of these sensations. In the objective world also there are no substances but atoms or reals, each representing a unit of sensation, force or attribute, rising into being and dying the next moment. Buddhism thus denies the existence of any such relation as that of inherence (*samavaya*) in which relation the attributes are said to exist in the substance, for since there are no separate substances there is no necessity for admitting the relation of inherence. Following the same logic Buddhism also does not

166

believe in the existence of a power-possessor separate from the power.

Brief survey of the evolution of Buddhist Thought.

In the earliest period of Buddhism more attention was paid to the four noble truths than to systematic metaphysics. What was sorrow, what was the cause of sorrow, what was the cessation of sorrow and what could lead to it? The doctrine of *paṭiccasamuppāda* was offered only to explain how sorrow came in and not with a view to the solving of a metaphysical problem. The discussion of ultimate metaphysical problems, such as whether the world was eternal or non-eternal, or whether a Tathagata existed after death or not, were considered as heresies in early Buddhism. Great emphasis was laid on *śīla*, *samādhi* and *pañña* and the doctrine that there was no soul. The *Abhidhammas* hardly give us any new philosophy which was not contained in the *Suttas*. They only elaborated the materials of the *suttas* with enumerations and definitions. With the evolution of Mahayana scriptures from some

Page 152

time about 200 B.C. the doctrine of the non-essentialness and voidness of all *dhammas* began to be preached. This doctrine, which was taken up and elaborated by Nagarjuna, Aryyadeva, Kumarajiva and Candrakirti, is more or less a corollary from the older doctrine of Buddhism. If one could not say whether the world was eternal or non-eternal, or whether a Tathagata existed or did not exist after death, and if there was no permanent soul and all the dhammas were changing, the only legitimate way of thinking about all things appeared to be to think of them as mere void and non-essential appearances. These appearances appear as being mutually related but apart from their appearance they have no other essence, no being or reality. The Tathata doctrine which was preached by As'vagho@sa oscillated between the position of this absolute non-essentialness of all dhammas and the Brahminic idea that something existed as the background of all these non-essential dhammas. This he called tathata, but he could not consistently say that any such permanent entity could exist. The Vijnanavada doctrine which also took its rise at this time appears to me to be a mixture of the S'unyavada doctrine and the Tathata doctrine; but when carefully examined it seems to be nothing but S'unyavada, with an attempt at explaining all the observed phenomena. If everything was

167

non-essential how did it originate? Vijnanavada proposes to give an answer, and says that these phenomena are all but ideas of the mind generated by the beginningless *vasana* (desire) of the mind. The difficulty which is felt with regard to the Tathata doctrine that there must be some reality which is generating all these ideas appearing as phenomena, is the same as that in the Vijnanavada doctrine. The Vijnanavadins could not admit the existence of such a reality, but yet their doctrines led them to it. They could not properly solve the difficulty, and admitted that their doctrine was some sort of a compromise with the Brahminical doctrines of heresy, but they said that this was a compromise to make the doctrine intelligible to the heretics; in truth however the reality assumed in the doctrine was also non-essential. The Vijnanavada literature that is available to us is very scanty and from that we are not in a position to judge what answers Vijnanavada could give on the point. These three doctrines developed almost about the same time and the difficulty of conceiving *s'unya* (void), tathata, (thatness) and the *alayavijnana* of Vijnanavada is more or less the same.

The Tathata doctrine of As'vagho@sa practically ceased with him. But the S'unyavada and the Vijnanavada doctrines which originated probably about 200 B.C. continued to develop probably till the eighth century A.D. Vigorous disputes with S'unyavada doctrines are rarely made in any independent work of Hindu philosophy, after Kumarila and S'a@nkara. From the third or the fourth century A.D. some Buddhists took to the study of systematic

Page 153

logic and began to criticize the doctrine of the Hindu logicians. Di@nnaga the Buddhist logician (500 A.D.) probably started these hostile criticisms by trying to refute the doctrines of the great Hindu logician Vatsyayana, in his Prama@nasamuccaya. In association with this logical activity we find the activity of two other schools of Buddhism, viz. the Sarvastivadins (known also as Vaibha@sikas) and the Sautrantikas. Both the Vaibha@sikas and the Sautrantikas accepted the existence of the external world, and they were generally in conflict with the Hindu schools of thought Nyaya-Vais'e@sika and Sa@mkhya which also admitted the existence of the external world. Vasubandhu (420-500 A.D.) was one of the most illustrious names of this school. We have from this time forth a number of great Buddhist thinkers such as Yas'omitra (commentator of Vasubandhu's work),

168

Dharmmakirtti (writer of Nyayabindu 635 A.D.), Vinitadeva and S'antabhadra (commentators of Nyayabindu), Dharmmottara (commentator of Nyayabindu 847 A.D.), Ratnakirtti (950 A.D.), Pa@n@dita As'oka, and Ratnakara S'anti, some of whose contributions have been published in the *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*, published in Calcutta in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series. These Buddhist writers were mainly interested in discussions regarding the nature of perception, inference, the doctrine of momentariness, and the doctrine of causal efficiency (*arthakriyakaritva*) as demonstrating the nature of existence. On the negative side they were interested in denying the ontological theories of Nyaya and Sa@mkhya with regard to the nature of class-concepts, negation, relation of whole and part, connotation of terms, etc. These problems hardly attracted any notice in the non-Sautrantika and non-Vaibha@sika schools of Buddhism of earlier times. They of course agreed with the earlier Buddhists in denying the existence of a permanent soul, but this they did with the help of their doctrine of causal efficiency. The points of disagreement between Hindu thought up to S'a@nkara (800 A.D.) and Buddhist thought till the time of S'a@nkara consisted mainly in the denial by the Buddhists of a permanent soul and the permanent external world. For Hindu thought was more or less realistic, and even the Vedanta of S'a@nkara admitted the existence of the permanent external world in some sense. With S'a@nkara the forms of the external world were no doubt illusory, but they all had a permanent background in the Brahman, which was the only reality behind all mental and the physical phenomena. The Sautrantikas admitted the existence of the external world and so their quarrel with Nyaya and Sa@mkhya was with regard to their doctrine of momentariness; their denial of soul and their views on the different ontological problems were in accordance with their doctrine of momentariness. After the twelfth century we do not hear much of any new disputes with the Buddhists. From this time the disputes were mainly between the different systems of Hindu philosophers, viz. Nyaya, the Vedanta of the school of S'a@nkara and the Theistic Vedanta of Ramanuja, Madhva, etc.

Page 154

169

CHAPTER VI

THE JAINA PHILOSOPHY

The Origin of Jainism.

Notwithstanding the radical differences in their philosophical notions Jainism and Buddhism, which were originally both orders of monks outside the pale of Brahmanism, present some resemblance in outward appearance, and some European scholars who became acquainted with Jainism through inadequate samples of Jaina literature easily persuaded themselves that it was an offshoot of Buddhism, and even Indians unacquainted with Jaina literature are often found to commit the same mistake. But it has now been proved beyond doubt that this idea is wrong and Jainism is at least as old as Buddhism. The oldest Buddhist works frequently mention the Jains as a rival sect, under their old name Nigantha and their leader Nataputta Varddhamana Mahavira, the last prophet of the Jains. The canonical books of the Jains mention as contemporaries of Mahavira the same kings as reigned during Buddha's career.

Thus Mahavira was a contemporary of Buddha, but unlike Buddha he was neither the author of the religion nor the founder of the sect, but a monk who having espoused the Jaina creed afterwards became the seer and the last prophet (Tirthankara) of Jainism[Footnote ref 1]. His predecessor Pars'va, the last Tirthankara but one, is said to have died 250 years before Mahavira, while Pars'va's predecessor Ariṣṭanemi is said to have died 84,000 years before Mahavira's Nirvāṇa. The story in *Uttaradhyayanasutra* that a disciple of Pars'va met a disciple of Mahavira and brought about the union of the old Jainism and that propounded by Mahavira seems to suggest that this Pars'va was probably a historical person.

According to the belief of the orthodox Jains, the Jaina religion is eternal, and it has been revealed again and again in every one of the endless succeeding periods of the world by innumerable Tirthankaras. In the present period the first Tirthankara was Rishabha and the last, the 24th, was Vardhamana Mahavira. All

[Footnote 1: See Jacobi's article on Jainism, *E. R.E.*]

170

Tirtha@nkaras have reached mok@sa at their death, and they neither care for nor have any influence on worldly affairs, but yet they are regarded as “Gods” by the Jains and are worshipped [Footnote ref 1].

Two Sects of Jainism [Footnote ref 2].

There are two main sects of Jains, S'vetambaras (wearers of white cloths) and Digambaras (the naked). They are generally agreed on all the fundamental principles of Jainism. The tenets peculiar to the Digambaras are firstly that perfect saints such as the Tirtha@nkaras live without food, secondly that the embryo of Mahavira was not removed from the womb of Devananda to that of Tris'ala as the S'vetambaras contend,

Page 155

thirdly that a monk who owns any property and wears clothes cannot reach Mok@sa, fourthly that no woman can reach Mok@sa [Footnote ref 3]. The Digambaras deny the canonical works of the S'vetambaras and assert that these had been lost immediately after Mahavira. The origin of the Digambaras is attributed to S'ivabhuti (A.D. 83) by the S'vetambaras as due to a schism in the old S'vetambara church, of which there had already been previous to that seven other schisms. The Digambaras in their turn deny this, and say that they themselves alone have preserved the original practices, and that under Bhadrabahu, the eighth sage after Mahavira, the last Tirtha@nkara, there rose the sect of Ardhaphalakas with laxer principles, from which developed the present sect of S'vetambaras (A.D. 80). The Digambaras having separated in early times from the S'vetambaras developed peculiar religious ceremonies of their own, and have a different ecclesiastical and literary history, though there is practically no difference about the main creed. It may not be out of place here to mention that the Sanskrit works of the Digambaras go back to a greater antiquity than those of the S'vetambaras, if we except the canonical books of the latter. It may be noted in this connection that there developed in later times about 84 different schools of Jainism differing from one another only in minute details of conduct. These were called *gacchas*, and the most important of these is the Kharatara Gaccha, which had split into many minor gacchas. Both sects of Jains have

[Footnote 1: See "*Digumbara Jain Iconography* (1. A, xxxii [1903] p. 459" of J. Burgess, and Buhler's "*Specimens of Jina sculptures from Mathura*," in *Epigraphica Indica*, II. pp. 311 etc. See also Jacobi's article on Jainism, *E.R.E.*]

[Footnote 2: See Jacobi's article on Jainism, *E.R.E.*]

[Footnote 3: See Gu@naratna's commentary on Jainism in _@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_.]

171

preserved a list of the succession of their teachers from Mahavira (*sthaviravali*, *pa@t@t@avali*, *gurvavali*) and also many legends about them such as those in the *Kalpasutra*, the *Paris'i@s@ta-parvan* of Hemacandra, etc.

The Canonical and other Literature of the Jains.

According to the Jains there were originally two kinds of sacred books, the fourteen Purvas and the eleven A@ngas. The Purvas continued to be transmitted for some time

but were gradually lost. The works known as the eleven A@ngas are now the oldest parts of the existing Jain canon. The names of these are *Acara*, *Sutrak@rta*, *Sthana*, *Samavaya Bhagavati*, *Jnatadharmakathas*, *Upasakadas'as*, *Antak@rtadas'as*, *Anuttaraupapatikadas'as*, *Pras'navyakara@na*, *Vipaka*. In addition to these there are the twelve *Upa@ngas* [Footnote ref 1], the ten *Prakir@nas* [Footnote ref 2], six *Chedasutras* [Footnote

Page 156

ref 3], *Nandi* and *Anuyogadvara* and four *Mulasutras* (*Uttaradhyayana*, *Avas'yaka*, *Das'avaikalika*, and *Pi@n@daniryukti*). The Digambaras however assert that these original works have all been lost, and that the present works which pass by the old names are spurious. The original language of these according to the Jains was Ardhamagadhi, but these suffered attempts at modernization and it is best to call the language of the sacred texts Jaina Prakrit and that of the later works Jaina Mahara@s@tri. A large literature of glosses and commentaries has grown up round the sacred texts. And besides these, the Jains possess separate works, which contain systematic expositions of their faith in Prakrit and Sanskrit. Many commentaries have also been written upon these independent treatises. One of the oldest of these treatises is Umasvati's *Tattvarthadhigamasutra* (1-85 A.D.). Some of the most important later Jaina works on which this chapter is based are *Vis'e@savas'yakabha@sya*, Jaina *Tarkavarttika*, with the commentary of S'antyacaryya, *Dravyasa@mgraha* of Nemicandra (1150 A.D.), *Syadvadamanjari* of Malli@sena (1292 A.D.), *Nyayavatara* of Siddhasena Divakara (533 A.D.), *Parik@samukhasutralaghuv@rtti* of Anantaviryya (1039 A.D.), *Prameyakamalamarta@n@da* of Prabhacandra

[Footnote 1: *Aupapatika*, *Rajapras'niya*, *Jivabhigama*, *Prajnapana*, *Jambudvipaprajnapti*, *Candraprajnapti*, *Suryaprajnapti*, *Nirayavali*, *Kalpavata@msika*, *Pu@spika*, *Pu@spaculika*, *V@r@s@nida@sas*.]

[Footnote 2: *Catu@hs'ara@na*, *Sa@mstara*, *Aturapratyakhyana*, *Bhaktaparijna*, *Ta@ndulavaiyali*, *Ca@n@davija*, *Devendrastava*, *Ga@nivija*, *Mahapratyakhyana*, *Virastava*.]

[Footnote 3: *Nis'itha*, *Mahanis'itha*, *Vyavahara*, *Das'as'rutaskandha*, *B@rhatkalpa*, *Pancakalpa*.]

172

(825 A.D.), *Yogas'astra* of Hemacandra (1088-1172 A.D.), and *Prama@nanayatattvalokala@mkara* of Deva Suri (1086-1169 A.D.). I am indebted for these dates to Vidyabhu@sa@na's *Indian Logic*.

It may here be mentioned that the Jains also possess a secular literature of their own in poetry and prose, both Sanskrit and Prakrit. There are also many moral tales (e.g. *Samaraicca-kaha*, *Upamitabhavaprapanca-katha* in Prakrit, and the *Yas'astilaka* of Somadeva and Dhanapala's *Tilakamanjari*); Jaina Sanskrit poems both in the Pura@na and Kavya style and hymns in Prakrit and Sanskrit are also very numerous. There are

also many Jaina dramas. The Jaina authors have also contributed many works, original treatises as well as commentaries, to the scientific literature of India in its various branches: grammar, biography, metrics, poetics, philosophy, *etc.* The contributions of the Jains to logic deserve special notice [Footnote ref 1].

Some General Characteristics of the Jains.

Page 157

The Jains exist only in India and their number is a little less than a million and a half. The Digambaras are found chiefly in Southern India but also in the North, in the North-western provinces, Eastern Rajputana and the Punjab. The head-quarters of the S'vetambaras are in Gujarat and Western Rajputana, but they are to be found also all over Northern and Central India.

The outfit of a monk, as Jacobi describes it, is restricted to bare necessities, and these he must beg—clothes, a blanket, an alms-bowl, a stick, a broom to sweep the ground, a piece of cloth to cover his mouth when speaking lest insects should enter it [Footnote ref 2]. The outfit of nuns is the same except that they have additional clothes. The Digambaras have a similar outfit, but keep no clothes, use brooms of peacock's feathers or hairs of the tail of a cow (*camara*) [Footnote ref 3]. The monks shave the head or remove the hair by plucking it out. The latter method of getting rid of the hair is to be preferred, and is regarded sometimes as an essential rite. The duties of monks are very hard. They should sleep only three hours and spend the rest of the time in repenting of and expiating sins, meditating, studying, begging alms (in the afternoon), and careful inspection of their clothes and other things for the removal of insects. The laymen should try to approach the ideal of conduct of the monks

[Footnote 1: See Jacobi's article on Jainism. *E.R.E.*]

[Footnote 2: See Jacobi, *loc. cit.*]

[Footnote 3: See _@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_, chapter IV.]

173

by taking upon themselves particular vows, and the monks are required to deliver sermons and explain the sacred texts in the upas'rayas (separate buildings for monks like the Buddhist viharas). The principle of extreme carefulness not to destroy any living being has been in monastic life carried out to its very last consequences, and has shaped the conduct of the laity in a great measure. No layman will intentionally kill any living being, not even an insect, however troublesome. He will remove it carefully without hurting it. The principle of not hurting any living being thus bars them from many professions such as agriculture, *etc.*, and has thrust them into commerce [Footnote ref 1].

Life of Mahavira.

Mahavira, the last prophet of the Jains, was a K@satriya of the Jnata clan and a native of Vais'ali (modern Besarh, 27 miles north of Patna). He was the second son of Siddhartha and Tris'ala. The S'vetambaras maintain that the embryo of the Tirtha@nkara which first entered the womb of the Brahmin lady Devananda was then transferred to the womb of Tris'ala. This story the Digambaras do not believe as we have already seen. His parents were the worshippers of Pars'va and gave him the name Varddhamana (Vira or Mahavira). He married

Page 158

Yas'oda and had a daughter by her. In his thirtieth year his parents died and with the permission of his brother Nandivardhana he became a monk. After twelve years of self-mortification and meditation he attained omniscience (*kevala*, cf. *bodhi* of the Buddhists). He lived to preach for forty-two years more, and attained mok@sa (emancipation) some years before Buddha in about 480 B.C. [Footnote ref 2].

The Fundamental Ideas of Jaina Ontology.

A thing (such as clay) is seen to assume various shapes and to undergo diverse changes (such as the form of a jug, or pan, etc.), and we have seen that the Chandogya Upani@sad held that since in all changes the clay-matter remained permanent, that alone was true, whereas the changes of form and state were but appearances, the nature of which cannot be rationally

[Footnote 1: See Jacobi's article on Jainism, *E. R.E.*]

[Footnote 2: See Hoernle's translation of *Uvasagadasao*, Jacobi, *loc. cit.*, and Hoernle's article on the Ajivakas, *E. R.E.* The S'vetambaras, however, say that this date was 527 B.C. and the Digambaras place it eighteen years later.]

174

demonstrated or explained. The unchangeable substance (e.g. the clay-matter) alone is true, and the changing forms are mere illusions of the senses, mere objects of name (*nama-rupa*) [Footnote ref 1]. What we call tangibility, visibility, or other sense-qualities, have no real existence, for they are always changing, and are like mere phantoms of which no conception can be made by the light of reason.

The Buddhists hold that changing qualities can alone be perceived and that there is no unchanging substance behind them. What we perceive as clay is but some specific quality, what we perceive as jug is also some quality. Apart from these qualities we do not perceive any qualitless substance, which the Upani@sads regard as permanent and unchangeable. The permanent and unchangeable substance is thus a mere fiction of ignorance, as there are only the passing collocations of qualities. Qualities do not imply that there are substances to which they adhere, for the so-called pure substance does not exist, as it can neither be perceived by the senses nor inferred. There are only

the momentary passing qualities. We should regard each change of quality as a new existence.

The Jains we know were the contemporaries of Buddha and possibly of some of the Upani@sads too, and they had also a solution to offer. They held that it was not true that substance alone was true and qualities were mere false and illusory appearances. Further it was not true as the Buddhists said that there was no permanent substance but merely the change of passing qualities, for both these represent two extreme views and are contrary to experience. Both of them, however, contain some elements of truth

Page 159

but not the whole truth as given in experience. Experience shows that in all changes there are three elements: (1) that some collocations of qualities appear to remain unchanged; (2) that some new qualities are generated; (3) that some old qualities are destroyed. It is true that qualities of things are changing every minute, but all qualities are not changing. Thus when a jug is made, it means that the clay-lump has been destroyed, a jug has been generated and the clay is permanent, *i.e.* all production means that some old qualities have been lost, some new ones brought in, and there is some part in it which is permanent. The clay has become lost in some form, has generated itself in another, and remained permanent in still

[Footnote 1: See Chandogya, VI. 1.]

175

another form. It is by virtue of these unchanged qualities that a thing is said to be permanent though undergoing change. Thus when a lump of gold is turned into a rod or a ring, all the specific qualities which come under the connotation of the word "gold" are seen to continue, though the forms are successively changed, and with each such change some of its qualities are lost and some new ones are acquired. Such being the case, the truth comes to this, that there is always a permanent entity as represented by the permanence of such qualities as lead us to call it a substance in spite of all its diverse changes. The nature of being (*sat*) then is neither the absolutely unchangeable, nor the momentary changing qualities or existences, but involves them both. Being then, as is testified by experience, is that which involves a permanent unit, which is incessantly every moment losing some qualities and gaining new ones. The notion of being involves a permanent (*dhruva*) accession of some new qualities (*utpada*) and loss of some old qualities (*vyaya*) [Footnote ref.1]. The solution of Jainism is thus a reconciliation of the two extremes of Vedantism and Buddhism on grounds of common-sense experience.

The Doctrine of Relative Pluralism (*anekantavada*).

This conception of being as the union of the permanent and change brings us naturally to the doctrine of *Anekantavada* or what we may call relative pluralism as against the extreme absolutism of the Upani@sads and the pluralism of the Buddhists. The Jains regarded all things as *anekanta* (*na-ekanta*), or in other words they held that nothing could be affirmed absolutely, as all affirmations were true only under certain conditions and limitations. Thus speaking of a gold jug, we see that its existence as a substance (*dravya*) is of the nature of a collocation of atoms and not as any other substance such

as space (*akas'a*), *i.e.* a gold jug is a *dravya* only in one sense of the term and not in every sense; so it is a *dravya* in the sense that it is a collocation of atoms and not a *dravya* in the sense of space or time (*kala*). It is thus both a *dravya* and not a *dravya* at one and the same time. Again it is atomic in the sense that it is a composite of earth-atoms and not atomic in the sense that it is

Page 160

[Footnote: 1: See *Tattvarthadhigamasutra*, and Gu@naratna's treatment of Jainism in _@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_.]

176

not a composite of water-atoms. Again it is a composite of earth-atoms only in the sense that gold is a metallic modification of earth, and not any other modification of earth as clay or stone. Its being constituted of metal-atoms is again true in the sense that it is made up of gold-atoms and not of iron-atoms. It is made up again of gold-atoms in the sense of melted and unsullied gold and not as gold in the natural condition. It is again made up of such unsullied and melted gold as has been hammered and shaped by the goldsmith Devadatta and not by Yajnadatta. Its being made up of atoms conditioned as above is again only true in the sense that the collocation has been shaped as a jug and not as a pot and so on. Thus proceeding in a similar manner the Jains say that all affirmations are true of a thing only in a certain limited sense. All things (*vastu*) thus possess an infinite number of qualities (*anantadharmatmakam vastu*), each of which can only be affirmed in a particular sense. Such an ordinary thing as a jug will be found to be the object of an infinite number of affirmations and the possessor of an infinite number of qualities from infinite points of view, which are all true in certain restricted senses and not absolutely [Footnote ref 1]. Thus in the positive relation riches cannot be affirmed of poverty but in the negative relation such an affirmation is possible as when we say "the poor man has no riches." The poor man possesses riches not in a positive but in a negative way. Thus in some relation or other anything may be affirmed of any other thing, and again in other relations the very same thing cannot be affirmed of it. The different standpoints from which things (though possessed of infinite determinations) can be spoken of as possessing this or that quality or as appearing in relation to this or that, are technically called *naya* [Footnote ref 2].

The Doctrine of Nayas.

In framing judgments about things there are two ways open to us, firstly we may notice the manifold qualities and characteristics of anything but view them as unified in the thing; thus when we say "this is a book" we do not look at its characteristic qualities as being different from it, but rather the qualities or characteristics are perceived as having no separate existence from

[Footnote 1: See Gu@naratna on Jainamata in _@Sa@ddarsanasamuccaya_, pp. 211. *etc.*, and also *Tattvarthadhigamasutra*.]

[Footnote 2: See *Tattvarthadhigamasutra*, and *Vis'e@savalyaka bha@sya*, pp. 895-923.]

177

Page 161

the thing. Secondly we may notice the qualities separately and regard the thing as a mere non-existent fiction (cf. the Buddhist view); thus I may speak of the different qualities of the book separately and hold that the qualities of things are alone perceptible and the book apart from these cannot be found. These two points of view are respectively called *dravyanaya* and *paryayanaya* [Footnote ref 1]. The *dravyanaya* again shows itself in three forms, and *paryayanaya* in four forms, of which the first form only is important for our purposes, the other three being important rather from the point of view of grammar and language had better be omitted here. The three *nayas* under *dravyanaya* are called *naigama-naya*, *sa@mgraha-naya* and *vyavahara-naya*.

When we speak of a thing from a purely common sense point of view, we do not make our ideas clear or precise. Thus I may hold a book in my hand and when asked whether my hands are empty, I may say, no, I have something in my hand, or I may say, I have a book in my hand. It is evident that in the first answer I looked at the book from the widest and most general point of view as a “thing,” whereas in the second I looked at it in its special existence as a book. Again I may be reading a page of a book, and I may say I am reading a book, but in reality I was reading only one of the pages of the book. I may be scribbling on loose sheets, and may say this is my book on Jaina philosophy, whereas in reality there were no books but merely some loose sheets. This looking at things from the loose common sense view, in which we do not consider them from the point of view of their most general characteristic as “being” or as any of their special characteristics, but simply as they appear at first sight, is technically called the *naigama* standpoint. This empirical view probably proceeds on the assumption that a thing possesses the most general as well as the most special qualities, and hence we may lay stress on any one of these at any time and ignore the other ones. This is the point of view from which according to the Jains the *Nyaya* and *Vais'e@sika* schools interpret experience.

Sa@mgraha-naya is the looking at things merely from the most general point of view. Thus we may speak of all individual things from their most general and fundamental aspect as “being.” This according to the Jains is the *Vedanta* way of looking at things.

[Footnote 1: *Syadvadama@njari*, pp. 171-173.]

The *vyavahara-naya* standpoint holds that the real essence of things is to be regarded from the point of view of actual practical experience of the thing, which unifies within it some general as well as some special traits, which has been existing from past times

and remain in the future, but yet suffer trifling changes all the while, changes which are serviceable to us in a thousand ways. Thus a “book”

Page 162

has no doubt some general traits, shared by all books, but it has some special traits as well. Its atoms are continually suffering some displacement and rearrangement, but yet it has been existing as a book for some time past and will exist for some time in the future as well. All these characteristics, go to make up the essence of the “book” of our everyday experience, and none of these can be separated and held up as being the concept of a “book.” This according to the Jains is the Sa@mkhya way of looking at things.

The first view of paryaya-naya called _@rjusutra_ is the Buddhist view which does not believe in the existence of the thing in the past or in the future, but holds that a thing is a mere conglomeration of characteristics which may be said to produce effects at any given moment. At each new moment there are new collocations of new qualities and it is these which may be regarded as the true essence of our notion of things [Footnote ref 1].

The nayas as we have already said are but points of view, or aspects of looking at things, and as such are infinite in number. The above four represent only a broad classification of these. The Jains hold that the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika, the Vedanta, the Sa@mkhya, and the Buddhist, have each tried to interpret and systematize experience from one of the above four points of view, and each regards the interpretation from his point of view as being absolutely true to the exclusion of all other points of view. This is their error (*nayabhasa*), for each standpoint represents only one of the many points of view from which a thing can be looked at. The affirmations from any point of view are thus true in a limited sense and under limited conditions. Infinite numbers of affirmations may be made of things from infinite points of view. Affirmations or judgments according to any naya or standpoint cannot therefore be absolute, for even contrary affirmations of the very selfsame

[Footnote 1: The other standpoints of paryaya-naya, which represent grammatical and linguistic points of view, are *s'abda-naya*, *samabhiru@dha-naya*, and *evambhula-naya*. See *Vis'e@savas'yaka bha@sya*, pp. 895-923.]

things may be held to be true from other points of view. The truth of each affirmation is thus only conditional, and inconceivable from the absolute point of view. To guarantee correctness therefore each affirmation should be preceded by the phrase *syat* (may

be). This will indicate that the affirmation is only relative, made somehow, from some point of view and under some reservations and not in any sense absolute. There is no judgment which is absolutely true, and no judgment which is absolutely false. All judgments are true in some sense and false in another. This brings us to the famous Jaina doctrine of Syadvada [Footnote ref 1].

The Doctrine of Syadvada.

Page 163

The doctrine of Syadvada holds that since the most contrary characteristics of infinite variety may be associated with a thing, affirmation made from whatever standpoint (*naya*) cannot be regarded as absolute. All affirmations are true (in some *syadasti* or “may be it is” sense); all affirmations are false in some sense; all affirmations are indefinite or inconceivable in some sense (*syadavaktavya*); all affirmations are true as well as false in some sense (*syadasti syannasti*); all affirmations are true as well as indefinite (*syadasti cavaktavyas’ca*); all affirmations are false as well as indefinite; all affirmations are true and false and indefinite in some sense (*syadasti syannasti syadavaktavyas’ca*). Thus we may say “the jug is” or the jug has being, but it is more correct to say explicitly that “may be (*syat*) that the jug is,” otherwise if “being” here is taken absolutely of any and every kind of being, it might also mean that there is a lump of clay or a pillar, or a cloth or any other thing. The existence here is limited and defined by the form of the jug. “The jug is” does not mean absolute existence but a limited kind of existence as determined by the form of the jug, “The jug is” thus means that a limited kind of existence, namely the jug-existence is affirmed and not existence in general in the absolute or unlimited sense, for then the sentence “the jug is” might as well mean “the clay is,” “the tree is,” “the cloth is,” etc. Again the existence of the jug is determined by the negation of all other things in the world; each quality or characteristic (such as red colour) of the jug is apprehended and defined by the negation of all the infinite varieties (such as black, blue, golden), etc., of its class, and it is by the combined negation of all

[Footnote 1: See *Vis’v@savas’yaka bha@sya*, pp. 895, etc., and *Syadvadamanjari*, pp. 170, etc.]

180

the infinite number of characteristics or qualities other than those constituting the jug that a jug may be apprehended or defined. What we call the being of the jug is thus the non-being of all the rest except itself. Thus though looked at from one point of view the judgment “the jug is” may mean affirmation of being, looked at from another point of view it means an affirmation of non-being (of all other objects). Thus of the judgment “the jug is” one may say, may be it is an affirmation of being (*syadasti*), may be it is a negation of being (*syannasti*); or I may proceed in quite another way and say that “the jug is” means “this jug is here,” which naturally indicates that “this jug is not there” and thus the judgment “the jug is” (i.e. is here) also means that “the jug is not there,” and so we see that the affirmation of the being of the jug is true only of this place and false of another,

Page 164

and this justifies us in saying that “may be that in some sense the jug is,” and “may be in some sense that the jug is not.” Combining these two aspects we may say that in some sense “may be that the jug is,” and in some sense “may be that the jug is not.” We understood here that if we put emphasis on the side of the characteristics constituting being, we may say “the jug is,” but if we put emphasis on the other side, we may as well say “the jug is not.” Both the affirmations hold good of the jug according as the emphasis is put on either side. But if without emphasis on either side we try to comprehend the two opposite and contradictory judgments regarding the jug, we see that the nature of the jug or of the existence of the jug is indefinite, unspeakable and inconceivable—*avaktavya*, for how can we affirm both being and non-being of the same thing, and yet such is the nature of things that we cannot but do it. Thus all affirmations are true, are not true, are both true and untrue, and are thus unspeakable, inconceivable, and indefinite. Combining these four again we derive another three, (1) that in some sense it may be that the jug is, and (2) is yet unspeakable, or (3) that the jug is not and is unspeakable, or finally that the jug is, is not, and is unspeakable. Thus the Jains hold that no affirmation, or judgment, is absolute in its nature, each is true in its own limited sense only, and for each one of them any of the above seven alternatives (technically called *saptabhaṅgi* holds good [Footnote ref 1]. The Jains say that other Indian systems each from its own point of view asserts itself to be the absolute and the only

[Footnote 1: See *Syadvadamanjari*, with Hemacandra’s commentary, pp. 166, etc.]

181

point of view. They do not perceive that the nature of reality is such that the truth of any assertion is merely conditional, and holds good only in certain conditions, circumstances, or senses (*upadhi*). It is thus impossible to make any affirmation which is universally and absolutely valid. For a contrary or contradictory affirmation will always be found to hold good of any judgment in some sense or other. As all reality is partly permanent and partly exposed to change of the form of losing and gaining old and new qualities, and is thus relatively permanent and changeful, so all our affirmations regarding truth are also only relatively valid and invalid. Being, non-being and indefinite, the three categories of logic, are all equally available in some sense or other in all their permutations for any and every kind of judgment. There is no universal and absolute position or negation, and all judgments are valid only conditionally. The relation of the *naya* doctrine with the *syadvada* doctrine is therefore this, that for any judgment according to any and every *naya* there are as many alternatives as are indicated by

Page 165

syadvada. The validity of such a judgment is therefore only conditional. If this is borne in mind when making any judgment according to any *naya*, the *naya* is rightly used. If, however, the judgments are made absolutely according to any particular *naya* without any reference to other *nayas* as required by the syadvada doctrine the *nayas* are wrongly used as in the case of other systems, and then such judgments are false and should therefore be called false *nayas* (*nayabhasa*) [Footnote ref 1].

Knowledge, its value for us.

The Buddhist Dharmottara in his commentary on *Nyayabindu* says that people who are anxious to fulfil some purpose or end in which they are interested, value the knowledge which helps them to attain that purpose. It is because knowledge is thus found to be useful and sought by men that philosophy takes upon it the task of examining the nature of true knowledge (*samyagjnana* or *prama@na*). The main test of true knowledge is that it helps us to attain our purpose. The Jains also are in general agreement with the above view of knowledge of the Buddhists [Footnote ref 2]. They also

[Footnote 1: The earliest mention of the doctrine of syadvada and *saptabha@ngi* probably occurs in Bhadrabahu's (433-357 B.C.) commentary *Sutrak@rtanganiriyukti*.

[Footnote 2: See *Prama@na-naya-tattvalokala@mkara* (Benares), p. 16; also *Parik@sa-mukha-suira-v@rtti* (Asiatic Society), ch. I.]

182

say that knowledge is not to be valued for its own sake. The validity (*prama@nya*) of anything consists in this, that it directly helps us to get what is good for us and to avoid what is bad for us. Knowledge alone has this capacity, for by it we can adapt ourselves to our environments and try to acquire what is good for us and avoid what is bad [Footnote ref 1]. The conditions that lead to the production of such knowledge (such as the presence of full light and proximity to the eye in the case of seeing an object by visual perception) have but little relevancy in this connection. For we are not concerned with how a cognition is produced, as it can be of no help to us in serving our purposes. It is enough for us to know that external objects under certain conditions assume such a special fitness (*yogyata*) that we can have knowledge of them. We have no guarantee that they generate knowledge in us, for we are only aware that under certain conditions we know a thing, whereas under other conditions we do not know it [Footnote ref 2].

The enquiry as to the nature of the special fitness of things which makes knowledge of them possible does not concern us. Those conditions which confer such a special fitness on things as to render them perceivable have but little to do with us; for our purposes which consist only in the acquirement of good and avoidance of evil, can only be served by knowledge and not by those conditions of external objects.

Page 166

Knowledge reveals our own self as a knowing subject as well as the objects that are known by us. We have no reason to suppose (like the Buddhists) that all knowledge by perception of external objects is in the first instance indefinite and indeterminate, and that all our determinate notions of form, colour, size and other characteristics of the thing are not directly given in our perceptual experience, but are derived only by imagination (*utprek@sa*), and that therefore true perceptual knowledge only certifies the validity of the indefinite and indeterminate crude sense data (*nirvikalpa jnana*). Experience shows that true knowledge on the one hand reveals us as subjects or knowers, and on the other hand gives a correct sketch of the external objects in all the diversity of their characteristics. It is for this reason that knowledge is our immediate and most prominent means of serving our purposes.

[Footnote 1: *Prama@na-naya-tattvalokala@mkara*, p. 26.]

[Footnote 2: See *Pari@sa-mukha-sutra*, II. 9, and its *v@rtti*, and also the concluding *v@rtti* of ch. II.]

183

Of course knowledge cannot directly and immediately bring to us the good we want, but since it faithfully communicates to us the nature of the objects around us, it renders our actions for the attainment of good and the avoidance of evil, possible; for if knowledge did not possess these functions, this would have been impossible. The validity of knowledge thus consists in this, that it is the most direct, immediate, and indispensable means for serving our purposes. So long as any knowledge is uncontradicted it should be held as true. False knowledge is that which represents things in relations in which they do not exist. When a rope in a badly lighted place gives rise to the illusion of a snake, the illusion consists in taking the rope to be a snake, *i.e.* perceiving a snake where it does not exist. Snakes exist and ropes also exist, there is no untruth in that [Footnote ref 1]. The error thus consists in this, that the snake is perceived where the rope exists. The perception of a snake under relations and environments in which it was not then existing is what is meant by error here. What was at first perceived as a snake was later on contradicted and thus found false. Falsehood therefore consists in the misrepresentation of objective facts in experience. True knowledge therefore is that which gives such a correct and faithful representation of its object as is never afterwards found to be contradicted. Thus knowledge when imparted directly in association with the organs in sense-perception is very clear, vivid, and distinct, and is called perceptual (*pratyak@sa*); when attained otherwise the knowledge is not so clear and vivid and is then called non-perceptual (*parok@sa* [Footnote ref 2]).

Theory of Perception.

Page 167

The main difference of the Jains from the Buddhists in the theory of perception lies, as we have already seen, in this, that the Jains think that perception (*pratyak@sa*) reveals to us the external objects just as they are with most of their diverse characteristics of colour, form, *etc.*, and also in this, that knowledge arises in the soul

[Footnote 1: Illusion consists in attributing such spatial, temporal or other kinds of relations to the objects of our judgment as do not actually exist, but the objects themselves actually exist in other relations. When I mistake the rope for the snake, the snake actually exists though its relationing with the “this” as “this is a snake” does not exist, for the snake is not the rope. This illusion is thus called *satkhyati* or misrelationing of existents (*sat*)].

[Footnote 2: See *Jaina-tarka-varttika* of Siddhasena, ch. I., and *v@rtti* by S’antyaçarya, Prama@nanayatattvalokala@mkara, ch. I., *Pariksa-mukha-sutra-v@rtti*, ch. I.]

184

from within it as if by removing a veil which had been covering it before. Objects are also not mere forms of knowledge (as the Vijnanavadin Buddhist thinks) but are actually existing. Knowledge of external objects by perception is gained through the senses. The exterior physical sense such as the eye must be distinguished from the invisible faculty or power of vision of the soul, which alone deserves the name of sense. We have five such cognitive senses. But the Jains think that since by our experience we are only aware of five kinds of sense knowledge corresponding to the five senses, it is better to say that it is the “self” which gains of itself those different kinds of sense-knowledge in association with those exterior senses as if by removal of a covering, on account of the existence of which the knowledge could not reveal itself before. The process of external perception does not thus involve the exercise of any separate and distinct sense, though the rise of the sense-knowledge in the soul takes place in association with the particular sense-organ such as eye, *etc.* The soul is in touch with all parts of the body, and visual knowledge is that knowledge which is generated in the soul through that part of it which is associated with, or is in touch with the eye. To take an example, I look before me and see a rose. Before looking at it the knowledge of rose was in me, but only in a covered condition, and hence could not get itself manifested. The act of looking at the rose means that such a fitness has come into the rose and into myself that the rose is made visible, and the veil over my knowledge of rose is removed. When visual knowledge arises, this happens in association with the eye; I say that I see through the visual sense, whereas in reality experience shows that I have only a knowledge of the

Page 168

visual type (associated with eye). As experience does not reveal the separate senses, it is unwarrantable to assert that they have an existence apart from the self. Proceeding in a similar way the Jains discard the separate existence of manas (mind-organ) also, for manas also is not given in experience, and the hypothesis of its existence is unnecessary, as self alone can serve its purpose [Footnote ref 1]. Perception of an object means

[Footnote 1: *Tanna indriyam bhautikam kim tu atma ca indriyam...anupahatacak@suradides'e@su eva atmana@h karmak@sayopas'amaslenasthagitagavak@satulyani cak@suradini upakara@nani. Jaina-Vattika-V@rtti*, II. p. 98. In many places, however, the five senses, such as eye, ear, etc., are mentioned as senses, and living beings are often classified according to the number of senses they possess. (See *Prama@namima@msa*. See also *Tattvarthadhigamasutra*, ch. II. etc.) But this is with reference to the sense organs. The denial of separate senses is with reference to admitting them as entities or capacities having a distinct and separate category of existence from the soul. The sense organs are like windows for the soul to look out. They cannot thus modify the sense-knowledge which rises in the soul by inward determination; for it is already existent in it; the perceptual process only means that the veil which as observing it is removed.]

185

that the veil of ignorance upon the “self” regarding the object has been removed. Inwardly this removal is determined by the karma of the individual, outwardly it is determined by the presence of the object of perception, light, the capacity of the sense organs, and such other conditions. Contrary to the Buddhists and many other Indian systems, the Jains denied the existence of any nirvikalpa (indeterminate) stage preceding the final savikalpa (determinate) stage of perception. There was a direct revelation of objects from within and no indeterminate sense-materials were necessary for the development of determinate perceptions. We must contrast this with the Buddhists who regarded that the first stage consisting of the presentation of indeterminate sense materials was the only valid part of perception. The determinate stage with them is the result of the application of mental categories, such as imagination, memory, etc., and hence does not truly represent the presentative part [Footnote ref 1].

Non-Perceptual Knowledge.

Non-perceptual knowledge (*parok@sa*) differs from *pratyak@sa* in this, that it does not give us so vivid a picture of objects as the latter. Since the Jains do not admit that the senses had any function in determining the cognitions of the soul, the only distinction they could draw between perception and other forms of knowledge was that the knowledge of the former kind (perception) gave us clearer features and characteristics of objects than the latter. *Parok@sa* thus includes inference, recognition, implication, memory, *etc.*; and this knowledge is decidedly less vivid than perception.

Page 169

Regarding inference, the Jains hold that it is unnecessary to have five propositions, such as: (1) “the hill is fiery,” (2) “because of smoke,” (3) “wherever there is smoke there is fire, such as the kitchen,” (4) “this hill is smoky,” (5) “therefore it is fiery,” called respectively *pratijna*, *hetu*, *drs@tanta*, *upanaya* and *nigamana*, except for the purpose of explicitness. It is only the first two propositions which actually enter into the inferential process (*Prameyakamalamarta@n@da*, pp. 108, 109). When we make an

[Footnote 1 *Prameyakamalamarta@n@da*, pp. 8-11.]

186

inference we do not proceed through the five propositions as above. They who know that the reason is inseparably connected with the probandum either as coexistence (*sahabhava*) or as invariable antecedence (*kramabhava*) will from the mere statement of the existence of the reason (e.g. smoke) in the hill jump to the conclusion that the hill has got fire. A syllogism consisting of five propositions is rather for explaining the matter to a child than for representing the actual state of the mind in making an inference [Footnote ref 1].

As regards proof by testimony the Jains do not admit the authority of the Vedas, but believe that the Jaina scriptures give us right knowledge, for these are the utterances of persons who have lived a worldly life but afterwards by right actions and right knowledge have conquered all passions and removed all ignorance [Footnote ref 2].

Knowledge as Revelation.

The Buddhists had affirmed that the proof of the existence of anything depended upon the effect that it could produce on us. That which could produce any effect on us was existent, and that

[Footnote 1: As regards concomitance (*vyapti*) some of the Jaina logicians like the Buddhists prefer *antarvyapti* (between smoke and fire) to *bahirvyapti* (the place containing smoke with the place containing fire). They also divide inference into two classes, *svathanumana* for one's own self and *parathanumana* for convincing others. It may not be out of place to note that the earliest Jaina view as maintained by

Bhadrabahu in his *Das'avaikalikaniryukti* was in favour of ten propositions for making an inference; (1) *Pratijna* (e.g. non-injury to life is the greatest virtue), (2) *Pratijnavibhakti* (non-injury to life is the greatest virtue according to Jaina scriptures), (3) *Hetu* (because those who adhere to non-injury are loved by gods and it is meritorious to do them honour), (4) *Hetu vibhakti* (those who do so are the only persons who can live in the highest places of virtue), (5) *Vipak@sa* (but even by doing injury one may prosper and even by reviling Jaina scriptures one may attain merit as is the case

Page 170

with Brahmins), (6) *Vipak@sa prati@sedha* (it is not so, it is impossible that those who despise Jaina scriptures should be loved by gods or should deserve honour), (7) *D@r@s@anta* (the Arhats take food from householders as they do not like to cook themselves for fear of killing insects), (8) *As'a@nka* (*but the sins of the householders should touch the arhats, for they cook for them*), (9) *As'a@nkaprati@sedha* (this cannot be, for the arhats go to certain houses unexpectedly, so it could not be said that the cooking was undertaken for them), (10) *Naigamana* (non-injury is therefore the greatest virtue) (Vidyabhu@sa@na's *Indian Logic*). These are persuasive statements which are often actually adopted in a discussion, but from a formal point of view many of these are irrelevant. When Vatsyayana in his *Nyayasutrabha@sya*, I. 1. 32, says that Gautama introduced the doctrine of five propositions as against the doctrine of ten propositions as held by other logicians, he probably had this Jaina view in his mind.]

[Footnote 2: See *Jainatarkavarttika*, and *Parik@samukhasutrav@rtti*, and *_@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_* with Gu@naratna on Jainism.]

187

which could not non-existent. In fact production of effect was with them the only definition of existence (being). Theoretically each unit of effect being different from any other unit of effect they supposed that there was a succession of different units of effect or, what is the same thing, acknowledged a succession of new substances every moment. All things were thus momentary. The Jains urged that the reason why the production of effect may be regarded as the only proof of being is that we can assert only that thing the existence of which is indicated by a corresponding experience. When we have a unit of experience we suppose the existence of the object as its ground. This being so, the theoretical analysis of the Buddhists that each unit of effect produced in us is not exactly the same at each new point of time, and that therefore all things are momentary, is fallacious; for experience shows that not all of an object is found to be changing every moment; some part of it (e.g. gold in a gold ornament) is found to remain permanent while other parts (e.g. its form as earrings or bangles) are seen to undergo change. How in the face of such an experience can we assert that the whole thing vanishes every moment and that new things are being renewed at each succeeding moment? Hence leaving aside mere abstract and unfounded speculations, if we look to experience we find that the conception of being or existence involves a notion of permanence associated with change—*paryaya* (acquirement of new qualities and the loss of old ones). The Jains hold that the defects of other systems lie in this, that they interpret experience only from one particular standpoint (*naya*) whereas they alone carefully weigh experience from all points of view

Page 171

and acquiesce in the truths indicated by it, not absolutely but under proper reservations and limitations. The Jains hold that in formulating the doctrine of *arthakriyakaritva* the Buddhists at first showed signs of starting on their enquiry on the evidence of experience, but soon they became one-sided in their analysis and indulged in unwarrantable abstract speculations which went directly against experience. Thus if we go by experience we can neither reject the self nor the external world as some Buddhists did. Knowledge which reveals to us the clear-cut features of the external world certifies at the same time that such knowledge is part and parcel of myself as the subject. Knowledge is thus felt to be an expression of my own self. We do not perceive in experience that knowledge

188

in us is generated by the external world, but there is in us the rise of knowledge and of certain objects made known to us by it. The rise of knowledge is thus only parallel to certain objective collocations of things which somehow have the special fitness that they and they alone are perceived at that particular moment. Looked at from this point of view all our experiences are centred in ourselves, for determined somehow, our experiences come to us as modifications of our own self. Knowledge being a character of the self, it shows itself as manifestations of the self independent of the senses. No distinction should be made between a conscious and an unconscious element in knowledge as Sa@mkhya does. Nor should knowledge be regarded as a copy of the objects which it reveals, as the Sautrantikas think, for then by copying the materiality of the object, knowledge would itself become material. Knowledge should thus be regarded as a formless quality of the self revealing all objects by itself. But the Mima@msa view that the validity (*prama@nya*) of all knowledge is proved by knowledge itself (*svata@hprama@nya*) is wrong. Both logically and psychologically the validity of knowledge depends upon outward correspondence (*sa@mvada*) with facts. But in those cases where by previous knowledge of correspondence a right belief has been produced there may be a psychological ascertainment of validity without reference to objective facts (*prama@nyamutpattau parata eva jnaptau svakarye ca svata@h paratas'ca. abhyasanabhyasapek@saya*) [Footnote ref 1]. The objective world exists as it is certified by experience. But that it generates knowledge in us is an unwarrantable hypothesis, for knowledge appears as a revelation of our own self. This brings us to a consideration of Jaina metaphysics.

The Jivas.

The Jains say that experience shows that all things may be divided into the living (*jiva*) and the non-living (*ajiva*). The principle of life is entirely distinct from the body, and it is most erroneous to think that life is either the product or the property of the body [Footnote ref 2] It is on account of this life-principle that the body appears to be living

This principle is the soul. The soul is directly perceived (by introspection) just as the external things are. It is not a mere symbolical object indicated by a phrase or

Page 172

[Footnote 1: *Prameyakamalamarta@n@da*, pp. 38-43.]

[Footnote 2: See *Jaina Varttika*, p. 60.]

189

a description. This is directly against the view of the great Mima@msa authority Prabhakara [Footnote ref 1]. The soul in its pure state is possessed of infinite perception (*ananta-dars'ana*), infinite knowledge (*ananta-jnana*), infinite bliss (*ananta-sukha*) and infinite power (*ananta-virya*) [Footnote ref 2]. It is all perfect. Ordinarily however, with the exception of a few released pure souls (*mukta-jiva*) all the other jivas (*sa@msarin*) have all their purity and power covered with a thin veil of karma matter which has been accumulating in them from beginningless time. These souls are infinite in number. They are substances and are eternal. They in reality occupy innumerable space-points in our mundane world (*lokakas`a*), have a limited size (*madhyama-parima@na*) and are neither all-pervasive (*vibhu*) nor atomic (*anu*); it is on account of this that *jiva* is called *Jivastikaya*. The word *astikaya* means anything that occupies space or has some pervasiveness; but these souls expand and contract themselves according to the dimensions of the body which they occupy at any time (bigger in the elephant and smaller in the ant life). It is well to remember that according to the Jains the soul occupies the whole of the body in which it lives, so that from the tip of the hair to the nail of the foot, wherever there may be any cause of sensation, it can at once feel it. The manner in which the soul occupies the body is often explained as being similar to the manner in which a lamp illumines the whole room though remaining in one corner of the room. The Jains divide the jivas according to the number of sense-organs they possess. The lowest class consists of plants, which possess only the sense-organ of touch. The next higher class is that of worms, which possess two sense-organs of touch and taste. Next come the ants, *etc.*, which possess touch, taste, and smell. The next higher one that of bees, *etc.*, possessing vision in addition to touch, taste, and smell. The vertebrates possess all the five sense-organs. The higher animals among these, namely men, denizens of hell, and the gods possess in addition to these an inner sense-organ namely *manas* by virtue of which they are

[Footnote 1: See *Prameyakamalamarta@nda*, p. 33.]

[Footnote 2: The Jains distinguish between *dars'ana* and *jnana*. Dars'ana is the knowledge of things without their details, *e.g.* I see a cloth. Jnana means the knowledge of details, *e.g.* I not only see the cloth, but know to whom it belongs, of what quality it is, where it was prepared, *etc.* In all cognition we have first dars'ana and then jnana. The pure souls possess infinite general perception of all things as well as infinite knowledge of all things in all their details.]

Page 173

190

called rational (*sa@mjinin*) while the lower animals have no reason and are called *asamjinin*.

Proceeding towards the lowest animal we find that the Jains regard all the four elements (earth, water, air, fire) as being animated by souls. Thus particles of earth, etc., are the bodies of souls, called earth-lives, etc. These we may call elementary lives; they live and die and are born again in another elementary body. These elementary lives are either gross or subtle; in the latter case they are invisible. The last class of one-organ lives are plants. Of some plants each is the body of one soul only; but of other plants, each is an aggregation of embodied souls, which have all the functions of life such as respiration and nutrition in common. Plants in which only one soul is embodied are always gross; they exist in the habitable part of the world only. But those plants of which each is a colony of plant lives may also be subtle and invisible, and in that case they are distributed all over the world. The whole universe is full of minute beings called *nigodas*; they are groups of infinite number of souls forming very small clusters, having respiration and nutrition in common and experiencing extreme pains. The whole space of the world is closely packed with them like a box filled with powder. The *nigodas* furnish the supply of souls in place of those that have reached Moksa. But an infinitesimally small fraction of one single *nigoda* has sufficed to replace the vacancy caused in the world by the Nirvana of all the souls that have been liberated from beginningless past down to the present. Thus it is evident the *sa@msara* will never be empty of living beings. Those of the *nigodas* who long for development come out and continue their course of progress through successive stages [Footnote ref 1].

Karma Theory.

It is on account of their merits or demerits that the *jivas* are born as gods, men, animals, or denizens of hell. We have already noticed in Chapter III that the cause of the embodiment of soul is the presence in it of karma matter. The natural perfections of the pure soul are sullied by the different kinds of karma matter. Those which obscure right knowledge of details (*jnana*) are called *jnanavara@niya*, those which obscure right perception (*dars'ana*) as in sleep are called *dars'anavaraniya*, those which

[Footnote 1: See Jacobi's article on Jainism, *E. R.E.*, and *Lokaprakas'a*, VI. pp. 31 ff.]

191

Page 174

obscure the bliss-nature of the soul and thus produce pleasure and pain are *vedaniya*, and those which obscure the right attitude of the soul towards faith and right conduct *mohaniya* [Footnote ref 1]. In addition to these four kinds of karma there are other four kinds of karma which determine (1) the length of life in any birth, (2) the peculiar body with its general and special qualities and faculties, (3) the nationality, caste, family, social standing, *etc.*, (4) the inborn energy of the soul by the obstruction of which it prevents the doing of a good action when there is a desire to do it. These are respectively called (1) *ayu@ska karma*, (2) *nama karma*, (3) *gotra karma*, (4) *antaraya karma*. By our actions of mind, speech and body, we are continually producing certain subtle karma matter which in the first instance is called *bhava karma*, which transforms itself into *dravya karma* and pours itself into the soul and sticks there by coming into contact with the passions (*ka@saya*) of the soul. These act like viscous substances in retaining the inpouring karma matter. This matter acts in eight different ways and it is accordingly divided into eight classes, as we have already noticed. This karma is the cause of bondage and sorrow. According as good or bad karma matter sticks to the soul it gets itself coloured respectively as golden, lotus-pink, white and black, blue and grey and they are called the *les'yas*. The feelings generated by the accumulation of the karma-matter are called *bhava-les'ya* and the actual coloration of the soul by it is called *dravya-les'ya*. According as any karma matter has been generated by good, bad, or indifferent actions, it gives us pleasure, pain, or feeling of indifference. Even the knowledge that we are constantly getting by perception, inference, *etc.*, is but the result of the effect of karmas in accordance with which the particular kind of veil which was obscuring any particular kind of knowledge is removed at any time and we have a knowledge of a corresponding nature. By our own karmas the veils over our knowledge, feeling, *etc.*, are so removed that we have just that kind of knowledge and feeling that we deserved to have. All knowledge, feeling, *etc.*, are thus in one sense generated from within, the external objects which are ordinarily said to be generating them all being but mere coexistent external conditions.

[Footnote 1: The Jains acknowledge five kinds of knowledge: (1) *matijnana* (ordinary cognition), (2) *s'ruti* (testimony), (3) *avadhi* (supernatural cognition), (4) *mana@hpariyaya* (thought-reading), (5) *kevala-jnana* (omniscience).]

Page 175

After the effect of a particular karma matter (*karma-varga@na*) is once produced, it is discharged and purged from off the soul. This process of purging off the karmas is called *nirjara*. If no new karma matter should accumulate then, the gradual purging off of the karmas might make the soul free of karma matter, but as it is, while some karma matter is being purged off, other karma matter is continually pouring in, and thus the purging and binding processes continuing simultaneously force the soul to continue its mundane cycle of existence, transmigration, and rebirth. After the death of each individual his soul, together with its karmic body (*karma@nas'arira*), goes in a few moments to the place of its new birth and there assumes a new body, expanding or contracting in accordance with the dimensions of the latter.

In the ordinary course karma takes effect and produces its proper results, and at such a stage the soul is said to be in the *audayika* state. By proper efforts karma may however be prevented from taking effect, though it still continues to exist, and this is said to be the *upas'amika* state of the soul. When karma is not only prevented from operating but is annihilated, the soul is said to be in the *k@sayika* state, and it is from this state that Mok@sa is attained. There is, however, a fourth state of ordinary good men with whom some karma is annihilated, some neutralized, and some active (*k@sayopas'amika*) [Footnote ref 1].

Karma, Asrava and Nirjara.

It is on account of karma that the souls have to suffer all the experiences of this world process, including births and rebirths in diverse spheres of life as gods, men or animals, or insects. The karmas are certain sorts of infra-atomic particles of matter (*karma-varga@na*). The influx of these karma particles into the soul is called asrava in Jainism. These karmas are produced by body, mind, and speech. The asravas represent the channels or modes through which the karmas enter the soul, just like the channels through which water enters into a pond. But the Jains distinguish between the channels and the karmas which actually

[Footnote 1: The stages through which a developing soul passes are technically called *gu@nasthanas* which are fourteen in number. The first three stages represent the growth of faith in Jainism, the next five stages are those in which all the passions are controlled, in the next four stages the ascetic practises yoga and destroys all his karmas, at the thirteenth stage he is divested of all karmas but he still practises yoga and at the fourteenth stage he attains liberation (see Dravyasa@mgrahav@rtti, 13th verse).]

Page 176

enter through those channels. Thus they distinguish two kinds of asravas, bhavasrava and karmasrava. Bhavasrava means the thought activities of the soul through which or on account of which the karma particles enter the soul [Footnote ref 1]. Thus Nemicandra says that bhavasrava is that kind of change in the soul (which is the contrary to what can destroy the karmasrava), by which the karmas enter the soul [Footnote ref 2]. Karmasrava, however, means the actual entrance of the karma matter into the soul. These bhavasravas are in general of five kinds, namely delusion (*mithyatva*), want of control (*avirati*), inadvertence (*pramada*), the activities of body, mind and speech (*yoga*) and the passions (*ka@sayas*). Delusion again is of five kinds, namely *ekanta* (a false belief unknowingly accepted and uncritically followed), *viparita* (uncertainty as to the exact nature of truth), *vinaya* (retention of a belief knowing it to be false, due to old habit), *sa@ms'aya* (doubt as to right or wrong) and *ajnana* (want of any belief due to the want of application of reasoning powers). Avirati is again of five kinds, injury (*hi@msa*), falsehood (*an@rta*), stealing (*cauryya*), incontinence (*abrahma*), and desire to have things which one does not already possess (*parigrahaka@nk@sa*). Pramada or inadvertence is again of five kinds, namely bad conversation (*vikatha*), passions (*ka@saya*), bad use of the five senses (*indriya*), sleep (*nidra*), attachment (*raga*) [Footnote ref 3].

Coming to dravyasrava we find that it means that actual influx of karma which affects the soul in eight different manners in accordance with which these karmas are classed into eight different kinds, namely jnanavara@niya, dars'anavara@niya, vedaniya, mohaniya, ayu, nama, gotra and antaraya. These actual influxes take place only as a result of the bhavasrava or the reprehensible thought activities, or changes (*pari@nama*) of the soul. The states of thought which condition the coming in of the karmas is called bhavabandha and the actual bondage of the soul by the actual impure connections of the karmas is technically called dravyabandha. It is on account of bhavabandha that the actual connection between the karmas and the soul can take place [Footnote ref 4]. The actual connections of the karmas with the soul are like the sticking

[Footnote 1: *Dravyasa@mgraha*, S'l. 29.]

[Footnote 2: Nemicandra's commentary on *Dravyasa@mgraha*, S'l. 29, edited by S.C. Ghoshal, Arrah, 1917.]

[Footnote 3: See Nemicandra's commentary on S'l. 30.]

[Footnote 4: Nemicandra on 31, and *Vardhamanapura@na* XVI. 44, quoted by Ghoshal.]

194

Page 177

of dust on the body of a person who is besmeared all over with oil. Thus Gunaratna says “The influx of karma means the contact of the particles of karma matter, in accordance with the particular kind of karma, with the soul just like the sticking of dust on the body of a person besmeared with oil. In all parts of the soul there being infinite number of karma atoms it becomes so completely covered with them that in some sense when looked at from that point of view the soul is sometimes regarded as a material body during its *sa@msara* stage [Footnote ref 1].” From one point of view the bondage of karma is only of *puf@nya* and *papa* (good and bad karmas) [Footnote ref 2]. From another this bondage is of four kinds, according to the nature of karma (*prak@rti*) duration of bondage (*sthiti*), intensity (*anubhaga*) and extension (*prades’a*). The nature of karma refers to the eight classes of karma already mentioned, namely the *jnanavaraniya* karma which obscures the infinite knowledge of the soul of all things in detail, *dars’anavara@niya* karma which obscures the infinite general knowledge of the soul, *vedaniya* karma which produces the feelings of pleasure and pain in the soul, *mohaniya* karma, which so infatuates souls that they fail to distinguish what is right from what is wrong, *ayu* karma, which determines the tenure of any particular life, *nama* karma which gives them personalities, *gotra* karma which brings about a particular kind of social surrounding for the soul and *antaraya* karma which tends to oppose the performance of right actions by the soul. The duration of the stay of any karma in the soul is called *sthiti*. Again a karma may be intense, middling or mild, and this indicates the third principle of division, *anubhaga*. *Prades’a* refers to the different parts of the soul to which the karma particles attach themselves. The duration of stay of any karma and its varying intensity are due to the nature of the *kasayas* or passions of the soul, whereas the different classification of karmas as *jnanavaraniya*, etc., are due to the nature of specific contact of the soul with karma matter [Footnote ref 3].

Corresponding to the two modes of inrush of karmas (*bhavasrava* and *dravyasrava*) are two kinds of control opposing this inrush, by actual thought modification of a contrary nature and by the actual stoppage of the inrush of karma particles, and these are respectively called *bhavasa@mvara* and *dravyasa@mvara* [Footnote ref 4].

[Footnote 1: See *Gu@naratna*, p. 181]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.*]

[Footnote 3: *Nemicandra*, 33.]

[Footnote 4: *Varddhama@na* XVI 67-68, and *Dravyasa@mgrahav@rtti* S’l. 35.]

Page 178

The bhavasa@mvaras are (1) the vows of non-injury, truthfulness, abstinence from stealing, sex-control, and non-acceptance of objects of desire, (2) samitis consisting of the use of trodden tracks in order to avoid injury to insects (*irya*), gentle and holy talk (*bha@sa*), receiving proper alms (*e@sa@na*), etc, (3) *guptis* or restraints of body, speech and mind, (4) *dharmas* consisting of habits of forgiveness, humility, straightforwardness, truth, cleanliness, restraint, penance, abandonment indifference to any kind of gain or loss, and supreme sex-control [Footnote ref 1], (5) *anuprek@sa* consisting of meditation about the transient character of the world, about our helplessness without the truth, about the cycles of world-existence, about our own responsibilities for our good and bad actions, about the difference between the soul and the non-soul, about the uncleanness of our body and all that is associated with it, about the influx of karma and its stoppage and the destruction of those karmas which have already entered the soul, about soul, matter and the substance of the universe, about the difficulty of attaining true knowledge, faith and conduct, and about the essential principles of the world [Footnote ref 2], (6) the *pari@sahajaya* consisting of the conquering of all kinds of physical troubles of heat, cold, etc, and of feelings of discomforts of various kinds, (7) *caritra* or right conduct.

Next to this we come to nirjara or the purging off of the karmas or rather their destruction. This nirjara also is of two kinds bhavanirjara and dravyanirjara. Bhavanirjara means that change in the soul by virtue of which the karma particles are destroyed. Dravyanirjara means the actual destruction of these karma particles either by the reaping of their effects or by penances before their time of fruition, called savipaka and avipaka nirjaras respectively. When all the karmas are destroyed mok@sa or liberation is effected.

Pudgala.

The *ajiva* (non-living) is divided into *pudgalastikaya*, *dharmastikaya*, *adharmastikaya*, *akas'astikaya*, *kala*, *pu@nya*, *papa*. The word *pudgala* means matter [Footnote ref 3], and it is called *astikaya* in the sense that it occupies space. Pudgala is made up of atoms

[Footnote 1: *Tattvarthadhigamasutra*.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid*.]

[Footnote 3: This is entirely different from the Buddhist sense. With the Buddhists *pudgala* means an individual or a person.]

Page 179

which are without size and eternal. Matter may exist in two states, gross (such as things we see around us), and subtle (such as the karma matter which sullies the soul). All material things are ultimately produced by the combination of atoms. The smallest indivisible particle of matter is called an atom (*a@nu*). The atoms are all eternal and they all have touch, taste, smell, and colour. The formation of different substances is due to the different geometrical, spherical or cubical modes of the combination of the atoms, to the diverse modes of their inner arrangement and to the existence of different degrees of inter-atomic space (*ghanapratārabhedana*). Some combinations take place by simple mutual contact at two points (*yugmaprades'a*) whereas in others the atoms are only held together by the points of attractive force (*oja@hprades'a*) (*Prajñāpanopāṅgasūtra*, pp. 10-12). Two atoms form a compound (*skandha*), when the one is viscous and the other dry or both are of different degrees of viscosity or dryness. It must be noted that while the Buddhists thought that there was no actual contact between the atoms the Jains regarded the contact as essential and as testified by experience. These compounds combine with other compounds and thus produce the gross things of the world. There are, however, liable to constant change (*pari@nāma*) by which they lose some of their old qualities (*gu@nāsa*) and acquire new ones. There are four elements, earth, water, air, and fire, and the atoms of all these are alike in character. The perception of grossness however is not an error which is imposed upon the perception of the atoms by our mind (as the Buddhists think) nor is it due to the perception of atoms scattered spatially lengthwise and breadthwise (as the *Saṃkhya-Yoga* supposes), but it is due to the accession of a similar property of grossness, blueness or hardness in the combined atoms, so that such knowledge is generated in us as is given in the perception of a gross, blue, or a hard thing. When a thing appears as blue, what happens is this, that the atoms there have all acquired the property of blueness and on the removal of the *dars'anavara@niya* and *jñānavara@niya* veil, there arises in the soul the perception and knowledge of that blue thing. This sameness (*samāna-rūpata*) of the accession of a quality in an aggregate of atoms by virtue of which it appears as one object (e.g. a cow) is technically called *tiryaksāmānya*. This *sāmānya* or generality is thus neither an imposition of the mind nor an abstract entity

Page 180

(as maintained by the Naiyayikas) but represents only the accession of similar qualities by a similar development of qualities of atoms forming an aggregate. So long as this similarity of qualities continues we perceive the thing to be the same and to continue for some length of time. When we think of a thing to be permanent, we do so by referring to this sameness in the developing tendencies of an aggregate of atoms resulting in the relative permanence of similar qualities in them. According to the Jains things are not momentary and in spite of the loss of some old qualities and the accession of other ones, the thing as a whole may remain more or less the same for some time. This sameness of qualities in time is technically called *urdhvasamanya* [Footnote ref 1]. If the atoms are looked at from the point of view of the change and accession of new qualities, they may be regarded as liable to destruction, but if they are looked at from the point of view of substance (*dravya*) they are eternal.

Dharma, Adharma, Akas'a.

The conception of dharma and adharma in Jainism is absolutely different from what they mean in other systems of Indian philosophy. Dharma is devoid of taste, touch, smell, sound and colour; it is conterminous with the mundane universe (*lokakas'a*) and pervades every part of it. The term *astikaya* is therefore applied to it. It is the principle of motion, the accompanying circumstance or cause which makes motion possible, like water to a moving fish. The water is a passive condition or circumstance of the movement of a fish, *i.e.* it is indifferent or passive (*udasina*) and not an active or solicitous (*preraka*) cause. The water cannot compel a fish at rest to move; but if the fish wants to move, water is then the necessary help to its motion. Dharma cannot make the soul or matter move; but if they are to move, they cannot do so without the presence of dharma. Hence at the extremity of the mundane world (*loka*) in the region of the liberated souls, there being no dharma, the liberated souls attain perfect rest. They cannot move there because there is not the necessary motion-element, dharma [Footnote ref 2]. Adharma is also regarded as a similar pervasive entity which

[Footnote 1: See *Prameyakamalamarta@n@da*, pp. 136-143; *Jainatarkavarttika*, p. 106.]

[Footnote 2: *Dravyasa@mgrahav@rtti*, 17-20.]

helps jivas and pudgalas to keep themselves at rest. No substance could move if there were no dharma, or could remain at rest if there were no adharma. The necessity of

admitting these two categories seems probably to have been felt by the Jains on account of their notion that the inner activity of the jiva or the atoms required for its exterior realization the help of some other extraneous entity, without which this could not have been transformed into actual exterior motion. Moreover since the jivas were regarded as having activity inherent in them they would be found to be moving even at the time of liberation (moksa), which was undesirable; thus it was conceived that actual motion required for its fulfilment the help of an extraneous entity which was absent in the region of the liberated souls.

Page 181

The category of akas'a is that subtle entity which pervades the mundane universe (*loka*) and the transcendent region of liberated souls (*aloka*) which allows the subsistence of all other substances such as dharma, adharma, jiva, pudgala. It is not a mere negation and absence of veil or obstruction, or mere emptiness, but a positive entity which helps other things to interpenetrate it. On account of its pervasive character it is called *akas'astikaya* [Footnote ref 1].

Kala and Samaya.

Time (*kala*) in reality consists of those innumerable particles which never mix with one another, but which help the happening of the modification or accession of new qualities and the change of qualities of the atoms. Kala does not bring about the changes of qualities, in things, but just as akas'a helps interpenetration and dharma motion, so also kala helps the action of the transformation of new qualities in things. Time perceived as moments, hours, days, etc., is called *samaya*. This is the appearance of the unchangeable kala in so many forms. Kala thus not only aids the modifications of other things, but also allows its own modifications as moments, hours, etc. It is thus a dravya (substance), and the moments, hours, etc., are its paryayas. The unit of samaya is the time required by an atom to traverse a unit of space by a slow movement.

[Footnote 1: *Dravyasamgrahav@rtti*, 19.]

199

Jaina Cosmography.

According to the Jains, the world is eternal, without beginning or end. Loka is that place in which happiness and misery are experienced as results of virtue and vice. It is composed of three parts, *urdhva* (where the gods reside), *madhya* (this world of ours), and *adho* (where the denizens of hell reside). The mundane universe (*lokakas'a*) is pervaded with dharma which makes all movement possible. Beyond the lokakas'a there is no dharma and therefore no movement, but only space (*akas'a*). Surrounding this lokakas'a are three layers of air. The perfected soul rising straight over the *urdhvaloka* goes to the top of this lokakas'a and (there being no dharma) remains motionless there.

Jaina Yoga.

Yoga according to Jainism is the cause of moksa (salvation). This yoga consists of jnana (knowledge of reality as it is), s'raddha (faith in the teachings of the Jinas), and

caritra (cessation from doing all that is evil). This caritra consists of *ahi@msa* (not taking any life even by mistake or unmindfulness), *sun@rta* (speaking in such a way as is true, good and pleasing), *asteya* (not taking anything which has not been given), *brahmacaryya* (abandoning lust for all kinds of objects, in mind, speech and body), and *aparigraha* (abandoning attachment for all things) [Footnote ref 1].

Page 182

These strict rules of conduct only apply to ascetics who are bent on attaining perfection. The standard proposed for the ordinary householders is fairly workable. Thus it is said by Hemacandra, that ordinary householders should earn money honestly, should follow the customs of good people, should marry a good girl from a good family, should follow the customs of the country and so forth. These are just what we should expect from any good and

[Footnote 1: Certain external rules of conduct are also called caritra. These are: *Iryya* (to go by the path already trodden by others and illuminated by the sun's rays, so that proper precaution may be taken while walking to prevent oneself from treading on insects, etc., which may be lying on the way), *bhasa* (to speak well and pleasantly to all beings), *isana* (to beg alms in the proper monastic manner), *danasamiti* (to inspect carefully the seats avoiding all transgressions when taking or giving anything), *utsargasamiti* (to take care that bodily refuse may not be thrown in such a way as to injure any being), *manogupti* (to remove all false thoughts, to remain satisfied within oneself, and hold all people to be the same in mind), *vaggupti* (absolute silence), and *kayagupti* (absolute steadiness and fixity of the body). Five other kinds of caritra are counted in *Dravyasamgrahav@rtti* 35.]

200

honest householder of the present day. Great stress is laid upon the virtues of *ahi@msa*, *sun@rta*, *asteya* and *brahmacaryya*, but the root of all these is *ahi@msa*. The virtues of *sun@rta*, *asteya* and *brahmacaryya* are made to follow directly as secondary corollaries of *ahi@msa*. *Ahi@msa* may thus be generalized as the fundamental ethical virtue of Jainism; judgment on all actions may be passed in accordance with the standard of *ahi@msa*; *sun@rta*, *asteya* and *brahmacaryya* are regarded as virtues as their transgression leads to *hi@msa* (injury to beings). A milder form of the practice of these virtues is expected from ordinary householders and this is called *anubrata* (small vows). But those who are struggling for the attainment of emancipation must practise these virtues according to the highest and strictest standard, and this is called *mahabrata* (great vows). Thus for example *brahmacaryya* for a householder according to the *anubrata* standard would be mere cessation from adultery, whereas according to *mahabrata* it would be absolute abstention from sex-thoughts, sex-words and sex-acts. *Ahi@msa* according to a householder, according to *anubrata*, would require abstinence from killing any animals, but according to *mahabrata* it would entail all the rigour and carefulness to prevent oneself from being the cause of any kind of injury to any living being in any way.

Page 183

Many other minor duties are imposed upon householders, all of which are based upon the cardinal virtue of *ahi@msa*. These are (1) *digvirati* (to carry out activities within a restricted area and thereby desist from injuring living beings in different places), (2) *bhogopabhogamana* (to desist from drinking liquors, taking flesh, butter, honey, figs, certain other kinds of plants, fruits, and vegetables, to observe certain other kinds of restrictions regarding time and place of taking meals), (3) *anarthada@n@da* consisting of (a) *apadhyana* (cessation from inflicting any bodily injuries, killing of one's enemies, etc.), (b) *papopades'a* (desisting from advising people to take to agriculture which leads to the killing of so many insects), (c) *hi@msopakaridana* (desisting from giving implements of agriculture to people which will lead to the injury of insects), (d) *pramadacara@na* (to desist from attending musical parties, theatres, or reading sex-literature, gambling, etc.), (4) *s'ik@sapadabrata* consisting of (a) *samayikabrata* (to try to treat all beings equally), (b) *des'avakas'ikabrata* (gradually to practise the *digviratibrata* more and more extensively), (c) *po@sadhabrata*

200

(certain other kinds of restriction), (d) *atithisa@mvibhagabrata* (to make gifts to guests). All transgressions of these virtues, called *aticara_*, should be carefully avoided.

All perception, wisdom, and morals belong to the soul, and to know the soul as possessing these is the right knowledge of the soul. All sorrows proceeding out of want of self-knowledge can be removed only by true self-knowledge. The soul in itself is pure intelligence, and it becomes endowed with the body only on account of its karma. When by meditation, all the karmas are burnt (*dhyanagnidagdhakarma*) the self becomes purified. The soul is itself the *sa@msara* (the cycle of rebirths) when it is overpowered by the four *ka@sayas* (passions) and the senses. The four *ka@sayas* are *krodha* (anger), *mana* (vanity and pride), *maya* (insincerity and the tendency to dupe others), and *lobha* (greed). These *ka@sayas* cannot be removed except by a control of the senses; and self-control alone leads to the purity of the mind (*mana@hs'uddhi*). Without the control of the mind no one can proceed in the path of yoga. All our acts become controlled when the mind is controlled, so those who seek emancipation should make every effort to control the mind. No kind of asceticism (*tapas*) can be of any good until the mind is purified. All attachment and antipathy (*ragadv@sa*) can be removed only by the purification of the mind. It is by attachment and antipathy that man loses his independence. It is thus necessary for the yogin (sage) that he should be free from them and become independent in the real sense of the term. When a man learns to look upon all beings with equality (*samatva*) he can effect such a conquest over *raga* and *dve@sa* as one could never do even by the strictest asceticism through millions of years. In order to effect this *samatva* towards all, we should take to the following kinds of meditation (*bhavana*):

Page 184

We should think of the transitoriness (*anityata*) of all things, that what a thing was in the morning, it is not at mid-day, what it was at mid-day it is not at night; for all things are transitory and changing. Our body, all our objects of pleasure, wealth and youth all are fleeting like dreams, or cotton particles in a whirlwind.

All, even the gods, are subject to death. All our relatives will by their works fall a prey to death. This world is thus full of misery and there is nothing which can support us in it. Thus in

201

whatever way we look for anything, on which we can depend, we find that it fails us. This is called as'ara@nabhavana (the meditation of helplessness).

Some are born in this world, some suffer, some reap the fruits of the karma done in another life. We are all different from one another by our surroundings, karma, by our separate bodies and by all other gifts which each of us severally enjoy. To meditate on these aspects is called ekatvabhavana and anyatvabhavana.

To think that the body is made up of defiled things, the flesh, blood, and bones, and is therefore impure is called as'ucibhavana (meditation of the impurity of the body).

To think that if the mind is purified by the thoughts of universal friendship and compassion and the passions are removed, then only will good {_s'ubha_) accrue to me, but if on the contrary I commit sinful deeds and transgress the virtues, then all evil will befall me, is called asravabhavana (meditation of the befalling of evil). By the control of the asrava (inrush of karma) comes the sa@mvara (cessation of the influx of karma) and the destruction of the karmas already accumulated leads to nirjara (decay and destruction of karma matter).

Again one should think that the practice of the ten dharmas (virtues) of self control (sa@myama), truthfulness (sun@rta), purity (s'auca), chastity (brahma), absolute want of greed (akincanata), asceticism (tapas), forbearance, patience (ks'anti), mildness (mardava), sincerity (_@rjuta_), and freedom or emancipation from all sins (mukti} can alone help us in the achievement of the highest goal. These are the only supports to which we can look. It is these which uphold the world-order. This is called dharmasvakhyatatabhavana.

Again one should think of the Jaina cosmology and also of the nature of the influence of karma in producing all the diverse conditions of men. These two are called lokabhavana and bodhibhavana.

When by the continual practice of the above thoughts man becomes unattached to all things and adopts equality to all beings, and becomes disinclined to all worldly



enjoyments, then with a mind full of peace he gets rid of all passions, and then he should take to the performance of dhyana or meditation by deep concentration. The samatva or perfect equality of the mind and dhyana are interdependent, so that without dhyana there is no samatva

Page 185

203

and without samatva there is no dhyana. In order to make the mind steady by dhyana one should think of *maitri* (universal friendship), *pramoda* (the habit of emphasizing the good sides of men), *karu@na* (universal compassion) and *madhyastha* (indifference to the wickedness of people, i.e. the habit of not taking any note of sinners). The Jaina dhyana consists in concentrating the mind on the syllables of the Jaina prayer phrases. The dhyana however as we have seen is only practised as an aid to making the mind steady and perfectly equal and undisturbed towards all things. Emancipation comes only as the result of the final extinction of the karma materials. Jaina yoga is thus a complete course of moral discipline which leads to the purification of the mind and is hence different from the traditional Hindu yoga of Patanjali or even of the Buddhists [Footnote ref 1].

Jaina Atheism [Footnote ref 2].

The Naiyayikas assert that as the world is of the nature of an effect, it must have been created by an intelligent agent and this agent is Is'vara (God). To this the Jain replies, "What does the Naiyayika mean when he says that the world is of the nature of an effect"? Does he mean by "effect," (1) that which is made up of parts (*savayava*), or, (2) the coinherence of the causes of a non-existent thing, or, (3) that which is regarded by anyone as having been made, or, (4) that which is liable to change (*vikaritvam*). Again, what is meant by being "made up of parts"? If it means existence in parts, then the class-concepts (*samanya*) existing in the parts should also be regarded as effects, and hence destructible, but these the Naiyayikas regard as being partless and eternal. If it means "that which has parts," then even "space" (*akas'a*) has to be regarded as "effect," but the Naiyayika regards it as eternal.

Again "effect" cannot mean "coinherence of the causes of a thing which were previously non-existent," for in that case one could not speak of the world as an effect, for the atoms of the elements of earth, *etc.*, are regarded as eternal.

Again if "effect" means "that which is regarded by anyone as

[Footnote 1: *_Yogas'astra_*, by Hemacandra, edited by Windisch, in *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morg. Gesellschaft*, Leipzig, 1874, and *Dravyasa@mgraha*, edited by Ghoshal, 1917.]

[Footnote 2: See Gu@naratna's *Tarkarahasyadipika*.]



having been made,” then it would apply even to space, for when a man digs the ground he thinks that he has made new space in the hollow which he dug.

If it means “that which is liable to change,” then one could suppose that God was also liable to change and he would require another creator to create him and he another, and so on *ad infinitum*. Moreover, if God creates he cannot but be liable to change with reference to his creative activity.

Page 186

Moreover, we know that those things which happen at some time and do not happen at other times are regarded as “effects.” But the world as a whole exists always. If it is argued that things contained within it such as trees, plants, etc., are “effects,” then that would apply even to this hypothetical God, for, his will and thought must be diversely operating at diverse times and these are contained in him. He also becomes a created being by virtue of that. And even atoms would be “effects,” for they also undergo changes of colour by heat.

Let us grant for the sake of argument that the world as a whole is an “effect.” And every effect has a cause, and so the world as a whole has a cause. But this does not mean that the cause is an intelligent one, as God is supposed to be. If it is argued that he is regarded as intelligent on the analogy of human causation then he might also be regarded as imperfect as human beings. If it is held that the world as a whole is not exactly an effect of the type of effects produced by human beings but is similar to those, this will lead to no inference. Because water-vapour is similar to smoke, nobody will be justified in inferring fire from water-vapour, as he would do from smoke. If it is said that this is so different an effect that from it the inference is possible, though nobody has ever been seen to produce such an effect, well then, one could also infer on seeing old houses ruined in course of time that these ruins were produced by intelligent agents. For these are also effects of which we do not know of any intelligent agent, for both are effects, and the invisibility of the agent is present in both cases. If it is said that the world is such that we have a sense that it has been made by some one, then the question will be, whether you infer the agency of God from this sense or infer the sense of its having been made from the fact of its being made by God, and you have a vicious circle (*anyonyas'raya*).

205

Again, even if we should grant that the world was created by an agent, then such an agent should have a body for we have never seen any intelligent creator without a body. If it is held that we should consider the general condition of agency only, namely, that the agent is intelligent, the objection will be that this is impossible, for agency is always associated with some kind of body. If you take the instances with some kind of effects such as the shoots of corn growing in the fields, it will be found that these had no intelligent agents behind them to create them. If it is said that these are also made by God, then you have an argument in a circle (*cakraka*), for this was the very matter which you sought to prove.



Page 187

Let it be granted for the sake of argument that God exists. Does his mere abstract existence produce the world? Well, in that case, the abstract existence of a potter may also create the world, for the abstract existence is the same in both cases. Does he produce the world by knowledge and will? Well, that is impossible, for there cannot be any knowledge and will without a body. Does he produce the world by physical movement or any other kind of movement? In any case that is impossible, for there cannot be any movement without a body. If you suppose that he is omniscient, you may do so, but that does not prove that he can be all-creator.

Let us again grant for the sake of argument that a bodiless God can create the world by his will and activity. Did he take to creation through a personal whim? In that case there would be no natural laws and order in the world. Did he take to it in accordance with the moral and immoral actions of men? Then he is guided by a moral order and is not independent. Is it through mercy that he took to creation? Well then, we suppose there should have been only happiness in the world and nothing else. If it is said that it is by the past actions of men that they suffer pains and enjoy pleasure, and if men are led to do vicious actions by past deeds which work like blind destiny, then such a blind destiny (ad@r@s@ta) might take the place of God. If He took to creation as mere play, then he must be a child who did things without a purpose. If it was due to his desire of punishing certain people and favouring others, then he must harbour favouritism on behalf of some and hatred against others. If the creation took place simply through his own nature, then, what is the good of

206

admitting him at all? You may rather say that the world came into being out of its own nature.

It is preposterous to suppose that one God without the help of any instruments or other accessories of any kind, could create this world. This is against all experience.

Admitting for the sake of argument that such a God exists, you could never justify the adjectives with which you wish to qualify him. Thus you say that he is eternal. But since he has no body, he must be of the nature of intelligence and will. But this nature must have changed in diverse forms for the production of diverse kinds of worldly things, which are of so varied a nature. If there were no change in his knowledge and will, then there could not have been diverse kinds of creation and destruction. Destruction and creation cannot be the result of one unchangeable will and knowledge. Moreover it is the character of knowledge to change, if the word is used in the sense in which knowledge is applied to human beings, and surely we are not aware of any other kind of knowledge. You say that God is omniscient, but it is difficult to suppose how he can have any knowledge at all, for as he has no organs he cannot have any perception, and since he cannot

Page 188

have any perception he cannot have any inference either. If it is said that without the supposition of a God the variety of the world would be inexplicable, this also is not true, for this implication would only be justified if there were no other hypothesis left. But there are other suppositions also. Even without an omniscient God you could explain all things merely by the doctrine of moral order or the law of karma. If there were one God, there could be a society of Gods too. You say that if there were many Gods, then there would be quarrels and differences of opinion. This is like the story of a miser who for fear of incurring expenses left all his sons and wife and retired into the forest. When even ants and bees can co-operate together and act harmoniously, the supposition that if there were many Gods they would have fallen out, would indicate that in spite of all the virtues that you ascribe to God you think his nature to be quite unreliable, if not vicious. Thus in whichever way one tries to justify the existence of God he finds that it is absolutely a hopeless task. The best way then is to dispense with the supposition altogether [Footnote ref 1].

[Footnote 1: See _@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_,_ Gu@naratna on Jainism, pp. 115-124.]

207

Mok@sa (emancipation).

The motive which leads a man to strive for release (*mok@sa*) is the avoidance of pain and the attainment of happiness, for the state of mukti is the state of the soul in pure happiness. It is also a state of pure and infinite knowledge (*anantajñana*) and infinite perception (*anantadars'ana*). In the *sa@msara* state on account of the karma veils this purity is sullied, and the veils are only worn out imperfectly and thus reveal this and that object at this and that time as ordinary knowledge (*mati*), testimony (*s'ruta*), supernatural cognition, as in trance or hypnotism (*avadhi*), and direct knowledge of the thoughts of others or thought reading (*mana@hparyaya*). In the state of release however there is omniscience (*kevala-jñana*) and all things are simultaneously known to the perfect (*kevalin*) as they are. In the *sa@msara* stage the soul always acquires new qualities, and thus suffers a continual change though remaining the same in substance. But in the emancipated stage the changes that a soul suffers are all exactly the same, and thus it is that at this stage the soul appears to be the same in substance as well as in its qualities of infinite knowledge, *etc.*, the change meaning in this state only the repetition of the same qualities.

Page 189

It may not be out of place to mention here that though the karmas of man are constantly determining him in various ways yet there is in him infinite capacity or power for right action (*anantavirya*), so that karma can never subdue this freedom and infinite capacity, though this may be suppressed from time to time by the influence of karma. It is thus that by an exercise of this power man can overcome all karma and become finally liberated. If man had not this anantavirya in him he might have been eternally under the sway of the accumulated karma which secured his bondage (*bandha*). But since man is the repository of this indomitable power the karmas can only throw obstacles and produce sufferings, but can never prevent him from attaining his highest good.

208

CHAPTER VII

THE KAPILA AND THE PATANJALA SA@MKHYA (YOGA) [Footnote ref 1].

A Review.

The examination of the two ancient Nastika schools of Buddhism and Jainism of two different types ought to convince us that serious philosophical speculations were indulged in, in circles other than those of the Upani@sad sages. That certain practices known as Yoga were generally prevalent amongst the wise seems very probable, for these are not only alluded to in some of the Upani@sads but were accepted by the two nastika schools of Buddhism and Jainism. Whether we look at them from the point of view of ethics or metaphysics, the two Nastika schools appear to have arisen out of a reaction against the sacrificial disciplines of the Brahma@nas. Both these systems originated with the K@sattriyas and were marked by a strong aversion against the taking of animal life, and against the doctrine of offering animals at the sacrifices.

The doctrine of the sacrifices supposed that a suitable combination of rites, rituals, and articles of sacrifice had the magical power of producing the desired effect—a shower of rain, the birth of a son, the routing of a huge army, *etc.* The sacrifices were enjoined generally not so much for any moral elevation, as for the achievement of objects of practical welfare. The Vedas were the eternal revelations which were competent so to dictate a detailed procedure, that we could by following it proceed on a certain course of action and refrain from other injurious courses in such a manner that we might obtain the objects we desired by the accurate performance of any sacrifice. If we are to define truth in accordance with the philosophy of such a ritualistic culture we might say that, that alone is true, in accordance with which we may realize our objects in the world about us; the truth of Vedic injunctions is shown by the practical attainment of our

[Footnote 1: This chapter is based on my *Study of Patanjali*, published by the Calcutta University, and my *Yoga philosophy in relation to other Indian Systems of thought*, awaiting publication with the same authority. The system has been treated in detail in those two works.]

Page 190

209

objects. Truth cannot be determined *a priori* but depends upon the test of experience [Footnote ref 1].

It is interesting to notice that Buddhism and Jainism though probably born out of a reactionary movement against this artificial creed, yet could not but be influenced by some of its fundamental principles which, whether distinctly formulated or not, were at least tacitly implied in all sacrificial performances. Thus we see that Buddhism regarded all production and destruction as being due to the assemblage of conditions, and defined truth as that which could produce any effect. But to such a logical extreme did the Buddhists carry these doctrines that they ended in formulating the doctrine of absolute momentariness [Footnote ref 2]. Turning to the Jains we find that they also regarded the value of knowledge as consisting in the help that it offers in securing what is good for us and avoiding what is evil; truth gives us such an account of things that on proceeding according to its directions we may verify it by actual experience. Proceeding on a correct estimate of things we may easily avail ourselves of what is good and avoid what is bad. The Jains also believed that changes were produced by the assemblage of conditions, but they did not carry this doctrine to its logical extreme. There was change in the world as well as permanence. The Buddhists had gone so far that they had even denied the existence of any permanent soul. The Jains said that no ultimate, one-sided and absolute view of things could be taken, and held that not only the happening of events was conditional, but even all our judgments, are true only in a limited sense. This is indeed true for common sense, which we acknowledge as superior to mere *a priori* abstractions, which lead to absolute and one-sided conclusions. By the assemblage of conditions, old qualities in things disappeared, new qualities came in, and a part remained permanent. But this common-sense view, though in agreement with our ordinary experience, could not satisfy our inner *a priori* demands for finding out ultimate truth, which was true not relatively but absolutely. When asked whether anything was true, Jainism

[Footnote 1: The philosophy of the Vedas as formulated by the Mimamsa of Kumarila and Prabhakara holds the opposite view. Truth according to them is determined *a priori* while error is determined by experience.]

[Footnote 2: Historically the doctrine of momentariness is probably prior to the doctrine of *arthakriyakaritva*. But the later Buddhists sought to prove that momentariness was the logical result of the doctrine of *arthakriyakaritva*.]

210

would answer, “yes, this is true from this point of view, but untrue from that point of view, while that is also true from such a point of view and untrue from another.” But such an answer cannot satisfy the mind which seeks to reach a definite pronouncement, an absolute judgment.

Page 191

The main departure of the systems of Jainism and Buddhism from the sacrificial creed consisted in this, that they tried to formulate a theory of the universe, the reality and the position of sentient beings and more particularly of man. The sacrificial creed was busy with individual rituals and sacrifices, and cared for principles or maxims only so far as they were of use for the actual performances of sacrifices. Again action with the new systems did not mean sacrifice but any general action that we always perform. Actions were here considered bad or good according as they brought about our moral elevation or not. The followers of the sacrificial creed refrained from untruth not so much from a sense of personal degradation, but because the Vedas had dictated that untruth should not be spoken, and the Vedas must be obeyed. The sacrificial creed wanted more and more happiness here or in the other world. The systems of Buddhist and Jain philosophy turned their backs upon ordinary happiness and wanted an ultimate and unchangeable state where all pains and sorrows were for ever dissolved (Buddhism) or where infinite happiness, ever unshaken, was realized. A course of right conduct to be followed merely for the moral elevation of the person had no place in the sacrificial creed, for with it a course of right conduct could be followed only if it was so dictated in the Vedas, Karma and the fruit of karma (*karmaphala*) only meant the karma of sacrifice and its fruits-temporary happiness, such as was produced as the fruit of sacrifices; knowledge with them meant only the knowledge of sacrifice and of the dictates of the Vedas. In the systems however, karma, karmaphala, happiness, knowledge, all these were taken in their widest and most universal sense. Happiness or absolute extinction of sorrow was still the goal, but this was no narrow sacrificial happiness but infinite and unchangeable happiness or destruction of sorrow; karma was still the way, but not sacrificial karma, for it meant all moral and immoral actions performed by us; knowledge here meant the knowledge of truth or reality and not the knowledge of sacrifice.

Such an advance had however already begun in the Upani@sads

211

which had anticipated the new systems in all these directions. The pioneers of these new systems probably drew their suggestions both from the sacrificial creed and from the Upani@sads, and built their systems independently by their own rational thinking. But if the suggestions of the Upani@sads were thus utilized by heretics who denied the authority of the Vedas, it was natural to expect that we should find in the Hindu camp such germs of rational thinking as might indicate an attempt to harmonize the suggestions of the Upani@sads and of the sacrificial creed in such a manner as might lead to the construction of a consistent and well-worked system of thought. Our expectations are indeed fulfilled in the Sa@mkhya philosophy, germs of which may be discovered in the Upani@sads.

Page 192

The Germs of Sa@mkhya in the Upani@sads.

It is indeed true that in the Upani@sads there is a large number of texts that describe the ultimate reality as the Brahman, the infinite, knowledge, bliss, and speak of all else as mere changing forms and names. The word Brahman originally meant in the earliest Vedic literature, *mantra*, duly performed sacrifice, and also the power of sacrifice which could bring about the desired result [Footnote ref 1]. In many passages of the Upani@sads this Brahman appears as the universal and supreme principle from which all others derived their powers. Such a Brahman is sought for in many passages for personal gain or welfare. But through a gradual process of development the conception of Brahman reached a superior level in which the reality and truth of the world are tacitly ignored, and the One, the infinite, knowledge, the real is regarded as the only Truth. This type of thought gradually developed into the monistic Vedanta as explained by S'ankara. But there was another line of thought which was developing alongside of it, which regarded the world as having a reality and as being made up of water, fire, and earth. There are also passages in S'vetas'vatara and particularly in Maitraya@ni from which it appears that the Samkhya line of thought had considerably developed, and many of its technical terms were already in use [Footnote ref 2]. But the date of Maitraya@ni has not yet been definitely settled, and the details

[Footnote 1: See Hillebrandt's article, "Brahman" (*E. R.E.*).]

[Footnote 2: Katha III. 10, V. 7. S'veta. V. 7, 8, 12, IV. 5, I. 3. This has been dealt with in detail in my *Yoga Philosophy in relation to other Indian Systems of Thought*, in the first chapter.]

212

found there are also not such that we can form a distinct notion of the Sa@mkhya thought as it developed in the Upani@sads. It is not improbable that at this stage of development it also gave some suggestions to Buddhism or Jainism, but the Sa@mkhya-Yoga philosophy as we now get it is a system in which are found all the results of Buddhism and Jainism in such a manner that it unites the doctrine of permanence of the Upani@sads with the doctrine of momentariness of the Buddhists and the doctrine of relativism of the Jains.

Sa@mkhya and Yoga Literature.

The main exposition of the system of Sa@mkhya and Yoga in this section has been based on the *Sa@mkhya karika*, the *Sa@mkhya sutras*, and the *Yoga sutras* of Patanjali with their commentaries and sub-commentaries. The *Sa@mkhya karika* (about 200 A.D.) was written by Is'varak@r@s@na. The account of Sa@mkhya given by Caraka (78 A.D.) represents probably an earlier school and this has been treated separately. Vacaspati Mis'ra (ninth century A.D.) wrote a commentary on it known

Page 193

as *Tattvakaumudi*. But before him Gaudapada and Raja wrote commentaries on the *Sa@mkhya karika* [Footnote ref 1]. Narayanatirtha wrote his *Candrika* on Gaudapada's commentary. The *Sa@mkhya sutras* which have been commented on by Vijnana Bhik@su (called *Pravacanabha@sya*) of the sixteenth century seems to be a work of some unknown author after the ninth century. Aniruddha of the latter half of the fifteenth century was the first man to write a commentary on the *Sa@mkhya sutras*. Vijnana Bhiksu wrote also another elementary work on *Sa@mkhya* known as *Sa@mkhyasara*. Another short work of late origin is *Tattvasamasa* (probably fourteenth century). Two other works on *Sam@khyas*, viz Simananda's *Samkhyatattvavivecana* and Bhavaga@nes'a's *Sa@mkhyatattvayatharthadipana* (both later than Vijnanabhik@su) of real philosophical value have also been freely consulted. Patanjali's *Yoga sutra* (not earlier than 147 B.C.) was commented on by Vaysa (400 A.D.) and Vyasa's *bhasya* commented on by Vacaspati Mis'ra is called *Tattvavaish'aradi*, by Vijnana Bhik@su *Yogavarttika*, by Bhoja in the tenth century *Bhojav@rtti*, and by Nages'a (seventeenth century) *Chayavyakhya*.

[Footnote 1: I suppose that Raja's commentary on the *Karika* was the same as *Rajavarttika* quoted by Vacaspati. Raja's commentary on the *Karika* has been referred to by Jayanta in his *Nyayamanjari*, p. 109. This book is probably now lost.]

213

Amongst the modern works to which I owe an obligation I may mention the two treatises *Mechanical, physical and chemical theories of the Ancient Hindus* and the *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus* by Dr B.N. Seal and my two works on *Yoga Study of Patanjali* published by the Calcutta University, and *Yoga Philosophy in relation to other Indian Systems of Thought* which is shortly to be published, and my *Natural Philosophy of the Ancient Hindus*, awaiting publication with the Calcutta University.

Gu@naratna mentions two other authoritative *Sa@mkhya* works, viz. *Ma@tharabha@sya* and *Atreyatantra*. Of these the second is probably the same as Caraka's treatment of *Sa@mkhya*, for we know that the sage Atri is the speaker in Caraka's work and for that it was called *Atreyasa@mhita* or *Atreyatantra*. Nothing is known of the *Matharabhasya* [Footnote ref 1].

An Early School of *Sa@mkhya*.

It is important for the history of *Sa@mkhya* philosophy that Caraka's treatment of it, which so far as I know has never been dealt with in any of the modern studies of

Sa@mkhya, should be brought before the notice of the students of this philosophy. According to Caraka there are six elements (*dhatus*), viz. the five elements such as akas'a, vayu etc. and cetana, called also puru@sa.

Page 194

From other points of view, the categories may be said to be twenty-four only, viz. the ten senses (five cognitive and five conative), manas, the five objects of senses and the eightfold prak@rti (prak@rti, mahat, aha@mkara and the five elements)[Footnote ref 2]. The manas works through the senses. It is atomic and its existence is proved by the fact that in spite of the existence of the senses there cannot be any knowledge unless manas is in touch with them. There are two movements of manas as indeterminate sensing (*uha*) and conceiving (*vicara*) before definite understanding (*buddhi*) arises. Each of the five senses is the product of the combination of five elements but the auditory sense is made with a preponderance of akasa, the sense of touch with a preponderance

[Footnote 1: Readers unacquainted with Sa@mkhya-Yoga may omit the following three sections at the time of first reading.]

[Footnote 2: Puru@a is here excluded from the list. Cakrapa@ni, the commentator, says that the prak@rti and puru@sa both being unmanifested, the two together have been counted as one. *Prak@rtivyatiriktancodasina@m puru@samavyaktatvasadharmyat avyaktayam prak@rtaveva prak@sipya avyaktas'avbdenaiva g@rh@nati*. Harinatha Vis'arada's edition of *Caraka*, S'arira, p. 4.]

214

of air, the visual sense with a preponderance of light, the taste with a preponderance of water and the sense of smell with a preponderance of earth. Caraka does not mention the tanmatras at all [Footnote ref 1]. The conglomeration of the sense-objects (*indriyārtha*) or gross matter, the ten senses, manas, the five subtle bhutas and prak@rti, mahat and aha@mkara taking place through rajas make up what we call man. When the sattva is at its height this conglomeration ceases. All karma, the fruit of karma, cognition, pleasure, pain, ignorance, life and death belongs to this conglomeration. But there is also the puru@sa, for had it not been so there would be no birth, death, bondage, or salvation. If the atman were not regarded as cause, all illuminations of cognition would be without any reason. If a permanent self were not recognized, then for the work of one others would be responsible. This puru@sa, called also *paramatman*, is beginningless and it has no cause beyond itself. The self is in itself without consciousness. Consciousness can only come to it through its connection with the sense organs and manas. By ignorance, will, antipathy, and work, this conglomeration of puru@sa and the other elements takes place. Knowledge, feeling, or action, cannot be produced without this combination. All positive effects are due to conglomerations of causes and not by a single cause, but all destruction comes

naturally and without cause. That which is eternal is never the product of anything. Caraka identifies the avyakta part of prak@rti with puru@sa as forming

Page 195

one category. The vikara or evolutionary products of prak@rti are called k@setra, whereas the avyakta part of prak@rti is regarded as the k@setrajna (*avyaktamasya k@setrasya k@setrajnam@r@saya viduh*). This avyakta and cetana are one and the same entity. From this unmanifested prak@rti or cetana is derived the buddhi, and from the buddhi is derived the ego (*aha@mkara*) and from the aha@mkara the five elements and the senses are produced, and when this production is complete, we say that creation has taken place. At the time of pralaya (periodical cosmic dissolution) all the evolutes return back to prak@rti, and thus become unmanifest with it, whereas at the time of a new creation from the puru@sa the unmanifest (*avyakta*), all the manifested forms—the evolutes of buddhi, aha@mkara,

[Footnote 1: But some sort of subtle matter, different from gross matter, is referred to as forming part of *prak@rti* which is regarded as having eight elements in it *prak@rtis'ca@s@tadhatuki*), viz. avyakta, mahat, aha@mkara, and five other elements. In addition to these elements forming part of the prak@rti we hear of indriyartha, the five sense objects which have evolved out of the prak@rti.]

215

etc.—appear [Footnote ref 1]. This cycle of births or rebirths or of dissolution and new creation acts through the influence of rajas and tamas, and so those who can get rid of these two will never again suffer this revolution in a cycle. The manas can only become active in association with the self, which is the real agent. This self of itself takes rebirth in all kinds of lives according to its own wish, undetermined by anyone else. It works according to its own free will and reaps the fruits of its karma. Though all the souls are pervasive, yet they can only perceive in particular bodies where they are associated with their own specific senses. All pleasures and pains are felt by the conglomeration (*ras'i*), and not by the atman presiding over it. From the enjoyment and suffering of pleasure and pain comes desire (*t@r@s@na*) consisting of wish and antipathy, and from desire again comes pleasure and pain. Mok@sa means complete cessation of pleasure and pain, arising through the association of the self with the manas, the sense, and sense-objects. If the manas is settled steadily in the self, it is the state of yoga when there is neither pleasure nor pain. When true knowledge dawns that “all are produced by causes, are transitory, rise of themselves, but are not produced by the self and are sorrow, and do not belong to me the self,” the self transcends all. This is the last renunciation when all affections and knowledge become finally extinct. There remains no indication of any positive existence of the self at this time, and the self can no longer be perceived [Footnote ref 2]. It is the state of Brahman. Those who know Brahman call this state the Brahman, which is eternal and absolutely devoid of any

characteristic. This state is spoken of by the Sa@mkhyas as their goal, and also that of the Yogins. When rajas and tamas are rooted out and the karma of the past whose fruits have to be enjoyed are exhausted, and there is no new karma and new birth,

Page 196

[Footnote 1: This passage has been differently explained in a commentary previous to Cakrapa@ni as meaning that at the time of death these resolve back into the prak@rti—the puru@sa—and at the time of rebirth they become manifest again. See Cakrapa@ni on s'arira, l. 46.]

[Footnote 2: Though this state is called brahmabhuta, it is not in any sense like the Brahman of Vedanta which is of the nature of pure being, pure intelligence and pure bliss. This indescribable state is more like absolute annihilation without any sign of existence (*alak@sa@nam*), resembling Nagarjuna's Nirva@na. Thus Caraka writes:—*tasmi@ms'caramasannyase samulah@hsarvavedana@h asa@mijnajnanavijnana niv@rtti@m yantyas'e@sata@h. ata@hpara@m brahmabhuto bhutatma nopalabhyate ni@hs@rta@h sarvabhavabhya@h cihna@m yasya na vidyate. gatirbrahmavida@m brahma taccak@saramalak@sa@nam. Caraka, S'arira 1. 98-100.]*

216

the state of mok@sa comes about. Various kinds of moral endeavours in the shape of association with good people, abandoning of desires, determined attempts at discovering the truth with fixed attention, are spoken of as indispensable means. Truth (*tattva*) thus discovered should be recalled again and again [Footnote ref 1] and this will ultimately effect the disunion of the body with the self. As the self is *avyakta* (unmanifested) and has no specific nature or character, this state can only be described as absolute cessation (*mok@se niv@rttirni@hs'e@sa*).

The main features of the Sa@mkhya doctrine as given by Caraka are thus: 1. Puru@sa is the state of *avyakta*. 2. By a conglomera of this *avyakta* with its later products a conglomeration is formed which generates the so-called living being. 3. The *tanmatras* are not mentioned. 4. *Rajas* and *tamas* represent the bad states of the mind and *sattva* the good ones. 5. The ultimate state of emancipation is either absolute annihilation or characterless absolute existence and it is spoken of as the Brahman state; there is no consciousness in this state, for consciousness is due to the conglomeration of the self with its evolutes, *buddhi*, *aha@mkara* etc. 6. The senses are formed of matter (*bhautika*).

This account of Sa@mkhya agrees with the system of Sa@mkhya propounded by Pancas'ikha (who is said to be the direct pupil of Asuri the pupil of Kapila, the founder of the system) in the Mahabharata XII. 219. Pancas'ikha of course does not describe the system as elaborately as Caraka does. But even from what little he says it may be supposed that the system of Sa@mkhya he sketches is the same as that of Caraka

[Footnote ref 2]. Pancas'ikha speaks of the ultimate truth as being avyakta (a term applied in all Sa@mkhya literature to prak@rti) in the state of puru@sa (*purusavasthamavyaktam*). If man is the product of a mere combination of the different elements, then one may assume that all ceases with death. Caraka in answer to such an objection introduces a discussion, in which he tries to establish the existence of a self as the postulate of all our duties and sense of moral responsibility. The same discussion occurs in Pancas'ikha also, and the proofs

Page 197

[Footnote 1: Four causes are spoken of here as being causes of memory: (1) Thinking of the cause leads to the remembering of the effect, (2) by similarity, (3) by opposite things, and (4) by acute attempt to remember.]

[Footnote 2: Some European scholars have experienced great difficulty in accepting Pancas'ikha's doctrine as a genuine Sa@mkhya doctrine. This may probably be due to the fact that the Sa@mkhya doctrines sketched in *Caraka* did not attract their notice.]

217

for the existence of the self are also the same. Like *Caraka* again Pancas'ikha also says that all consciousness is due to the conditions of the conglomeration of our physical body mind,—and the element of “cetas.” They are mutually independent, and by such independence carry on the process of life and work. None of the phenomena produced by such a conglomeration are self. All our suffering comes in because we think these to be the self. Mok@sa is realized when we can practise absolute renunciation of these phenomena. The gu@nas described by Pancas'ikha are the different kinds of good and bad qualities of the mind as *Caraka* has it. The state of the conglomeration is spoken of as the k@setra, as *Caraka* says, and there is no annihilation or eternality; and the last state is described as being like that when all rivers lose themselves in the ocean and it is called ali@nga (without any characteristic)—a term reserved for prak@rti in later Sa@mkhya. This state is attainable by the doctrine of ultimate renunciation which is also called the doctrine of complete destruction (*samyagbadha*).

Gu@naratna (fourteenth century A.D.), a commentator of _@Sa@ddars'anasamuccaya_, mentions two schools of Sa@mkhya, the Maulikya (original) and the Uttara or (later) [Footnote ref 1]. Of these the doctrine of the Maulikya Sa@mkhya is said to be that which believed that there was a separate pradhana for each atman (*maulikyasa@mkhya hyatmanamatmanam prati p@rthak pradhanam vadanti*). This seems to be a reference to the Sa@mkhya doctrine I have just sketched. I am therefore disposed to think that this represents the earliest systematic doctrine of Sa@mkhya.

In *Mahabharata* XII. 318 three schools of Sa@mkhya are mentioned, viz. those who admitted twenty-four categories (the school I have sketched above), those who admitted twenty-five (the well-known orthodox Sa@mkhya system) and those who admitted twenty-six categories. This last school admitted a supreme being in addition to puru@sa and this was the twenty-sixth principle. This agrees with the orthodox Yoga

system and the form of Sa@mkhya advocated in the *Mahabharata*. The schools of Sa@mkhya of twenty-four and twenty-five categories are here denounced as unsatisfactory. Doctrines similar to the school of Sa@mkhya we have sketched above are referred to in some of the

Page 198

[Footnote 1: Gu@naratna's *Tarkarahasyadipika*, p. 99.]

218

other chapters of the *Mahabharata* (XII. 203, 204). The self apart from the body is described as the moon of the new moon day; it is said that as Rahu (the shadow on the sun during an eclipse) cannot be seen apart from the sun, so the self cannot be seen apart from the body. The selfs (*s'ariri@na@h*) are spoken of as manifesting from *prak@rti*.

We do not know anything about Asuri the direct disciple of Kapila [Footnote ref 1]. But it seems probable that the system of Sa@mkhya we have sketched here which appears in fundamentally the same form in the *Mahabharata* and has been attributed there to Pancas'ikha is probably the earliest form of Sa@mkhya available to us in a systematic form. Not only does Gu@naratna's reference to the school of Maulikya Sa@mkhya justify it, but the fact that Caraka (78 A.U.) does not refer to the Sa@mkhya as described by Is'varak@r@s@na and referred to in other parts of *Mahabharata* is a definite proof that Is'varak@r@s@na's Sa@mkhya is a later modification, which was either non-existent in Caraka's time or was not regarded as an authoritative old Sa@mkhya view.

Wassilief says quoting Tibetan sources that Vindhyavasin altered the Sa@mkhya according to his own views [Footnote ref 2]. Takakusu thinks that Vindhyavasin was a title of Is'varak@r@s@na [Footnote ref 3] and Garbe holds that the date of Is'varak@r@s@na was about 100 A.D. It seems to be a very plausible view that Is'varak@r@s@na was indebted for his *karikas* to another work, which was probably written in a style different from what he employs. The seventh verse of his *Karika* seems to be in purport the same as a passage which is found quoted in the

[Footnote 1: A verse attributed to Asuri is quoted by Gu@naratna (*Tarkarahasyadipika*, p. 104). The purport of this verse is that when buddhi is transformed in a particular manner, it (*purusa*) has experience. It is like the reflection of the moon in transparent water.]

[Footnote 2: Vassilief's *Buddhismus*, p. 240.]

[Footnote 3: Takakusu's "A study of Paramartha's life of Vasubandhu," *J. R.A.S.*, 1905. This identification by Takakusu, however, appears to be extremely doubtful, for Gu@naratna mentions Is'varak@r@s@na and Vindhyavasin as two different authorities (*Tarkarahasyadipika*, pp. 102 and 104). The verse quoted from Vindhyavasin (p. 104) in anu@s@tubh metre cannot be traced as belonging to Is'varak@r@s@na. It appears that Is'varak@r@s@na wrote two books; one is the *Sa@mkhya karika* and another an independent work on *Sa@mkhya*, a line from which, quoted by Gu@naratna, stands as follows:

"*Pratiniyatadhyavasaya@h s'rotradisamuttha adhyak@sam*" (p. 108).

Page 199

If Vacaspati's interpretation of the classification of anumana in his *Tattvakaumudi* be considered to be a correct explanation of *Sa@mkhya karika* then Is'varak@r@s@na must be a different person from Vindhyavasin whose views on anumana as referred to in *S'lokavarttika*, p. 393, are altogether different. But Vacaspati's own statement in the *Tatparyya@tika* (pp. 109 and 131) shows that his treatment there was not faithful.]

219

Mahabhasya of Patanjali the grammarian (147 B.C.) [Footnote ref 1]. The subject of the two passages are the enumeration of reasons which frustrate visual perception. This however is not a doctrine concerned with the strictly technical part of *Sa@mkhya*, and it is just possible that the book from which Patanjali quoted the passage, and which was probably paraphrased in the *Arya metre* by Is'varak@r@s@na was not a *Sa@mkhya* book at all. But though the subject of the verse is not one of the strictly technical parts of *Sa@mkhya*, yet since such an enumeration is not seen in any other system of Indian philosophy, and as it has some special bearing as a safeguard against certain objections against the *Sa@mkhya* doctrine of prak@rti, the natural and plausible supposition is that it was the verse of a *Sa@mkhya* book which was paraphrased by Is'varak@r@s@na.

The earliest descriptions of a *Sa@mkhya* which agrees with Is'varak@r@s@na's *Sa@mkhya* (but with an addition of Is'vara) are to be found in Patanjali's *Yoga sutras* and in the *Mahabharata*; but we are pretty certain that the *Sa@mkhya* of Caraka we have sketched here was known to Patanjali, for in *Yoga sutra* I. 19 a reference is made to a view of *Sa@mkhya* similar to this.

From the point of view of history of philosophy the *Sa@mkhya* of Caraka and *Pancas'ikha* is very important; for it shows a transitional stage of thought between the *Upani@sad* ideas and the orthodox *Sa@mkhya* doctrine as represented by Is'varak@r@s@na. On the one hand its doctrine that the senses are material, and that effects are produced only as a result of collocations, and that the *puru@sas* is unconscious, brings it in close relation with *Nyaya*, and on the other its connections with Buddhism seem to be nearer than the orthodox *Sa@mkhya*.

We hear of a *Sa@s@titantras'astra* as being one of the oldest *Sa@mkhya* works. This is described in the *Ahimbudhnya Sa@mhita* as containing two books of thirty-two and twenty-eight chapters [Footnote ref 2]. A quotation from *Rajavarttika* (a work about which there is no definite information) in Vacaspati Mis'ra's commentary on the *Sa@mkhya karika* (72) says that it was called the *_@Sa@s@titantra* because it dealt with the existence of prak@rti, its oneness, its difference from *puru@sas*, its purposefulness for *puru@sas*, the multiplicity of *puru@sas*, connection and separation from *puru@sas*, the evolution of

[Footnote 1: Patanjali's Mahabhasya, IV. 1. 3. *Atisannikar@sadativiprakar@sat murttyantaravyavadhanat tamasav@rtatvat indriyadaurvalyadatipramadat, etc.* (Benares edition.)]

Page 200

[Footnote 2: *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita*, pp. 108, 110.]

220

the categories, the inactivity of the *puru@sas* and the five *viparyyayas*, nine *tu@s@tis*, the defects of organs of twenty-eight kinds, and the eight *siddhis* [Footnote ref 1].

But the content of the *Sa@s@titantra* as given in *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita* is different from it, and it appears from it that the *Sa@mkhya* of the *Sa@s@titantra* referred to in the *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita* was of a theistic character resembling the doctrine of the *Pancaratra Vai@snavas* and the *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita* says that Kapila's theory of *Sa@mkhya* was a *Vai@s@nava* one. *Vijnana Bhiksu*, the greatest expounder of *Sa@mkhya*, says in many places of his work *Vijnanam@rta Bha@sya* that *Sa@mkhya* was originally theistic, and that the atheistic *Sa@mkhya* is only a *prau@dhivada* (an exaggerated attempt to show that no supposition of *Is'vara* is necessary to explain the world process) though the *Mahabharata* points out that the difference between *Sa@mkhya* and *Yoga* is this, that the former is atheistic, while the latter is theistic. The discrepancy between the two accounts of *_@Sa@s@titantra_* suggests that the original *Sa@s@titantra* as referred to in the *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita* was subsequently revised and considerably changed. This supposition is corroborated by the fact that *Gu@naratna* does not mention among the important *Sa@mkhya* works *_@Sa@s@titantra_* but *_@Sa@s@titanthroddhara_*

[Footnote 1: The doctrine of the *viparyyaya*, *tusti*, defects of organs, and the *siddhi* are mentioned in the *Karika* of *Is'varakr@sna*, but I have omitted them in my account of *Samkhya* as these have little philosophical importance. The *viparyyaya* (false knowledge) are five, viz. *avidya* (ignorance), *asmita* (egoism), *raga* (attachment), *dve@sa* (antipathy), *abhimives'a* (self-love), which are also called *tamo*, *moha*, *mahamoha*, *tamisra*, and *andhatamisra*. These are of nine kinds of *tusti*, such as the idea that no exertion is necessary, since *prak@rti* will herself bring our salvation (*ambhas*), that it is not necessary to meditate, for it is enough if we renounce the householder's life (*salila*), that there is no hurry, salvation will come in time (*megha*), that salvation will be worked out by fate (*bhagya*), and the contentment leading to renunciation proceeding from five kinds of causes, e.g. the troubles of earning (*para*), the troubles of protecting the earned money (*supara*), the natural waste of things earned by enjoyment (*parapara*), increase of desires leading to greater disappointments (*anuttamambhas*), all gain leads to the injury of others (*uttamambhas*). This renunciation proceeds from external considerations with those who consider *prak@rti* and its evolutes as the self.

Page 201

The siddhis or ways of success are eight in number, viz. (1) reading of scriptures (*tara*), (2) enquiry into their meaning (*sutara*), (3) proper reasoning (*taratara*), (4) corroborating one's own ideas with the ideas of the teachers and other workers of the same field (*ramyaka*), (5) clearance of the mind by long-continued practice (*sadamudita*). The three other siddhis called pramoda, mudita, and modamana lead directly to the separation of the prak@rti from the purus'a. The twenty-eight sense defects are the eleven defects of the eleven senses and seventeen kinds of defects of the understanding corresponding to the absence of siddhis and the presence of tustis. The viparyayas, tu@stis and the defects of the organs are hindrances in the way of the achievement of the Sa@mkhya goal.]

221

(revised edition of _@Sa@s@titantra_) [Footnote ref 1]. Probably the earlier @Sa@s@titantra was lost even before Vacaspati's time.

If we believe the @Sa@s@titantra referred to in the *Ahribudhnya Sa@mhita* to be in all essential parts the same work which was composed by Kapila and based faithfully on his teachings, then it has to be assumed that Kapila's Sa@mkhya was theistic [Footnote ref 2]. It seems probable that his disciple Asuri tried to popularise it. But it seems that a great change occurred when Pancas'ikha the disciple of Asuri came to deal with it. For we know that his doctrine differed from the traditional one in many important respects. It is said in *Sa@mkhya karika* (70) that the literature was divided by him into many parts (*tena bahudhak@rtam tantram*). The exact meaning of this reference is difficult to guess. It might mean that the original _@Sa@s@titantra_ was rewritten by him in various treatises. It is a well-known fact that most of the schools of Vai@s@navas accepted the form of cosmology which is the same in most essential parts as the Sa@mkhya cosmology. This justifies the assumption that Kapila's doctrine was probably theistic. But there are a few other points of difference between the Kapila and the Patanjala Sa@mkhya (Yoga). The only supposition that may be ventured is that Pancas'ikha probably modified Kapila's work in an atheistic way and passed it as Kapila's work. If this supposition is held reasonable, then we have three strata of Sa@mkhya, first a theistic one, the details of which are lost, but which is kept in a modified form by the Patanjala school of Sa@mkhya, second an atheistic one as represented by Pancas'ikha, and a third atheistic modification as the orthodox Sa@mkhya system. An important change in the Sa@mkhya doctrine seems to have been introduced by Vijnana Bhik@su (sixteenth century A.D.) by his treatment of gu@nas as types of reals. I have myself accepted this interpretation of Sa@mkhya as the most rational and philosophical one, and have therefore followed it in giving a connected system of the accepted Kapila and the Patanjala school of Sa@mkhya. But it must be pointed out that originally the notion of gu@nas was applied to different types

of good and bad mental states, and then they were supposed in some mysterious way by mutual increase and decrease to form the objective world on the one hand and the

Page 202

[Footnote 1: *Tarkarahasyadipika*, p. 109.]

[Footnote 2: *eva@m sa@dvims'akam prahah s'ariramth manavah sa@mkhyam sa@mkhyatmakatvacca kapiladibhirucyate. Matsyapurana*, IV. 28.]

222

totality of human psychosis on the other. A systematic explanation of the gunas was attempted in two different lines by Vijnana Bhik@su and the Vai@s@nava writer Ve@nka@ta [Footnote ref I]. As the Yoga philosophy compiled by Patanjali and commented on by Vyasa, Vacaspati and Vijn@ana Bhik@su, agree with the Sa@mkhya doctrine as explained by Vacaspati and Vijnana Bhik@su in most points I have preferred to call them the Kapila and the Patanjala schools of Sa@mkhya and have treated them together—a principle which was followed by Haribhadra in his _@Sa@ddars'anasamuaccaya_.

The other important Sa@mkhya teachers mentioned by Gaudapada are Sanaka, Sananda, Sanatana and Vo@dhu. Nothing is known about their historicity or doctrines.

Sa@mkhya karika, Sa@mkhya sutra, Vacaspati Mis'ra and Vijnana Bhik@su.

A word of explanation is necessary as regards my interpretation of the Sa@mkhya-Yoga system. The *Sa@mkhya karika* is the oldest Sa@mkhya text on which we have commentaries by later writers. The *Sa@mkhya sutra* was not referred to by any writer until it was commented upon by Aniruddha (fifteenth century A.D.). Even Gu@naratna of the fourteenth century A.D. who made allusions to a number of Sa@mkhya works, did not make any reference to the *Sa@mkhya sutra*, and no other writer who is known to have flourished before Gu@naratna seems to have made any reference to the *Sa@mkhya sutra*. The natural conclusion therefore is that these sutras were probably written some time after the fourteenth century. But there is no positive evidence to prove that it was so late a work as the fifteenth century. It is said at the end of the *Sa@mkhya karika* of Is'varak@r@s@na that the karikas give an exposition of the Sa@mkhya doctrine excluding the refutations of the doctrines of other people and excluding the parables attached to the original Sa@mkhya works—the _@Sa@s@titantras'astra_. The *Sa@mkhya sutras* contain refutations of other doctrines and also a number of parables. It is not improbable that these were collected from some earlier Sa@mkhya work which is now lost to us. It may be that it was done



from some later edition of the *__@Sa@s@titantras'astra_* (*__@Sa@s@titanroddhara_*
as mentioned by

[Footnote 1: Venka@ta's philosophy will be dealt with in the second volume of the
present work.]

223

Page 203

Gu@naratna), but this is a mere conjecture. There is no reason to suppose that the Sa@mkhya doctrine found in the sutras differs in any important way from the Sa@mkhya doctrine as found in the *Sa@mkhya karika*. The only point of importance is this, that the *Sa@mkhya sutras* hold that when the Upani@sads spoke of one absolute pure intelligence they meant to speak of unity as involved in the class of intelligent puru@sas as distinct from the class of the gu@nas. As all puru@sas were of the nature of pure intelligence, they were spoken of in the Upani@sads as one, for they all form the category or class of pure intelligence, and hence may in some sense be regarded as one. This compromise cannot be found in the *Sa@mkhya karika*. This is, however, a case of omission and not of difference. Vijnana Bhik@su, the commentator of the *Sa@mkhya sutra*, was more inclined to theistic Sa@mkhya or Yoga than to atheistic Sa@mkhya. This is proved by his own remarks in his *Samkhyapravacanabha@sya*, *Yogavarttika*, and *Vijnanam@rtabhasya* (an independent commentary on the Brahmasutras of Badarayana on theistic Sa@mkhya lines). Vijnana Bhiksu's own view could not properly be called a thorough Yoga view, for he agreed more with the views of the Sa@mkhya doctrine of the Pura@nas, where both the diverse puru@sas and the prak@rti are said to be merged in the end in Is'vara, by whose will the creative process again began in the prakrti at the end of each pralaya. He could not avoid the distinctively atheistic arguments of the *Sa@mkhya sutras*, but he remarked that these were used only with a view to showing that the Sa@mkhya system gave such a rational explanation that even without the intervention of an Is'vara it could explain all facts. Vijnana Bhik@su in his interpretation of Sa@mkhya differed on many points from those of Vacaspati, and it is difficult to say who is right. Vijnana Bhik@su has this advantage that he has boldly tried to give interpretations on some difficult points on which Vacaspati remained silent. I refer principally to the nature of the conception of the gu@nas, which I believe is the most important thing in Sa@mkhya. Vijnana Bhik@su described the gu@nas as reals or super-subtle substances, but Vacaspati and Gau@dapada (the other commentator of the *Sa@mkhya karika*) remained silent on the point. There is nothing, however, in their interpretations which would militate against the interpretation of Vijnana Bhik@su, but yet while they were silent as to any definite explanations regarding the nature of the gu@nas, Bhik@su definitely

224

came forward with a very satisfactory and rational interpretation of their nature.

Page 204

Since no definite explanation of the *gu@nas* is found in any other work before Bhik@su, it is quite probable that this matter may not have been definitely worked out before. Neither Caraka nor the *Mahabharata* explains the nature of the *gu@nas*. But Bhik@su's interpretation suits exceedingly well all that is known of the manifestations and the workings of the *gu@nas* in all early documents. I have therefore accepted the interpretation of Bhik@su in giving my account of the nature of the *gu@nas*. The *Karika* speaks of the *gu@nas* as being of the nature of pleasure, pain, and dullness (*sattva*, *rajas* and *tamas*). It also describes *sattva* as being light and illuminating, *rajas* as of the nature of energy and causing motion, and *tamas* as heavy and obstructing. Vacaspati merely paraphrases this statement of the *Karika* but does not enter into any further explanations. Bhik@su's interpretation fits in well with all that is known of the *gu@nas*, though it is quite possible that this view might not have been known before, and when the original Sa@mkhya doctrine was formulated there was a real vagueness as to the conception of the *gu@nas*.

There are some other points in which Bhik@su's interpretation differs from that of Vacaspati. The most important of these may be mentioned here. The first is the nature of the connection of the buddhi states with the *puru@sa*. Vacaspati holds that there is no contact (*sa@myoga*) of any buddhi state with the *puru@sa* but that a reflection of the *puru@sa* is caught in the state of buddhi by virtue of which the buddhi state becomes intelligized and transformed into consciousness. But this view is open to the objection that it does not explain how the *puru@sa* can be said to be the experiencer of the conscious states of the buddhi, for its reflection in the buddhi is merely an image, and there cannot be an experience (*bhoga*) on the basis of that image alone without any actual connection of the *puru@sa* with the buddhi. The answer of Vacaspati Mis'ra is that there is no contact of the two in space and time, but that their proximity (*sannidhi*) means only a specific kind of fitness (*yogyata*) by virtue of which the *puru@sa*, though it remains aloof, is yet felt to be united and identified in the buddhi, and as a result of that the states of the buddhi appear as ascribed to a person. Vijnana Bhik@su differs from Vacaspati and says that if such a special kind of fitness be admitted, then there is no

225

reason why *puru@sa* should be deprived of such a fitness at the time of emancipation, and thus there would be no emancipation at all, for the fitness being in the *puru@sa*, he could not be divested of it, and he would continue to enjoy the experiences represented in the buddhi for ever. Vijnana Bhik@su thus holds that there is a real contact of the *puru@sa* with the buddhi state in any cognitive state. Such a contact of the *puru@sa* and the buddhi does not

Page 205

necessarily mean that the former will be liable to change on account of it, for contact and change are not synonymous. Change means the rise of new qualities. It is the buddhi which suffers changes, and when these changes are reflected in the puru@sa, there is the notion of a person or experiencer in the puru@sa, and when the puru@sa is reflected back in the buddhi the buddhi state appears as a conscious state. The second, is the difference between Vacaspati and Bhik@su as regards the nature of the perceptual process. Bhik@su thinks that the senses can directly perceive the determinate qualities of things without any intervention of manas, whereas Vacaspati ascribes to manas the power of arranging the sense-data in a definite order and of making the indeterminate sense-data determinate. With him the first stage of cognition is the stage when indeterminate sense materials are first presented, at the next stage there is assimilation, differentiation, and association by which the indeterminate materials are ordered and classified by the activity of manas called sa@mkalpa which coordinates the indeterminate sense materials into determinate perceptual and conceptual forms as class notions with particular characteristics. Bhik@su who supposes that the determinate character of things is directly perceived by the senses has necessarily to assign a subordinate position to manas as being only the faculty of desire, doubt, and imagination.

It may not be out of place to mention here that there are one or two passages in Vacaspati's commentary on the *Sa@mkhya karika* which seem to suggest that he considered the ego (*aha@mkara*) as producing the subjective series of the senses and the objective series of the external world by a sort of desire or will, but he did not work out this doctrine, and it is therefore not necessary to enlarge upon it. There is also a difference of view with regard to the evolution of the tanmatras from the mahat; for contrary to the view of *Vyasabha@sya* and *Vijnana Bhik@su etc.* Vacaspati holds that from the mahat there was *aha@mkara* and

226

from *aha@mkara* the tanmatras [Footnote ref 1]. *Vijnana Bhik@su* however holds that both the separation of *aha@mkara* and the evolution of the tanmatras take place in the mahat, and as this appeared to me to be more reasonable, I have followed this interpretation. There are some other minor points of difference about the Yoga doctrines between Vacaspati and *Bhik@su* which are not of much philosophical importance.

Yoga and Patanjali.

The word yoga occurs in the @Rg-Veda in various senses such as yoking or harnessing, achieving the unachieved, connection, and the like. The sense of yoking is not so frequent as the other senses; but it is nevertheless true that the word was used in

this sense in @Rg-Veda and in such later Vedic works as the S'atapatha Brahmana and the B@rhadara@nyaka Upani@sad [Footnote ref 2]. The word has another derivative "yugya" in later Sanskrit literature [Footnote ref 3].

Page 206

With the growth of religious and philosophical ideas in the @Rg-Veda, we find that the religious austerities were generally very much valued. Tapas (asceticism) and brahmacharya (the holy vow of celibacy and life-long study) were regarded as greatest virtues and considered as being productive of the highest power [Footnote ref 4].

As these ideas of asceticism and self-control grew the force of the flying passions was felt to be as uncontrollable as that of a spirited steed, and thus the word yoga which was originally applied to the control of steeds began to be applied to the control of the senses [Footnote ref 5].

In Pa@nini's time the word yoga had attained its technical meaning, and he distinguished this root "yuj *samadhau*" (yuj in the sense of concentration) from "yujir *yoge*" (root yujir in the sense of connecting). Yuj in the first sense is seldom used as a verb. It is more or less an imaginary root for the etymological derivation of the word yoga [Footnote ref 6].

[Footnote 1: See my *Study of Patanjali*, p. 60 ff.]

[Footnote 2: Compare R.V.I. 34. 9/VII. 67. 8/III. 27. II/X. 30. II/X. 114. 9/IV. 24. 4/I. 5. 3/I. 30. 7; S'atapatha Brahma@na 14. 7. I. II.]

[Footnote 3: It is probably an old word of the Aryan stock; compare German Joch, A.S. geoc. I atm jugum.]

[Footnote 4: See Chandogya III. 17. 4; B@rh. I. 2. 6; B@rh. III. 8. 10; Taitt. I. 9. I/III. 2. I/III. 3. I; Taitt, Brah, II. 2. 3. 3; R.V.x. 129; S'atap. Brah. XI. 5. 8. 1.]

[Footnote 5: Katha III. 4, *indriya@ni hayanahu@h vi@sayate@sugocaran*. The senses are the horses and whatever they grasp are their objects. Maitr. 2. 6. *Karmendriya@nyasya haya@h* the conative senses are its horses.]

[Footnote 6: *Yugya@h* is used from the root of *yujir yoge* and not from *yuja samadhau*. A consideration of Pa@nini's rule "Tadasya brahmacharyam," V.i. 94 shows that not only different kinds of asceticism and rigour which passed by the name of brahmacharya were prevalent in the country at the time (Pa@nini as Goldstucker has proved is pre-buddhistic), but associated with these had grown up a definite system of mental discipline which passed by the name of Yoga.]

In the *Bhagavadgita*, we find that the word yoga has been used not only in conformity with the root “*yuj-samadhau*” but also with “*yujir yoge*” This has been the source of some confusion to the readers of the *Bhagavadgita*. “Yogin” in the sense of a person who has lost himself in meditation is there regarded with extreme veneration. One of the main features of the use of this word lies in this that the *Bhagavadgita* tried to mark out a middle path between the austere discipline of meditative abstraction on the one hand and the course of duties of sacrificial action of a Vedic worshipper in the life of a new type of Yogin (evidently from *yujir yoge*) on the other, who should combine in himself the best parts of the two paths, devote himself to his duties, and yet abstract himself from all selfish motives associated with desires.

Page 207

Kau@tilya in his *Arthas'astra* when enumerating the philosophic sciences of study names Sa@mkhya, Yoga, and Lokayata. The oldest Buddhist sutras (e.g. the *Satipa@t@thana sutta*) are fully familiar with the stages of Yoga concentration. We may thus infer that self-concentration and Yoga had developed as a technical method of mystic absorption some time before the Buddha.

As regards the connection of Yoga with Sa@mkhya, as we find it in the *Yoga sutras* of Patanjali, it is indeed difficult to come to any definite conclusion. The science of breath had attracted notice in many of the earlier Upani@sads, though there had not probably developed any systematic form of pra@nayama (a system of breath control) of the Yoga system. It is only when we come to Maitraya@ni that we find that the Yoga method had attained a systematic development. The other two Upani@sads in which the Yoga ideas can be traced are the S'vetas'vatara and the Ka@tha. It is indeed curious to notice that these three Upani@sads of K@r@s@na Yajurveda, where we find reference to Yoga methods, are the only ones where we find clear references also to the Sa@mkhya tenets, though the Sa@mkhya and Yoga ideas do not appear there as related to each other or associated as parts of the same system. But there is a remarkable passage in the Maitraya@ni in the conversation between S'akyayana and B@rhad ratha where we find that the Sa@mkhya metaphysics was offered

228

in some quarters to explain the validity of the Yoga processes, and it seems therefore that the association and grafting of the Sa@mkhya metaphysics on the Yoga system as its basis, was the work of the followers of this school of ideas which was subsequently systematized by Patanjali. Thus S'akyayana says: "Here some say it is the gu@na which through the differences of nature goes into bondage to the will, and that deliverance takes place when the fault of the will has been removed, because he sees by the mind; and all that we call desire, imagination, doubt, belief, unbelief, certainty, uncertainty, shame, thought, fear, all that is but mind. Carried along by the waves of the qualities darkened in his imagination, unstable, fickle, crippled, full of desires, vacillating he enters into belief, believing I am he, this is mine, and he binds his self by his self as a bird with a net. Therefore, a man being possessed of will, imagination and belief is a slave, but he who is the opposite is free. For this reason let a man stand free from will, imagination and belief—this is the sign of liberty, this is the path that leads to Brahman, this is the opening of the door, and through it he will go to the other shore of darkness. All desires are there fulfilled. And for this, they quote a verse: 'When the five instruments of knowledge stand still together with the mind, and when the intellect does not move, that is called the highest state [Footnote ref 1].'"

An examination of such Yoga Upani@sads as S'a@n@dilya, Yogatattva, DhyanaBindu, Ha@msa, Am@rtanada, Varaha, Ma@n@dala Brahma@na, Nadabindu, and Yogaku@n@dalu, shows that the Yoga practices had undergone diverse changes in

diverse schools, but none of these show any predilection for the Sa@mkhya. Thus the Yoga practices grew in accordance with the doctrines of the

Page 208

[Footnote 1: Vatsyayana, however, in his bha@sya on *Nyaya sutra*, I. i 29, distinguishes Sa@mkhya from Yoga in the following way: The Sa@mkhya holds that nothing can come into being nor be destroyed, there cannot be any change in the pure intelligence (*niratis'aya@h cetana@h*). All changes are due to changes in the body, the senses, the manas and the objects. Yoga holds that all creation is due to the karma of the puru@sa. Do@sas (passions) and the prav@rtti (action) are the cause of karma. The intelligences or souls (cetana) are associated with qualities. Non being can come into being and what is produced may be destroyed. The last view is indeed quite different from the Yoga of *Vyasabha@sya*, It is closer to Nyaya in its doctrines. If Vatsyayana's statement is correct, it would appear that the doctrine of there being a moral purpose in creation was borrowed by Sa@mkhya from Yoga. Udyotakara's remarks on the same sutra do not indicate a difference but an agreement between Sa@mkhya and Yoga on the doctrine of the *indriyas* being "*abhautika*." Curiously enough Vatsyayana quotes a passage from *Vyasabha@sya*, III. 13, in his bha@sya, I. ii. 6, and criticizes it as self-contradictory (*viruddha*).]

229

S'aivas and S'@aktas and assumed a peculiar form as the Mantrayoga; they grew in another direction as the Ha@thayoga which was supposed to produce mystic and magical feats through constant practices of elaborate nervous exercises, which were also associated with healing and other supernatural powers. The Yogatattva Upani@sad says that there are four kinds of yoga, the Mantra Yoga, Laya Yoga, Ha@thayoga and Rajayoga [Footnote ref 1]. In some cases we find that there was a great attempt even to associate Vedantism with these mystic practices. The influence of these practices in the development of Tantra and other modes of worship was also very great, but we have to leave out these from our present consideration as they have little philosophic importance and as they are not connected with our present endeavour.

Of the Patanjala school of Sa@mkhya, which forms the subject of the Yoga with which we are now dealing, Patanjali was probably the most notable person for he not only collected the different forms of Yoga practices, and gleaned the diverse ideas which were or could be associated with the Yoga, but grafted them all on the Sa@mkhya metaphysics, and gave them the form in which they have been handed down to us. Vacaspati and Vijnana Bhik@su, the two great commentators on the *Vyasabha@sya*, agree with us in holding that Patanjali was not the founder of Yoga, but an editor. Analytic study of the sutras brings the conviction that the sutras do not show any original attempt, but a masterly and systematic compilation which was also

supplemented by fitting contributions. The systematic manner also in which the first three

Page 209

chapters are written by way of definition and classification shows that the materials were already in existence and that Patanjali systematized them. There was no missionizing zeal, no attempt to overthrow the doctrines of other systems, except as far as they might come in by way of explaining the system. Patanjali is not even anxious to establish the system, but he is only engaged in systematizing the facts as he had them. Most of the criticism against the Buddhists occur in the last chapter. The doctrines of the Yoga are described in the first three chapters, and this part is separated from the last chapter where the views of the Buddhist are

[Footnote 1: The Yoga writer Jaigi@savya wrote "*Dharanas'astra*" which dealt with Yoga more in the fashion of Tantra than that given by Patanjali. He mentions different places in the body (e.g. heart, throat, tip of the nose, palate, forehead, centre of the brain) which are centres of memory where concentration is to be made. See Vacaspati's *Tatparya@tika* or Vatsyayana's *bha@sya* on *Nyaya sutra*, III. ii. 43.]

230

criticized; the putting of an "*iti*" (the word to denote the conclusion of any work) at the end of the third chapter is evidently to denote the conclusion of his Yoga compilation. There is of course another "*iti*" at the end of the fourth chapter to denote the conclusion of the whole work. The most legitimate hypothesis seems to be that the last chapter is a subsequent addition by a hand other than that of Patanjali who was anxious to supply some new links of argument which were felt to be necessary for the strengthening of the Yoga position from an internal point of view, as well as for securing the strength of the Yoga from the supposed attacks of Buddhist metaphysics. There is also a marked change (due either to its supplementary character or to the manipulation of a foreign hand) in the style of the last chapter as compared with the style of the other three.

The sutras, 30-34, of the last chapter seem to repeat what has already been said in the second chapter and some of the topics introduced are such that they could well have been dealt with in a more relevant manner in connection with similar discussions in the preceding chapters. The extent of this chapter is also disproportionately small, as it contains only 34 sutras, whereas the average number of sutras in other chapters is between 51 to 55.

We have now to meet the vexed question of the probable date of this famous Yoga author Patanjali. Weber had tried to connect him with Kapya Pata@mchala of S'atapatha Brahma@na [Footnote ref I]; in Katyayana's *Varttika* we get the name Patanjali which is explained by later commentators as *patanta@h anjalaya@h yasmai*

(for whom the hands are folded as a mark of reverence), but it is indeed difficult to come to any conclusion merely from the similarity of names.

Page 210

There is however another theory which identifies the writer of the great commentary on Pa@nini called the *Mahabha@sya* with the Patanjali of the *Yoga sutra*. This theory has been accepted by many western scholars probably on the strength of some Indian commentators who identified the two Patanjalis. Of these one is the writer of the *Patanjalicarita* (Ramabhadra Dik@sita) who could not have flourished earlier than the eighteenth century. The other is that cited in S'ivarama's commentary on *Vasavadatta* which Aufrecht assigns to the eighteenth century. The other two are king Bhoja of Dhar and Cakrapa@nidatta,

[Footnote 1: Weber's *History of Indian Literature*, p. 223 n.]

231

the commentator of *Caraka*, who belonged to the eleventh century A.D. Thus Cakrapa@ni says that he adores the Ahipati (mythical serpent chief) who removed the defects of mind, speech and body by his *Patanjala mahabha@sya* and the revision of *Caraka*. Bhoja says: "Victory be to the luminous words of that illustrious sovereign Ra@nara@nigamalla who by composing his grammar, by writing his commentary on the Patanjala and by producing a treatise on medicine called *Rajam@rga@nka* has like the lord of the holder of serpents removed defilement from speech, mind and body." The adoration hymn of Vyasa (which is considered to be an interpolation even by orthodox scholars) is also based upon the same tradition. It is not impossible therefore that the later Indian commentators might have made some confusion between the three Patanjalis, the grammarian, the Yoga editor, and the medical writer to whom is ascribed the book known as *Patanjalatantra*, and who has been quoted by S'ivadasa in his commentary on *Cakradatta* in connection with the heating of metals.

Professor J.H. Woods of Harvard University is therefore in a way justified in his unwillingness to identify the grammarian and the Yoga editor on the slender evidence of these commentators. It is indeed curious to notice that the great commentators of the grammar school such as Bhart@rhari, Kaiyya@ta, Vamana, Jayaditya, Nages'a, etc. are silent on this point. This is indeed a point against the identification of the two Patanjalis by some Yoga and medical commentators of a later age. And if other proofs are available which go against such an identification, we could not think the grammarian and the Yoga writer to be the same person.

Let us now see if Patanjali's grammatical work contains anything which may lead us to think that he was not the same person as the writer on Yoga. Professor Woods supposes that the philosophic concept of substance (*dravya*) of the two Patanjalis

differs and therefore they cannot be identified. He holds that *dravya* is described in *Vyasabha@sya* in one place as being the unity of species and qualities (*samanyavis'e@satmaka*), whereas the *Mahabha@sya* holds that a *dravya* denotes a genus and also specific qualities according as the emphasis or stress is laid on either side. I fail to see how these ideas are totally antagonistic. Moreover, we know that these two views were held by

Page 211

232

Vya@di and Vajapyayana (Vya@di holding that words denoted qualities or dravya and Vajapyayana holding that words denoted species [Footnote ref 1]). Even Pa@nini had these two different ideas in “*jatyakhyayamekasmin bahuvacanamanyatarasyam*” and “*sarupanamekas’e@samekavibhaktau*,” and Patanjali the writer of the *Mahabha@sya* only combined these two views. This does not show that he opposes the view of Vyasabha@sya, though we must remember that even if he did, that would not prove anything with regard to the writer of the sutras. Moreover, when we read that dravya is spoken of in the *Mahabha@sya* as that object which is the specific kind of the conglomeration of its parts, just as a cow is of its tail, hoofs, horns, etc.—“*yat sasnala@ngulakakudakhuravi@sa@nyartharupam*,” we are reminded of its similarity with “*ayutasiddhavayavabhedanugata@h samuha@h dravyam*” (a conglomeration of interrelated parts is called dravya) in the *Vyasabhasya*. So far as I have examined the *Mahabha@sya* I have not been able to discover anything there which can warrant us in holding that the two Patanjalis cannot be identified. There are no doubt many apparent divergences of view, but even in these it is only the traditional views of the old grammarians that are exposed and reconciled, and it would be very unwarrantable for us to judge anything about the personal views of the grammarian from them. I am also convinced that the writer of the *Mahabha@sya* knew most of the important points of the Sa@mkhya-Yoga metaphysics; as a few examples I may refer to the gu@na theory (1. 2. 64, 4. 1. 3), the Sa@mkhya dictum of ex nihilo nihil fit (1. 1. 56), the ideas of time (2. 2. 5, 3. 2. 123), the idea of the return of similars into similars (1. 1. 50), the idea of change *vikara* as production of new qualities *gu@nantaradhana* (5. 1. 2, 5. 1. 3) and the distinction of indriya and Buddhi (3. 3. 133). We may add to it that the *Mahabha@sya* agrees with the Yoga view as regards the Spho@tavada, which is not held in common by any other school of Indian philosophy. There is also this external similarity, that unlike any other work they both begin their works in a similar manner (*atha yoganus’asanam* and *athas’abdanus’asanam*)—“now begins the compilation of the instructions on Yoga” (*Yoga sutra*)—and “now begins the compilation of the instructions of words” (*Mahabha@sya*).

It may further be noticed in this connection that the arguments

[Footnote 1: Patanjali’s *Mahabha@sya*, 1. 2. 64.]

233

Page 212

which Professor Woods has adduced to assign the date of the *Yoga sutra* between 300 and 500 A.D. are not at all conclusive, as they stand on a weak basis; for firstly if the two Patanjalis cannot be identified, it does not follow that the editor of the *Yoga* should necessarily be made later; secondly, the supposed Buddhist [Footnote ref 1] reference is found in the fourth chapter which, as I have shown above, is a later interpolation; thirdly, even if they were written by Patanjali it cannot be inferred that because Vacaspati describes the opposite school as being of the *Vijnana-vadi* type, we are to infer that the sutras refer to Vasubandhu or even to Nagarjuna, for such ideas as have been refuted in the sutras had been developing long before the time of Nagarjuna.

Thus we see that though the tradition of later commentators may not be accepted as a sufficient ground to identify the two Patanjalis, we cannot discover anything from a comparative critical study of the *Yoga sutras* and the text of the *Mahabhasya*, which can lead us to say that the writer of the *Yoga sutras* flourished at a later date than the other Patanjali.

Postponing our views about the time of Patanjali the *Yoga* editor, I regret I have to increase the confusion by introducing the other work *Kitab Patanjali*, of which Alberuni speaks, for our consideration. Alberuni considers this work as a very famous one and he translates it along with another book called *Sanka* (Sa@mkhya) ascribed to Kapila. This book was written in the form of dialogue between master and pupil, and it is certain that this book was not the present *Yoga sutra* of Patanjali, though it had the same aim as the latter, namely the search for liberation and for the union of the soul with the object of its meditation. The book was called by Alberuni *Kitab Patanjali*, which is to be translated as the book of Patanjala, because in another place, speaking of its author, he puts in a Persian phrase which when translated stands as “the author of the book of Patanjali.” It had also an elaborate commentary from which Alberuni quotes many extracts, though he does not tell us the author’s name. It treats of God, soul, bondage, karma, salvation, etc., as we find in the *Yoga sutra*, but the manner in which these are described (so

[Footnote 1: It is important to notice that the most important Buddhist reference *naraika-cittatantram vastu tadaprama@nakam tada kim syat* (IV. 16) was probably a line of the *Vyasabhasya*, as Bhoja, who had consulted many commentaries as he says in the preface, does not count it as *sutra*.]

Page 213

far as can be judged from the copious extracts supplied by Alberuni) shows that these ideas had undergone some change from what we find in the *Yoga sutra*. Following the idea of God in Alberuni we find that he retains his character as a timeless emancipated being, but he speaks, hands over the Vedas and shows the way to Yoga and inspires men in such a way that they could obtain by cogitation what he bestowed on them. The name of God proves his existence, for there cannot exist anything of which the name existed, but not the thing. The soul perceives him and thought comprehends his qualities. Meditation is identical with worshipping him exclusively, and by practising it uninterruptedly the individual comes into supreme absorption with him and beatitude is obtained [Footnote ref 1].

The idea of soul is the same as we find in the *Yoga sutra*. The idea of metempsychosis is also the same. He speaks of the eight siddhis (miraculous powers) at the first stage of meditation on the unity of God. Then follow the other four stages of meditation corresponding to the four stages we have as in the *Yoga sutra*. He gives four kinds of ways for the achievement of salvation, of which the first is the *abhyasa* (habit) of Patanjali, and the object of this *abhyasa* is unity with God [Footnote ref 2]. The second stands for *vairagya*; the third is the worship of God with a view to seek his favour in the attainment of salvation (cf. *Yoga sutra*, I. 23 and I. 29). The fourth is a new introduction, namely that of *rasayana* or alchemy. As regards liberation the view is almost the same as in the *Yoga sutra*, II. 25 and IV. 34, but the liberated state is spoken of in one place as absorption in God or being one with him. The Brahman is conceived as an *urddhvamula avaks'akha as'vattha* (a tree with roots upwards and branches below), after the Upani@sad fashion, the upper root is pure Brahman, the trunk is Veda, the branches are the different doctrines and schools, its leaves are the different modes of interpretation. Its nourishment comes from the three forces; the

[Footnote 1: Cf. *Yoga sutra* I. 23-29 and II. 1, 45. The *Yoga sutras* speak of Is'vara (God) as an eternally emancipated puru@sa, omniscient, and the teacher of all past teachers. By meditating on him many of the obstacles such as illness, etc., which stand in the way of Yoga practice are removed. He is regarded as one of the alternative objects of concentration. The commentator Vyasa notes that he is the best object, for being drawn towards the Yogin by his concentration. He so wills that he can easily attain concentration and through it salvation. No argument is given in the *Yoga sutras* of the existence of God.]

[Footnote 2: Cf. *Yoga* II. 1.]

object of the worshipper is to leave the tree and go back to the roots.

Page 214

The difference of this system from that of the *Yoga sutra* is: (1) the conception of God has risen here to such an importance that he has become the only object of meditation, and absorption in him is the goal; (2) the importance of the yama [Footnote ref 1] and the niyama has been reduced to the minimum; (3) the value of the Yoga discipline as a separate means of salvation apart from any connection with God as we find in the *Yoga sutra* has been lost sight of; (4) liberation and Yoga are defined as absorption in God; (5) the introduction of Brahman; (6) the very significance of Yoga as control of mental states (*citta@rttinirodha*) is lost sight of, and (7) rasayana (alchemy) is introduced as one of the means of salvation.

From this we can fairly assume that this was a new modification of the Yoga doctrine on the basis of Patanjali's *Yoga sutra* in the direction of Vedanta and Tantra, and as such it probably stands as the transition link through which the Yoga doctrine of the sutras entered into a new channel in such a way that it could be easily assimilated from there by later developments of Vedanta, Tantra and S'aiva doctrines [Footnote ref 2]. As the author mentions rasayana as a means of salvation, it is very probable that he flourished after Nagarjuna and was probably the same person who wrote *Patanjala tantra*, who has been quoted by S'ivadasa in connection with alchemical matters and spoken of by Nages'a as "*Carake Patanjali@h.*" We can also assume with some degree of probability that it is with reference to this man that Cakrapa@ni and Bhoja made the confusion of identifying him with the writer of the *Mahabha@sya*. *It is also very probable that Cakrapa@ni by his line*

"patanjalamahabha@syacarakapratisa@msk@rtai@h_" refers to this work which was called "*Patanjala.*" The commentator of this work gives some description of the lokas, dvipas and the sagaras, which runs counter to the descriptions given in the *Vyasabha@sya*, III. 26, and from this we can infer that it was probably written at a time when the *Vyasabha@sya* was not written or had not attained any great sanctity or authority. Alberuni

[Footnote 1: Alberuni, in his account of the book of Sa@mkhya, gives a list of commandments which practically is the same as yama and niyama, but it is said that through them one cannot attain salvation.]

[Footnote 2: Cf. the account of *Pas'upatadars'ana* in *Sarvadas'anasa@mgraha.*]

also described the book as being very famous at the time, and Bhoja and Cakrapa@ni also probably confused him with Patanjali the grammarian; from this we can fairly

assume that this book of Patanjali was probably written by some other Patanjali within the first 300 or 400 years of the Christian era; and it may not be improbable that when *Vyasabha@sya* quotes in III. 44 as “*iti Patanjali@h*,” he refers to this Patanjali.

Page 215

The conception of Yoga as we meet it in the Maitraya@na Upani@sad consisted of six a@ngas or accessories, namely pra@nayama, pratyahara, dhyana, dhara@na, tarka and samadhi [Footnote ref 1]. Comparing this list with that of the list in the *Yoga sutras* we find that two new elements have been added, and tarka has been replaced by asana. Now from the account of the sixty-two heresies given in the *Brahmajala sutta* we know that there were people who either from meditation of three degrees or through logic and reasoning had come to believe that both the external world as a whole and individual souls were eternal. From the association of this last mentioned logical school with the Samadhi or Dhyana school as belonging to one class of thinkers called s'as'vatavada, and from the inclusion of tarka as an a@nga in samadhi, we can fairly assume that the last of the a@ngas given in Maitraya@ni Upani@sad represents the oldest list of the Yoga doctrine, when the Sa@mkhya and the Yoga were in a process of being grafted on each other, and when the Sa@mkhya method of discussion did not stand as a method independent of the Yoga. The substitution of asana for tarka in the list of Patanjali shows that the Yoga had developed a method separate from the Sa@mkhya. The introduction of ahi@msa (non-injury), satya (truthfulness), asteya (want of stealing), brahmacaryya (sex-control), aparigraha (want of greed) as yama and s'auca (purity), santo@sa (contentment) as niyama, as a system of morality without which Yoga is deemed impossible (for the first time in the sutras), probably marks the period when the disputes between the Hindus and the Buddhists had not become so keen. The introduction of maitri, karu@na, mudita, upek@sa is also equally significant, as we do not find them mentioned in such a prominent form in any other literature of the Hindus dealing with the subject of emancipation. Beginning from the *Acara@ngasutra*, *Uttaradhyayanastotra*,

[Footnote 1: pra@nayamah pratyaharah dhyanam dhara@na tarkah samadhih sa@da@nga ityucyate yoga (Maitr. 6 8).]

237

the *Sutrak@rta@ngasutra*, etc., and passing through Umasvati's *Tattvarthadhigamasutra* to Hemacandra's *Yogas'astra* we find that the Jains had been founding their Yoga discipline mainly on the basis of a system of morality indicated by the yamas, and the opinion expressed in Alberuni's *Patanjal* that these cannot give salvation marks the divergence of the Hindus in later days from the Jains. Another important characteristic of Yoga is its thoroughly pessimistic tone. Its treatment of sorrow in connection with the statement of the scope and ideal of Yoga is the same as that of the four sacred truths of the Buddhists, namely suffering, origin of suffering, the

removal of suffering, and of the path to the removal of suffering [Footnote ref 1]. Again, the metaphysics of the sa@msara

Page 216

(rebirth) cycle in connection with sorrow, origination, decease, rebirth, etc. is described with a remarkable degree of similarity with the cycle of causes as described in early Buddhism. Avidya is placed at the head of the group; yet this avidya should not be confused with the Vedanta avidya of S'a@nkara, as it is an avidya of the Buddhist type; it is not a cosmic power of illusion nor anything like a mysterious original sin, but it is within the range of earthly tangible reality. Yoga avidya is the ignorance of the four sacred truths, as we have in the sutra "*anityas'ucidu@hkhanatmasu nityas'ucidu@hkhatmakhyatiravidya*" (II. 5).

The ground of our existing is our will to live (*abhinives'a*). "This is our besetting sin that we will to be, that we will to be ourselves, that we fondly will our being to blend with other kinds of existence and extend. The negation of the will to be, cuts off being for us at least [Footnote ref 2]." This is true as much of Buddhism as of the Yoga abhinives'a, which is a term coined and used in the Yoga for the first time to suit the Buddhist idea, and which has never been accepted, so far as I know, in any other Hindu literature in this sense. My sole aim in pointing out these things in this section is to show that the *Yoga sutras* proper (first three chapters) were composed at a time when the later forms of Buddhism had not developed, and when the quarrels between the Hindus and the Buddhists and Jains had not reached such

[Footnote 1: *Yoga sutra*, II. 15, 16, 17. *Yathacikitsas'astra@m caturvyuha@m rogo rogahetuh arogya@m bhais'ajyamiti evamidamapi s'astram caturvyuhameva; tadyatha sa@msara@h, sa@msarahetu@h mok@sa@h mok@sopaya@h; duhkhabahula@h sa@msaro heya@h, pradhanapuru@sayo@h sa@myogo heyahetu@h, sa@myogasyatyantiki niv@rttirhana@m hanopaya@h samyagdar`sanam, Vyasabha@sya*, II. 15]

[Footnote 2: Oldenberg's *Buddhism* [Footnote ref 1].]

238

a stage that they would not like to borrow from one another. As this can only be held true of earlier Buddhism I am disposed to think that the date of the first three chapters of the *Yoga sutras* must be placed about the second century B.C. Since there is no evidence which can stand in the way of identifying the grammarian Patanjali with the Yoga writer, I believe we may take them as being identical [Footnote ref 1].

The Sa@mkhya and the Yoga Doctrine of Soul or Puru@sa.

The Sa@mkhya philosophy as we have it now admits two principles, souls and *prak@rti*, the root principle of matter. Souls are many, like the Jaina souls, but they are without parts and qualities. They do not contract or expand according as they occupy a smaller or a larger body, but are always all-pervasive, and are not contained in the bodies in which they are manifested. But the relation between body or rather the mind associated with it and soul is such that whatever mental phenomena happen in the mind are interpreted as the experience of its soul. The souls are many, and had it not been so (the Sa@mkhya argues) with the birth of one all would have been born and with the death of one all would have died [Footnote ref 2].

Page 217

The exact nature of soul is however very difficult of comprehension, and yet it is exactly this which one must thoroughly grasp in order to understand the Sa@mkhya philosophy. Unlike the Jaina soul possessing *anantajnana*, *anantadars'ana*, *anantasukha*, and *anantaviryya*, the Sa@mkhya soul is described as being devoid of any and every characteristic; but its nature is absolute pure consciousness (*cit*). The Sa@mkhya view differs from the Vedanta, firstly in this that it does not consider the soul to be of the nature of pure intelligence and bliss (*ananda*) [Footnote ref 3]. Bliss with Sa@mkhya is but another name for pleasure and as such it belongs to prak@rti and does not constitute the nature of soul; secondly, according to Vedanta the individual souls (*Jiva*) are

[Footnote 1: See S.N. Das Gupta, *Yoga Philosophy in relation to other Indian systems of thought*, ch. II. The most important point in favour of this identification seems to be that both the Patanjalis as against the other Indian systems admitted the doctrine of *spho@ta* which was denied even by Sa@mkhya. On the doctrine of Spho@ta see my *Study of Patanjali*, Appendix I.]

[Footnote 2: *Karika*, 18.]

[Footnote 3: See Citsukha's *Tattvapradipika*, IV.]

239

but illusory manifestations of one soul or pure consciousness the Brahman, but according to Sa@mkhya they are all real and many.

The most interesting feature of Sa@mkhya as of Vedanta is the analysis of knowledge. Sa@mkhya holds that our knowledge of things are mere ideational pictures or images. External things are indeed material, but the sense data and images of the mind, the coming and going of which is called knowledge, are also in some sense matter-stuff, since they are limited in their nature like the external things. The sense-data and images come and go, they are often the prototypes, or photographs of external things, and as such ought to be considered as in some sense material, but the matter of which these are composed is the subtlest. These images of the mind could not have appeared as conscious, if there were no separate principles of consciousness in connection with which the whole conscious plane could be interpreted as the experience of a person [Footnote ref 1]. We know that the Upani@sads consider the soul or atman as pure and infinite consciousness, distinct from the forms of knowledge, the ideas, and the images. In our ordinary ways of mental analysis we do not detect

that beneath the forms of knowledge there is some other principle which has no change, no form, but which is like a light which illumines the mute, pictorial forms which the mind assumes. The self is nothing but this light. We all speak of our "self" but we have no mental picture of the self as we have of other things, yet in all

Page 218

our knowledge we seem to know our self. The Jains had said that the soul was veiled by karma matter, and every act of knowledge meant only the partial removal of the veil. Sa@mkhya says that the self cannot be found as an image of knowledge, but that is because it is a distinct, transcendent principle, whose real nature as such is behind or beyond the subtle matter of knowledge. Our cognitions, so far as they are mere forms or images, are merely compositions or complexes of subtle mind-substance, and thus are like a sheet of painted canvas immersed in darkness; as the canvas gets prints from outside and moves, the pictures appear one by one before the light and are illuminated. So it is with our knowledge. The special characteristic of self is that it is like a light, without which all knowledge would be blind. Form and motion are the characteristics of matter, and

[Footnote 1: *Tattakaumudi* 5; *Yogavarttika*, IV. 22; *Vijnanam@rtabha@sya*, p. 74; *Yogavarttika* and *Tattvavais'aradi*, I. 4, II. 6, 18, 20; *Vyasabha@sya*, I. 6, 7.]

240

so far as knowledge is mere limited form and movement it is the same as matter; but there is some other principle which enlivens these knowledge-forms, by virtue of which they become conscious. This principle of consciousness (*cit*) cannot indeed be separately perceived *per se*, but the presence of this principle in all our forms of knowledge is distinctly indicated by inference. This principle of consciousness has no motion, no form, no quality, no impurity [Footnote ref 1]. The movement of the knowledge-stuff takes place in relation to it, so that it is illuminated as consciousness by it, and produces the appearance of itself as undergoing all changes of knowledge and experiences of pleasure and pain. Each item of knowledge so far as it is an image or a picture of some sort is but a subtle knowledge-stuff which has been illumined by the principle of consciousness, but so far as each item of knowledge carries with it the awakening or the enlivening of consciousness, it is the manifestation of the principle of consciousness. Knowledge-revelation is not just the unveiling or revelation of a particular part of the self, as the Jains supposed, but it is a revelation of the self only so far as knowledge is pure awakening, pure enlivening, pure consciousness. So far as the content of knowledge or the image is concerned, it is not the revelation of self but is the blind knowledge-stuff.

Page 219

The Buddhists had analysed knowledge into its diverse constituent parts, and had held that the coming together of these brought about the conscious states. This coming together was to them the point of the illusory notion of self, since this unity or coming together was not a permanent thing but a momentary collocation. With Sa@mkhya however the self, the pure *cit*, is neither illusory nor an abstraction; it is concrete but transcendent. Coming into touch with it gives unity to all the movements of the knowledge-composites of subtle stuff, which would otherwise have remained aimless and unintelligent. It is by coming into connection with this principle of intelligence that they are interpreted as the systematic and coherent experience of a person, and may thus be said to be intelligized. Intelligizing means the expression and interpretation of the events or the happenings of

[Footnote 1: It is important to note that Sa@mkhya has two terms to denote the two aspects involved in knowledge, viz. the relating element of awareness as such (*cit*) and the content (*buddhi*) which is the form of the mind-stuff representing the sense-data and the image. Cognition takes place by the reflection of the former in the latter.]

241

knowledge in connection with a person, so as to make them a system of experience. This principle of intelligence is called puru@sa. There is a separate puru@sa in Sa@mkhya for each individual, and it is of the nature of pure intelligence. The Vedanta atman however is different from the Sa@mkhya puru@sa in this that it is one and is of the nature of pure intelligence, pure being, and pure bliss. It alone is the reality and by illusory maya it appears as many.

Thought and Matter.

A question naturally arises, that if the knowledge forms are made up of some sort of stuff as the objective forms of matter are, why then should the puru@sa illuminate it and not external material objects. The answer that Sa@mkhya gives is that the knowledge-complexes are certainly different from external objects in this, that they are far subtler and have a preponderance of a special quality of plasticity and translucence (*sattva*), which resembles the light of puru@sa, and is thus fit for reflecting and absorbing the light of the puru@sa. The two principal characteristics of external gross matter are mass and energy. But it has also the other characteristic of allowing itself to be photographed by our mind; this thought-photograph of matter has again the special privilege of being so translucent as to be able to catch the reflection of the *cit*—the super-translucent transcendent principle of intelligence. The fundamental characteristic

of external gross matter is its mass; energy is common to both gross matter and the subtle thought-stuff. But mass is at its lowest minimum

Page 220

in thought-stuff, whereas the capacity of translucence, or what may be otherwise designated as the intelligence-stuff, is at its highest in thought-stuff. But if the gross matter had none of the characteristics of translucence that thought possesses, it could not have made itself an object of thought; for thought transforms itself into the shape, colour, and other characteristics of the thing which has been made its object. Thought could not have copied the matter, if the matter did not possess some of the essential substances of which the copy was made up. But this plastic entity (*sattva*) which is so predominant in thought is at its lowest limit of subordination in matter. Similarly mass is not noticed in thought, but some such notions as are associated with mass may be discernible in

242

thought; thus the images of thought are limited, separate, have movement, and have more or less clear cut forms. The images do not extend in space, but they can represent space. The translucent and plastic element of thought (*sattva*) in association with movement (*rajas*) would have resulted in a simultaneous revelation of all objects; it is on account of mass or tendency of obstruction (*tamas*) that knowledge proceeds from image to image and discloses things in a successive manner. The buddhi (thought-stuff) holds within it all knowledge immersed as it were in utter darkness, and actual knowledge comes before our view as though by the removal of the darkness or veil, by the reflection of the light of the *puru@sa*. This characteristic of knowledge, that all its stores are hidden as if lost at any moment, and only one picture or idea comes at a time to the arena of revelation, demonstrates that in knowledge there is a factor of obstruction which manifests itself in its full actuality in gross matter as mass. Thus both thought and gross matter are made up of three elements, a plasticity of intelligence-stuff (*sattva*), energy-stuff (*rajas*), and mass-stuff (*tamas*), or the factor of obstruction. Of these the last two are predominant in gross matter and the first two in thought.

Feelings, the Ultimate Substances [Footnote ref 1].

Another question that arises in this connection is the position of feeling in such an analysis of thought and matter. Samkhya holds that the three characteristic constituents that we have analyzed just now are feeling substances. Feeling is the most interesting side of our consciousness. It is in our feelings that we think of our thoughts as being parts of ourselves. If we should analyze any percept into the crude and undeveloped sensations of which it is composed at the first moment of its appearance, it comes more as a shock than as an image, and we find that it is felt more as a feeling mass than as an image. Even in our ordinary life the elements which precede an act of knowledge are probably mere feelings. As we go lower down the scale of evolution the automatic actions and relations of matter are concomitant with crude manifestations of feeling which never rise to the level of knowledge. The lower the scale of evolution the less is

the keenness of feeling, till at last there comes a stage where matter-complexes do not give rise to feeling

Page 221

[Footnote 1: *Karika*, 12, with Gau@dpada and Naraya@natirtha.]

243

reactions but to mere physical reactions. Feelings thus mark the earliest track of consciousness, whether we look at it from the point of view of evolution or of the genesis of consciousness in ordinary life. What we call matter complexes become at a certain stage feeling-complexes and what we call feeling-complexes at a certain stage of descent sink into mere matter-complexes with matter reaction. The feelings are therefore the things-in-themselves, the ultimate substances of which consciousness and gross matter are made up. Ordinarily a difficulty might be felt in taking feelings to be the ultimate substances of which gross matter and thought are made up; for we are more accustomed to take feelings as being merely subjective, but if we remember the Sa@mkhya analysis, we find that it holds that thought and matter are but two different modifications of certain subtle substances which are in essence but three types of feeling entities. The three principal characteristics of thought and matter that we have noticed in the preceding section are but the manifestations of three types of feeling substances. There is the class of feelings that we call the sorrowful, there is another class of feelings that we call pleasurable, and there is still another class which is neither sorrowful nor pleasurable, but is one of ignorance, depression (*vi@sada*) or dullness. Thus corresponding to these three types of manifestations as pleasure, pain, and dullness, and materially as shining (*prakas'a*), energy (*prav@rtti*), obstruction (*niyama*), there are three types of feeling-substances which must be regarded as the ultimate things which make up all the diverse kinds of gross matter and thought by their varying modifications.

The Gu@nas [Footnote ref 1].

These three types of ultimate subtle entities are technically called *gu@na* in Sa@mkhya philosophy. Gu@na in Sanskrit has three meanings, namely (1) quality, (2) rope, (3) not primary. These entities, however, are substances and not mere qualities. But it may be mentioned in this connection that in Sa@mkhya philosophy there is no separate existence of qualities; it holds that each and every unit of quality is but a unit of substance. What we call quality is but a particular manifestation or appearance of a subtle entity. Things do not possess quality, but quality

[Footnote 1: *Yogavarttika*, ll. 18; Bhavaga@nes'a's *Tattvayatharthyadipana*, pp. 1-3; *Vijnanam@rtabha@sya*, p. 100; *Tattvakaumudi*, 13; also Gau@dapada and Naraya@natirtha, 13.]

244

Page 222

signifies merely the manner in which a substance reacts; any object we see seems to possess many qualities, but the Sa@mkhya holds that corresponding to each and every new unit of quality, however fine and subtle it may be, there is a corresponding subtle entity, the reaction of which is interpreted by us as a quality. This is true not only of qualities of external objects but also of mental qualities as well. These ultimate entities were thus called gu@nas probably to suggest that they are the entities which by their various modifications manifest themselves as gu@nas or qualities. These subtle entities may also be called gu@nas in the sense of ropes because they are like ropes by which the soul is chained down as if it were to thought and matter. These may also be called gu@nas as things of secondary importance, because though permanent and indestructible, they continually suffer modifications and changes by their mutual groupings and re-groupings, and thus not primarily and unalterably constant like the souls (*puru@sa*). Moreover the object of the world process being the enjoyment and salvation of the *puru@sas*, the matter-principle could not naturally be regarded as being of primary importance. But in whatever senses we may be inclined to justify the name gu@na as applied to these subtle entities, it should be borne in mind that they are substantive entities or subtle substances and not abstract qualities. These gu@nas are infinite in number, but in accordance with their three main characteristics as described above they have been arranged in three classes or types called *sattva* (intelligence-stuff), *rajas* (energy-stuff) and *tamas* (mass-stuff). An infinite number of subtle substances which agree in certain characteristics of self-shining or plasticity are called the *sattva-gu@nas* and those which behave as units of activity are called the *rajo-gu@nas* and those which behave as factors of obstruction, mass or materiality are called *tamo-gu@nas*. These subtle gu@na substances are united in different proportions (e.g. a larger number of *sattva* substances with a lesser number of *rajas* or *tamas*, or a larger number of *tamas* substances with a smaller number of *rajas* and *sattva* substances and so on in varying proportions), and as a result of this, different substances with different qualities come into being. Though attached to one another when united in different proportions, they mutually act and react upon one another, and thus by their combined resultant produce new characters, qualities and substances. There is however

Page 223

one and only one stage in which the gu@nas are not compounded in varying proportions. In this state each of the gu@na substances is opposed by each of the other gu@na substances, and thus by their equal mutual opposition create an equilibrium, in which none of the characters of the gu@nas manifest themselves. This is a state which is so absolutely devoid of all characteristics that it is absolutely incoherent, indeterminate, and indefinite. It is a qualitiless simple homogeneity. It is a state of being which is as it were non-being. This state of the mutual equilibrium of the gu@nas is called prak@rti [Footnote ref 1]. This is a state which cannot be said either to exist or to non-exist for it serves no purpose, but it is hypothetically the mother of all things. This is however the earliest stage, by the breaking of which, later on, all modifications take place.

Prak@rti and its Evolution.

Sa@mkhya believes that before this world came into being there was such a state of dissolution—a state in which the gu@na compounds had disintegrated into a state of disunion and had by their mutual opposition produced an equilibrium the prak@rti. Then later on disturbance arose in the prak@rti, and as a result of that a process of unequal aggregation of the gu@nas in varying proportions took place, which brought forth the creation of the manifold. Prak@rti, the state of perfect homogeneity and incoherence of the gu@nas, thus gradually evolved and became more and more determinate, differentiated, heterogeneous, and coherent. The gu@nas are always uniting, separating, and uniting again [Footnote ref 2]. Varying qualities of essence, energy, and mass in varied groupings act on one another and through their mutual interaction and interdependence evolve from the indefinite or qualitatively indeterminate the definite or qualitatively determinate. And though co-operating to produce the world of effects, these diverse moments with diverse tendencies never coalesce. Thus in the phenomenal product whatever energy there is is due to the element of rajas and rajas alone; all matter, resistance, stability, is due to tamas, and all conscious manifestation to sattva. The particular gu@na which happens to be predominant in any phenomenon becomes manifest in that phenomenon and others become latent, though their presence is inferred by their

[Footnote 1: *Yogavarttika*, II. 19, and *Pravacanabha@sya*, I. 61.]

[Footnote 2: *Kaumudi* 13-16; *Tattvavais'aradi* II. 20, IV. 13, 14; also *Yogavarttika*, IV. 13,14.]

Page 224

effect. Thus, for example, in a body at rest mass is patent, energy latent and potentiality of conscious manifestation sublatent. In a moving body, the rajas is predominant (kinetic) and the mass is partially overcome. All these transformations of the groupings of the gu@nas in different proportions presuppose the state of prak@rti as the starting point. It is at this stage that the tendencies to conscious manifestation, as well as the powers of doing work, are exactly counterbalanced by the resistance of inertia or mass, and the process of cosmic evolution is at rest. When this equilibrium is once destroyed, it is supposed that out of a natural affinity of all the sattva reals for themselves, of rajas reals for other reals of their type, of tamas reals for others of their type, there arises an unequal aggregation of sattva, rajas, or tamas at different moments. When one gu@na is preponderant in any particular collocation, the others are co-operant. This evolutionary series beginning from the first disturbance of the prak@rti to the final transformation as the world-order, is subject to “a definite law which it cannot overstep.” In the words of Dr B.N.Seal [Footnote ref 1], “the process of evolution consists in the development of the differentiated (*vai@samya*) within the undifferentiated (*samyavastha*) of the determinate (*vies’a*) within the indeterminate (*avis’esa*) of the coherent (*yutasiddha*) within the incoherent (*ayutasiddha*). The order of succession is neither from parts to whole nor from whole to the parts, but ever from a relatively less differentiated, less determinate, less coherent whole to a relatively more differentiated, more determinate, more coherent whole.” The meaning of such an evolution is this, that all the changes and modifications in the shape of the evolving collocations of gu@na reals take place within the body of the prak@rti. Prak@rti consisting of the infinite reals is infinite, and that it has been disturbed does not mean that the whole of it has been disturbed and upset, or that the totality of the gu@nas in the prak@rti has been unhinged from a state of equilibrium. It means rather that a very vast number of gu@nas constituting the worlds of thought and matter has been upset. These gu@nas once thrown out of balance begin to group themselves together first in one form, then in another, then in another, and so on. But such a change in the formation of aggregates should not be thought to take place in such a way that the later aggregates appear in supersession of the former ones, so that when the former comes into being the latter ceases to exist.

[Footnote 1: Dr B.N. Seal’s *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*, 1915, p.7.]

Page 225

For the truth is that one stage is produced after another; this second stage is the result of a new aggregation of some of the reals of the first stage. This deficiency of the reals of the first stage which had gone forth to form the new aggregate as the second stage is made good by a refilling from the prak@rti. So also, as the third stage of aggregation takes place from out of the reals of the second stage, the deficiency of the reals of the second stage is made good by a refilling from the first stage and that of the first stage from the prak@rti. Thus by a succession of refillings the process of evolution proceeds, till we come to its last limit, where there is no real evolution of new substance, but mere chemical and physical changes of qualities in things which had already evolved. Evolution (*tattvantarapari@nama*) in Sa@mkhya means the development of categories of existence and not mere changes of qualities of substances (physical, chemical, biological or mental). Thus each of the stages of evolution remains as a permanent category of being, and offers scope to the more and more differentiated and coherent groupings of the succeeding stages. Thus it is said that the evolutionary process is regarded as a differentiation of new stages as integrated in previous stages (*sa@ms@rstaviveka*).

Pralaya and the disturbance of the Prak@rti Equilibrium.

But how or rather why prak@rti should be disturbed is the most knotty point in Sa@mkhya. It is postulated that the prak@rti or the sum-total of the gu@nas is so connected with the puru@sas, and there is such an inherent teleology or blind purpose in the lifeless prak@rti, that all its evolution and transformations take place for the sake of the diverse puru@sas, to serve the enjoyment of pleasures and sufferance of pain through experiences, and finally leading them to absolute freedom or mukti. A return of this manifold world into the quiescent state (*pralaya*) of prak@rti takes place when the karmas of all puru@sas collectively require that there should be such a temporary cessation of all experience. At such a moment the gu@na compounds are gradually broken, and there is a backward movement (*pratisancara*) till everything is reduced, to the gu@nas in their elementary disintegrated state when their mutual opposition brings about their equilibrium. This equilibrium however is not a mere passive state, but one of utmost tension; there is intense activity, but the activity here does not lead to the generation of new things and qualities (*visad@rs'a-pari@nama*); this course of new

Page 226

production being suspended, the activity here repeats the same state (*sad@rs'a-pari@nama*) of equilibrium, so that there is no change or new production. The state of pralaya thus is not a suspension of the teleology or purpose of the *gu@nas*, or an absolute break of the course of *gu@na* evolution; for the state of pralaya, since it has been generated to fulfil the demands of the accumulated karmas of *puru@sas*, and since there is still the activity of the *gu@nas* in keeping themselves in a state of suspended production, is also a stage of the *sa@msara* cycle. The state of *mukti* (liberation) is of course quite different, for in that stage the movement of the *gu@nas* ceases forever with reference to the liberated soul. But still the question remains, what breaks the state of equilibrium? The *Sa@mkhya* answer is that it is due to the transcendental (non-mechanical) influence of the *puru@sa* [Footnote ref 1]. This influence of the *puru@sa* again, if it means anything, means that there is inherent in the *gu@nas* a teleology that all their movements or modifications should take place in such a way that these may serve the purposes of the *puru@sas*. Thus when the karmas of the *puru@sas* had demanded that there should be a suspension of all experience, for a period there was a pralaya. At the end of it, it is the same inherent purpose of the *prak@rti* that wakes it up for the formation of a suitable world for the experiences of the *puru@sas* by which its quiescent state is disturbed. This is but another way of looking at the inherent teleology of the *prak@rti*, which demands that a state of pralaya should cease and a state of world-framing activity should begin. Since there is a purpose in the *gu@nas* which brought them to a state of equilibrium, the state of equilibrium also presupposes that it also may be broken up again when the purpose so demands. Thus the inherent purpose of the *prak@rti* brought about the state of pralaya and then broke it up for the creative work again, and it is this natural change in the *prak@rti* that may be regarded from another point of view as the transcendental influence of the *puru@sas*.

Mahat and Aha@mkara.

The first evolute of the *prak@rti* is generated by a preponderance of the *sattva* (intelligence-stuff). This is indeed the earliest state from which all the rest of the world has sprung forth; and it is a state in which the stuff of *sattva* predominates. It thus holds

[Footnote 1: The Yoga answer is of course different. It believes that the disturbance of the equilibrium of *prak@rti* for new creation takes place by the will of *Is'vara* (God).]

Page 227

within it the minds (*buddhi*) of all *puru@sas* which were lost in the *prak@rti* during the *pralaya*. The very first work of the evolution of *prak@rti* to serve the *puru@sas* is thus manifested by the separating out of the old buddhis or minds (of the *puru@sas*) which hold within themselves the old specific ignorance (*avidya*) inherent in them with reference to each *puru@sa* with which any particular buddhi is associated from beginningless time before the *pralaya*. This state of evolution consisting of all the collected minds (*buddhi*) or all the *puru@sas* is therefore called *buddhitattva*. It is a state which holds or comprehends within it the buddhis of all individuals. The individual buddhis of individual *puru@sas* are on one hand integrated with the *buddhitattva* and on the other associated with their specific *puru@sas*. When some buddhis once begin to be separated from the *prak@rti*, other buddhi evolutions take place. In other words, we are to understand that once the transformation of buddhis is effected for the service of the *puru@sas*, all the other direct transformations that take place from the *prak@rti* take the same line, *i.e.* a preponderance of *sattva* being once created by the bringing out of some buddhis, other transformations of *prak@rti* that follow them have also the *sattva* preponderance, which thus have exactly the same composition as the first buddhis. Thus the first transformation from *prak@rti* becomes buddhi-transformation. This stage of buddhis may thus be regarded as the most universal stage, which comprehends within it all the buddhis of individuals and potentially all the matter of which the gross world is formed. Looked at from this point of view it has the widest and most universal existence comprising all creation, and is thus called *mahat* (the great one). It is called *li@nga* (sign), as the other later existences or evolutes give us the ground of inferring its existence, and as such must be distinguished from the *prak@rti* which is called *ali@nga*, *i.e.* of which no *li@nga* or characterise may be affirmed.

This *mahat-tatva* being once produced, further modifications begin to take place in three lines by three different kinds of undulations representing the *sattva* preponderance, *rajas* preponderance and *tama* preponderance. This state when the *mahat* is disturbed by the three parallel tendencies of a preponderance of *tamas*, *rajas* and *sattva*'s called *aha@mkara*, and the above three tendencies are respectively called *tamasika aha@mkara* or *bhutadi*, *rajasika* or *taijasa aha@marā*, and *vaikarika aha@mkara*. The *rajasika aha@mkara* cannot make a new preponderance by itself; it only

Page 228

helps (*sahakari*) the transformations of the sattva preponderance and the tamas preponderance. The development of the former preponderance, as is easy to see, is only the assumption of a more and more determinate character of the buddhi, for we remember that buddhi itself has been the resulting transformation of a sattva preponderance. Further development with the help of rajas on the line of sattva development could only take place when the buddhi as mind determined itself in specific ways. The first development of the buddhi on this line is called *sattvika* or *vaikarika aha@mkara*. This *aha@mkara* represents the development in buddhi to produce a consciousness-stuff as I or rather “mine,” and must thus be distinguished from the first stage as buddhi the function of which is a mere understanding and general datun as thisness.

The ego or *aha@mkara* (*abhimana-dravya*) is the specific expression of the general consciousness which takes experience as mine. The function of the ego is therefore called *abhimana* (self-assertion). From this again come the five cognitive senses of vision, touch, smell, taste, and hearing, the five cognitive senses of speech, handling, foot-movement, the ejective sense and the generative sense; the *pra@nas* (bio-motor force) which help both conation and cognition are but aspects of buddhi-movement as life. The individual *aha@mkaras* and senses are related to the individual buddhis by the developing sattva determinations from which they had come into being. Each buddhi with its own group of *aka@mkara* (ego) and sense-evolutes thus forms a microcosm separate from similar other buddhis with their associated groups. So far therefore as knowledge is subject to sense-influence and the ego, it is different for each individual, but so far as a general mind (*kara@na buddhi*) apart from sense knowledge is concerned, there is a community of all buddhis in the buddhitattva. Even there however each buddhi is separated from other buddhis by its own peculiarly associated ignorance (*avidya*). The buddhi and its sattva evolutes of *aha@mkara* and the senses are so related that though they are different from buddhi in their functions, they are all comprehended in the buddhi, and mark only its gradual differentiations and modes. We must again remember in this connection the doctrine of refilling, for as buddhi exhausts its part in giving rise to *aha@mkara*, the deficiency of buddhi is made good by *prak@rti*; again as *aha@mkara* partially exhausts itself in generating sense-faculties, the deficiency

251

is made good by a refilling from the buddhi. Thus the change and wastage of each of the stadia are always made good and kept constant by a constant refilling from each higher state and finally from *prak@rti*.

The Tanmatras and the Parama@nus [Footnote ref 1].

Page 229

The other tendency, namely that of *tamas*, has to be helped by the liberated *rajas* of *aha@mkara*, in order to make itself preponderant, and this state in which the *tamas* succeeds in overcoming the *sattva* side which was so preponderant in the *buddhi*, is called *bhutadi*. From this *bhutadi* with the help of *rajas* are generated the *tanmatras*, the immediately preceding causes of the gross elements. The *bhutadi* thus represents only the intermediate stage through which the differentiations and regroupings of *tamas* reals in the *mahat* proceed for the generation of the *tanmatras*. There has been some controversy between *Sa@mkhya* and *Yoga* as to whether the *tanmatras* are generated from the *mahat* or from *aha@mkara*. The situation becomes intelligible if we remember that evolution here does not mean coming out or emanation, but increasing differentiation in integration within the evolving whole. Thus the regroupings of *tamas* reals marks the differentiation which takes place within the *mahat* but through its stage as *bhutadi*. *Bhutadi* is absolutely homogeneous and inert, devoid of all physical and chemical characters except quantum or mass. The second stadium *tanmatra* represents subtle matter, vibratory, impingent, radiant, instinct with potential energy. These “potentials” arise from the unequal aggregation of the original mass-units in different proportions and collocations with an unequal distribution of the original energy (*rajas*). The *tanmatras* possess something more than quantum of mass and energy; they possess physical characters, some of them penetrability, others powers of impact or pressure, others radiant heat, others again capability of viscous and cohesive attraction [Footnote ref. 2].

In intimate relation with those physical characters they also possess the potentials of the energies represented by sound, touch, colour, taste, and smell; but, being subtle matter, they are devoid

[Footnote 1: I have accepted in this section and in the next many of the translations of Sanskrit terms and expressions of Dr Seal and am largely indebted to him for his illuminating exposition of this subject as given in Ray's *Hindu Chemistry*. The credit of explaining *Sa@mkhya* physics, in the light of the text belongs entirely to him.]

[Footnote 2: Dr Seal's *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*.]

of the peculiar forms which these “potentials” assume in particles of gross matter like the atoms and their aggregates. In other words, the potentials lodged in subtle matter must undergo peculiar transformations by new groupings or collocations before they

can act as sensory stimuli as gross matter, though in the minutest particles thereof the sensory stimuli may be infra-sensible (*atindriya* but not *anudbhuta*) [Footnote ref 1].

Page 230

Of the tanmatras the *s'abda* or *akas'a tanmatra* (the sound-potential) is first generated directly from the bhutadi. Next comes the *spars'a* or the *vayu tanmatra* (touch-potential) which is generated by the union of a unit of *tamas* from bhutadi with the *akas'a tanmatra*. The *rupa tanmatra* (colour-potential) is generated similarly by the accretion of a unit of *tamas* from bhutadi; the *rasa tanmatra* (taste-potential) or the *ap tanmatra* is also similarly formed. This *ap tanmatra* again by its union with a unit of *tamas* from bhutadi produces the *gandha tanmatra* (smell-potential) or the *k@siti tanmatra* [Footnote ref 2]. The difference of tanmatras or infra-atomic units and atoms (*parama@nu*) is this, that the tanmatras have only the potential power of affecting our senses, which must be grouped and regrouped in a particular form to constitute a new existence as atoms before they can have the power of affecting our senses. It is important in this connection to point out that the classification of all gross objects as *k@siti*, *ap*, *tejas*, *marut* and *vyoman* is not based upon a chemical analysis, but from the points of view of the five senses through which knowledge of them could be brought home to us. Each of our senses can only apprehend a particular quality and thus five different ultimate substances are said to exist corresponding to the five qualities which may be grasped by the five senses. In accordance with the existence of these five elements, the existence of the five potential states or tanmatras was also conceived to exist as the ground of the five gross forms.

The five classes of atoms are generated from the tanmatras as follows: the sound-potential, with accretion of rudiment matter from bhutadi generates the *akasa*-atom. The touch-potentials combine with the vibratory particles (sound-potential) to generate the

[Footnote 1: Dr Seal's *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*.]

[Footnote 2: There were various ways in which the genesis of tanmatras and atoms were explained in literatures other than *Sa@mkhya*; for some account of it see Dr Seal's *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*.]

vayu-atom. The light-and-heat potentials combine with touch-potentials and sound-potentials to produce the *tejas*-atom. The taste-potentials combine with light-and-heat potentials, touch-potentials and sound-potentials to generate the *ap*-atom and the smell-potentials combine with the preceding potentials to generate the earth-atom. The *akas'a*-atom possesses penetrability, the *vayu*-atom impact or mechanical pressure, the *tejas*-atom radiant heat and light, the *ap*-atom viscous attraction and the earth-atom

cohesive attraction. The akasa we have seen forms the transition link from the bhutadi to the tanmatra and from the tanmatra to the atomic production; it therefore deserves

Page 231

a special notice at this stage. Sa@mkhya distinguishes between a kara@na-akas'a and karyakas'a. The kara@na-akas'a (non-atomic and all-pervasive) is the formless tamas—the mass in prak@rti or bhutadi; it is indeed all-pervasive, and is not a mere negation, a mere unoccupiedness (*avara@nabhava*) or vacuum [Footnote ref 1]. When energy is first associated with this tamas element it gives rise to the sound-potential; the atomic akas'a is the result of the integration of the original mass-units from bhutadi with this sound-potential (*s'abda tanmatra*). Such an akas'a-atom is called the karyakas'a; it is formed everywhere and held up in the original kara@na akas'a as the medium for the development of vayu atoms. Being atomic it occupies limited space.

The aha@mkara and the five tanmatras are technically called *avis'e@sa* or indeterminate, for further determinations or differentiations of them for the formation of newer categories of existence are possible. The eleven senses and the five atoms are called *vis'e@sa*, i.e. determinate, for they cannot further be so determined as to form a new category of existence. It is thus that the course of evolution which started in the prak@rti reaches its furthest limit in the production of the senses on the one side and the atoms on the other. Changes no doubt take place in bodies having atomic constitution, but these changes are changes of quality due to spatial changes in the position of the atoms or to the introduction of new atoms and their re-arrangement. But these are not such that a newer category of existence could be formed by them which was substantially different from the combined atoms.

[Footnote 1: Dr B.N. Seal in describing this akas'a says "Akas'a corresponds in some respects to the ether of the physicists and in others to what may be called proto-atom (protyle)." Ray's *History of Hindu Chemistry*, p. 88.]

254

The changes that take place in the atomic constitution of things certainly deserve to be noticed. But before we go on to this, it will be better to enquire about the principle of causation according to which the Sa@mkhya-Yoga evolution should be comprehended or interpreted.

Principle of Causation and Conservation of Energy [Footnote ref 1].

The question is raised, how can the prak@rti supply the deficiencies made in its evolutes by the formation of other evolutes from them? When from mahat some

tanmatras have evolved, or when from the tanmatras some atoms have evolved, how can the deficiency in mahat and the tanmatras be made good by the prak@rti?

Page 232

Or again, what is the principle that guides the transformations that take place in the atomic stage when one gross body, say milk, changes into curd, and so on? Sa@mkhya says that “as the total energy remains the same while the world is constantly evolving, cause and effect are only more or less evolved forms of the same ultimate Energy. The sum of effects exists in the sum of causes in a potential form. The grouping or collocation alone changes, and this brings on the manifestation of the latent powers of the gu@nas, but without creation of anything new. What is called the (material) cause is only the power which is efficient in the production or rather the vehicle of the power. This power is the unmanifested (or potential) form of the Energy set free (*udbhuta-v@rtti*) in the effect. But the concomitant conditions are necessary to call forth the so-called material cause into activity [Footnote ref 2].” The appearance of an effect (such as the manifestation of the figure of the statue in the marble block by the causal efficiency of the sculptor’s art) is only its passage from potentiality to actuality and the concomitant conditions (*sahakari-s’akti*) or efficient cause (*nimitta-kara@na*, such as the sculptor’s art) is a sort of mechanical help or instrumental help to this passage or the transition [Footnote ref 3]. The refilling from prak@rti thus means nothing more than this, that by the inherent teleology of the prak@rti, the reals there are so collocated as to be transformed into mahat as those of the mahat have been collocated to form the bhutadi or the tanmatras.

[Footnote 1: *Vyasabha@sya* and *Yogavarttika*, IV. 3; *Tattvavais’aradi*, IV. 3.]

[Footnote 2: Ray, *History of Hindu Chemistry*, p. 72.]

[Footnote 3: *Ibid.* p. 73.]

255

Yoga however explains this more vividly on the basis of transformation of the liberated potential energy. The sum of material causes potentially contains the energy manifested in the sum of effects. When the effectuating condition is added to the sum of material conditions in a given collocation, all that happens is that a stimulus is imparted which removes the arrest, disturbs the relatively stable equilibrium, and brings on a liberation of energy together with a fresh collocation(*gu@nasannives’avis’e@sa*). As the owner of an adjacent field in transferring water from one field to another of the same or lower level has only to remove the obstructing mud barriers, whereupon the water flows of itself to the other field, so when the efficient or instrumental causes (such as the sculptor’s art) remove the barrier inherent in any collocation against its

transformation into any other collocation, the energy from that collocation flows out in a corresponding manner and determines the collocation. Thus for example the energy

Page 233

which collocated the milk-atoms to form milk was in a state of arrest in the milk state. If by heat or other causes this barrier is removed, the energy naturally changes direction in a corresponding manner and collocates the atoms accordingly for the formation of curd. So also as soon as the barriers are removed from the prak@rti, guided by the constant will of Is'vara, the reals in equilibrium in the state of prak@rti leave their state of arrest and evolve themselves into mahat, etc.

Change as the formation of new collocations.

It is easy to see from what we have already said that any collocation of atoms forming a thing could not change its form, unless the barrier inherent or caused by the formation of the present collocation could be removed by some other extraneous instrumental cause. All gross things are formed by the collocation of the five atoms of k@siti, ap, tejas, marut, and vyoman. The difference between one thing and another is simply this, that its collocation of atoms or the arrangement or grouping of atoms is different from that in another. The formation of a collocation has an inherent barrier against any change, which keeps that collocation in a state of equilibrium, and it is easy to see that these barriers exist in infinite directions in which all the other infinite objects of the world exist. From whichever side the barrier is removed, the energy flows in that direction and helps the

256

formation of a corresponding object. Provided the suitable barriers could be removed, anything could be changed into any other thing. And it is believed that the Yogins can acquire the powers by which they can remove any barriers, and thus make anything out of any other thing. But generally in the normal course of events the line of evolution follows "a definite law which cannot be overstepped" (*pari@namakramaniyama*) or in other words there are some natural barriers which cannot be removed, and thus the evolutionary course has to take a path to the exclusion of those lines where the barriers could not be removed. Thus saffron grows in countries like Kashmere and not in Bengal, this is limitation of countries (*des'apabandha*); certain kinds of paddy grow in the rainy season only, this is limitation of season or time (*kalapabandha*); deer cannot beget men, this is limitation by form (*akarapabandha*); curd can come out of milk, this is the limitation of causes (*nimittapabandha*). The evolutionary course can thus follow only that path which is not barricaded by any of these limitations or natural obstructions [Footnote ref 1].

Page 234

Change is taking place everywhere, from the smallest and least to the highest. Atoms and reals are continually vibrating and changing places in any and every object. At each moment the whole universe is undergoing change, and the collocation of atoms at any moment is different from what it was at the previous moment. When these changes are perceivable, they are perceived as *dharmapari@nama* or changes of *dharma* or quality; but perceived or unperceived the changes are continually going on. This change of appearance may be viewed from another aspect by virtue of which we may call it present or past, and old or new, and these are respectively called the *lak@sa@napari@nama* and *avasthapari@nama*. At every moment every object of the world is undergoing evolution or change, change as past, present and future, as new, old or unborn. When any change is in a potential state we call it future, when manifested present, when it becomes sub-latent again it is said to be past. Thus it is that the potential, manifest, and sub-latent changes of a thing are called future, present and past [Footnote ref 2].

[Footnote 1: *Vyasabha@sya*, *Tattvavais'aradi* and *Yogavarttika*, III. 14.]

[Footnote 2: It is well to note in this connection that *Sa@mkhya-yoga* does not admit the existence of time as an independent entity like the *Nyaya-Vais'e@sika*. Time represents the order of moments in which the mind grasps the phenomenal changes. It is hence a construction of the mind (*buddhi-nirma@na*). The time required by an atom to move its own measure of space is called a moment (*k@sa@na*) or one unit of time. *Vijnana Bhik@su* regards one unit movement of the *gu@nas* or reals as a moment. When by true wisdom the *gu@nas* are perceived as they are both the illusory notions of time and space vanish. *Vyasabha@sya*, *Tattvavais'aradi*, and *Yogavarttika*, III. 52 and III. 13.]

257

Causation as *Satkaryavada* (the theory that the effect potentially exists before it is generated by the movement of the cause).

The above consideration brings us to an important aspect of the *Sa@mkhya* view of causation as *satkaryavada*. *Sa@mkhya* holds that there can be no production of a thing previously non-existent; causation means the appearance or manifestation of a quality due to certain changes of collocations in the causes which were already held in them in a potential form. Production of effect only means an internal change of the arrangement of atoms in the cause, and this exists in it in a potential form, and just a little loosening of the barrier which was standing in the way of the happening of such a

change of arrangement will produce the desired new collocation—the effect. This doctrine is called *satkaryavada*, i.e. that the *karya* or effect is *sat* or existent even before the causal operation to produce the effect was launched. The oil exists in the sesarnum, the statue in the stone, the curd in the milk, The causal operation (*karakaiyapara*) only renders that manifest (*avirbhuta*) which was formerly in an unmanifested condition (*tirohita*) [Footnote ref 1].

Page 235

The Buddhists also believed in change, as much as Sa@mkhya did, but with them there was no background to the change; every change was thus absolutely a new one, and when it was past, the next moment the change was lost absolutely. There were only the passing dharmas or manifestations of forms and qualities, but there was no permanent underlying dharma or substance. Sa@mkhya also holds in the continual change of dharmas, but it also holds that these dharmas represent only the conditions of the permanent reals. The conditions and collocations of the reals change constantly, but the reals themselves are unchangeable. The effect according to the Buddhists was non-existent, it came into being for a moment and was lost. On account of this theory of causation and also on account of their doctrine of s'unya, they were called *vainas'ikas* (nihilists) by the Vedantins. This doctrine is therefore contrasted to Sa@mkhya doctrine as *asatkaryavada*.

[Footnote 1: *Tattvakaumudi*, 9.]

258

The jain view holds that both these views are relatively true and that from one point of view satkaryavada is true and from another asatkaryavada. The Sa@mkhya view that the cause is continually transforming itself into its effects is technically called *pari@namavada* as against the Vedanta view called the *vivarttavada*: that cause remains ever the same, and what we call effects are but illusory impositions of mere unreal appearance of name and form—mere Maya [Footnote ref. 1].

Sa@mkhya Atheism and Yoga Theism.

Granted that the interchange of the positions of the infinite number of reals produce all the world and its transformations; whence comes this fixed order of the universe, the fixed order of cause and effect, the fixed order of the so-called barriers which prevent the transformation of any cause into any effect or the first disturbance of the equilibrium of the prak@rti? Sa@mkhya denies the existence of Is'vara (God) or any other exterior influence, and holds that there is an inherent tendency in these reals which guides all their movements. This tendency or teleology demands that the movements of the reals should be in such a manner that they may render some service to the souls either in the direction of enjoyment or salvation. It is by the natural course of such a tendency that prak@rti is disturbed, and the gu@nas develop on two lines—on the mental plane, *citta* or mind comprising the sense faculties, and on the objective plane as material objects; and it is in fulfilment of the demands of this tendency that on the one hand take place subjective experiences as the changes of the buddhi and on the other the infinite modes

of the changes of objective things. It is this tendency to be of service to the *puru@sas* (*puru@sarthata*) that guides all the movements of the reals, restrains all disorder, renders the world a fit object of experience, and finally rouses them to turn back from the world and seek to attain liberation from the association of *prak@rti* and its gratuitous service, which causes us all this trouble of *sa@msara*.

Page 236

Yoga here asks, how the blind tendency of the non-intelligent

[Footnote 1: Both the Vedanta and the Sa@mkhya theories of causation are sometimes loosely called *satkaryyavada*. But correctly speaking as some discerning commentators have pointed out, the Vedanta theory of causation should be called *satkara@navada* for according to it the *kara@na* (cause) alone exists (*sat*) and all *karyyas*, (effects) are illusory appearances of the *kara@na*; but according to Sa@mkhya the *karyya* exists in a potential state in the *kara@na* and is hence always existing and real.]

259

prak@rti can bring forth this order and harmony of the universe, how can it determine what course of evolution will be of the best service to the puru@sas, how can it remove its own barriers and lend itself to the evolutionary process from the state of prak@rti equilibrium? How too can this blind tendency so regulate the evolutionary order that all men must suffer pains according to their bad karmas, and happiness according to their good ones? There must be some intelligent Being who should help the course of evolution in such a way that this system of order and harmony may be attained. This Being is Is'vara. Is'vara is a puru@sa who had never been subject to ignorance, afflictions, or passions. His body is of pure sattva quality which can never be touched by ignorance. He is all knowledge and all powerful. He has a permanent wish that those barriers in the course of the evolution of the reals by which the evolution of the gu@nas may best serve the double interest of the puru@sa's experience (*bhoga*) and liberation (*apavarga*) should be removed. It is according to this permanent will of Is'vara that the proper barriers are removed and the gu@nas follow naturally an intelligent course of evolution for the service of the best interests of the puru@sas. Is'vara has not created the prak@rti; he only disturbs the equilibrium of the prak@rti in its quiescent state, and later on helps it to follow an intelligent order by which the fruits of karma are properly distributed and the order of the world is brought about. This acknowledgement of Is'vara in Yoga and its denial by Sa@mkhya marks the main theoretic difference between the two according to which the Yoga and Sa@mkhya are distinguished as Ses'vara Sa@mkhya (Sa@mkhya with Is'vara) and Niris'vara Sa@mkhya (Atheistic Sa@mkhya) [Footnote ref 1].

Buddhi and Puru@sa.

The question again arises that though puru@sa is pure intelligence, the gu@nas are non-intelligent subtle substances, how can the latter come into touch with the former? Moreover, the puru@sa is pure inactive intelligence without any touch of impurity and

what service or need can such a puru@sa have of the gu@nas? This difficulty is anticipated by Sa@mkhya, which has already made room for its answer by assuming that one class of the gu@nas called sattva is such that it resembles the purity and the intelligence of the puru@sa to a very high degree, so much so

Page 237

[Footnote 1: *Tattvavais'aradi*, IV. 3; *Yogavarttika*, I. 24; and *Pravavanabhasya*, V. 1-12.]

260

that it can reflect the intelligence of the puru@sa, and thus render its non-intelligent transformations to appear as if they were intelligent. Thus all our thoughts and other emotional or volitional operations are really the non-intelligent transformations of the buddhi or citta having a large sattva preponderance; but by virtue of the reflection of the puru@sa in the buddhi, these appear as if they are intelligent. The self (puru@sa) according to Sa@mkhya-Yoga is not directly demonstrated by self-consciousness. Its existence is a matter of inference on teleological grounds and grounds of moral responsibility. The self cannot be directly noticed as being separate from the buddhi modifications. Through beginningless ignorance there is a confusion and the changing states of buddhi are regarded as conscious. These buddhi changes are further so associated with the reflection of the puru@sa in the buddhi that they are interpreted as the experiences of the puru@sa. This association of the buddhi with the reflection of the puru@sa in the buddhi has such a special fitness (*yogyata*) that it is interpreted as the experience of the puru@sa. This explanation of Vacaspati of the situation is objected to by Vijnana Bhik@su. Vijnana Bhik@su says that the association of the buddhi with the image of the puru@sa cannot give us the notion of a real person who undergoes the experiences. It is to be supposed therefore that when the buddhi is intelligized by the reflection of the puru@sa, it is then superimposed upon the puru@sa, and we have the notion of an abiding person who experiences [Footnote ref 1]. Whatever may be the explanation, it seems that the union of the buddhi with the puru@sa is somewhat mystical. As a result of this reflection of *cit* on buddhi and the superimposition of the buddhi the puru@sa cannot realize that the transformations of the buddhi are not its own. Buddhi resembles puru@sa in transparency, and the puru@sa fails to differentiate itself from the modifications of the buddhi, and as a result of this non-distinction the puru@sa becomes bound down to the buddhi, always failing to recognize the truth that the buddhi and its transformations are wholly alien to it. This non-distinction of puru@sa from buddhi which is itself a mode of buddhi is what is meant by *avidya* (non-knowledge) in Sa@mkhya, and is the root of all experience and all misery [Footnote ref 2].

[Footnote 1: *Tattvavais'aradi* and *Yogavarttika*, I. 4.]

[Footnote 2: This indicates the nature of the analysis of illusion with Sa@mkhya. It is the non-apprehension of the distinction of two things (e.g. the snake and the rope) that is the cause of illusion; it is therefore called the *akhyati* (non-apprehension) theory of illusion which must be distinguished from the *anyathakhyati* (misapprehension) theory of illusion of Yoga which consists in positively misapprehending one (e.g. the rope) for the other (e.g. snake). *Yogavarttika*, I. 8.]

Page 238

261

Yoga holds a slightly different view and supposes that the puru@sa not only fails to distinguish the difference between itself and the buddhi but positively takes the transformations of buddhi as its own. It is no non-perception of the difference but positively false knowledge, that we take the puru@sa to be that which it is not (*anyathakhyati*). It takes the changing, impure, sorrowful, and objective prak@rti or buddhi to be the changeless, pure, happiness-begetting subject. It wrongly thinks buddhi to be the self and regards it as pure, permanent and capable of giving us happiness. This is the avidya of Yoga. A buddhi associated with a puru@sa is dominated by such an avidya, and when birth after birth the same buddhi is associated with the same puru@sa, it cannot easily get rid of this avidya. If in the meantime pralaya takes place, the buddhi is submerged in the prak@rti, and the avidya also sleeps with it. When at the beginning of the next creation the individual buddhis associated with the puru@sas emerge, the old avidyas also become manifest by virtue of it and the buddhis associate themselves with the puru@sas to which they were attached before the pralaya. Thus proceeds the course of sa@msara. When the avidya of a person is rooted out by the rise of true knowledge, the buddhi fails to attach itself to the puru@sa and is forever dissociated from it, and this is the state of mukti.

The Cognitive Process and some characteristics of Citta.

It has been said that buddhi and the internal objects have evolved in order to giving scope to the experience of the puru@sa. What is the process of this experience? Sa@mkhya (as explained by Vacaspati) holds that through the senses the buddhi comes into touch with external objects. At the first moment of this touch there is an indeterminate consciousness in which the particulars of the thing cannot be noticed. This is called *nirvikalpa pratyak@sa* (indeterminate perception). At the next moment by the function of the *sa@mkalpa* (synthesis) and *vikalpa* (abstraction or imagination) of manas (mind-organ) the thing is perceived in all its determinate character; the manas differentiates, integrates, and associates the sense-data received through the senses, and

262

thus generates the determinate perception, which when intelligized by the puru@sa and associated with it becomes interpreted as the experience of the person. The action of the senses, ahamkara, and buddhi, may take place sometimes successively and at other times as in cases of sudden fear simultaneously. Vijnana Bhik@su differs from this view of Vacaspati, and denies the synthetic activity of the mind-organ (manas), and says that the buddhi directly comes into touch with the objects through the senses. At the first moment of touch the perception is indeterminate, but at the second moment it becomes clear and determinate [Footnote ref 1]. It is evident that on this view the

importance of manas is reduced to a minimum and it is regarded as being only the faculty of desire, doubt and imagination.

Page 239

Buddhi, including ahamkara and the senses, often called *citta* in Yoga, is always incessantly suffering changes like the flame of a lamp, it is made up of a large preponderance of the pure sattva substances, and is constantly moulding itself from one content to another. These images by the dual reflection of buddhi and puru@sa are constantly becoming conscious, and are being interpreted as the experiences of a person. The existence of the puru@sa is to be postulated for explaining the illumination of consciousness and for explaining experience and moral endeavour. The buddhi is spread all over the body, as it were, for it is by its functions that the life of the body is kept up; for the Sa@mkhya does not admit any separate prana vayu (vital breath) to keep the body living. What are called *vayus* (bio-motor force) in Vedanta are but the different modes of operation of this category of buddhi, which acts all through the body and by its diverse movements performs the life-functions and sense-functions of the body.

[Footnote 1: As the contact of the buddhi with the external objects takes place through the senses, the sense data of colours, etc., are modified by the senses if they are defective. The spatial qualities of things are however perceived by the senses directly, but the time-order is a scheme of the *citta* or the buddhi. Generally speaking Yoga holds that the external objects are faithfully copied by the buddhi in which they are reflected, like trees in a lake

*“tasmims’ca darpane sphare samasta vastudrstayah
imastah pratibimbanti sarasiva tatadrumah” Yogavarttika, I. 4.*

The buddhi assumes the form of the object which is reflected on it by the senses, or rather the mind flows out through the senses to the external objects and assumes their forms: *“indriyanyeva pranalika cittasancaranamargah taih samyuja tadgola kadvara bahyavastusuparaktasya cittasyendryasahityenaivarthakarah parinamo bhavati”* Yogavarttika, I. VI. 7. Contrast *Tattvakaumudi*, 27 and 30.]

263

Apart from the perceptions and the life-functions, buddhi, or rather *citta* as Yoga describes it, contains within it the root impressions (*sa@mskaras*) and the tastes and instincts or tendencies of all past lives (*vasana*) [Footnote ref 1]. These *sa@mskaras* are revived under suitable associations. Every man had had infinite numbers of births in their past lives as man and as some animal. In all these lives the same *citta* was always following him. The *citta* has thus collected within itself the instincts and tendencies of all those different animal lives. It is knotted with these *vasanas* like a net.

If a man passes into a dog life by rebirth, the vasanas of a dog life, which the man must have had in some of his previous infinite number of births, are revived, and the man's tendencies become like those of a dog. He forgets the experiences of his previous life and becomes attached to enjoyment in the manner of a dog. It is by the revival of the vasana suitable to each particular birth that there cannot be any collision such as might have occurred if the instincts and tendencies of a previous dog-life were active when any one was born as man.

Page 240

The sa@mskaras represent the root impressions by which any habit of life that man has lived through, or any pleasure in which he took delight for some time, or any passions which were

[Footnote 1: The word sa@mskara is used by Pa@nini who probably preceded Buddha in three different senses (1) improving a thing as distinguished from generating a new quality (*Sata utkar@sadhana@m sa@mskara@h*, Kas'ila on Pa@nini, VI. ii. 16), (2) conglomeration or aggregation, and (3) adornment (Pa@nini, VI. i. 137, 138). In the Pi@takas the word sa@nkhara is used in various senses such as constructing, preparing, perfecting, embellishing, aggregation, matter, karma, the skandhas (collected by Childers). In fact sa@nkhara stands for almost anything of which impermanence could be predicated. But in spite of so many diversities of meaning I venture to suggest that the meaning of aggregation (*samavaya* of Pa@nini) is prominent. The word *sa@mskaroti* is used in Kau@sitaki, II. 6, Chandogya IV. xvi. 2, 3, 4, viii. 8, 5, and B@rhadara@nyaka, VI. iii. 1, in the sense of improving. I have not yet come across any literary use of the second meaning in Sanskrit. The meaning of sa@mskara in Hindu philosophy is altogether different. It means the impressions (which exist subconsciously in the mind) of the objects experienced. All our experiences whether cognitive, emotional or conative exist in subconscious states and may under suitable conditions be reproduced as memory (*sm@rti*). The word *vasana* (*Yoga sutra*, IV. 24) seems to be a later word. The earlier Upanis@sads do not mention it and so far as I know it is not mentioned in the Pali pi@takas. *Abhidhanappadipika* of Moggallana mentions it, and it occurs in the *Muktika Upani@sad*. It comes from the root "vas" to stay. It is often loosely used in the sense of sa@mskara, and in *Vyasabha@sya* they are identified in IV. 9. But *vasana* generally refers to the tendencies of past lives most of which lie dormant in the mind. Only those appear which can find scope in this life. But sa@mskaras are the sub-conscious states which are being constantly generated by experience. *Vasanas* are innate sa@mskaras not acquired in this life. See *Vyasabha@sya*, *Tattvavais'aradi* and *Yogavarttika*, II. 13.]

264

engrossing to him, tend to be revived, for though these might not now be experienced, yet the fact that they were experienced before has so moulded and given shape to the citta that the citta will try to reproduce them by its own nature even without any such effort on our part. To safeguard against the revival of any undesirable idea or tendency it is therefore necessary that its roots as already left in the citta in the form of sa@mskaras should be eradicated completely by the formation of the habit of a contrary

tendency, which if made sufficiently strong will by its own sa@mskara naturally stop the revival of the previous undesirable sa@mskaras.

Page 241

Apart from these the citta possesses volitional activity (ce@s@ta) by which the conative senses are brought into relation to their objects. There is also the reserved potent power (s'akti) of citta, by which it can restrain itself and change its courses or continue to persist in any one direction. These characteristics are involved in the very essence of citta, and form the groundwork of the Yoga method of practice, which consists in steadying a particular state of mind to the exclusion of others.

Merit or demerit (*pu@nya, papa*) also is imbedded in the citta as its tendencies, regulating the mode of its movements, and giving pleasures and pains in accordance with it.

Sorrow and its Dissolution [Footnote ref 1].

Sa@mkhya and the Yoga, like the Buddhists, hold that all experience is sorrowful. Tamas, we know, represents the pain substance. As tamas must be present in some degree in all combinations, all intellectual operations are fraught with some degree of painful feeling. Moreover even in states of temporary pleasure, we had sorrow at the previous moment when we had solicited it, and we have sorrow even when we enjoy it, for we have the fear that we may lose it. The sum total of sorrows is thus much greater than the pleasures, and the pleasures only strengthen the keenness of the sorrow. The wiser the man the greater is his capacity of realizing that the world and our experiences are all full of sorrow. For unless a man is convinced of this great truth that all is sorrow, and that temporary pleasures, whether generated by ordinary worldly experience or by enjoying heavenly experiences through the performance of Vedic sacrifices, are quite unable to

[Footnote 1: Tattavais'aradi and Yogavarttika, II. 15, and Tattvakaumudi, I.]

265

eradicate the roots of sorrow, he will not be anxious for mukti or the final uprooting of pains. A man must feel that all pleasures lead to sorrow, and that the ordinary ways of removing sorrows by seeking enjoyment cannot remove them ultimately; he must turn his back on the pleasures of the world and on the pleasures of paradise. The performances of sacrifices according to the Vedic rites may indeed give happiness, but as these involve the sacrifice of animals they must involve some sins and hence also some pains. Thus the performance of these cannot be regarded as desirable. It is when a man ceases from seeking pleasures that he thinks how best he can eradicate the roots of sorrow. Philosophy shows how extensive is sorrow, why sorrow comes,

what is the way to uproot it, and what is the state when it is uprooted. The man who has resolved to uproot sorrow turns to philosophy to find out the means of doing it.

Page 242

The way of eradicating the root of sorrow is thus the practical enquiry of the Sa@mkhya philosophy [Footnote ref 1]. All experiences are sorrow. Therefore some means must be discovered by which all experiences may be shut out for ever. Death cannot bring it, for after death we shall have rebirth. So long as citta (mind) and puru@sa are associated with each other, the sufferings will continue. Citta must be dissociated from puru@sa. Citta or buddhi, Sa@mkhya says, is associated with puru@sa because of the non-distinction of itself from buddhi [Footnote ref 2]. It is necessary therefore that in buddhi we should be able to generate the true conception of the nature of puru@sa; when this true conception of puru@sa arises in the buddhi it feels itself to be different, and distinct, from and quite unrelated to puru@sa, and thus ignorance is destroyed. As a result of that, buddhi turns its back on puru@sa and can no longer bind it to its experiences, which are all irrevocably connected with sorrow, and thus the puru@sa remains in its true form. This according to Sa@mkhya philosophy is alone adequate to being about the liberation of the puru@sa. Prak@rti which was leading us through cycles of experiences from birth to birth, fulfils its final purpose when this true knowledge arises differentiating

[Footnote 1: Yoga puts it in a slightly modified form. Its object is the cessation of the rebirth-process which is so much associated with sorrow { _du@hkhahabla@h sa@msarah heya@h _).}]

[Footnote 2: The word *citta* is a Yoga term. It is so called because it is the repository of all sub-conscious states. Samkhyn generally uses, the word buddhi. Both the words mean the same substance, the mind, but they emphasize its two different functions. Buddhi means intellection.]

266

puru@sa from prak@rti. This final purpose being attained the prak@rti can never again bind the purusa with reference to whom this right knowledge was generated; for other puru@sas however the bondage remains as before, and they continue their experiences from one birth to another in an endless cycle.

Yoga, however, thinks that mere philosophy is not sufficient. In order to bring about liberation it is not enough that a true knowledge differentiating puru@sa and buddhi should arise, but it is necessary that all the old habits of experience of buddhi, all its samskaras should be once for all destroyed never to be revived again. At this stage the buddhi is transformed into its purest state, reflecting steadily the true nature of the puru@sa. This is the *kevala* (oneness) state of existence after which (all sa@mskaras,

all avidya being altogether uprooted) the citta is impotent any longer to hold on to the puru@sa, and like a stone hurled from a mountain top, gravitates back into the prak@rti [Footnote ref 1]. To destroy the old sa@mskaras, knowledge alone not being sufficient,

Page 243

a graduated course of practice is necessary. This graduated practice should be so arranged that by generating the practice of living higher and better modes of life, and steadying the mind on its subtler states, the habits of ordinary life may be removed. As the yogin advances he has to give up what he had adopted as good and try for that which is still better. Continuing thus he reaches the state when the buddhi is in its ultimate perfection and purity. At this stage the buddhi assumes the form of the *puru@sa*, and final liberation takes place.

Karmas in Yoga are divided into four classes: (1) *s'ukla* or white (*pu@nya*, those that produce happiness), (2) *k@r@s@na* or black (*papa*, those that produce sorrow), (3) *s'ukla-k@r@s@na* (*pu@nya-papa*, most of our ordinary actions are partly virtuous and partly vicious as they involve, if not anything else, at least the death of many insects), (4) *as'uklak@r@s@na* (those inner acts of self-abnegation, and meditation which are devoid of any fruits as pleasures or pains). All external actions involve some sins, for it is difficult to work in the world and avoid taking the lives of insects [Footnote ref 2]. All karmas

[Footnote 1: Both *Sa@mkhya* and *Yoga* speak of this emancipated state a *Kaivalya* (alone-ness), the former because all sorrows have been absolutely uprooted, never to grow up again and the latter because at this state *puru@sa* remains for ever alone without any association with buddhi, see *Sa@mkhya karika*, 68 and *Yoga sutras*, IV. 34.]

[Footnote 2: *Vyasabha@sya* and *Tattvavais'aradi*, IV. 7.]

267

proceed from the five-fold afflictions (*kles'as*), namely *avidya*, *asmita*, *raga*, *dve@sa* and *abhinives'a*.

We have already noticed what was meant by *avidya*. It consists generally in ascribing intelligence to buddhi, in thinking it as permanent and leading to happiness. This false knowledge while remaining in this form further manifests itself in the other four forms of *asmita*, etc. *Asmita* means the thinking of worldly objects and our experiences as really belonging to us—the sense of “mine” or “I” to things that really are the qualities or transformations of the *gu@nas*. *Raga* means the consequent attachment to pleasures and things. *Dve@sa* means aversion or antipathy to unpleasant things. *Abhinives'a* is

the desire for life or love of life—the will to be. We proceed to work because we think our experiences to be our own, our body to be our own, our family to be our own, our possessions to be our own; because we are attached to these; because we feel great antipathy against any mischief that might befall them, and also because we love our life and always try to preserve it against any mischief. These all proceed, as is easy to see, from their root avidya, which consists in the

Page 244

false identification of buddhi with puru@sa. These five, avidya, asmita, raga, dve@sa and abhinives'a, permeate our buddhi, and lead us to perform karma and to suffer. These together with the performed karmas which lie inherent in the buddhi as a particular mode of it transmigrate with the buddhi from birth to birth, and it is hard to get rid of them [Footnote ref 1]. The karma in the aspect in which it lies in the buddhi as a mode or modification of it is called *karmas'aya*. (the bed of karma for the puru@sa to lie in). We perform a karma actuated by the vicious tendencies (*kles'a*) of the buddhi. The karma when thus performed leaves its stain or modification on the buddhi, and it is so ordained according to the teleology of the prak@rti and the removal of obstacles in the course of its evolution in accordance with it by the permanent will of Is'vara that each vicious action brings sufferance and a virtuous one pleasure.

The karmas performed in the present life will generally accumulate, and when the time for giving their fruits comes, such a life is ordained for the person, such a body is made ready for him according to the evolution of prak@rti as shall make it possible for him to suffer or enjoy the fruits thereof. The karma of the

[Footnote 1: *Vyasabha@sya* and *Tattvavaish'aradi*, II. 3-9.]

268

present life thus determines the particular kind of future birth (as this or that animal or man), the period of life (*ayu@s*) and the painful or pleasurable experiences (*bhoga*) destined for that life. Exceedingly good actions and extremely bad actions often produce their effects in this life. It may also happen that a man has done certain bad actions, for the realization of the fruits of which he requires a dog-life and good actions for the fruits of which he requires a man-life. In such cases the good action may remain in abeyance and the man may suffer the pains of a dog-life first and then be born again as a man to enjoy the fruits of his good actions. But if we can remove ignorance and the other afflictions, all his previous unfulfilled karmas are for ever lost and cannot again be revived. He has of course to suffer the fruits of those karmas which have already ripened. This is the *jivanmukti* stage, when the sage has attained true knowledge and is yet suffering mundane life in order to experience the karmas that have already ripened (*ti@s@thati sa@msharavas'at cakrabhramivaddh@rtas'arira@h*).

Citta.

Page 245

The word Yoga which was formerly used in Vedic literature in the sense of the restraint of the senses is used by Patanjali in his *Yoga sutra* in the sense of the partial or full restraint or steadying of the states of citta. Some sort of concentration may be brought about by violent passions, as when fighting against a mortal enemy, or even by an ignorant attachment or instinct. The citta which has the concentration of the former type is called *k@sipta* (wild) and of the latter type *pramu@dha* (ignorant). There is another kind of citta, as with all ordinary people, in which concentration is only possible for a time, the mind remaining steady on one thing for a short time leaves that off and clings to another thing and so on. This is called the *vik@sipta* (unsteady) stage of mind (*cittabhumī*). As distinguished from these there is an advanced stage of citta in which it can concentrate steadily on an object for a long time. This is the *ekagra* (one-pointed) stage. There is a still further advanced stage in which the citta processes are absolutely stopped. This happens immediately before mukti, and is called the *nirodha* (cessation) state of citta. The purpose of Yoga is to achieve the conditions of the last two stages of citta.

The cittas have five processes (*v@rtti*), (1) *prama@na* [Footnote ref 1] (valid

[Footnote 1: Sa@mkhya holds that both validity and invalidity of any cognition depend upon the cognitive state itself and not on correspondence with external facts or objects (*svata@h prama@nya@m svata@h aprama@nya@m*). The contribution of Sa@mkhya to the doctrine of inference is not definitely known. What little Vacaspati says on the subject has been borrowed from Vatsyayana such as the *purvavat*, *s'e@savat* and *samanyatodr@s@ta* types of inference, and these may better be consulted in our chapter on Nyaya or in the *Tatparya@tika_* of Vacaspati. Sa@mkhya inference was probably from particular to particular on the ground of seven kinds of relations according to which they had seven kinds of inference “*matranimittasa@myogivirodhisahacaribhi@h. Svasvamibadhyaghatadyai@h sa@mkhyaana@m saptadhanuma*” (*Tatparya@tika*, p. 109). Sa@mkhya definition of inference as given by Udyotakara (I.I. V) is “*sambandhadekasmat pratyak@sacche@sasiddhiranumanam*.”]

269

cognitive states such as are generated by perception, inference and scriptural testimony), (2) *viparyaya* (false knowledge, illusion, etc.), (3) *vikalpa* (abstraction, construction and different kinds of imagination), (4) *nidra* (sleep, is a vacant state of mind, in which *tamas* tends to predominate), (5) *sm@rti* (memory).

These states of mind (*v@rtti*) comprise our inner experience. When they lead us towards *sa@msara* into the course of passions and their satisfactions, they are said to be *kli@s@ta* (afflicted or leading to affliction); when they lead us towards liberation, they are called *akli@s@ta* (unafflicted). To whichever side we go, towards *sa@msara* or towards *mukti*, we have to make use of our states of mind; the states which are bad often alternate with good states, and whichever state should tend towards our final good (liberation) must be regarded as good.

Page 246

This draws attention to that important characteristic of citta, that it sometimes tends towards good (i.e. liberation) and sometimes towards bad (sa@msara). It is like a river, as the *Vyasabha@sya* says, *which flows both ways, towards sin and towards the good. The teleology of prak@rti requires that it should produce in man the sa@msara as well as the liberation tendency.*

Thus in accordance with it in the midst of many bad thoughts and bad habits there come good moral will and good thoughts, and in the midst of good thoughts and habits come also bad thoughts and vicious tendencies. The will to be good is therefore never lost in man, as it is an innate tendency in him which is as strong as his desire to enjoy pleasures. This point is rather remarkable, for it gives us the key of Yoga ethics and shows that our desire of liberation is not actuated by any hedonistic attraction for happiness or even removal of pain, but by an innate tendency of the mind to follow the path of liberation [Footnote ref 1]. Removal of pains

[Footnote 1: Sa@mkhya however makes the absolute and complete destruction of three kinds of sorrows, *adhyatmika* (generated internally by the illness of the body or the unsatisfied passions of the mind), *adhibhautika* (generated externally by the injuries inflicted by other men, beasts, etc.) and *adhidaivika* (generated by the injuries inflicted by demons and ghosts) the object of all our endeavours (*puru@sartha*).]

270

is of course the concomitant effect of following such a course, but still the motive to follow this path is a natural and irresistible tendency of the mind. Man has power (*s'akti*) stored up in his citta, and he has to use it in such a way that this tendency may gradually grow stronger and stronger and ultimately uproot the other. He must succeed in this, since prak@rti wants liberation for her final realization [Footnote ref 1].

Yoga Purificatory Practices (Parikarma).

The purpose of Yoga meditation is to steady the mind on the gradually advancing stages of thoughts towards liberation, so that vicious tendencies may gradually be more and more weakened and at last disappear altogether. But before the mind can be fit for this lofty meditation, it is necessary that it should be purged of ordinary impurities. Thus the intending yogin should practise absolute non-injury to all living beings (*ahi@msa*), absolute and strict truthfulness (*satya*), non-stealing (*asteya*), absolute sexual restraint (*brahmacarya*) and the acceptance of nothing but that which is absolutely necessary (*aparigraha*). These are collectively called *yama*. Again side by side with these

abstinences one must also practise external cleanliness by ablutions and inner cleanliness of the mind, contentment of mind, the habit of bearing all privations of heat

Page 247

and cold, or keeping the body unmoved and remaining silent in speech (*tapas*), the study of philosophy (*svadhyaya*) and meditation on Is'vara (*Is'varapra@nidhana*). These are collectively called *niyamas*. To these are also to be added certain other moral disciplines such as *pratipak@sa-bhavana*, *maitri*, *karu@na*, *mudita* and *upek@sa*. *Pratipak@sa-bhavana* means that whenever a bad thought (e.g. selfish motive) may come one should practise the opposite good thought (self-sacrifice); so that the bad thoughts may not find any scope. Most of our vices are originated by our unfriendly relations with our fellow-beings. To remove these the practice of mere abstinence may not be sufficient, and therefore one should habituate the mind to keep itself in positive good relations with our fellow-beings. The practice of *maitri* means to think of all beings as friends. If we continually habituate ourselves to think this, we can never be displeased with them. So too one should practise *karu@na* or kindly feeling for sufferers, *mudita*

[Footnote 1: See my "Yoga Psychology," *Quest*, October, 1921.]

271

or a feeling of happiness for the good of all beings, and *upek@sa* or a feeling of equanimity and indifference for the vices of others. The last one indicates that the yogin should not take any note of the vices of vicious men.

When the mind becomes disinclined to all worldly pleasures (*vairagya*) and to all such as are promised in heaven by the performances of Vedic sacrifices, and the mind purged of its dross and made fit for the practice of Yoga meditation, the yogin may attain liberation by a constant practice (*abhyasa*) attended with faith, confidence (*s'raddha*), strength of purpose and execution (*virya*) and wisdom (*prajna*) attained at each advance.

The Yoga Meditation.

When the mind has become pure the chances of its being ruffled by external disturbances are greatly reduced. At such a stage the yogin takes a firm posture (*asana*) and fixes his mind on any object he chooses. It is, however, preferable that he should fix it on Is'vara, for in that case Is'vara being pleased removes many of the obstacles in his path, and it becomes easier for him to attain success. But of course he makes his own choice, and can choose anything he likes for the unifying concentration (*samadhi*) of his mind. There are four states of this unifying concentration namely *vitarka*, *vicara*, *ananda* and *asmita*. Of these *vitarka* and *vicara* have each two varieties,

savitarka, nirvitarka, savicara, nirvicara [Footnote ref 1]. When the mind concentrates on objects, remembering their names and qualities, it is called the savitarka stage; when on the five tanmatras with a remembrance of their qualities it is called savicara, and when it is one

Page 248

with the tanmatras without any notion of their qualities it is called nirvicara. Higher than these are the ananda and the asmita states. In the ananda state the mind concentrates on the buddhi with its functions of the senses causing pleasure. In the asmita stage buddhi concentrates on pure substance as divested of all modifications. In all these stages there are objects on which the mind consciously concentrates, these are therefore called the *samprajnata* (with knowledge of objects) types of samadhi. Next to this comes the last stage of samadhi called the *asamprajnata* or nirodha samadhi, in which the mind is without any object. By remaining

[Footnote 1: Vacaspati, however, thinks that ananda and asmita have also two other varieties, which is denied by Bhik@su.]

272

long in this stage the old potencies (sa@mskaras) or impressions due to the continued experience of worldly events tending towards the objective world or towards any process of experiencing inner thinking are destroyed by the production of a strong habit of the nirodha state. At this stage dawns the true knowledge, when the buddhi becomes as pure as the puru@sa, and after that the citta not being able to bind the puru@sa any longer returns back to prak@rti.

In order to practise this concentration one has to see that there may be no disturbance, and the yogin should select a quiet place on a hill or in a forest. One of the main obstacles is, however, to be found in our constant respiratory action. This has to be stopped by the practice of *pra@nayama*. Pra@nayama consists in taking in breath, keeping it for a while and then giving it up. With practice one may retain breath steadily for hours, days, months and even years. When there is no need of taking in breath or giving it out, and it can be retained steady for a long time, one of the main obstacles is removed.

The process of practising concentration is begun by sitting in a steady posture, holding the breath by pra@nayama, excluding all other thoughts, and fixing the mind on any object (*dhara@na*). At first it is difficult to fix steadily on any object, and the same thought has to be repeated constantly in the mind, this is called *dhyana*. After sufficient practice in dhyana the mind attains the power of making itself steady; at this stage it becomes one with its object and there is no change or repetition. There is no consciousness of subject, object or thinking, but the mind becomes steady and one with the object of thought. This is called *samadhi* [Footnote ref 1]. We have already described the six stages of samadhi. As the yogin acquires strength in one stage of

samadhi, he passes on to a still higher stage and so on. As he progresses onwards he attains miraculous powers (*vibhuti*) and his faith and hope in the practice increase. Miraculous powers bring with them many temptations, but the yogin is firm of purpose and even though the position of Indra is offered to him he does not relax. His wisdom (*prajna*) also increases at each step. Prajna knowledge is as clear as perception, but while perception is limited to

Page 249

[Footnote 1: It should be noted that the word *samadhi* cannot properly be translated either by “concentration” or by “meditation.” It means that peculiar kind of concentration in the Yoga sense by which the mind becomes one with its object and there is no movement of the mind into its passing states.]

273

certain gross things and certain gross qualities [Footnote ref 1] prajna has no such limitations, penetrating into the subtlest things, the tanmatras, the gu@nas, and perceiving clearly and vividly all their subtle conditions and qualities [Footnote ref 2]. As the potencies (sa@mskara) of the prajna wisdom grow in strength the potencies of ordinary knowledge are rooted out, and the yogin continues to remain always in his prajna wisdom. It is a peculiarity of this prajna that it leads a man towards liberation and cannot bind him to sa@msara. The final prajnas which lead to liberation are of seven kinds, namely, (1) I have known the world, the object of suffering and misery, I have nothing more to know of it. (2) The grounds and roots of sa@msara have been thoroughly uprooted, nothing more of it remains to be uprooted. (3) Removal has become a fact of direct cognition by inhibitive trance. (4) The means of knowledge in the shape of a discrimination of puru@sa from prak@rti has been understood. The other three are not psychological but are rather metaphysical processes associated with the situation. They are as follows: (5) The double purpose of buddhi experience and emancipation (*bhoga* and *apavarga*) has been realized. (6) The strong gravitating tendency of the disintegrated gu@nas drives them into prak@rti like heavy stones dropped from high hill tops. (7) The buddhi disintegrated into its constituents the gu@nas become merged in the prak@rti and remain there for ever. The puru@sa having passed beyond the bondage of the gu@nas shines forth in its pure intelligence. There is no bliss or happiness in this Sa@mkhya-Yoga mukti, for all feeling belongs to prak@rti. It is thus a state of pure intelligence. What the Sa@mkhya tries to achieve through knowledge, Yoga achieves through the perfected discipline of the will and psychological control of the mental states.

[Footnote 1: The limitations which baffle perception are counted in the *Karika* as follows: Extreme remoteness (e.g. a lark high up in the sky), extreme proximity (e.g. collyrium inside the eye), loss of sense-organ (e.g. a blind man), want of attention,

extreme smallness of the object (e.g. atoms), obstruction by other intervening objects (e.g. by walls), presence of superior lights (the star cannot be seen in daylight), being mixed up with other things of its own kind (e.g. water thrown into a lake).]

[Footnote 2: Though all things are but the modifications of gu@nas yet the real nature of the gu@nas is never revealed by the sense knowledge. What appears to the senses are but illusory characteristics like those of magic (maya):

Page 250

“Gunana@m parama@m rupam na d@r@s@tipatham@rcchat
Yattu d@rs@tipatham praptam tanmayeva sutucchakam.”

Vyasabha@sya, IV. 13.

The real nature of the gu@nas is thus revealed only by *prajna*.]

274

CHAPTER VIII

THE NYAYA-VAIS'E@SIKA PHILOSOPHY

Criticism of Buddhism and Sa@mkhya from the Nyaya standpoint.

The Buddhists had upset all common sense convictions of substance and attribute, cause and effect, and permanence of things, on the ground that all collocations are momentary; each group of collocations exhausts itself in giving rise to another group and that to another and so on. But if a collocation representing milk generates the collocation of curd it is said to be due to a joint action of the elements forming the cause-collocation and the *modus operandi* is unintelligible; the elements composing the cause-collocation cannot separately generate the elements composing the effect-collocation, for on such a supposition it becomes hard to maintain the doctrine of momentariness as the individual and separate exercise of influence on the part of the cause-elements and their coordination and manifestation as effect cannot but take more than one moment. The supposition that the whole of the effect-collocation is the result of the joint action of the elements of cause-collocation is against our universal uncontradicted experience that specific elements constituting the cause (e.g. the whiteness of milk) are the cause of other corresponding elements of the effect (e.g. the whiteness of the curd); and we could not say that the hardness, blackness, and other properties of the atoms of iron in a lump state should not be regarded as the cause of similar qualities in the iron ball, for this is against the testimony of experience. Moreover there would be no difference between material (*upadana*, e.g. clay of the jug), instrumental and concomitant causes (*nimitta* and *sahakari*, such as the potter, and the wheel, the stick etc. in forming the jug), for the causes jointly produce the effect, and there was no room for distinguishing the material and the instrumental causes, as such.

Again at the very moment in which a cause-collocation is brought into being, it cannot exert its influence to produce its

275

effect-collocation. Thus after coming into being it would take the cause-collocation at least another moment to exercise its influence to produce the effect. How can the thing which is destroyed the moment after it is born produce any effect? The truth is that causal elements remain and when they are properly collocated the effect is produced. Ordinary experience also shows that we perceive things as existing from a past time. The past time is perceived by us as past, the present as present and the future as future and things are perceived as existing from a past time onwards.

Page 251

The Sa@mkhya assumption that effects are but the actualized states of the potential cause, and that the causal entity holds within it all the future series of effects, and that thus the effect is already existent even before the causal movement for the production of the effect, is also baseless. Sa@mkhya says that the oil was already existent in the sesamum and not in the stone, and that it is thus that oil can be got from sesamum and not from the stone. The action of the instrumental cause with them consists only in actualizing or manifesting what was already existent in a potential form in the cause. This is all nonsense. A lump of clay is called the cause and the jug the effect; of what good is it to say that the jug exists in the clay since with clay we can never carry water? A jug is made out of clay, but clay is not a jug. What is meant by saying that the jug was unmanifested or was in a potential state before, and that it has now become manifest or actual? What does potential state mean? The potential state of the jug is not the same as its actual state; thus the actual state of the jug must be admitted as non-existent before. If it is meant that the jug is made up of the same parts (the atoms) of which the clay is made up, of course we admit it, but this does not mean that the jug was existent in the atoms of the lump of clay. The potency inherent in the clay by virtue of which it can expose itself to the influence of other agents, such as the potter, for being transformed into a jug is not the same as the effect, the jug. Had it been so, then we should rather have said that the jug came out of the jug. The assumption of Sa@mkhya that the substance and attribute have the same reality is also against all experience, for we all perceive that movement and attribute belong to substance and not to attribute. Again Sa@mkhya holds a preposterous doctrine that buddhi is different

276

from intelligence. It is absolutely unmeaning to call buddhi non-intelligent. Again what is the good of all this fictitious fuss that the qualities of buddhi are reflected on puru@sa and then again on buddhi. Evidently in all our experience we find that the soul (*atman*) knows, feels and wills, and it is difficult to understand why Sa@mkhya does not accept this patent fact and declare that knowledge, feeling, and willing, all belonged to buddhi. Then again in order to explain experience it brought forth a theory of double reflection. Again Sa@mkhya prak@rti is non-intelligent, and where is the guarantee that she (prak@rti) will not bind the wise again and will emancipate him once for all? Why did the puru@sa become bound down? Prak@rti is being utilized for enjoyment by the infinite number of puru@sas, and she is no delicate girl (as Sa@mkhya supposes) who will leave the presence of the puru@sa ashamed as soon as her real nature is discovered. Again pleasure (*sukha*), sorrow (*du@hkha*) and a blinding feeling through ignorance (*moha*)

Page 252

are but the feeling-experiences of the soul, and with what impudence could Sa@mkhya think of these as material substances? Again their cosmology of a mahat, aha@mkara, the tanmatras, is all a series of assumptions never testified by experience nor by reason. They are all a series of hopeless and foolish blunders. The phenomena of experience thus call for a new careful reconstruction in the light of reason and experience such as cannot be found in other systems. (See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 452-466 and 490-496.)

Nyaya and Vais'e@sika sutras.

It is very probable that the earliest beginnings of Nyaya are to be found in the disputations and debates amongst scholars trying to find out the right meanings of the Vedic texts for use in sacrifices and also in those disputations which took place between the adherents of different schools of thought trying to defeat one another. I suppose that such disputations occurred in the days of the Upani@sads, and the art of disputation was regarded even then as a subject of study, and it probably passed then by the name *vakovakya*. Mr Bodas has pointed out that Apastamba who according to Buehler lived before the third century B.C. used the word Nyaya in the sense of Mima@msa [Footnote ref 1]. The word Nyaya derived

[Footnote 1 *Apastamba*, trans. by Buehler, Introduction, p. XXVII., and Bodas's article on the *Historical Survey of Indian Logic* in the Bombay Branch of J.R.A.S., vol. XIX.]

277

from the root *ni* is sometimes explained as that by which sentences and words could be interpreted as having one particular meaning and not another, and on the strength of this even Vedic accents of words (which indicate the meaning of compound words by pointing out the particular kind of compound in which the words entered into combination) were called Nyaya [Footnote ref 1]. Prof. Jacobi on the strength of Kau@tilya's enumeration of the *vidya* (sciences) as Anvik@siki (the science of testing the perceptual and scriptural knowledge by further scrutiny), *trayi* (the three Vedas), *vartta* (the sciences of agriculture, cattle keeping etc.), and *da@n@daniti* (polity), and the enumeration of the philosophies as Sa@mkhya, Yoga, Lokayata and Anvik@siki, supposes that the *Nyaya sutra* was not in existence in Kau@tilya's time 300 B.C.) [Footnote ref 2]. Kau@tilya's reference to Nyaya as Anvik@siki only suggests that the word Nyaya was not a familiar name for Anvik@siki in Kau@tilya's time. He seems to

misunderstand Vatsyayana in thinking that Vatsyayana distinguishes Nyaya from the Anvik@siki in holding that while the latter only means the science of logic the former means logic as well as metaphysics. What appears from Vatsyayana's statement in *Nyaya sutra* I.i. 1 is this that he points out that the science which was known in his

Page 253

time as Nyaya was the same as was referred to as Anvik@siki by Kau@tilya. He distinctly identifies Nyayavidya with Anvik@siki, but justifies the separate enumeration of certain logical categories such as sa@ms'aya (doubt) etc., though these were already contained within the first two terms *prama@na* (means of cognition) and *prameya* (objects of cognition), by holding that unless these its special and separate branches (*p@rthakprasthana*) were treated, Nyayavidya would simply become metaphysics (*adhyatmavidya*) like the Upani@sads. The old meaning of Nyaya as the means of determining the right meaning or the right thing is also agreed upon by Vatsyayana and is sanctioned by Vacaspati in his *Nyayavarttikatatparya@tika* l.i. 1). He compares the meaning of the word Nyaya (*prama@nairarthaparik@sa@nam*—to scrutinize an object by means of logical proof) with the etymological meaning of the word anvik@siki (to scrutinize anything after it has been known by perception and scriptures). Vatsyayana of course points out that so far as this logical side of Nyaya is concerned it has the widest scope for

[Footnote 1: Kalidasa's *Kumarasambhava* "Udghato pra@navayasam nyayaistribhirudira@nam," also Mallinatha's gloss on it.]

[Footnote 2: Prof. Jacobi's "The early history of Indian Philosophy," *Indian Antiquary*, 1918.]

278

itself as it includes all beings, all their actions, and all the sciences [Footnote ref 1]. He quotes Kau@tilya to show that in this capacity Nyaya is like light illumining all sciences and is the means of all works. In its capacity as dealing with the truths of metaphysics it may show the way to salvation. I do not dispute Prof. Jacobi's main point that the metaphysical portion of the work was a later addition, for this seems to me to be a very probable view. In fact Vatsyayana himself designates the logical portion as a *p@rthakprasthana* (separate branch). But I do not find that any statement of Vatsyayana or Kau@tilya can justify us in concluding that this addition was made after Kau@tilya. Vatsyayana has no doubt put more stress on the importance of the logical side of the work, but the reason of that seems to be quite obvious, for the importance of metaphysics or *adhyatmavidya* was acknowledged by all. But the importance of the mere logical side would not appeal to most people. None of the dharmas'astras (religious scriptures) or the Vedas would lend any support to it, and Vatsyayana had to seek the support of Kau@tilya in the matter as the last resource. The fact that Kau@tilya was not satisfied by counting Anvik@siki as one of the four vidyas but also named it as one of the philosophies side by side with Sa@mkhya seems to lead to the

presumption that probably even in Kau@tilya's time Nyaya was composed of two branches, one as adhyatmaavidya and another as a science

Page 254

of logic or rather of debate. This combination is on the face of it loose and external, and it is not improbable that the metaphysical portion was added to increase the popularity of the logical part, which by itself might not attract sufficient attention.

Mahamahopadhyaya Haraprasada S'astri in an article in the *Journal of the Bengal Asiatic Society* 1905 says that as Vacaspati made two attempts to collect the *Nyaya sutras*, one as *Nyayasuci* and the other as *Nyayasutroddhara*, it seems that even in Vacaspati's time he was not certain as to the authenticity of many of the *Nyaya sutras*. He further points out that there are unmistakable signs that many of the sutras were interpolated, and relates the Buddhist tradition from China and Japan that Mirok mingled Nyaya and Yoga. He also

[Footnote 1: *Yena prayukta@h pravarttate tat prayojanam* (that by which one is led to act is called *prayojanam*); *yamartham abhipsan jihanasa va karma arabhate tenanena sarve pra@nina@h sarva@ni karma@ni sarvas'ca vidya@h vyapta@h tadas'rayas'ca nyaya@h pravarttate* (all those which one tries to have or to fly from are called *prayojana*, therefore all beings, all their actions, and all sciences, are included within *prayojana*, and all these depend on Nyaya). *Vatsyayana bhas'ya*, I.i. 1.]

279

thinks that the sutras underwent two additions, one at the hands of some Buddhists and another at the hands of some Hindu who put in Hindu arguments against the Buddhist ones. These suggestions of this learned scholar seem to be very probable, but we have no clue by which we can ascertain the time when such additions were made. The fact that there are unmistakable proofs of the interpolation of many of the sutras makes the fixing of the date of the original part of the *Nyaya sutras* still more difficult, for the Buddhist references can hardly be of any help, and Prof. Jacobi's attempt to fix the date of the *Nyaya sutras* on the basis of references to S'unyavada naturally loses its value, except on the supposition that all references to S'unyavada must be later than Nagarjuna, which is not correct, since the *Mahayana sutras* written before Nagarjuna also held the S'unyavada doctrine.

The late Dr S.C. Vidyabhu@sa@na in *J.R.A.S.* 1918 thinks that the earlier part of Nyaya was written by Gautama about 550 B.C. whereas the *Nyaya sutras* of Ak@sapada were written about 150 A.D. and says that the use of the word Nyaya in the sense of logic in *Mahabharata* I.I. 67, I. 70. 42-51, must be regarded as interpolations. He, however, does not give any reasons in support of his assumption. It appears from his treatment of the subject that the fixing of the date of Ak@sapada was made to fit in

somehow with his idea that Ak@sapada wrote his *Nyaya sutras* under the influence of Aristotle—a

Page 255

supposition which does not require serious refutation, at least so far as Dr Vidyabhu@sa@na has proved it. Thus after all this discussion we have not advanced a step towards the ascertainment of the date of the original part of the Nyaya. Goldstuecker says that both Patanjali (140 B.C.) and Katyayana (fourth century B.C.) knew the *Nyaya sutras* [Footnote ref 1]. We know that Kau@tilya knew the Nyaya in some form as Anvik@siki in 300 B.C., and on the strength of this we may venture to say that the Nyaya existed in some form as early as the fourth century B.C. But there are other reasons which lead me to think that at least some of the present sutras were written some time in the second century A.D. Bodas points out that Badarayana@na's sutras make allusions to the Vais'e@sika doctrines and not to Nyaya. On this ground he thinks that *Vais'e@sika sutras* were written before Badarayana's *Brahma-sutras*, whereas the Nyaya sutras were written later. Candrakanta Tarkala@mkara also contends in his

[Footnote 1: Goldstuecker's *Pa@nini*, p. 157.]

280

edition of Vais'e@sika that the *Vais'e@sika sutras* were earlier than the Nyaya. It seems to me to be perfectly certain that the *Vais'e@sika sutras* were written before Caraka (80 A.D.); for he not only quotes one of the *Vais'e@sika sutras*, but the whole foundation of his medical physics is based on the Vais'e@sika physics [Footnote ref 1]. The *La@nkavatara sutra* (which as it was quoted by As'vagho@sa is earlier than 80 A.D.) also makes allusions to the atomic doctrine. There are other weightier grounds, as we shall see later on, for supposing that the *Vais'e@sika sutras* are probably pre-Buddhistic [Footnote ref 2].

It is certain that even the logical part of the present *Nyaya sutras* was preceded by previous speculations on the subject by thinkers of other schools. Thus in commenting on I.i. 32 in which the sutra states that a syllogism consists of five premisses (*avayava*) Vatsyayana says that this sutra was written to refute the views of those who held that there should be ten premisses [Footnote ref 3]. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* also give us some of the earliest types of inference, which do not show any acquaintance with the technic of the Nyaya doctrine of inference [Footnote ref 4].

Does Vais'e@sika represent an Old School of Mima@msa?

The Vais'e@sika is so much associated with Nyaya by tradition that it seems at first sight quite unlikely that it could be supposed to represent an old school of Mima@msa,

older than that represented in the *Mima@msa sutras*. But a closer inspection of the *Vais'e@sika sutras* seems to confirm such a supposition in a very remarkable way. We have seen in the previous section that Caraka quotes a *Vais'e@sika sutra*. An examination of Caraka's *Sutrasthana*

Page 256

(I.35-38) leaves us convinced that the writer of the verses had some compendium of Vais'e@sika such as that of the *Bha@sapariccheda* before him. *Caraka sutra* or *karika* (I.i. 36) says that the gu@nas are those which have been enumerated such as heaviness, etc., cognition, and those which begin with the gu@na "para" (universality) and end with "prayatna" (effort) together with the sense-qualities (*sartha*). It seems that this is a reference to some well-known enumeration. But this enumeration is not to be found in the *Vais'e@sika sutra* (I.i. 6) which leaves out the six gu@nas,

[Footnote 1: *Caraka, S'arira*, 39.]

[Footnote 2: See the next section.]

[Footnote 3: Vatsyayana's *Bha@sya* on the *Nyaya sutras*, I.i.32. This is undoubtedly a reference to the Jaina view as found in *Das'avaikalikaniryukti* as noted before.]

[Footnote 4: *Nyaya sutra* I.i. 5, and *Vais'e@sika sutras* IX. ii. 1-2, 4-5, and III. i. 8-17.]

281

heaviness (*gurutva*), liquidity (*dravatva*), oiliness(*sneha*), elasticity (*sa@mskara*), merit (*dharma*) and demerit (*adharmā*); in one part of the sutra the enumeration begins with "para" (universality) and ends in "prayatna," but buddhi (cognition) comes within the enumeration beginning from para and ending in prayatna, whereas in *Caraka* buddhi does not form part of the list and is separately enumerated. This leads me to suppose that *Caraka's* sutra was written at a time when the six gu@nas left out in the *Vais'e@sika* enumeration had come to be counted as gu@nas, and compendiums had been made in which these were enumerated. *Bha@sapariccheda* (a later *Vais'e@sika* compendium), is a compilation from some very old *karikas* which are referred to by Vis'vanatha as being collected from "*atisa@mk@sipracirantanoktibhi@h*"—(from very ancient aphorisms [Footnote ref 1]); *Caraka's* definition of *samānya* and *vis'e@sa* shows that they had not then been counted as separate categories as in later *Nyaya-Vais'e@sika* doctrines; but though slightly different it is quite in keeping with the sort of definition one finds in the *Vais'e@sika sutra* that *samānya* (generality) and *vis'e@sa* are relative to each other [Footnote ref 2]. *Caraka's* sutras were therefore probably written at a time when the *Vais'e@sika* doctrines were undergoing changes, and well-known compendiums were beginning to be written on them.

The *Vais'e@sika sutras* seem to be ignorant of the Buddhist doctrines. In their discussions on the existence of soul, there is no reference to any view as to non-

existence of soul, but the argument turned on the point as to whether the self is to be an object of inference or revealed to us by our notion of "I." There is also no other reference to any other systems except to some Mima@msa doctrines

Page 257

and occasionally to Sa@mkhya. There is no reason to suppose that the Mima@msa doctrines referred to allude to the *Mima@msa sutras* of Jaimini. The manner in which the nature of inference has been treated shows that the Nyaya phraseology of “*purvavat*” and “*s’e@savat*” was not known. *Vais’e@sika sutras* in more than one place refer to time as the ultimate cause [Footnote ref 3]. We know that the S’vetas’vatara Upani@sad refers to those who regard time as the cause of all things, but in none of the

[Footnote 1: Professor Vanamali Vedantatirtha’s article in *J.A.S.B.*, 1908.]

[Footnote 2: Caraka (I.i. 33) says that samanya is that which produces unity and vis’e@sa is that which separates. V.S. II. ii. 7. Samanya and vis’e@sa depend upon our mode of thinking (as united or as separate).]

[Footnote 3: *Vais’e@sika sutra* (II. ii. 9 and V. ii. 26).]

282

systems that we have can we trace any upholding of this ancient view [Footnote ref 1]. These considerations as well as the general style of the work and the methods of discussion lead me to think that these sutras are probably the oldest that we have and in all probability are pre-Buddhistic.

The *Vais’e@sika sutra* begins with the statement that its object is to explain virtue, “dharma” This is we know the manifest duty of Mima@msa and we know that unlike any other system Jaimini begins his *Mima@msa sutras* by defining “dharma”. This at first seems irrelevant to the main purpose of *Vais’e@sika*, viz, the description of the nature of padartha [Footnote ref 2]. He then defines dharma as that which gives prosperity and ultimate good (*nihsreyasa*) and says that the Veda must be regarded as valid, since it can dictate this. He ends his book with the remarks that those injunctions (of Vedic deeds) which are performed for ordinary human motives bestow prosperity even though their efficacy is not known to us through our ordinary experience, and in this matter the Veda must be regarded as the authority which dictates those acts [Footnote ref 3]. The fact that the *Vais’e@sika* begins with a promise to describe dharma and after describing the nature of substances, qualities and actions and also the *ad@r@s@ta* (unknown virtue) due to dharma (merit accruing from the performance of Vedic deeds) by which many of our unexplained experiences may be explained, ends his book by saying that those Vedic works which are not seen to produce any direct effect, will produce prosperity through *adrsta*, shows that Ka@nada’s method of explaining dharma has been by showing that physical phenomena involving substances, qualities, and actions



can only be explained up to a certain extent while a good number cannot be explained at all except on the assumption of ad@r@s@ta (unseen virtue) produced by dharma. The

[Footnote 1: S'vetas'vatara I.i.2]

Page 258

[Footnote 2: I remember a verse quoted in an old commentary of the *Kalapa Vyakaraṇa*, in which it is said that the description of the six categories by Kaṇada in his *Vaiśeṣika sūtras*, after having proposed to describe the nature of dharma, is as irrelevant as to proceed towards the sea while intending to go to the mountain Himavat (Himalaya).

“Dharmaṃ vyakhyatukamasya saṃpadarthopavarāṇāṃ Himavadgantukamasya saṃsāraśāntipamam.”]

[Footnote 3: The sūtra “*Tadvacanād amṇasya pramāṇyam* (I.i.3 and X.ii.9) has been explained by *Upaskara* as meaning “The Veda being the word of Isvara (God) must be regarded as valid,” but since there is no mention of Isvara anywhere in the text this is simply reading the later Nyaya ideas into the *Vaiśeṣika*. Sūtra X.ii.8 is only a repetition of VI.ii.1.]

283

description of the categories of substance is not irrelevant, but is the means of proving that our ordinary experience of these cannot explain many facts which are only to be explained on the supposition of adṛśa proceeding out of the performance of Vedic deeds. In V.i. 15 the movement of needles towards magnets, in V. ii. 7 the circulation of water in plant bodies, V. ii. 13 and IV. ii. 7 the upward motion of fire, the side motion of air, the combining movement of atoms (by which all combinations have taken place), and the original movement of the mind are said to be due to adṛśa. In V. ii. 17 the movement of the soul after death, its taking hold of other bodies, the assimilation of food and drink and other kinds of contact (the movement and development of the foetus as enumerated in *Upaskara*) are said to be due to adṛśa. Salvation (mokṣa) is said to be produced by the annihilation of adṛśa leading to the annihilation of all contacts and non production of rebirths. *Vaiśeṣika* marks the distinction between the dr̥ṣṭa (experienced) and the adṛśa. All the categories that he describes are founded on dr̥ṣṭa (experience) and those unexplained by known experience are due to adṛśa. These are the acts on which depend all life-process of animals and plants, the continuation of atoms or the construction of the worlds, natural motion of fire and air, death and rebirth (VI. ii. 15) and even the physical phenomena by which our fortunes are affected in some way or other (V. ii. 2), in fact all with which we are vitally interested in philosophy. Kaṇada's philosophy gives only some facts of experience regarding substances, qualities and actions, leaving all the graver issues of metaphysics to adṛśa. But what leads to adṛśa? In answer to this, Kaṇada does not speak of good or bad or virtuous or sinful deeds, but of Vedic works, such as holy ablutions (*snana*), fasting, holy student life (*brahmacarya*), remaining at the house of the teacher (*gurukulavasa*), retired forest life (*vanaprastha*), sacrifice (*yajna*), gifts (*dana*), certain kinds of sacrificial sprinkling and rules of performing sacrificial works according to the prescribed time of the stars, the prescribed hymns (mantras) (VI. ii. 2).

Page 259

He described what is pure and what is impure food, pure food being that which is sacrificially purified (VI. ii. 5) the contrary being impure, and he says that the taking of pure food leads to prosperity through ad@r@s@ta. He also described how

284

feelings of attachment to things are also generated by ad@r@s@ta. Throughout almost the whole of VI. i Ka@nada is busy in showing the special conditions of making gifts and receiving them. A reference to our chapter on Mima@msa will show that the later Mima@msa writers agreed with the Nyaya-Vais`e@sika doctrines in most of their views regarding substance, qualities, etc. Some of the main points in which Mima@msa differs from Nyaya-Vais`e@sika are (1) self-validity of the Vedas, (2) the eternality of the Vedas, (3) disbelief in any creator or god, (4) eternality of sound (s`abda), (5) (according to Kumarila) direct perception of self in the notion of the ego. Of these the first and the second points do not form any subject of discussion in the Vais`e@sika. But as no Is`vara is mentioned, and as all ad@r@s@ta depends upon the authority of the Vedas, we may assume that Vais`e@sika had no dispute with Mima@msa. The fact that there is no reference to any dissension is probably due to the fact that really none had taken place at the time of the *Vais`e@sika sutras*. It is probable that Ka@nada believed that the Vedas were written by some persons superior to us (II. i. 18, VI. i. 1-2). But the fact that there is no reference to any conflict with Mima@msa suggests that the doctrine that the Vedas were never written by anyone was formulated at a later period, whereas in the days of the *Vais`e@sika sutras*, the view was probably what is represented in the *Vais`e@sika sutras*. As there is no reference to Is`vara and as ad@r@s@ta proceeding out of the performance of actions in accordance with Vedic injunctions is made the cause of all atomic movements, we can very well assume that Vais`e@sika was as atheistic or non-theistic as the later Mima@msa philosophers. As regards the eternality of sound, which in later days was one of the main points of quarrel between the Nyaya-Vais`e@sika and the Mima@msa, we find that in II. ii. 25-32, Ka@nada gives reasons in favour of the non-eternality of sound, but after that from II. ii. 33 till the end of the chapter he closes the argument in favour of the eternality of sound, which is the distinctive Mima@msa view as we know from the later Mima@msa writers [Footnote ref 1]. Next comes the question of the proof of the existence of self. The traditional Nyaya view is

[Footnote 1: The last two concluding sutras II. ii. 36 and 37 are in my opinion wrongly interpreted by S`a@nkara Mis`ra in his *Upaskara* (II. ii. 36 by adding an “*api*” to the sutra and thereby changing the issue, and II. ii. 37 by misreading the phonetic combination “samkhyabhava” as sa@mkhya and bhava instead of sa@mkhya and abhava, which in

my opinion is the right combination here) in favour of the non-eternality of sound as we find in the later Nyaya Vais'e@sika view.]

Page 260

285

that the self is supposed to exist because it must be inferred as the seat of the qualities of pleasure, pain, cognition, *etc.* Traditionally this is regarded as the Vais'e@sika view as well. But in Vais'e@sika III. ii. 4 the existence of soul is first inferred by reason of its activity and the existence of pleasure, pain, *etc.*, in III. ii. 6-7 this inference is challenged by saying that we do not perceive that the activity, *etc.* belongs to the soul and not to the body and so no certainty can be arrived at by inference, and in III. ii. 8 it is suggested that therefore the existence of soul is to be accepted on the authority of the scriptures (*agama*). To this the final Vais'e@sika conclusion is given that we can directly perceive the self in our feeling as "I" (*aham*), and we have therefore not to depend on the scriptures for the proof of the existence of the self, and thus the inference of the existence of the self is only an additional proof of what we already find in perception as "I" (*aham*) (III. ii. 10-18, also IX. i. 11).

These considerations lead me to think that the Vais'e@sika represented a school of Mima@msa thought which supplemented a metaphysics to strengthen the grounds of the Vedas.

Philosophy in the Vais'e@sika sutras.

The *Vais'e@sika sutras* begin with the ostensible purpose of explaining virtue (*dharma*) (I.i. 1) and dharma according to it is that by which prosperity (*abhyudaya*) and salvation (*ni@hs'reyasa*) are attained. Then it goes on to say that the validity of the Vedas depends on the fact that it leads us to prosperity and salvation. Then it turns back to the second sutra and says that salvation comes as the result of real knowledge, produced by special excellence of dharma, of the characteristic features of the categories of substance (*dravya*), quality (*gu@na*), class concept (*samdanya*), particularity (*vis'e@sa*), and inherence (*samavayay*) [Footnote ref 1]. The dravyas are earth, water, fire, air, ether, time, space, soul, and mind. The gu@nas are colour, taste, odour, touch, number, measure, separations, contact, disjoining, quality of belonging to high genus or to species [Footnote ref 2]. Action (*karma*) means upward movement

[Footnote 1: *Upaskara* notes that *vis'e@sa* here refers to the ultimate differences of things and not to species. A special doctrine of this system is this, that each of the indivisible atoms of even the same element has specific features of difference.]

[Footnote 2: Here the well known qualities of heaviness (*gurutva*), liquidity (*dravatva*), oiliness (*sneha*), elasticity (*sa@mshakara*), merit (*dharma*), and demerit (*adharma*) have

been altogether omitted. These are all counted in later Vais'e@sika commentaries and compendiums. It must be noted that "gu@na" in Vas'e@sika means qualities and not subtle reals or substances as in Sa@mkhya Yoga. Gu@na in Vas'e@sika would be akin to what Yoga would call *dharma*.]

Page 261

286

downward movement, contraction, expansion and horizontal movement. The three common qualities of dravya, gu@na and karma are that they are existent, non-eternal, substantive, effect, cause, and possess generality and particularity. Dravya produces other dravyas and the gu@nas other gu@nas. But karma is not necessarily produced by karma. Dravya does not destroy either its cause or its effect but the gu@nas are destroyed both by the cause and by the effect. Karma is destroyed by karma. Dravya possesses karma and gu@na and is regarded as the material (*samavayi*) cause. Gu@nas inhere in dravya, cannot possess further gu@nas, and are not by themselves the cause of contact or disjoining. Karma is devoid of gu@na, cannot remain at one time in more than one object, inheres in dravya alone, and is an independent cause of contact or disjoining. Dravya is the material cause (*samavayi*) of (derivative) dravyas, gu@na, and karma, gu@na is also the non-material cause (*asamavayi*) of dravya, gu@na and karma. Karma is the general cause of contact, disjoining, and inertia in motion (*vega*). Karma is not the cause of dravya. For dravya may be produced even without karma [Footnote ref 1]. Dravya is the general effect of dravya. Karma is dissimilar to gu@na in this that it does not produce karma. The numbers two, three, etc, separateness, contact and disjoining are effected by more than one dravya. Each karma not being connected with more than one thing is not produced by more than one thing [Footnote ref 2]. A dravya is the result of many contacts (of the atoms). One colour may be the result of many colours. Upward movement is the result of heaviness, effort and contact. Contact and disjoining are also the result of karma. In denying the causality of karma it is meant that karma is not the cause of dravya and karma [Footnote ref 3].

In the second chapter of the first book Ka@nada first says that if there is no cause, there is no effect, but there may be the cause even though there may not be the effect. He next says that genus (*samanya*) and species (*visesa*) are relative to the understanding;

[Footnote 1: It is only when the karya ceases that dravya is produced. See *Upaskara* I.i. 22.]

[Footnote 2: If karma is related to more than one thing, then with the movement of one we should have felt that two or more things were moving.]

[Footnote 3: It must be noted that karma in this sense is quite different from the more extensive use of karma as meritorious or vicious action which is the cause of rebirth.]

Page 262

being (*bhava*) indicates continuity only and is hence only a genus. The universals of substance, quality and action maybe both genus and species, but visesa as constituting the ultimate differences (of atoms) exists (independent of any percipient). In connection with this he says that the ultimate genus is being (*satta*) in virtue of which things appear as existent, all other genera may only relatively be regarded as relative genera or species. Being must be regarded as a separate category, since it is different from *dravya*, *gu@na* and *karma*, and yet exists in them, and has no genus or species. It gives us the notion that something is and must be regarded as a category existing as one identical entity in all *dravya*, *gu@na*, and *karma*, for in its universal nature as being it has no special characteristics in the different objects in which it inheres. The specific universals of thingness (*dravyatva*) qualitiveness (*gu@natva*) or actionness (*karmatva*) are also categories which are separate from universal being (*bhava* or *satta*) for they also have no separate genus or species and yet may be distinguished from one another, but *bhava* or being was the same in all.

In the first chapter of the second book *Ka@nada* deals with substances. Earth possesses colour, taste, smell, and touch, water, colour, taste, touch, liquidity, and smoothness (*snigdha*), fire, colour and touch, air, touch, but none of these qualities can be found in ether (*akas'a*). Liquidity is a special quality of water because butter, lac, wax, lead, iron, silver, gold, become liquids only when they are heated, while water is naturally liquid itself [Footnote ref 1]. Though air cannot be seen, yet its existence can be inferred by touch, just as the existence of the genus of cows may be inferred from the characteristics of horns, tails, etc. Since this thing inferred from touch possesses motion and quality, and does not itself inhere in any other substance, it is a substance (*dravya*) and is eternal [Footnote ref 2]. The inference of air is of the type of inference of imperceptible things from certain known characteristics called *samanyato d@r@s@ta*. The name of air "*vayu*" is derived from the scriptures. The existence of others different from us has (*asmadvis'i@s@tana@m*) to be admitted for accounting for the

[Footnote 1: It should be noted that mercury is not mentioned. This is important for mercury was known at a time later than Caraka.]

[Footnote 2: Substance is that which possesses quality and motion. It should be noted that the word "*adravyatvena*" in II. i. 13 has been interpreted by me as "*adravyavattvena*."]

Page 263

giving of names to things (*sa@mjnakarma*). Because we find that the giving of names is already in usage (and not invented by us) [Footnote ref 1]. On account of the fact that movements rest only in one thing, the phenomenon that a thing can enter into any unoccupied space, would not lead us to infer the existence of akas'a (ether). Akas'a has to be admitted as the hypothetical substance in which the quality of sound inheres, because, since sound (a quality) is not the characteristic of things which can be touched, there must be some substance of which it is a quality. And this substance is akas'a. It is a substance and eternal like air. As being is one so akas'a is one [Footnote ref 2].

In the second chapter of the second book Ka@nada tries to prove that smell is a special characteristic of earth, heat of fire, and coldness of water. Time is defined as that which gives the notion of youth in the young, simultaneity, and quickness. It is one like being. Time is the cause of all non-eternal things, because the notion of time is absent in eternal things. Space supplies the notion that this is so far away from this or so much nearer to this. Like being it is one. One space appears to have diverse inter-space relations in connection with the motion of the sun. As a preliminary to discussing the problem whether sound is eternal or not, he discusses the notion of doubt, which arises when a thing is seen in a general way, but the particular features coming under it are not seen, either when these are only remembered, or when some such attribute is seen which resembles some other attribute seen before, or when a thing is seen in one way but appears in another, or when what is seen is not definitely grasped, whether rightly seen or not. He then discusses the question whether sound is eternal or non-eternal and gives his reasons to show that it is non-eternal, but concludes the discussion with a number of other reasons proving that it is eternal.

The first chapter of the third book is entirely devoted to the inference of the existence of soul from the fact that there must be some substance in which knowledge produced by the contact of the senses and their object inheres.

The knowledge of sense-objects (*indriyārtha*) is the reason by

[Footnote 1: I have differed from *Upaskara* in interpreting "*sa@mjnakarma*" in II. i. 18, 19 as a genitive compound while *Upaskara* makes it a *dvandva* compound. *Upaskara*'s interpretation seems to be far-fetched. He wants to twist it into an argument for the existence of God.]

[Footnote 2: This interpretation is according to S'a@nkara Mis'ra's *Upaskara*.]

Page 264

which we can infer the existence of something different from the senses and the objects which appear in connection with them. The types of inferences referred to are (1) inference of non-existence of some things from the existence of some things, (2) of the existence of some things from the non-existence of some things, (3) of the existence of some things from the existence of others. In all these cases inference is possible only when the two are known to be connected with each other (*prasiddhipurvakatvat apades'asya*) [Footnote ref 1]. When such a connection does not exist or is doubtful, we have *anapades'a* (fallacious middle) and *sandigdha* (doubtful middle); thus, it is a horse because it has a horn, or it is a cow because it has a horn are examples of fallacious reason. The inference of soul from the cognition produced by the contact of soul, senses and objects is not fallacious in the above way. The inference of the existence of the soul in others may be made in a similar way in which the existence of one's own soul is inferred [Footnote ref 2], i.e. by virtue of the existence of movement and cessation of movement. In the second chapter it is said that the fact that there is cognition only when there is contact between the self, the senses and the objects proves that there is manas (mind), and this manas is a substance and eternal, and this can be proved because there is no simultaneity of production of efforts and various kinds of cognition; it may also be inferred that this manas is one (with each person).

The soul may be inferred from inhalation, exhalation, twinkling of the eye, life, the movement of the mind, the sense-affections pleasure, pain, will, antipathy, and effort. That it is a substance and eternal can be proved after the manner of *vayu*. An objector is supposed to say that since when I see a man I do not see his soul, the inference of the soul is of the type of *samanyatod@r@s@ta* inference, i.e., from the perceived signs of pleasure, pain, cognition to infer an unknown entity to which they belong, but that this was the self could not be affirmed. So the existence of soul has to be admitted on the strength of the scriptures. But the Vais'e@sika reply is that since there is nothing else but self to which the expression "I" may be applied, there is no need of falling back on the scriptures for the existence of the soul. But

[Footnote 1: In connection with this there is a short reference to the methods of fallacy in which Gautama's terminology does not appear. There is no generalised statement, but specific types of inference are only pointed out as the basis.]

[Footnote 2: The forms of inference used show that Ka@nada was probably not aware of Gautama's terminology.]

Page 265

then it is said that if the self is directly perceived in such experiences as “I am Yajnadatta” or “I am Devadatta,” what is the good of turning to inference? The reply to this is that inference lending its aid to the same existence only strengthens the conviction. When we say that Devadatta goes or Yajnadatta goes, there comes the doubt whether by Devadatta or Yajnadatta the body alone is meant; but the doubt is removed when we think that the notion of “I” refers to the self and not to anything else. As there is no difference regarding the production of pleasure, pain, and cognition, the soul is one in all. But yet it is many by special limitations as individuals and this is also proved on the strength of the scriptures [Footnote ref 1].

In the first chapter of the fourth book it is said that that which is existent, but yet has no cause, should be considered eternal (*nitya*). It can be inferred by its effect, for the effect can only take place because of the cause. When we speak of anything as non-eternal, it is only a negation of the eternal, so that also proves that there is something eternal. The non-eternal is ignorance (*avidya*) [Footnote ref 2]. Colour is visible in a thing which is great (*mahat*) and compounded. Air (*vayu*) is not perceived to have colour, though it is great and made up of parts, because it has not the actuality of colour (*rupasamskara* —i.e. in air there is only colour in its unmanifested form) in it. Colour is thus visible only when there is colour with special qualifications and conditions [Footnote ref 3]. In this way the cognition of taste, smell, and touch is also explained. Number, measure, separateness, contact, and disjoining, the quality of belonging to a higher or lower class, action, all these as they abide in things possessing colour are visible to the eye. The number *etc.* of those which have no colour are not perceived by the eye. But the notion of being and also of genus of quality (*gunatva*)

[Footnote 1: I have differed here from the meaning given in *Upaskara*. I think the three sutras “*Sukhaduhkhajnananispattyavis’esadekatmyam*,” “*vyavasthato nana*,” and “*vastrasamarthyat ca*” originally meant that the self was one, though for the sake of many limitations, and also because of the need of the performance of acts enjoined by the scriptures, they are regarded as many.]

[Footnote 2: I have differed here also in my meaning from the *Upaskara*, which regards this sutra “*avidya*” to mean that we do not know of any reasons which lead to the non-eternality of the atoms.]

[Footnote 3: This is what is meant in the later distinctions of *udbhutarupavattva* and *anudbhutarupavattva*. The word *samskara* in Vais’e@sika has many senses. It means inertia, elasticity, collection (*samavaya*), production (*udbhava*) and not being overcome (*anabhibhava*). For the last three senses see *Upaskara* IV. i. 7.]

Page 266

291

are perceived by all the senses (just as colour, taste, smell, touch, and sound are perceived by one sense, cognition, pleasure, pain, *etc.* by the manas and number *etc.* by the visual and the tactile sense) [Footnote ref 1].

In the second chapter of the fourth book it is said that the earth, *etc.* exist in three forms, body, sense, and objects. There cannot be any compounding of the five elements or even of the three, but the atoms of different elements may combine when one of them acts as the central radicle (*upa@s@tambhaka*). Bodies are of two kinds, those produced from ovaries and those which are otherwise produced by the combination of the atoms in accordance with special kinds of dharma. All combinations of atoms are due to special kinds of dharmas. Such super-mundane bodies are to be admitted for explaining the fact that things must have been given names by beings having such super-mundane bodies, and also on account of the authority of the Vedas.

In the first chapter of the fifth book action (*karma*) is discussed. Taking the example of threshing the corn, it is said that the movement of the hand is due to its contact with the soul in a state of effort, and the movement of the flail is due to its contact with the hand. But in the case of the uprising of the flail in the threshing pot due to impact the movement is not due to contact with the hands, and so the uplifting of the hand in touch with the flail is not due to its contact with the soul; for it is due to the impact of the flail. On account of heaviness (*gurutva*) the flail will fall when not held by the hand. Things may have an upward or side motion by specially directed motions (*nodanavis'e@sa*) which are generated by special kinds of efforts. Even without effort the body may move during sleep. The movement of needles towards magnets is due to an unknown cause (*adr@s@takaranaka*). The arrow first acquires motion by specially directed movement, and then on account of its inertia (*vegasamskara*) keeps on moving and when that ceases it falls down through heaviness.

The second chapter abounds with extremely crude explanations

[Footnote 1: This portion has been taken from the *Upaskara* of S'ankara Mis'ra on the *Vais'e@sika sutras* of Ka@nada. It must be noted here that the notion of number according to Vais'e@sika is due to mental relativity or oscillation (*apeksabuddhijanya*). But this mental relativity can only start when the thing having number is either seen or touched; and it is in this sense that notion of number is said to depend on the visual or the tactual sense.]

Page 267

of certain physical phenomena which have no philosophical importance. All the special phenomena of nature are explained as being due to unknown cause (*ad@r@s@takaritam*) and no explanation is given as to the nature of this unknown (*ad@r@s@ta*). It is however said that with the absence of *ad@r@s@ta* there is no contact of body with soul, and thus there is no rebirth, and therefore *mok@sa* (salvation); pleasure and pain are due to contact of the self, manas, senses and objects. Yoga is that in which the mind is in contact with the self alone, by which the former becomes steady and there is no pain in the body. Time, space, akas'a are regarded as inactive.

The whole of the sixth book is devoted to showing that gifts are made to proper persons not through sympathy but on account of the injunction of the scriptures, the enumeration of certain Vedic performances, which brings in *ad@r@s@ta*, purification and impurities of things, how passions are often generated by *ad@r@s@ta*, how dharma and adharma lead to birth and death and how *mok@sa* takes place as a result of the work of the soul.

In the seventh book it is said that the qualities in eternal things are eternal and in non-eternal things non-eternal. The change of qualities produced by heat in earth has its beginning in the cause (the atoms). Atomic size is invisible while great size is visible. Visibility is due to a thing's being made up of many causes [Footnote ref 1], but the atom is therefore different from those that have great size. The same thing may be called great and small relatively at the same time. In accordance with *a@nutva* (atomic) and *mahattva* (great) there are also the notions of small and big. The eternal size of *parima@n@dala* (round) belongs to the atoms. Akas'a and atman are called *mahan* or *paramamahan* (the supremely great or all-pervasive); since manas is not of the great measure it is of atomic size. Space and time are also considered as being of the measure "supremely great" (*paramamahat*), Atomic size (*parima@n@dala*) belonging to the atoms and the mind (manas) and the supremely great size belonging to space, time, soul and ether (akas'a) are regarded as eternal.

In the second chapter of the seventh book it is said that unity and separateness are to be admitted as entities distinct from other qualities. There is no number in movement and quality; the appearance of number in them is false. Cause and effect are

[Footnote 1: I have differed from the *Upaskara* in the interpretation of this sutra.]

Page 268

neither one, nor have they distinctive separateness (*ekap@rthaktva*). The notion of unity is the cause of the notion of duality, *etc.* Contact may be due to the action of one or two things, or the effect of another contact and so is disjoining. There is neither contact nor disjoining in cause and effect since they do not exist independently (*yutasiddhyabhavat*). In the eighth book it is said that soul and manas are not perceptible, and that in the apprehension of qualities, action, generality, and particularity perception is due to their contact with the thing. Earth is the cause of perception of smell, and water, fire, and air are the cause of taste, colour and touch[Footnote ref 1]. In the ninth book negation is described; non-existence (*asat*) is defined as that to which neither action nor quality can be attributed. Even existent things may become non-existent and that which is existent in one way may be non-existent in another; but there is another kind of non-existence which is different from the above kinds of existence and non-existence [Footnote ref 2]. All negation can be directly perceived through the help of the memory which keeps before the mind the thing to which the negation applies. Allusion is also made in this connection to the special perceptual powers of the yogins (sages attaining mystical powers through Yoga practices).

In the second chapter the nature of *hetu* (reason) or the middle term is described. It is said that anything connected with any other thing, as effect, cause, as in contact, or as contrary or as inseparably connected, will serve as *li@nga* (reason). The main point is the notion “this is associated with this,” or “these two are related as cause and effect,” and since this may also be produced through premisses, there may be a formal syllogism from propositions fulfilling the above condition. Verbal cognition comes without inference. False knowledge (*avidya*) is due to the defect of the senses or non-observation and mal-observation due to wrong expectant impressions. The opposite of this is true knowledge (*vidya*). In the tenth it is said that pleasure and pain are not cognitions, since they are not related to doubt and certainty.

[Footnote 1: *Upaskara* here explains that it is intended that the senses are produced by those specific elements, but this cannot be found in the sutras.]

[Footnote 2: In the previous three kinds of non-existence, *pragabhava* (negation before production), *dhvamsabhava* (negation after destruction), and *anyonyabhava* (mutual negation of each other in each other), have been described. The fourth one is *samanyabhava* (general negation).]

A dravya may be caused by the inhering of the effect in it, for because of its contact with another thing the effect is produced. Karma (motion) is also a cause since it inheres in the cause. Contact is also a cause since it inheres in the cause. A contact which inheres in the cause of the cause and thereby helps the production of the effect is also a cause. The special quality of the heat of fire is also a cause.

Page 269

Works according to the injunctions of the scriptures since they have no visible effect are the cause of prosperity, and because the Vedas direct them, they have validity.

Philosophy in the Nyaya sutras [Footnote ref 1].

The *Nyaya sutras* begin with an enumeration of the sixteen subjects, viz. means of right knowledge (*prama@na*), object of right knowledge (*prameya*), doubt (*sa@ms'aya*), purpose (*prayojana*), illustrative instances (*d@r@s@tanta*), accepted conclusions (*siddhanta*), premisses (*avayava*), argumentation (*tarka*), ascertainment (*nir@naya*), debates (*vada*), disputations (*jalpa*), destructive criticisms (*vita@n@da*), fallacy (*hetvabhasa*), quibble (*chala*), refutations (*jati*), points of opponent's defeat (*nigrahasthana*), and hold that by a thorough knowledge of these the highest good (*nihs'reyasa*), is attained. In the second sutra it is said that salvation (*apavarga*) is attained by the successive disappearance of false knowledge (*mithyajnana*), defects (*do@sa*), endeavours (*prav@rtti*, birth (*janma*), and ultimately of sorrow. Then the means of proof are said to be of four kinds, perception (*pratyak@sa*), inference (*anumana*), analogy (*upamana*), and testimony (*s'abda*). Perception is defined as uncontradicted determinate knowledge unassociated with names proceeding out of sense contact with objects. Inference is of three kinds, from cause to effect (*purvavat*), effect to cause (*s'e@savat*), and inference from common characteristics (*samanyato d@r@s@ta*). *Upamana* is the knowing of anything by similarity with any well-known thing.

S'abda is defined as the testimony of reliable authority (*apta*) [Footnote ref 2].

[Footnote 1: This is a brief summary of the doctrines found in *Nyaya sutras*, supplemented here and there with the views of Vatsyayana, the commentator. This follows the order of the sutras, and tries to present their ideas with as little additions from those of later day Nyaya as possible. The general treatment of Nyaya-Vais'e@sika expounds the two systems in the light of later writers and commentators.]

[Footnote 2: It is curious to notice that Vatsyayana says that an *arya*, a *@r@si* or a *mleccha* (foreigner), may be an *apta* (reliable authority).]

295

Such a testimony may tell us about things which may be experienced and which are beyond experience. Objects of knowledge are said to be self (*atman*), body, senses, sense-objects, understanding (*buddhi*), mind (*manas*}, endeavour (*prav@rtti*), rebirths,

enjoyment of pleasure and suffering of pain, sorrow and salvation. Desire, antipathy, effort (*prayatna*), pleasure, pain, and knowledge indicate the existence

Page 270

of the self. Body is that which upholds movement, the senses and the rise of pleasure and pain as arising out of the contact of sense with sense-objects [Footnote ref 1]; the five senses are derived from the five elements, such as *prthivi*, *ap*, *tejas*, *vayu* and *akas'a*; smell, taste, colour, touch, and sound are the qualities of the above five elements, and these are also the objects of the senses. The fact that many cognitions cannot occur at any one moment indicates the existence of mind (*manas*). Endeavour means what is done by speech, understanding, and body. *Do@sas* (attachment, antipathy, etc) are those which lead men to virtue and vice. Pain is that which causes suffering [Footnote ref 2]. Ultimate cessation from pain is called *apavarga* [Footnote ref 3]. Doubt arises when through confusion of similar qualities or conflicting opinions *etc.*, one wants to settle one of the two alternatives. That for attaining which, or for giving up which one sets himself to work is called *prayojana*.

Illustrative example (*d@r@s@tanta*) is that on which both the common man and the expert (*parik@saka*) hold the same opinion. Established texts or conclusions (*siddhanta*) are of four kinds, viz (1) those which are accepted by all schools of thought called the *sarvatantrasiddhanta*; (2) those which are held by one school or similar schools but opposed by others called the *pratitantrasiddhanta*; (3) those which being accepted other conclusions will also naturally follow called *adhikara@nasiddhanta*; (4) those of the opponent's views which are uncritically granted by a debater, who proceeds then to refute the consequences that follow and thereby show his own special skill and bring the opponent's intellect to disrepute (*abhyupagamasiddhanta*) [Footnote ref 4]. The premisses are five:

[Footnote 1: Here I have followed Vatsyayana's meaning.]

[Footnote 2: Vatsyayana comments here that when one finds all things full of misery, he wishes to avoid misery, and finding birth to be associated with pain becomes unattached and thus is emancipated.]

[Footnote 3: Vatsyayana wants to emphasise that there is no bliss in salvation, but only cessation from pain.]

[Footnote 4: I have followed Vatsyayana's interpretation here.]

(1) *pratijna* (the first enunciation of the thing to be proved); (2) *hetu* (the reason which establishes the conclusion on the strength of the similarity of the case in hand with known examples or negative instances); (3) *udahara@na* (positive or negative illustrative instances); (4) *upanaya* (corroboration by the instance); (5) *nigamana* (to reach the conclusion which has been proved). Then come the definitions of tarka, nir@naya, vada, jalpa, vita@n@da, the fallacies (hetvabhasa), chala, jati, and nigrahasthana, which have been enumerated in the first sutra.

Page 271

The second book deals with the refutations of objections against the means of right knowledge (pramana). In refutation of certain objections against the possibility of the happening of doubt, which held that doubt could not happen, since there was always a difference between the two things regarding which doubt arose, it is held that doubt arises when the special differentiating characteristics between the two things are not noted. Certain objectors, probably the Buddhists, are supposed to object to the validity of the prama@na in general and particularly of perceptions on the ground that if they were generated before the sense-object contact, they could not be due to the latter, and if they are produced after the sense-object contact, they could not establish the nature of the objects, and if the two happened together then there would be no notion of succession in our cognitions. To this the Nyaya reply is that if there were no means of right knowledge, then there would be no means of knowledge by means of which the objector would refute all means of right knowledge; if the objector presumes to have any means of valid knowledge then he cannot say that there are no means of valid knowledge at all. Just as from the diverse kinds of sounds of different musical instruments, one can infer the previous existence of those different kinds of musical instruments, so from our knowledge of objects we can infer the previous existence of those objects of knowledge [Footnote ref 1].

The same things (e.g. the senses, etc.) which are regarded as instruments of right knowledge with reference to the right cognition of other things may themselves be the objects of right

[Footnote 1: *Yathapas'catsiddhena s'abdena purvasiddham atodyamanumiyate sadhyam ca atodyam sadhanam ca s'abda@h antarihite hyatodye svanata@h anumanam bhavatiti, vi@na vadyate ve@nu@h puryyate iti svanavis'e@se@na atodyavis'e@sam pratipadyate tatha purvasiddham upalabdhivi@sayam pas'catsiddhena upalabdhihetuna pratipadyate. Vatsyayana bha@sya, II. i. 15.*]

297

knowledge. There are no hard and fast limits that those which are instruments of knowledge should always be treated as mere instruments, for they themselves may be objects of right knowledge. The means of right knowledge (prama@na) do not require other sets of means for revealing them, for they like the light of a lamp in revealing the objects of right knowledge reveal themselves as well.

Coming to the question of the correctness of the definition of perception, it is held that the definition includes the contact of the soul with the mind [Footnote ref 1]. Then it is

said that though we perceive only parts of things, yet since there is a whole, the perception of the part will naturally refer to the whole. Since we can pull and draw things wholes exist, and the whole is not merely the parts collected together,

Page 272

for were it so one could say that we perceived the ultimate parts or the atoms [Footnote ref 2]. Some objectors hold that since there may be a plurality of causes it is wrong to infer particular causes from particular effects. To this the Nyaya answer is that there is always such a difference in the specific nature of each effect that if properly observed each particular effect will lead us to a correct inference of its own particular cause [Footnote ref 3]. In refuting those who object to the existence of time on the ground of relativity, it is said that if the present time did not exist, then no perception of it would have been possible. The past and future also exist, for otherwise we should not have perceived things as being done in the past or as going to be done in the future. The validity of analogy (upamana) as a means of knowledge and the validity of the Vedas is then proved. The four pramanas of perception, inference, analogy, and scripture

[Footnote 1: Here the sutras, II. i. 20-28, are probably later interpolations to answer criticisms, not against the Nyaya doctrine of perception, but against the wording of the definition of perception as given in the, *Nyaya sutra*, II. i. 4.]

[Footnote 2: This is a refutation of the doctrines of the Buddhists, who rejected the existence of wholes (avayavi). On this subject a later Buddhist monograph by Pandita As'oka (9th century A.D.), *Avayavinirakaraṇa* in *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*, may be referred to.]

[Footnote 3: *Purvodakavis'iṣṭam khalu varṣasodakan s'ighrataram srotasa bahutaraphenaphalaparṇakasthādivahanāncopalabhamanāḥ purṇatvena, nadya upari vṛtstodeva ityanuminoti nodakabṛddhimatreṇa. Vṛttsyayana bhaṭṭasya*, II. i. 38. The inference that there has been rain up the river is not made merely from seeing the rise of water, but from the rainwater augmenting the previous water of the river and carrying with its current large quantities of foam, fruits, leaves, wood, etc. These characteristics, associated with the rise of water, mark it as a special kind of rise of water, which can only be due to the happening of rain up the river].

298

are quite sufficient and it is needless to accept arthapatti (implication), aitiḥya (tradition), sambhava (when a thing is understood in terms of higher measure the lower measure contained in it is also understood—if we know that there is a bushel of corn anywhere we understand that the same contains eight gallons of corn as well) and abhava (non-existence) as separate pramanas for the tradition is included in verbal testimony and arthapatti, sambhava and abhava are included within inference.

The validity of these as prama@nas is recognized, but they are said to be included in the four prama@nas mentioned before. The theory of the eternity of sound is then refuted and the non-eternity proved in great detail. The meaning of words is said to refer to class-notions (*jati*), individuals (*vyakti*), and the specific position of the limbs (*ak@rti*), by which the class notion is manifested. Class (*jati*) is defined as that which produces the notion of sameness (*samanaprasavatmika jati@h*).

Page 273

The third book begins with the proofs for the existence of the self or atman. It is said that each of the senses is associated with its own specific object, but there must exist some other entity in us which gathered together the different sense-cognitions and produced the perception of the total object as distinguished from the separate sense-perceptions. If there were no self then there would be no sin in injuring the bodies of men: again if there were no permanent self, no one would be able to recognize things as having seen them before; the two images produced by the eyes in visual perception could not also have been united together as one visual perception of the things [Footnote ref 1]; moreover if there were no permanent cognizer then by the sight of a sour fruit one could not be reminded of its sour taste. If consciousness belonged to the senses only, then there would be no recognition, for the experience of one could not be recognized by another. If it is said that the unity of sensations could as well be effected by manas (mind), then the manas would serve the same purpose as self and it would only be a quarrel over a name, for this entity the knower would require some instrument by which it would co-ordinate the sensations and cognize; unless manas is admitted as a separate instrument of the soul, then though the sense perceptions could be explained as being the work of the

[Footnote 1: According to Vatsyayana, in the two eyes we have two different senses. Udyotakara, however, thinks that there is one visual sense which works in both eyes.]

299

senses, yet imagining, thinking, *etc.*, could not be explained. Another argument for the admission of soul is this, that infants show signs of pleasure and pain in quite early stages of infancy and this could not be due to anything but similar experiences in previous lives. Moreover every creature is born with some desires, and no one is seen to be born without desires. All attachments and desires are due to previous experiences, and therefore it is argued that desires in infants are due to their experience in previous existences.

The body is made up of the k@siti element. The visual sense is material and so also are all other senses [Footnote ref 1]. Incidentally the view held by some that the skin is the only organ of sensation is also refuted. The earth possesses four qualities, water three, fire two, air one, and ether one, but the sense of smell, taste, eye, and touch which are made respectively by the four elements of earth, *etc.*, can only grasp the distinctive features of the elements of which they are made. Thus though the organ of smell is made by earth which contains four qualities, it can only grasp the distinctive quality of earth, *viz.* smell.

Page 274

Against the Sa@mkhya distinction of *buddhi* (cognition) and *cit* (pure intelligence) it is said that there is no difference between the *buddhi* and *cit*. We do not find in our consciousness two elements of a phenomenal and a non-phenomenal consciousness, but only one, by whichever name it may be called. The Sa@mkhya epistemology that the anta@hkara@na assumes diverse forms in cognitive acts is also denied, and these are explained on the supposition of contacts of manas with the senses, atman and external objects. The Buddhist objection against the Sa@mkhya explanation that the anta@hkara@nas catch reflection from the external world just as a crystal does from the coloured objects that may lie near it, that there were really momentary productions of crystals and no permanent crystal catching different reflections at different times is refuted by Nyaya; for it says that it cannot be said that all creations are momentary, but it can only be agreed to in those cases where momentariness was actually experienced. In the case of the transformation of milk into curd there is no coming in of new qualities and disappearance of old ones, but

[Footnote 1: It is well to remember that Sa@mkhya did not believe that the senses were constituted of the gross elements. But the Sa@mkhya-Yoga view represented in *Atreya-sa@mhita* (Caraka) regarded the senses as bhautika or constituted of the gross elements.]

300

the old milk is destroyed and the curd originates anew. The contact of manas with soul (*atman*) takes place within the body and not in that part of atman which is outside the body; knowledge belongs to the self and not to the senses or the object for even when they are destroyed knowledge remains. New cognitions destroy the old ones. No two recollections can be simultaneous. Desire and antipathy also belong to the soul. None of these can belong either to the body or to the mind (*manas*). *Manas* cannot be conscious for it is dependent upon self. Again if it was conscious then the actions done by it would have to be borne by the self and one cannot reap the fruits of the actions of another. The causes of recollection on the part of self are given as follows: (1) attention, (2) context, (3) repetition, (4) sign, (5) association, (6) likeness, (7) association of the possessor and the possessed or master and servant, or things which are generally seen to follow each other, (8) separation (as of husband and wife), (9) simpler employment, (10) opposition, (11) excess, (12) that from which anything can be got, (13) cover and covered, (14) pleasure and pain causing memory of that which caused them, (15) fear, (16) entreaty, (17) action such as that of the chariot reminding the charioteer, (18) affection, (19) merit and demerit [Footnote ref 1]. It is said that knowledge does not belong to body, and then the question of the production of the body

as due to ad@r@s@ta is described. Salvation (*apavarga*) is effected by the manas being permanently separated from the soul (atman) through the destruction of karma.

Page 275

In the fourth book in course of the examination of do@sa (defects), it is said that moha (ignorance), is at the root of all other defects such as raga (attachment) and dve@sa (antipathy). As against the Buddhist view that a thing could be produced by destruction, it is said that destruction is only a stage in the process of origination. Is'vara is regarded as the cause of the production of effects of deeds performed by men's efforts, for man is not always found to attain success according to his efforts. A reference is made to the doctrine of those who say that all things have come into being by no-cause (*animitta*), for then no-cause would be the cause, which is impossible.

The doctrine of some that all things are eternal is next refuted on the ground that we always see things produced and destroyed.

[Footnote 1: *Nyaya sutra* III. ii. 44.]

301

The doctrine of the nihilistic Buddhists (s'unyavadin Bauddhas) that all things are what they are by virtue of their relations to other things, and that of other Buddhists who hold that there are merely the qualities and parts but no substances or wholes, are then refuted. The fruits of karmas are regarded as being like the fruits of trees which take some time before they can ripen. Even though there may be pleasures here and there, birth means sorrow for men, for even the man who enjoys pleasure is tormented by many sorrows, and sometimes one mistakes pains for pleasures. As there is no sorrow in the man who is in deep dreamless sleep, so there is no affliction (*kles'a*) in the man who attains apavarga (salvation) [Footnote ref 1]. When once this state is attained all efforts (*prav@rtti*) cease for ever, for though efforts were beginningless with us they were all due to attachment, antipathy, etc. Then there are short discussions regarding the way in which egoism (*aha@mkara*) ceases with the knowledge of the true causes of defects (*do@sa*); about the nature of whole and parts and about the nature of atoms (*a@nus*) which cannot further be divided. A discussion is then introduced against the doctrine of the Vijnanavadins that nothing can be regarded as having any reality when separated from thoughts. Incidentally Yoga is mentioned as leading to right knowledge.

The whole of the fifth book which seems to be a later addition is devoted to the enumeration of different kinds of refutations (*nigrahasthana*) and futilities (*jati*).

Caraka, Nyaya sutras and Vais'e@sika sutras.

When we compare the *Nyaya sutras* with the *Vais'e@sika sutras* we find that in the former two or three different streams of purposes have met, whereas the latter is much more homogeneous. The large amount of materials relating to debates treated as a practical art for defeating an opponent would lead one to suppose that it was probably originally compiled from some other existing treatises which were used by Hindus and Buddhists alike for rendering themselves fit to hold their own in debates with their opponents [Footnote ref 2]. This assumption is justified when

Page 276

[Footnote 1: Vatsyayana notes that this is the salvation of him who has known Brahman, IV. i. 63.]

[Footnote 2: A reference to the *Suvar@naprabhasa sutra* shows that the Buddhist missionaries used to get certain preparations for improving their voice in order to be able to argue with force, and they took to the worship of Sarasvati (goddess of learning), who they supposed would help them in bringing readily before their mind all the information and ideas of which they stood so much in need at the time of debates.]

302

we compare the futilities (jati) quibbles (chala), etc., relating to disputations as found in the *Nyaya sutra* with those that are found in the medical work of Caraka (78 A.D.), III. viii. There are no other works in early Sanskrit literature, excepting the *Nyaya sutra* and *Caraka-sa@mhita* which have treated of these matters. Caraka's description of some of the categories (e.g. d@r@s@tanta, prayojana, pratijna and vita@n@da) follows very closely the definitions given of those in the *Nyaya sutras*. There are others such as the definitions of jalpa, chala, nigrahasthana, etc., where the definitions of two authorities differ more. There are some other logical categories mentioned in Caraka (e.g. prati@s@thapana, jijnasa, vyavasaya, vakyado@sa, vakyapras'a@msa, upalambha, parihara, abhyanujna, etc.) which are not found in the *Nyaya sutra* [Footnote ref 1]. Again, the various types of futilities (jati) and points of opponent's refutation (nigrahasthana) mentioned in the *Nyaya sutra* are not found in *Caraka*. There are some terms which are found in slightly variant forms in the two works, e.g. *aupamyā* in *Caraka*, *upamana* in *Nyaya sutra*, *arthapatti* in *Nyaya sutra* and *arthaprapti* in *Caraka*. Caraka does not seem to know anything about the *Nyaya* work on this subject, and it is plain that the treatment of these terms of disputations in the *Caraka* is much simpler and less technical than what we find in the *Nyaya sutras*. If we leave out the varieties of jati and nigrahasthana of the fifth book, there is on the whole a great agreement between the treatment of Caraka and that of the *Nyaya sutras*. It seems therefore in a high degree probable that both Caraka and the *Nyaya sutras* were indebted for their treatment of these terms of disputation to some other earlier work. Of these, Caraka's compilation was earlier, whereas the compilation of the *Nyaya sutras* represents a later work when a hotter atmosphere of disputations had necessitated the use of more technical terms which are embodied in this work, but which were not contained in the earlier work. It does not seem therefore that this part of the work could have been earlier than the second century A.D. Another stream flowing through the *Nyaya sutras* is that of a polemic against the doctrines which could be attributed to the Sautrantika

Buddhists, the Vijnanavada Buddhists, the nihilists, the Sa@mkhya, the Carvaka, and some other unknown schools of thought to which we find no

Page 277

[Footnote 1: Like Vais'e@sika, Caraka does not know the threefold division of inference (*anumana*) as *purvavat*, *s'e@savat* and *samanyatod@r@s@ta*.]

303

further allusion elsewhere. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* as we have already seen had argued only against the Mima@msa, and ultimately agreed with them on most points. The dispute with Mima@msa in the *Nyaya sutras* is the same as in the *Vais'e@sika* over the question of the doctrine of the eternality of sound. The question of the self-validity of knowledge (*svata@h prama@nyavada*) and the akhyati doctrine of illusion of the Mima@msists, which form the two chief points of discussion between later Mima@msa and later Nyaya, are never alluded to in the *Nyaya sutras*. The advocacy of Yoga methods (*Nyaya sutras*, IV.ii.38-42 and 46) seems also to be an alien element; these are not found in *Vais'e@sika* and are not in keeping with the general tendency of the *Nyaya sutras*, and the Japanese tradition that Mirok added them later on as Mahamahopadhyaya Haraprasada S'astri has pointed out [Footnote ref I] is not improbable.

The *Vais'e@sika sutras*, III.i.18 and III.ii.1, describe perceptual knowledge as produced by the close proximity of the self (atman), the senses and the objects of sense, and they also adhere to the doctrine, that colour can only be perceived under special conditions of *sa@mskara* (conglomeration etc.). The reason for inferring the existence of manas from the non-simultaneity (*ayaugapadya*) of knowledge and efforts is almost the same with *Vais'e@sika* as with Nyaya. The *Nyaya sutras* give a more technical definition of perception, but do not bring in the questions of *sa@mskara* or *udbhutarupavattva* which *Vais'e@sika* does. On the question of inference Nyaya gives three classifications as *purvavat*, *s'e@savat* and *samanyatod@r@s@ta*, but no definition. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* do not know of these classifications, and give only particular types or instances of inference (V.S. III. i. 7-17, IX. ii. 1-2, 4-5). Inference is said to be made when a thing is in contact with another, or when it is in a relation of inherence in it, or when it inheres in a third thing; one kind of effect may lead to the inference of another kind of effect, and so on. These are but mere collections of specific instances of inference without reaching a general theory. The doctrine of *vyapti* (concomitance of *hetu* (reason) and *sadhya* (probandum)) which became so important in later Nyaya has never been properly formulated either in the *Nyaya sutras* or in the *Vais'e@sika*. *Vais'e@sika sutra*, III. i. 24, no doubt assumes the knowledge of concomitance between *hetu* and *sadhya* (*prasiddhipurvakatvat apades'asya*),

[Footnote 1: *J.A.S.B.* 1905.]

Page 278

304

but the technical vyapti is not known, and the connotation of the term *prasiddhipurvakatva* of Vais'e@sika seems to be more loose than the term *vyapti* as we know it in the later Nyaya. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* do not count scriptures (*s'abda*) as a separate prama@na, but they tacitly admit the great validity of the Vedas. With *Nyaya sutras* s'abda as a prama@na applies not only to the Vedas, but to the testimony of any trustworthy person, and Vatsyayana says that trustworthy persons may be of three kinds _@r@si, *arya*_ and *mleccha* (foreigners). Upamana which is regarded as a means of right cognition in Nyaya is not even referred to in the *Vais'e@sika sutras*. The *Nyaya sutras* know of other prama@nas, such as *arthapatti*, *sambhava* and *aitihya*, but include them within the prama@nas admitted by them, but the *Vais'e@sika sutras* do not seem to know them at all [Footnote ref 1]. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* believe in the perception of negation (*abhava*) through the perception of the locus to which such negation refers (IX. i. 1-10). The *Nyaya sutras* (II. ii. 1, 2, 7-12) consider that *abhava* as non-existence or negation can be perceived; when one asks another to "bring the clothes which are not marked," he finds that marks are absent in some clothes and brings them; so it is argued that absence or non-existence can be directly perceived [Footnote ref 2]. Though there is thus an agreement between the Nyaya and the *Vais'e@sika sutras* about the acceptance of *abhava* as being due to perception, yet their method of handling the matter is different. The *Nyaya sutras* say nothing about the categories of *dravya*, *gu@na*, *karma*, *vis'e@sa* and *samavaya* which form the main subjects of Vais'e@sika discussions [Footnote ref 3]. The *Nyaya sutras* take much pains to prove the materiality of the senses. But this question does not seem to have been important with Vais'e@sika. The slight reference to this question in VIII. ii. 5-6 can hardly be regarded as sufficient. The *Vais'e@sika sutras* do not mention the name of "Is'vara," whereas the *Nyaya sutras* try to prove his existence on eschatological grounds. The reasons given in support of the existence of self in the *Nyaya sutras* are mainly on the ground of the unity of sense-cognitions and the phenomenon of recognition, whereas the

[Footnote 1: The only old authority which knows these prama@nas is Caraka. But he also gives an interpretation of *sambhava* which is different from Nyaya and calls *arthapatti arthapatti* (*Caraka* III. viii.).]

[Footnote 2: The details of this example are taken from Vatsyayana's commentary.]

[Footnote 3: The *Nyaya sutra* no doubt incidentally gives a definition of *jati* as "samanaprasavatmika *jati@h*" (II. ii. 71).]

Page 279

305

Vaisesika lays its main emphasis on self-consciousness as a fact of knowledge. Both the Nyaya and the *Vais'e@sika sutras* admit the existence of atoms, but all the details of the doctrine of atomic structure in later Nyaya-Vais'e@sika are absent there. The *Vai'se@sika* calls salvation *ni@hs'reyasa* or *mok@sa* and the Nyaya *apavarga*. *Mok@sa* with *Vais'e@sika* is the permanent cessation of connection with body; the *apavarga* with Nyaya is cessation of pain [Footnote ref 1]. In later times the main points of difference between the *Vais'e@sika* and Nyaya are said to lie with regard to theory of the notion of number, changes of colour in the molecules by heat, etc. Thus the former admitted a special procedure of the mind by which cognitions of number arose in the mind (e.g. at the first moment there is the sense contact with an object, then the notion of oneness, then from a sense of relativeness—*apek@sabuddhi*—notion of two, then a notion of two-ness, and then the notion of two things); again, the doctrine of *pilupaka* (changes of qualities by heat are produced in atoms and not in molecules as Nyaya held) was held by *Vais'e@sika*, which the *Naiyayikas* did not admit [Footnote ref 2]. But as the *Nyaya sutras* are silent on these points, it is not possible to say that such were really the differences between early Nyaya and early *Vaise@sika*. These differences may be said to hold between the later interpreters of *Vais'e@sika* and the later interpreters of Nyaya. The *Vais'e@sika* as we find it in the commentary of *Pras'astapada* (probably sixth century A.D.), and the Nyaya from the time of *Udyotakara* have come to be treated as almost the same system with slight variations only. I have therefore preferred to treat them together. The main presentation of the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika philosophy in this chapter is that which is found from the sixth century onwards.

The *Vais'e@sika* and Nyaya Literature.

It is difficult to ascertain definitely the date of the *Vais'e@sika sutras* by *Ka@nada*, also called *Aulukya* the son of *Uluka*, though there is every reason to suppose it to be pre-Buddhistic. It

[Footnote 1: Professor Vanamali Vedantatirtha quotes a passage from *Sa@mk@sepas'a@nkarajaya*, XVI. 68-69 in *J.A.S.B.*, 1905, and another passage from a Nyaya writer *Bhasarvajna*, pp. 39-41, in *J.A.S.B.*, 1914, to show that the old *Naiyayikas* considered that there was an element of happiness (*sukha*) in the state of *mukti* (salvation) which the *Vais'e@sikas* denied. No evidence in support of this opinion is found in the Nyaya or the *Vais'e@sika sutras*, unless the cessation of pain with Nyaya is interpreted as meaning the resence of some sort of bliss or happiness.]

[Footnote 2: See Madhava's *Sarvaders' anasa@mgraha-Aulukyaders'ana.*]

306

Page 280

appears from the *Vayu purana* that he was born in Prabhasa near Dvaraka, and was the disciple of Somas'arma. The time of Pras'astapada who wrote a bha@sya (commentary) of the *Vais'e@sika sutras* cannot also unfortunately be ascertained. The peculiarity of Pras'astapada's bha@sya is this that unlike other bha@sya (which first give brief explanations of the text of the sutras and then continue to elaborate independent explanations by explaining the first brief comments), it does not follow the sutras but is an independent dissertation based on their main contents [Footnote ref 1]. There were two other bha@sya on the *Vais'e@sika sutras*, namely *Rava@na-bha@sya* and *Bharadvaja-v@rtti*, but these are now probably lost. References to the former are found in *Kira@navalibhaskara* of Padmanabha Mis'ra and also in *Ratnaprabha* 2. 2. II. Four commentaries were written on this bha@sya, namely *Vyomavati* by Vyomas'ekharacarya, *Nyayakandali* by S'ridhara, *Kira@navali* by Udayana (984 A.D.) and *Lilavati* S'rivatsacarya. In addition to these Jagadis'a Bha@t@tacarya of Navadvipa and S'a@nkara Mis'ra wrote two other commentaries on the *Pras'astapada-bhasya*, namely *Bhasyasukti* and *Ka@nada-rahasya*. S'a@nkara Mis'ra (1425 A.D.) also wrote a commentary on the *Vais'e@sika sutras* called the *Upaskara*. Of these *Nyaya-kandali* of S'ridhara on account of its simplicity of style and elaborate nature of exposition is probably the best for a modern student of *Vais'e@sika*. Its author was a native of the village of Bhuris@r@s@ti in Bengal (Ra@dha). His father's name was Baladeva and mother's name was Acchoka and he wrote his work in 913 S'aka era (990 A.D.) as he himself writes at the end of his work.

The *Nyaya sutra* was written by Ak@sapada or Gautama, and the earliest commentary on it written by Vatsyayana is known as the *Vatsyayana-bha@sya*. The date of Vatsyayana has not

[Footnote 1: The bha@sya of Pras'astapada can hardly be called a bha@sya (elaborate commentary). He himself makes no such claim and calls his work a compendium of the properties of the categories (*Padarthadharmasa@mgraha*). He takes the categories of *dravya*, *gu@na*, *karma*, *samanya*, *vis'e@sa* and *samavaya* in order and without raising any discussions plainly narrates what he has got to say on them. Some of the doctrines which are important in later *Nyaya-Vais'e@sika* discussions, such as the doctrine of creation and dissolution, doctrine of number, the theory that the number of atoms contributes to the atomic measure of the molecules, the doctrine of *pilupaka* in connection with the transformation of colours by heat occur in his narration for the first time as the *Vais'e@sika sutras* are silent on these points. It is difficult to ascertain his date definitely; he is the earliest writer on *Vais'e@sika* available to us after *Ka@nada* and it is not improbable that he lived in the 5th or 6th century A.D.]

Page 281

307

been definitely settled, but there is reason to believe that he lived some time in the beginning of the fourth century A.D. Jacobi places him in 300 A.D. Udyotakara (about 635 A.D.) wrote a *Varttika* on Vatsyayana's *bha@sya* to establish the Nyaya views and to refute the criticisms of the Buddhist logician Di@nnaga (about 500 A.D.) in his *Prama@nasamuccaya*. Vacaspatimis'ra (840 A.D.) wrote a sub-commentary on the *Nyayavarttika* of Udyotakara called *Nyayavarttikatatparya@tika* in order to make clear the right meanings of Udyotakara's *Varttika* which was sinking in the mud as it were through numerous other bad writings (*dustarakunibandhapa@nkamagnanam*). Udayana (984 A.D.) wrote a sub-commentary on the *Tatparya@tika* called *Tatparya@tikaparis'uddhi*. Varddhamana (1225 A.D.) wrote a sub-commentary on that called the *Nyayanibandhaprakas'a*. Padmanabha wrote a sub-commentary on that called *Varddhamanendu* and S'a@nkara Mis'ra (1425 A.D.) wrote a sub-commentary on that called the *Nyayatatparyama@n@dana*. In the seventeenth century Vis'vanatha wrote an independent short commentary known as *Vis'vanathav@rtti*, on the *Nyaya sutra*, and Radhamohana wrote a separate commentary on the *Nyaya sutras* known as *Nyayasutravivara@na*. In addition to these works on the *Nyaya sutras* many other independent works of great philosophical value have been written on the Nyaya system. The most important of these in medieval times is the *Nyayamanjari* of Jayanta (880 A.D.), who flourished shortly after Vacaspatimis'ra. Jayanta chooses some of the *Nyaya sutras* for interpretation, but he discusses the Nyaya views quite independently, and criticizes the views of other systems of Indian thought of his time. It is far more comprehensive than Vacaspati's *Tatparya@tika*, and its style is most delightfully lucid. Another important work is Udayana's *Kusumanjali* in which he tries to prove the existence of Is'vara (God). This work ought to be read with its commentary *Prakas'a* by Varddhamana (1225 A.D.) and its sub-commentary *Makaranda* by Rucidatta (1275 A.D.). Udayana's *Atmatattvaviveka* is a polemical work against the Buddhists, in which he tries to establish the Nyaya doctrine of soul. In addition to these we have a number of useful works on Nyaya in later times. Of these the following deserve special mention in connection with the present work. *Bha@sapariccheda* by Vis'vanatha with its commentaries *Muktavali*, *Dinakari* and *Ramarudri*, *Tarkasamgraha* with *Nyayanir@naya*, *Tarkabka@sa* of Kes'ava Mis'ra with

308

the commentary *Nyayapradipa*, *Saptapadarthi* of S'ivaditya, *Tarkikarak@sa* of Varadaraja with the commentary *Ni@ska@n@taka* of Mallinatha, *Nyayasara* of Madhava Deva of the city of Dhara and *Nyayasiddhantamanjari* of Janakinatha Bha@t@tacarya with the *Nyayamanjarisara* by Yadavacarya, and *Nyayasiddhantadipa* of S'a@sadhara with *Prabha* by S'e@sanantacarya.

Page 282

The new school of Nyaya philosophy known as Navya-Nyaya began with Ga@nges'a Upadhyaya of Mithila, about 1200 A.D. Ga@nges'a wrote only on the four prama@nas admitted by the Nyaya, viz. pratyak@sa, anumana, upamana, and s'abda, and not on any of the topics of Nyaya metaphysics. But it so happened that his discussions on anumana (inference) attracted unusually great attention in Navadvipa (Bengal), and large numbers of commentaries and commentaries of commentaries were written on the anumana portion of his work *Tattvacintama@ni*, and many independent treatises on *sabda* and *anumana* were also written by the scholars of Bengal, which became thenceforth for some centuries the home of Nyaya studies. The commentaries of Raghunatha S'iroma@ni (1500 A.D.), Mathura Bha@t@acarya (1580 A.D.), Gadadhara Bha@t@acarya (1650 A.D.) and Jagadisa Bha@t@acarya (1590 A.D.), commentaries on S'iroma@ni's commentary on *Tattvacintamani*, had been very widely read in Bengal. The new school of Nyaya became the most important study in Navadvipa and there appeared a series of thinkers who produced an extensive literature on the subject [Footnote ref 1]. The contribution was not in the direction of metaphysics, theology, ethics, or religion, but consisted mainly in developing a system of linguistic notations to specify accurately and precisely any concept or its relation with other concepts [Footnote ref 2]. Thus for example when they wished to define precisely the nature of the concomitance of one concept with another (e.g. smoke and fire), they would so specify the relation that the exact nature of the concomitance should be clearly expressed, and that there should be no confusion or ambiguity. Close subtle analytic thinking and the development of a system of highly technical

[Footnote 1: From the latter half of the twelfth century to the third quarter of the sixteenth century the new school of Nyaya was started in Mithila (Behar); but from the fifteenth to the seventeenth century Bengal became pre-eminently the home of Nyaya studies. See Mr Cakravartti's paper, *J. A.S.B.* 1915. I am indebted to it for some of the dates mentioned in this section.]

[Footnote 2: *Is'varanumana* of Raghunatha as well as his *Padarthatattvanirupa@na* are, however, notable exceptions.]

309

expressions mark the development of this literature. The technical expressions invented by this school were thus generally accepted even by other systems of thought, wherever the need of accurate and subtle thinking was felt. But from the time that Sanskrit ceased to be the vehicle of philosophical thinking in India the importance of this

literature has gradually lost ground, and it can hardly be hoped that it will ever regain its old position by attracting enthusiastic students in large numbers.

Page 283

I cannot close this chapter without mentioning the fact that so far as the logical portion of the Nyaya system is concerned, though Ak@sapada was the first to write a comprehensive account of it, the Jains and Buddhists in medieval times had independently worked at this subject and had criticized the Nyaya account of logic and made valuable contributions. In Jaina logic *Das'avaikalaniryukti* of Bhadrabahu (357 B.C.), Umasvati's *Tattvarthadhigama sutra*, *Nyayavatara* of Siddhasena Divakara (533 A.D.) Ma@nikya Nandi's (800 A.D.) *Parik@samukha sutra*, and *Prama@nanayatattvalokala@mkara* of Deva Suri (1159 A.D.) and *Prameyakamalamarta@n@da* of Prabhacandra deserve special notice. *Prama@nasamuccaya* and *Nyayapraves'a* of Di@nnaga (500 A.D.), *Prama@nayarttika karika* and *Nyayabindu* of Dharmakirti (650 A.D.) with the commentary of Dharmottara are the most interesting of the Buddhist works on systematic logic [Footnote ref I]. The diverse points of difference between the Hindu, Jain and Buddhist logic require to be dealt with in a separate work on Indian logic and can hardly be treated within the compass of the present volume.

It is interesting to notice that between the *Vatsyayana bha@sya* and the Udyotakara's *Varttika* no Hindu work on logic of importance seems to have been written: it appears that the science of logic in this period was in the hands of the Jains and the Buddhists; and it was Di@nnaga's criticism of Hindu Nyaya that roused Udyotakara to write the *Varttika*. The Buddhist and the Jain method of treating logic separately from metaphysics as an independent study was not accepted by the Hindus till we come to Ga@nges'a, and there is probably only one Hindu work of importance on Nyaya in the Buddhist style namely *Nyayasara* of Bhasarvajna. Other older Hindu works generally treated of

[Footnote 1: See *Indian Logic Medieval School*, by Dr S.C. Vidyabhu@sa@na, for a bibliography of Jain and Buddhist Logic.]

310

inference only along with metaphysical and other points of Nyaya interest [Footnote ref 1].

The main doctrine of the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika Philosophy [Footnote ref 2].

The Nyaya-Vais'e@sika having dismissed the doctrine of momentariness took a common-sense view of things, and held that things remain permanent until suitable collocations so arrange themselves that the thing can be destroyed. Thus the jug



continues to remain a jug unless or until it is broken to pieces by the stroke of a stick. Things exist not because they can produce an impression on us, or serve my purposes either directly or through knowledge, as the Buddhists suppose, but because existence is one of their characteristics. If I or you or any other perceiver did not exist, the things would continue to exist all the same. Whether they produce any effect on us or on their surrounding environments is immaterial. Existence is the most general characteristic of things, and it is on account of this that things are testified by experience to be existing.

Page 284

As the Nyaya-Vais'e@sikas depended solely on experience and on valid reasons, they dismissed the Sa@mkhya cosmology, but accepted the atomic doctrine of the four elements (*bhutas*), earth (*k@siti*), water (*ap*), fire (*tejas*), and air (*marut*). These atoms are eternal; the fifth substance (*akas'a*) is all pervasive and eternal. It is regarded as the cause of propagating sound; though all-pervading and thus in touch with the ears of all persons, it manifests sound only in the ear-drum, as it is only there that it shows itself as a sense-organ and manifests such sounds as the man deserves to hear by reason of his merit and demerit. Thus a deaf man though he has the *akas'a* as his sense of hearing, cannot hear on account of his demerit which impedes the faculty of that sense organ [Footnote ref 3]. In addition to these they admitted the existence of time (*kala*) as extending from the past through the present to the

[Footnote 1: Almost all the books on Nyaya and Vais'e@sika referred to have been consulted in the writing of this chapter. Those who want to be acquainted with a fuller bibliography of the new school of logic should refer to the paper called "The History of Navya Nyaya in Bengal," by Mr. Cakravartti in *J.A.S.B.* 1915.]

[Footnote 2: I have treated Nyaya and Vais'e@sika as the same system. Whatever may have been their original differences, they are regarded since about 600 A.D. as being in complete agreement except in some minor points. The views of one system are often supplemented by those of the other. The original character of the two systems has already been treated.]

[Footnote 3: See *Nyayakandali*, pp. 59-64.]

311

endless futurity before us. Had there been no time we could have no knowledge of it and there would be nothing to account for our time-notions associated with all changes. The Sa@mkhya did not admit the existence of any real time; to them the unit of *kala* is regarded as the time taken by an atom to traverse its own unit of space. It has no existence separate from the atoms and their movements. The appearance of *kala* as a separate entity is a creation of our buddhi (*buddhinirma@na*) as it represents the order or mode in which the buddhi records its perceptions. But *kala* in Nyaya-Vais'e@sika is regarded as a substance existing by itself. In accordance with the changes of things it reveals itself as past, present, and future. Sa@mkhya regarded it as past, present, and future, as being the modes of the constitution of the things in its different manifesting stages of evolution (*adhvan*)_. The astronomers regarded it as being clue to the motion of the planets. These must all be contrasted with the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika conception of

kala which is regarded as an all-pervading, partless substance which appears as many in association with the changes related to it [Footnote ref I].

Page 285

The seventh substance is relative space (*dik*). It is that substance by virtue of which things are perceived as being on the right, left, east, west, upwards and downwards; *kala* like *dik* is also one. But yet tradition has given us varieties of it in the eight directions and in the upper and lower [Footnote ref 2]. The eighth substance is the soul (*atman*) which is all-pervading. There are separate atmans for each person; the qualities of knowledge, feelings of pleasure and pain, desire, *etc.* belong to *atman*. Manas (mind) is the ninth substance. It is atomic in size and the vehicle of memory; all affections of the soul such as knowing, feeling, and willing, are generated by the connection of manas with soul, the senses and the objects. It is the intermediate link which connects the soul with the senses, and thereby produces the affections of knowledge, feeling, or willing. With each single connection of soul with manas we have a separate affection of the soul, and thus our intellectual experience is conducted in a series, one coming after another and not simultaneously. Over and above all these we have *Isvara*. The definition

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayakandali*, pp. 64-66, and *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 136-139. The *Vais'e@sika* sutras regarded time as the cause of things which suffer change but denied it of things which are eternal.]

[Footnote 2: See *Nyayakandali*, pp. 66-69, and *Nyayamanjari*, p. 140.]

312

of substance consists in this, that it is independent by itself, whereas the other things such as quality (*gu@na*), action (*karma*), sameness or generality (*samanya*), speciality or specific individuality (*vis'e@sa*) and the relation of inherence (*samavaya*) cannot show themselves without the help of substance (*dravya*). *Dravya* is thus the place of rest (*as'raya*) on which all the others depend (*as'@rta*). *Dravya*, *gu@na*, *karma*, *samanya*, *vis'e@sa*, and *samavaya* are the six original entities of which all things in the world are made up [Footnote ref 1]. When a man through some special merit, by the cultivation of reason and a thorough knowledge of the fallacies and pitfalls in the way of right thinking, comes to know the respective characteristics and differences of the above entities, he ceases to have any passions and to work in accordance with their promptings and attains a conviction of the nature of self, and is liberated [Footnote ref 2]. The *Nyaya-Vais'e@sika* is a pluralistic system which neither tries to reduce the diversity of experience to any universal principle, nor dismisses patent facts of experience on the strength of the demands of the logical coherence of mere abstract thought. The entities it admits are taken directly from experience. The underlying principle is that at the root of each kind of perception there

Page 286

must be something to which the perception is due. It classified the percepts and concepts of experience into several ultimate types or categories (*padartha*), and held that the notion of each type was due to the presence of that entity. These types are six in number—*dravya*, *gu@na*, *etc.* If we take a percept “I see a red book,” the book appears to be an independent entity on which rests the concept of “redness” and “oneness,” and we thus call the book a substance (*dravya*); *dravya* is thus defined as that which has the characteristic of a *dravya* (*dravyatva*). So also *gu@na* and *karma*. In the subdivision of different kinds of *dravya* also the same principle of classification is followed. In contrasting it with *Sa@mkhya* or Buddhism we see that for each unit of sensation (say

[Footnote 1: *Abhava* (negation) as dependent on *bhava* (position) is mentioned in the *Vais'e@sika sutras*. Later Nyaya writers such as Udayana include *abhava* as a separate category, but S'ridhara a contemporary of Udayana rightly remarks that *abhava* was not counted by Pras'astapada as it was dependent on *bhava*—“*abhavasya prthagjanupades'a@h bhavaparatantryat na tvabhavat.*” *Nyayakandali*, p. 6, and *Lak@sa@navali*, p. 2.]

[Footnote 2: “*Tattvato jnate@su bahyadhyatmike@su vi@saye@su do@sadars'anat viraktasya samihaniv@rttau atmajnasya tadarthani karmanyakurvatah tatparityagasadhanani s'rutism@rtyuditani asa@nkalpitaphalani upadadanasya atmajnanamabhyasyata@h prak@r@s@tanivarttakadharmopacaye sati paripakvatmajnanasyatyantikas'ariraviyogasya bhavat.*” *Ibid.* p. 7.]

313

whiteness) the latter would admit a corresponding real, but Nyaya-Vais'e@sika would collect “all whiteness” under the name of “the quality of white colour” which the atom possessed [Footnote ref 1]. They only regarded as a separate entity what represented an ultimate mode of thought. They did not enquire whether such notions could be regarded as the modification of some other notion or not; but whenever they found that there were some experiences which were similar and universal, they classed them as separate entities or categories.

The six *Padarthas*: *Dravya*, *Gu@na*, *Karma*, *Samanya*, *Vis'e@sa*, *Samavaya*.

Of the six classes of entities or categories (*padartha*) we have already given some account of *dravya* [Footnote ref 2]. Let us now turn to the others. Of the qualities

(*gu@na*) the first one called *rupa* (colour) is that which can be apprehended by the eye alone and not by any other sense. The colours are white, blue, yellow, red, green, brown and variegated (*citra*). Colours are found only in *k@siti*, *ap* and *tejas*. The colours of *ap* and *tejas* are permanent (*nitya*}, but the colour of *k@siti* changes when heat is applied, and this, S'ridhara holds, is due to the fact that heat changes the atomic structure of *k@siti* (earth) and thus the old constitution of the substance being destroyed, its old colour is also destroyed, and a new one is generated. *Rupa* is the general name for the specific individual colours. There is the genus *rupatva* (colourness), and the *rupa gu@na* (quality) is that on which rests this genus; *rupa* is not itself a genus and can be apprehended by the eye.

Page 287

The second is *rasa* (taste), that quality of things which can be apprehended only by the tongue; these are sweet, sour, pungent (*ka@tu*), astringent (*ka@saya*) and bitter (*tikta*). Only *k@siti* and *ap* have taste. The natural taste of *ap* is sweetness. *Rasa* like *rupa* also denotes the genus *rasatva*, and *rasa* as quality must be distinguished from *rasa* as genus, though both of them are apprehended by the tongue.

The third is *gandha* (odour), that quality which can be apprehended by the nose alone. It belongs to *k@siti* alone. Water

[Footnote 1: The reference is to Sautrantika Buddhism, “yo yo vrudhdhadyasavan nasaveka@h.” See *Pa@n@ditas’oka’s Avayavinirakarana, Six Buddhist Nyaya tracts*.

[Footnote 2: The word “padartha” literally means denotations of words.]

314

or air is apprehended as having odour on account of the presence of earth materials.

The fourth is *spars’a* (touch), that quality which can be apprehended only by the skin. There are three kinds of touch, cold, hot, neither hot nor cold. *Spars’a* belongs to *k@siti*; *ap*, *tejas*, and *vayu*. The fifth *s’abda* (sound) is an attribute of *akas’a*. Had there been no *akas’a* there would have been no sound.

The sixth is *sa@mkhya* (number), that entity of quality belonging to things by virtue of which we can count them as one, two, three, *etc.* The conception of numbers two, three, *etc.* is due to a relative oscillatory state of the mind (*apek@sabuddhi*); thus when there are two jugs before my eyes, I have the notion—This is one jug and that is another jug. This is called *apek@sabuddhi*; then in the two jugs there arises the quality of twoness (*dvitva*) and then an indeterminate perception (*nirvikalpa-dvitva-gu@na*) of *dvitva* in us and then the determinate perceptions that there are the two jugs. The conceptions of other numbers as well as of many arise in a similar manner [Footnote ref 1].

The seventh is *parimiti* (measure), that entity of quality in things by virtue of which we perceive them as great or small and speak of them as such. The measure of the partless atoms is called *parima@n@dala parima@na*; it is eternal, and it cannot generate the measure of any other thing. Its measure is its own absolutely; when two atoms generate a dyad (*dvya@nuka*) it is not the measure of the atom that generates the *a@nu* (atomic) and the *hrasva* (small) measure of the dyad molecule (*dvya@nuka*), for then the size (*parima@na*) of it would have been still smaller than the measure of

the atom (*parima@n@dala*), whereas the measure of the *dya@nuka* is of a different kind, namely the small (*hrasva*) [Footnote ref 2]. Of course two atoms generate a dyad, but then the number (*sa@mkhya*) of the atom should be regarded as bringing forth a new kind of measure, namely the small (*hrasva*) measure in the dyads. So again when three dyads (*dya@nuka*) compose a *trya@nuka* the number and not the measure “small”

Page 288

[Footnote 1: This is distinctively a Vais'e@sika view introduced by Pras'astapada. Nyaya seems to be silent on this matter. See S'a@nkara Mis'ra's *Upaskara*, VII. ii. 8.]

[Footnote 2 It should be noted that the atomic measure appears in two forms as eternal as in "parama@nus" and non-eternal as in the dvya@nuka. The parima@n@dala parima@na is thus a variety of a@nuparima@na. The a@nuparima@na and the hrasvaparima@na represent the two dimensions of the measure of dvya@nukas as mahat and dirgha are with reference to trya@nukas. See *Nyayakandali*, p. 133.]

315

(*hrasva*) of the dyad is the cause of the measure "great" (*mahat*) of the trya@nuka. But when we come to the region of these gross trya@nukas we find that the "great" measure of the trya@nukas is the cause of the measure of other grosser bodies composed by them. For as many trya@nukas constitute a gross body, so much bigger does the thing become. Thus the cumulation of the trya@nukas of mahat parima@na makes things of still more mahat parima@na. The measure of trya@nukas is not only regarded as mahat but also as dirgha (long) and this dirgha parima@na has to be admitted as coexisting with mahat parima@na but not identical, for things not only appear as great but also as long (*dirgha*). Here we find that the accumulation of trya@nukas means the accumulation of "great" (*mahat*) and "long" (*dirgha*) parima@na, and hence the thing generated happens to possess a measure which is greater and longer than the individual atoms which composed them. Now the hrasva parima@na of the dyads is not regarded as having a lower degree of greatness or length but as a separate and distinct type of measure which is called small (*hrasva*). As accumulation of grossness, greatness or length, generates still more greatness, grossness and length in its effect, so an accumulation of the hrasva (small) parim_a@na ought to generate still more hrasva parim_a@na, and we should expect that if the hrasva measure of the dyads was the cause of the measure of the trya@nukas, the trya@nukas should be even smaller than the dya@nukas. So also if the atomic and circular (*parima@n@dala*) size of the atoms is regarded as generating by their measure the measure of the dya@nukas, then the measure of the dya@nukas ought to be more atomic than the atoms. The atomic, small, and great measures should not be regarded as representing successively bigger measures produced by the mere cumulation of measures, but each should be regarded as a measure absolutely distinct, different from or foreign to the other measure. It is therefore held that if grossness in the cause generates still more greatness in the effect, the smallness and the parima@n@dala measure of the dyads and atoms ought to generate still more smallness and subtleness in their effect. But since the dyads and the trya@nuka molecules are seen to be constituted of atoms and

dyads respectively, and yet are not found to share the measure of their causes, it is to be argued that the measures of the atoms and dyads do not generate the measure of their effects, but it is their *number* which is the cause

Page 289

316

of the measure of the latter. This explains a@nuparima@na, hrasva parima@na, mahat parima@na, and dirgha parima@na. The parima@na of akas'a, kala, dik and atman which are regarded as all-pervasive, is said to be paramamahat (absolutely large). The parima@nas of the atoms, akas'a, kala, dik, manas, and atman are regarded as eternal (nitya). All other kinds of parima@nas as belonging to non-eternal things are regarded as non-eternal.

The eighth is *p@rthaktva* (mutual difference or separateness of things), that entity or quality in things by virtue of which things appear as different (e.g. this is different from that). Difference is perceived by us as a positive notion and not as a mere negation such as this jug is not this pot.

The ninth is *sa@myoga* (connection), that entity of *gu@na* by virtue of which things appear to us as connected.

The tenth is *vibhaga* (separation), that entity of *gu@na* which destroys the connection or contact of things.

The eleventh and twelfth *gu@nas*, *paratva* and *aparatva*, give rise in us to the perceptions of long time and short time, remote and near.

The other *gu@nas* such as *buddhi*(knowledge), *sukha* (happiness), *du@hkha* (sorrow), *iccha* (will), *dve@sa* (antipathy or hatred) and *yatna* (effort) can occur only with reference to soul.

The characteristic of *gurutva* (heaviness) is that by virtue of which things fall to the ground. The *gu@na* of *sneha* (oiliness) belongs to water. The *gu@na* of *sa@mskara* is of three kinds, (i) *vega* (velocity) which keeps a thing moving in different directions, (2) *sthiti-sthapaka* (elasticity) on account of which a gross thing tries to get back its old state even though disturbed, (3) *bhavana* is that quality of atman by which things are constantly practised or by which things experienced are remembered and recognized [Footnote ref 1]. *Dharma* is the quality the presence of which enables the soul to enjoy happiness or to attain salvation [Footnote ref 2]. *Adharma* is

[Footnote 1: Pras'astapada says that bhavana is a special characteristic of the soul, contrary to intoxication, sorrow and knowledge, by which things seen, heard and felt are remembered and recognized. Through unexpectedness (as the sight of a camel for a man of South India), repetition (as in studies, art etc.) and intensity of interest, the

sa@mskara becomes particularly strong. See *Nyayakandali*, p. 167. Ka@nada however is silent on these points. He only says that by a special kind of contact of the mind with soul and also by the sa@mskara, memory (sm@rti) is produced (ix. 2. 6).]

Page 290

[Footnote 2: Pras'astapada speaks of *dharma* (merit) as being a quality of the soul. Thereupon S'ridhara points out that this view does not admit that dharma is a power of karma (*nakarmasamarthyam*). Sacrifice *etc.* cannot be dharma for these actions being momentary they cannot generate the effects which are only to be reaped at a future time. If the action is destroyed its power (*samarthyam*) cannot last. So dharma is to be admitted as a quality generated in the self by certain courses of conduct which produce happiness for him when helped by certain other conditions of time, place, *etc.* Faith (*s'raddha*), non-injury, doing good to all beings, truthfulness, non-stealing, sex-control, sincerity, control of anger, ablutions, taking of pure food, devotion to particular gods, fasting, strict adherence to scriptural duties, and the performance of duties assigned to each caste and stage of life, are enumerated by Pras'astapada as producing dharma. The person who strictly adheres to these duties and the *yamas* and *niyamas* (cf. Patanjali's Yoga) and attains Yoga by a meditation on the six padarthas attains a dharma which brings liberation (*mok@sa*). S'ridhara refers to the Sa@mkhya-Yoga account of the method of attaining salvation (*Nyayakandali*, pp. 272-280). See also Vallabha's *Nyayalilavati*, pp. 74-75. (Bombay, 1915.)]

317

the opposite quality, the presence of which in the soul leads a man to suffer. *Ad@r@s@ta* or destiny is that unknown quality of things and of the soul which brings about the cosmic order, and arranges it for the experience of the souls in accordance with their merits or demerits.

Karma means movement; it is the third thing which must be held to be as irreducible a reality as *dravya* or *gu@na*. There are five kinds of movement, (1) upward, (2) downward, (3) contraction, (4) expansion, (5) movement in general. All kinds of *karmas* rest on substances just, as the *gu@nas* do, and cause the things to which they belong to move.

Samanya is the fourth category. It means the genus, or aspect of generality or sameness that we notice in things. Thus in spite of the difference of colour between one cow and another, both of them are found to have such a sameness that we call them cows. In spite of all diversity in all objects around us, they are all perceived as *sat* or existing. This *sat* or existence is thus a sameness, which is found to exist in all the three things, *dravya*, *gu@na*, and *karma*. This sameness is called *samanya* or *jati*, and it is regarded as a separate thing which rests on *dravya*, *gu@na*, or *karma*. This highest genus *satta* (being) is called *parajati* (highest universal), the other intermediate *jatis* are called *aparajati* (lower universals), such as the genus of *dravya*, of *karma*, or of *gu@na*, or still more intermediate *jatis* such as *gotvajati* (the genus cow), *nilatvajati* (the genus blue). The intermediate *jatis* or genera sometimes appear to have a special aspect as a species, such as *pas'utva* (animal *jati*) and *gotva* (the cow *jati*); here however *gotva* appears as a species, yet it is in reality nothing but a *jati*. The aspect as

species has no separate existence. It is jati which from one aspect appears as genus and from another as species.

Page 291

318

This jati or *samanya* thus must be regarded as having a separate independent reality though it is existent in dravya, gu@na and karma. The Buddhists denied the existence of any independent reality of *samanya*, but said that the sameness as cow was really but the negation of all non-cows (*apoha*). The perception of cow realizes the negation of all non-cows and this is represented in consciousness as the sameness as cow. He who should regard this sameness to be a separate and independent reality perceived in experience might also discover two horns on his own head [Footnote ref 1]. The Nyaya-Vais'e@sika said that negation of non-cows is a negative perception, whereas the sameness perceived as cow is a positive perception, which cannot be explained by the aforesaid negation theory of the Buddhists. *Samanya* has thus to be admitted to have a separate reality. All perception as sameness of a thing is due to the presence of this thing in that object [Footnote ref I]. This jati is eternal or non-destructible, for even with the destruction of individuals comprehended within the jati, the latter is not destroyed [Footnote ref 2].

Through *vis'e@sa* things are perceived as diverse. No single sensation that we receive from the external world probably agrees with any other sensation, and this difference must be due to the existence of some specific differences amongst the atoms themselves. The, specific difference existing in the atoms, emancipated souls and minds must be regarded as eternally existing, and it

[Footnote 1: The Buddhist Panditas'oka says that there is no single thing running through different individuals (e.g. cooks) by virtue of which the *samanya* could be established, for if it did exist then we could have known it simply by seeing any cook without any reference to his action of cooking by virtue of which the notion of generality is formed. If there is a similarity between the action of cooks that cannot establish jati in the cooks, for the similarity applies to other things, viz. the action of the cooks. If the specific individualities of a cow should require one common factor to hold them together, then these should require another and that another, and we have a regressus ad infinitum. Whatever being perceptible is not perceived is non-existent (*yadyadupalabdihilaksanapraptam sannopalabhyate tattadasat*). *Samanya* is such, therefore *samanya* is non-existent. No *samanya* can be admitted to exist as an entity. But it is only as a result of the impressions of past experiences of existence and non-existence that this notion is formed and transferred erroneously to external objects. Apart from this no *samanya* can be pointed out as being externally perceptible — *Samanyadusanadikprasarita*—in *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*. The Vedanta also does not think that either by perception or by inference we can know jati as a separate

substance. So it discards jati. See *Vedantaparibhasa*, *Sikhamani* and *Mamprabha*, pp. 69-71. See also Sriharsa's *Khan@danakhandakhadya*, pp 1079-1086.]

Page 292

[Footnote 2: Similarity (sadr's'ya_) is not regarded as a separate category, for it is defined as identity in difference (*tadbhinnatve sati tadgatabhuyodharmavattvam*).]

319

is on account of its presence that atoms appear as different to the yogins who can perceive them.

Samavaya, the inseparable relation of inherence, is a relation by virtue of which two different things such as substance and attribute, substance and karma, substance and samanya, karana (cause) and karya (effect), atoms and vis'e@sa, appear so unified that they represent one whole, or one identical inseparable reality. This peculiar relation of inseparable inherence is the cause why substance, action, and attribute, cause and effect, and jati in substance and attribute appear as indissolubly connected as if they are one and the same thing Samyoga or contact may take place between two things of the same nature which exist as disconnected and may later on be connected (*yutasiddha*), such as when I put my pen on the table. The pen and the table are both substances and were disconnected, the samyoga relation is the gu@na by virtue of which they appear to be connected for a while. *Samavaya* however makes absolutely difficient things such as dravya and gu@na and karma or karana and karya (clay and jug) appear as one inseparable whole (*ayutasiddha*). This relation is thus a separate and independent category. This is not regarded as many like sa@myogas (contact) but as one and eternal because it has no cause. This or that object (eg. jug) may be destroyed but the *samavaya* relation which was never brought into being by anybody always remains [Footnote ref 1].

These six things are called the six padarthas or independent realities experienced in perception and expressed in language.

The Theory of Causation.

The Nyaya-Vais'e@sika in most of its speculations took that view of things which finds expression in our language, and which we tacitly assume as true in all our ordinary experience. Thus

[Footnote 1: The Vedanta does not admit the existence of the relation of *samavaya* as subsisting between two different entities (e.g. substance and qualities). Thus S'a@nkara says (*Brahma-sutrabha@sya II. ii. 13*) that if a *samavaya* relation is to be admitted to connect two different things, then another *samavaya* would be necessary to

connect it with either of the two entities that it intended to connect, and that another, and so there will be a vicious infinite (*anavastha*). Nyaya, however, would not regard it as vicious at all. It is well to remember that the Indian systems acknowledge two kinds of *anavastha*—*prama@niki* (valid infinite, as in case of the question of the seed and the tree, or of the avidya and the passions), and another *aprama@niki anavastha* (vicious infinite) as when the admission of anything invokes an infinite chain before it can be completed.]

Page 293

320

they admitted *dravya*, *gu@na*, *karma* and *samanya*, *Vis'e@sa* they had to admit as the ultimate peculiarities of atoms, for they did not admit that things were continually changing their qualities, and that everything could be produced out of everything by a change of the collocation or arrangement of the constituting atoms. In the production of the effect too they did not admit that the effect was potentially pre-existent in the cause. They held that the material cause (e.g. clay) had some power within it, and the accessory and other instrumental causes (such as the stick, the wheel *etc.*) had other powers; the collocation of these two destroyed the cause, and produced the effect which was not existent before but was newly produced. This is what is called the doctrine of *asatkaryavada*. This is just the opposite of the *Sa@mkhya* axiom, that what is existent cannot be destroyed (*nabhavo vidyate sata@h*) and that the non-existent could never be produced (*nasato vidyate bhavah*). The objection to this view is that if what is non-existent is produced, then even such impossible things as the hare's horn could also be produced. The *Nyaya-Vais'e@sika* answer is that the view is not that anything that is non-existent can be produced, but that which is produced was non-existent [Footnote ref 1].

It is held by *Mima@msa* that an unseen power resides in the cause which produces the effect. To this *Nyaya* objects that this is neither a matter of observation nor of legitimate hypothesis, for there is no reason to suppose that there is any transcendental operation in causal movement as this can be satisfactorily explained by molecular movement (*parispanda*). There is nothing except the invariable time relation (antecedence and sequence) between the cause and the effect, but the mere invariableness of an antecedent does not suffice to make it the cause of what succeeds; it must be an unconditional antecedent as well (*anyathasiddhis'unyasya niyatapurvavarttita*). Unconditionality and invariability are indispensable for *karyakara@na-bhava* or cause and effect relation. For example, the non-essential or adventitious accompaniments of an invariable antecedent may also be invariable antecedents; but they are not unconditional, only collateral or indirect. In other words their antecedence is conditional upon something else (*na svatantrye@na*). The potter's stick is an unconditional invariable antecedent of the jar; but the colour

[Footnote 1: *Nyayamunjari*, p. 494.]

321

Page 294

of a stick or its texture or size, or any other accompaniment or accident which does not contribute to the work done, is not an unconditional antecedent, and must not therefore be regarded as a cause. Similarly the co-effects of the invariable antecedents or what enters into the production of their co-effects may themselves be invariable antecedents; but they are not unconditional, being themselves conditioned by those of the antecedents of which they are effects. For example, the sound produced by the stick or by the potter's wheel invariably precedes the jar but it is a co-effect; and akas'a (ether) as the substrate and vayu (air) as the vehicle of the sound enter into the production of this co-effect, but these are no unconditional antecedents, and must therefore be rejected in an enumeration of conditions or causes of the jar. The conditions of the conditions should also be rejected; the invariable antecedent of the potter (who is an invariable antecedent of the jar), the potter's father, does not stand in a causal relation to the potter's handiwork. In fact the antecedence must not only be unconditionally invariable, but must also be immediate. Finally all seemingly invariable antecedents which may be dispensed with or left out are not unconditional and cannot therefore be regarded as causal conditions. Thus Dr. Seal in describing it rightly remarks, "In the end, the discrimination of what is necessary to complete the sum of causes from what is dependent, collateral, secondary, superfluous, or inert (i.e. of the relevant from the irrelevant factors), must depend on the test of expenditure of energy. This test the Nyaya would accept only in the sense of an operation analysable into molar or molecular motion (*parispanda eva bhautiko vyapara@h karotyatha@h atindriyastu vyaparo nasti*. Jayanta's Manjari Ahnika I), but would emphatically reject, if it is advanced in support of the notion of a mysterious causal power or efficiency (*s'akti*) [Footnote ref 1]." With Nyaya all energy is necessarily kinetic. This is a peculiarity of Nyaya—its insisting that the effect is only the sum or resultant of the operations of the different causal conditions—that these operations are of the nature of motion or kinetic, in other words it firmly holds to the view that causation is a case of expenditure of energy, i.e. a redistribution of motion, but at the same time absolutely repudiates the Sa@mkhya conception of power or productive

[Footnote 1: Dr P.C. Ray's *Hindu Chemistry*, 1909, pp. 249-250.]

Page 295

efficiency as metaphysical or transcendental (*atindriya*) and finds nothing in the cause other than unconditional invariable complements of operative conditions (*kara@na-samagri*), and nothing in the effect other than the consequent phenomenon which results from the joint operations of the antecedent conditions [Footnote ref 1]. Certain general conditions such as relative space (*dik*), time (*kala*), the will of Is'vara, destiny (*ad@r@s@ta*) are regarded as the common cause of all effects (*karyatva-prayojaka*). Those are called *sadhara@na-kara@na* (common cause) as distinguished from the specific causes which determine the specific effects which are called *sadhara@na kara@na*. It may not be out of place here to notice that Nyaya while repudiating transcendental power (*s'akti*) in the mechanism of nature and natural causation, does not deny the existence of metaphysical conditions like merit (*dharma*), which constitutes a system of moral ends that fulfil themselves through the mechanical systems and order of nature.

The causal relation then like the relation of genus to species, is a natural relation of concomitance, which can be ascertained only by the uniform and uninterrupted experience of agreement in presence and agreement in absence, and not by a deduction from a certain *a priori* principle like that of causality or identity of essence [Footnote ref 2].

The material cause such as the clay is technically called the *samavayi-kara@na* of the jug. *Samavaya* means as we have seen an intimate, inseparable relation of inherence. A *kara@na* is called *samavayi* when its materials are found inseparably connected with the materials of the effect. *Asamavayi-kara@na* is that which produces its characteristics in the effect through the medium of the *samavayi* or material cause, e.g. the clay is not the cause of the colour of the jug but the colour of the clay is the cause of the colour of the jug. The colour of the clay which exists in the clay in inseparable relation is the cause of the colour of the jug. This colour of the clay is thus called the *asamavayi* cause of the jug. Any quality (*gu@na*) or movement which existing in the *samavaya* cause in the *samavaya* relation determines the characteristics of the effect is called the *asamavayi-kara@na*. The instrumental

[Footnote 1: Dr P.C. Ray's *Hindu Chemistry*, 1909, pp. 249-250.]

[Footnote 2: See for this portion Dr B.N. Seal's *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*, pp. 263-266. *Sarvadars'anasa@mgraha* on Buddhism. *Nyayamanjari Bha@sa-pariccheda*, with *Muktavali* and *Dinakari*, and *Tarkas@mgraha*. The doctrine of Anyathasiddhi was systematically developed from the time of Ga@nges'a.]

323

nimitta and accessory (*sahakari*) causes are those which help the material cause to produce the effect. Thus the potter, the wheel and the stick may be regarded as the *nimitta* and the *sahakari* causes of the effect.

Page 296

We know that the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika regards the effect as nonexistent, before the operation of the cause in producing it, but it holds that the gu@nas in the cause are the causes of the gu@nas in the effect, e.g. the black colour of the clay is the cause of the black colour of the effect, except in cases where heat comes as an extraneous cause to generate other qualities; thus when a clay jug is burnt, on account of the heat we get red colour, though the colour of the original clay and the jug was black. Another important exception is to be found in the case of the production of the parima@nas of dvya@nukas and trasare@nus which are not produced by the parima@nas of an a@nu or a dya@nuka, but by their number as we have already seen.

Dissolution (Pralaya) and Creation (S@r@s@ti).

The doctrine of pralaya is accepted by all the Hindu systems except the Mima@msa [Footnote ref 1]. According to the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika view Is'vara wishing to give some respite or rest to all living beings desires to bring about dissolution (*sa@mhareccho bhavati*). Simultaneously with it the ad@r@s@ta force residing in all the souls and forming bodies, senses, and the gross elements, ceases to act (*s'akti-pratibandha*). As a result of this no further bodies, senses, or other products come into being. Then for the bringing about of the dissolution of all produced things (by the desire of Is'vara) the separation of the atoms commences and thus all combinations as bodies or senses are disintegrated; so all earth is reduced to the disintegrated atomic state, then all ap, then all tejas and then all vayu. These disintegrated atoms and the souls associated with dharma, adharma and past impressions (*sa@mskara*) remain suspended in their own inanimate condition. For we know that souls in their natural condition are lifeless and knowledgeless, non-intelligent entities. It is only when these are connected with bodies that they possess knowledge through the activity of manas. In the state of pralaya owing to the ad@r@s@ta of souls the

[Footnote 1: The doctrine of pralaya and s@r@s@ti is found only in later Nyaya-Vais'e@sika works, but the sutras of both the systems seem to be silent on the matter.]

324

atoms do not conglomerate. It is not an act of cruelty on the part of Is'vara that he brings about dissolution, for he does it to give some rest to the sufferings of the living beings.

At the time of creation, Is'vara wishes to create and this desire of Is'vara works in all the souls as ad@r@s@ta. This one eternal desire of Is'vara under certain conditions of

time (e.g. of pralaya) as accessory causes (*sahakari*) helps the disintegration of atoms and at other times (e.g. that of creation) the constructive process of integration and unification of atoms for the world-creation. When it acts in a specific capacity in the diverse

Page 297

souls it is called ad@r@s@ta. At the time of dissolution the creative function of this ad@r@s@ta is suspended and at the time of creation it finds full play. At the time of creation action first begins in the vayu atoms by the kinetic function of this ad@r@s@ta, by the contact of the souls with the atoms. By such action the air atoms come in contact with one another and the dvya@nukas are formed and then in a similar way the trya@nukas are formed, and thus vayu originates. After vayu, the ap is formed by the conglomeration of water atoms, and then the tejas atoms conglomerate and then the earth atoms. When the four elements are thus conglomerated in the gross form, the god Brahma and all the worlds are created by Is'vara and Brahma is directed by Is'vara to do the rest of the work. Brahma thus arranges for the enjoyment and suffering of the fruits of diverse kinds of karma, good or bad. Is'vara brings about this creation not for any selfish purpose but for the good of all beings. Even here sorrows have their place that they may lead men to turn from worldly attachment and try for the attainment of the highest good, mukti. Moreover Is'vara arranges for the enjoyment of pleasures and the suffering of pains according to the merits and demerits of men, just as in our ordinary experience we find that a master awards prizes or punishments according to good or bad deeds [Footnote ref 1]. Many Nyaya books do not speak of the appointment of a Brahma as deputy for supervision of the due disposal of the fruits of karma according to merit or demerit. It is also held that pralaya and creation were brought about in accordance with the karma of men, or that it may be due to a mere play (*lila*) of Is'vara. Is'vara is one, for if there were many Is'varas they might quarrel. The will of Is'vara not only brings about dissolution and creation,

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayakandali*, pp. 48-54.]

325

but also acts always among us in a general way, for without it our karmas could not ripen, and the consequent disposal of pleasures and sorrows to us and a corresponding change in the exterior world in the form of order or harmony could not happen. The exterior world is in perfect harmony with men's actions. Their merits and demerits and all its changes and modifications take place in accordance with merits and demerits. This desire (*iccha*) of Is'vara may thus be compared with the *iccha* of Is'vara as we find it in the Yoga system.

Proof of the Existence of Is'vara.

Page 298

Sa@mkhya asserts that the teleology of the prak@rti is sufficient to explain all order and arrangement of the cosmos. The Mima@msakas, the Carvakas, the Buddhists and the Jains all deny the existence of Is'vara (God). Nyaya believes that Is'vara has fashioned this universe by his will out of the ever-existing atoms. For every effect (e.g. a jug) must have its cause. If this be so, then this world with all its order and arrangement must also be due to the agency of some cause, and this cause is Is'vara. This world is not momentary as the Buddhists suppose, but is permanent as atoms, is also an effect so far as it is a collocation of atoms and is made up of parts like all other individual objects (e.g. jug, etc.), which we call effects. The world being an effect like any other effect must have a cause like any other effect. The objection made against this view is that such effects as we ordinarily perceive may be said to have agents as their causes but this manifest world with mountains, rivers, oceans etc. is so utterly different in form from ordinary effects that we notice every day, that the law that every effect must have a cause cannot be said to hold good in the present case. The answer that Nyaya gives is that the concomitance between two things must be taken in its general aspect neglecting the specific peculiarities of each case of observed concomitance. Thus I had seen many cases of the concomitance of smoke with fire, and had thence formed the notion that "wherever there is smoke there is fire"; but if I had only observed small puffs of smoke and small fires, could I say that only small quantities of smoke could lead us to the inference of fire, and could I hold that therefore large volumes of smoke from the burning of a forest should not be sufficient reason for us to infer the existence of fire in the forest?

326

Thus our conclusion should not be that only smaller effects are preceded by their causes, but that all effects are invariably and unconditionally preceded by causes. This world therefore being an effect must be preceded by a cause, and this cause is Is'vara. This cause we cannot see, because Is'vara has no visible body, not because he does not exist. It is sometimes said that we see every day that shoots come out of seeds and they are not produced by any agent. To such an objection the Nyaya answer is that even they are created by God, for they are also effects. That we do not see any one to fashion them is not because there is no maker of them, but because the creator cannot be seen. If the objector could distinctly prove that there was no invisible maker shaping these shoots, then only could he point to it as a case of contradiction. But so long as this is not done it is still only a doubtful case of enquiry and it is therefore legitimate for us to infer that since all effects have a cause, the shoots as well as the manifest world being effects must have a cause. This cause is Is'vara. He has infinite knowledge and is all merciful. At the beginning of creation He created the Vedas. He is like our father who is always engaged in doing us good [Footnote ref 1].

Page 299

Tht Nyaya-Vais'e@sika Physics.

The four kinds of atoms are earth, water, fire, and air atoms. These have mass, number, weight, fluidity (or hardness), viscosity (or its opposite), velocity, characteristic potential colour, taste, smell, or touch, not produced by the chemical operation of heat. Akas'a (space) is absolutely inert and structure-less being only as the substratum of sound, which is supposed to travel wave-like in the manifesting medium of air. Atomic combination is only possible with the four elements. Atoms cannot exist in an uncombined condition in the creation stage; atmospheric air however consists of atoms in an uncombined state.

Two atoms combine to form a binary molecule (*dvya@nuka*). Two, three, four, or five *dvya@nukas* form themselves into grosser molecules of *trya@nuka*, *catura@nuka*, etc. [Footnote ref 2]. Though this was the generally current view, there was also another view as has been pointed out by Dr B.N. Seal in his *Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus*, that the "atoms have also an inherent tendency to unite," and that

[Footnote 1: See Jayanta's *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 190-204, and Udayana's *Kusumanjali* with *Prakas'a* and *Is'varanumana* of Raghunatha.]

[Footnote 2: *Kadacit tribhirarabhyate iti trya@nukamityucyate, kadacit caturbhirarabhyate kadacit pancabhiriti yathe@s@ta@m kalpana. Nyayakandali*, p. 32.]

327

they do so in twos, threes, or fours, "either by the atoms falling into groups of threes, fours, etc., directly, or by the successive addition of one atom to each preceding aggregate [Footnote ref 1]." Of course the atoms are regarded as possessed of an incessant vibratory motion. It must however be noted in this connection that behind this physical explanation of the union of atoms there is the *ad@r@s@ta*, the will of *Is'vara*, which gives the direction of all such unions in harmony with the principle of a "moral government of the universe," so that only such things are produced as can be arranged for the due disposal of the effects of karma. "An elementary substance thus produced by primary atomic combination may however suffer qualitative changes under the influence of heat (*pakajotpatti*)" The impact of heat corpuscles decomposes a *dvya@nuka* into the atoms and transforms the characters of the atoms determining them all in the same way. The heat particles continuing to impinge reunite the atoms so transformed to form binary or other molecules in different orders or arrangements,

which account for the specific characters or qualities finally produced. The Vais'e@sika holds that there is first a disintegration into simple atoms, then change of atomic qualities, and then the final re-combination, under the influence of heat. This doctrine is called the doctrine of *pilupaka* (heating of atoms). Nyaya on the other hand thinks

Page 300

that no disintegration into atoms is necessary for change of qualities, but it is the molecules which assume new characters under the influence of heat. Heat thus according to Nyaya directly affects the characters of the molecules and changes their qualities without effecting a change in the atoms. Nyaya holds that the heat-corpuscles penetrate into the porous body of the object and thereby produce the change of colour. The object as a whole is not disintegrated into atoms and then reconstituted again, for such a procedure is never experienced by observation. This is called the doctrine of *pi@tharapaka* (heating of molecules). This is one of the few points of difference between the later Nyaya and Vais'e@sika systems [Footnote ref 2].

Chemical compounds of atoms may take place between the

[Footnote 1: Utpala's commentary on *Brhatsamh@ita* I. 7.]

[Footnote 2: See Dr B.N. Seal in P.C. Ray's *Hindu Chemistry*, pp. 190-191, *Nyayamanjari*, p 438, and Udyotakara's *Varttika*. There is very little indication in the Nyaya and *Vais'e@sika sutras* that they had any of those differences indicated here. Though there are slight indications of these matters in the *Vais'e@sika sutras* (VII. 1), the *Nyaya sutras* are almost silent upon the matter. A systematic development of the theory of creation and atomic combinations appear to have taken place after Vatsyayana.]

328

atoms of the same bhuta or of many bhutas. According to the Nyaya view there are no differences in the atoms of the same bhuta, and all differences of quality and characteristics of the compound of the same bhuta are due only to diverse collocations of those atoms. Thus Udyotakara says (III. i. 4) that there is no difference between the atom of a barley seed and paddy seed, since these are all but atoms of earth. Under the continued impact of heat particles the atoms take new characters. It is heat and heat alone that can cause the transformations of colours, tastes *etc.* in the original bhuta atoms. The change of these physical characters depends on the colours *etc.* of the constituent substances in contact, on the intensity or degree of heat and also on the species of tejas corpuscles that impinge on the atoms. Heat breaks bodies in contact into atoms, transforms their qualities, and forms separate bodies with them.

Pras'astapada (the commentator of Vais'e@sika) holds that in the higher compounds of the same bhuta the transformation takes place (under internal heat) in the constituent atoms of the compound molecules, atoms specially determined as the compound and not in the original atoms of the bhuta entering into the composition of the compound. Thus when milk is turned into curd, the transformation as curd takes place in the atoms determined as milk in the milk molecule, and it is not necessary that the milk molecule

Page 301

should be disintegrated into the atoms of the original bhuta of which the milk is a modification. The change as curd thus takes place in the milk atom, and the milk molecule has not to be disintegrated into k@siti or ap atoms. So again in the fertilized ovum, the germ and the ovum substances, which in the Vais'e@sika view are both isomeric modes of earth (with accompaniments of other bhutas) are broken up into homogeneous earth atoms, and it is these that chemically combine under the animal heat and biomotor force vayu to form the germ (*kalala*). But when the germ plasm develops, deriving its nutrition from the blood of the mother, the animal heat breaks up the molecules of the germ plasm into its constituent atoms, *i.e.* atoms specifically determined which by their grouping formed the germ plasm. These germ-plasm atoms chemically combine with the atoms of the food constituents and thus produce cells and tissues [Footnote ref 1]. This atomic contact is called *arambhaka-sa@myoga*.

[Footnote 1: See Dr B.N. Seal's *Positive Sciences*, pp. 104-108, and *Nyayakandali*, pp. 33-34, "S'arirarambhe paramanava eva kara@nam na s'ukra-s'onitasannipata@h kriyavibhagadinyayena tayorvinas'e sati utpannapakajai@h parama@nubhirarambhat, na ca s'ukras'onitaparama@nuna@m kas'cidvis'e@sa@h parthivatvavis'e@sat....Pitu@h s'ukra@m matuh s'onita@m tayos sannipatanantara@m ja@tharanalasambandhat s'ukra-s'onitarambhake@su parama@nu@su purvarupadivinas'e sama@nagu@nantarotpattau dvya@nukadikrame@na kalalas'arirotpatti@h tatrantahkara@napraves'o...tatra maturahararaso matraya sa@mkramate, ad@r@s@tavas'attatra punarja@tharanalasambandhat kalalarambhakaparama@nu@su kriyavibhagadinyayena kalalas'arire na@s@te samutpannapakajai@h kalalarambhakaparama@nubhirad@r@s@tavas'ad upajatakriyairaharaparama@nitbhi@h saha sambhuya s'arirantaramarakkyate.".]

329

In the case of poly-bhautik or bi-bhautik compounds there is another kind of contact called *upa@s@tambha*. Thus in the case of such compounds as oils, fats, and fruit juices, the earth atoms cannot combine with one another unless they are surrounded by the water atoms which congregate round the former, and by the infra-atomic forces thus set up the earth atoms take peculiar qualities under the impact of heat corpuscles. Other compounds are also possible where the ap, tejas, or the vayu atoms form the inner radicle and earth atoms dynamically surround them (e.g. gold, which is the tejas atom with the earth atoms as the surrounding *upa@s@tambhaka*). Solutions (of earth substances in ap) are regarded as physical mixtures.

Udayana points out that the solar heat is the source of all the stores of heat required for chemical change. But there are differences in the modes of the action of heat; and the kind of contact with heat-corpuscles, or the kind of heat with chemical action which transforms colours, is supposed to differ from what transforms flavour or taste.

Page 302

Heat and light rays are supposed to consist of indefinitely small particles which dart forth or radiate in all directions rectilineally with inconceivable velocity. Heat may penetrate through the interatomic space as in the case of the conduction of heat, as when water boils in a pot put on the fire; in cases of transparency light rays penetrate through the inter-atomic spaces with *parispanda* of the nature of deflection or refraction (*tiryag-gamana*). In other cases heat rays may impinge on the atoms and rebound back—which explains reflection. Lastly heat may strike the atoms in a peculiar way, so as to break up their grouping, transform the physico-chemical characters of the atoms, and again recombine them, all by means of continual impact with inconceivable velocity, an operation which explains all cases of chemical combination [Footnote ref I]. Govardhana a later Nyaya writer says that paka means the combination of different kinds of heat. The heat that

[Footnote 1: See Dr Seal's *Positive Sciences of the Hindus*.]

330

changes the colour of a fruit is different from that which generates or changes the taste. Even when the colour and taste remain the same a particular kind of heat may change the smell. When grass eaten by cows is broken up into atoms special kinds of heat-light rays change its old taste, colour, touch and smell into such forms as those that belong to milk [Footnote ref 1].

In the Nyaya-Vais`e@sika system all action of matter on matter is thus resolved into motion. Conscious activity (*prayatna*) is distinguished from all forms of motion as against the Sa@mkhya doctrine which considered everything other than puru@sa (intelligence) to arise in the course of cosmic evolution and therefore to be subject to vibratory motion.

The Origin of Knowledge (Prama@na).

The manner in which knowledge originates is one of the most favourite topics of discussion in Indian philosophy. We have already seen that Sa@mkhya-Yoga explained it by supposing that the buddhi (place of consciousness) assumed the form of the object of perception, and that the buddhi so transformed was then intelligized by the reflection of the pure intelligence or puru@sa. The Jains regarded the origin of any knowledge as being due to a withdrawal of a veil of karma which was covering the all-intelligence of the self.

Nyaya-Vais`e@sika regarded all effects as being due to the assemblage of certain collocations which unconditionally, invariably, and immediately preceded these effects. That collocation (*samagri*) which produced knowledge involved certain non-intelligent as well as intelligent elements and through their conjoint action uncontradicted and determinate knowledge was produced, and this collocation is thus called prama@na or the determining cause of the origin of knowledge [Footnote ref 2]. None of the separate elements composing

Page 303

[Footnote 1: Govardhana's *Nyayabodhini* on *Tarkasa@mgraha*, pp. 9, 10.]

[Footnote 2: "Avyabharinimasandigdharthopalabdhi@m vidadhati bodhabodhasvabhava samagri prama@nam." *Nyayamanjari*, p. 12. Udyotakara however defined "prama@na" as upalabdhihetu (cause of knowledge). This view does not go against Jayanta's view which I have followed, but it emphasizes the side of vyapara or movement of the senses, etc. by virtue of which the objects come in contact with them and knowledge is produced. Thus Vacaspati says: "siddhamindriyadi, asiddhanca tatsannikar@sadi vyaparayannutpadayan kara@na eva caritartha@h kar@na@m tvindriyadi tatsannikar@sadi va nanyatra caritarthamiti sak@sadupalabdhaveva phale vyapriyate." *Tatparya@tika*, p. 15. Thus it is the action of the senses as prama@na which is the direct cause of the production of knowledge, but as this production could not have taken place without the subject and the object, they also are to be regarded as causes in some sense. "Pramat@rprameyayo@h. pramane caritarthatvamacaritarthatvam pramanasya tasmad tadeva phalahetu@h. Pramata@rprameye tu phaloddes'ena prav@rtte iti taddhetu kathancit." *Ibid.* p. 16.]

331

the causal collocation can be called the primary cause; it is only their joint collocation that can be said to determine the effect, for sometimes the absence of a single element composing the causal collocation is sufficient to stop the production of the effect. Of course the collocation or combination is not an entity separated from the collocated or combined things. But in any case it is the preceding collocations that combine to produce the effect jointly. These involve not only intellectual elements (e.g. indeterminate cognition as qualification (vis'e@sa@na) in determinate perceptions, the knowledge of li@nga in inference, the seeing of similar things in upamana, the hearing of sound in s'abda) but also the assemblage of such physical things (e.g. proximity of the object of perception, capacity of the sense, light, etc.), which are all indispensable for the origin of knowledge. The cognitive and physical elements all co-operate in the same plane, combine together and produce further determinate knowledge. It is this capacity of the collocations that is called prama@na.

Nyaya argues that in the Sa@mkhya view knowledge originates by the transcendent influence of puru@sa on a particular state of buddhi; this is quite unintelligible, for knowledge does not belong to buddhi as it is non-intelligent, though it contains within it the content and the form of the concept or the percept (knowledge). The puru@sa to whom the knowledge belongs, however, neither knows, nor feels, neither conceives nor perceives, as it always remains in its own transcendental purity. If the transcendental

contact of the puru@sa with buddhi is but a mere semblance or appearance or illusion, then the Sa@mkhya has to admit that there is no real knowledge according to them. All knowledge is false. And since all knowledge is false, the Sa@mkhyists have precious little wherewith to explain the origin of right knowledge.

Page 304

There are again some Buddhists who advocate the doctrine that simultaneously with the generation of an object there is the knowledge corresponding to it, and that corresponding to the rise of any knowledge there is the rise of the object of it. Neither is the knowledge generated by the object nor the object by the knowledge; but there is a sort of simultaneous parallelism. It is evident that this view does not explain why knowledge should

332

express or manifest its object. If knowledge and the object are both but corresponding points in a parallel series, whence comes this correspondence? Why should knowledge illuminate the object. The doctrine of the Vijnana vadins, that it is knowledge alone that shows itself both as knowledge and as its object, is also irrational, for how can knowledge divide itself as subject and object in such a manner that knowledge as object should require the knowledge as subject to illuminate it? If this be the case we might again expect that knowledge as knowledge should also require another knowledge to manifest it and this another, and so on *ad infinitum*. Again if *prama@na* be defined as *prapa@na* (capacity of being realized) then also it would not hold, for all things being momentary according to the Buddhists, the thing known cannot be realized, so there would be nothing which could be called *prama@na*. These views moreover do not explain the origin of knowledge. Knowledge is thus to be regarded as an effect like any other effect, and its origin or production occurs in the same way as any other effect, namely by the joint collocation of causes intellectual and physical [Footnote ref 1]. There is no transcendent element involved in the production of knowledge, but it is a production on the same plane as that in which many physical phenomena are produced [Footnote ref 2].

The four *Prama@nas* of Nyaya.

We know that the Carvakas admitted perception (*pratyak@sa*) alone as the valid source of knowledge. The Buddhists and the Vais'e@sika admitted two sources, *pratyak@sa* and inference (*anumana*); Sa@mkhya added *s'abda* (testimony) as the third source;

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 12-26.]

[Footnote 2: Discussing the question of the validity of knowledge Ganges'a, a later *naiyayika* of great fame, says that it is derived as a result of our inference from the correspondence of the perception of a thing with the activity which prompted us to realize it. That which leads us to successful activity is valid and the opposite invalid.

When I am sure that if I work in accordance with the perception of an object I shall be successful, I call it valid knowledge. *Tattvacintama@ni*, K. Tarkavagis'a's edition, *Prama@nyavada*.

Page 305

"The *Vais'e@sika sutras* tacitly admit the Vedas as a prama@na. The view that Vais'e@sika only admitted two prama@nas, perception and inference, is traditionally accepted, "*pratyak@sameka@mcarvaka@h ka@nadasugatau puna@h anumananca taccapi, etc.*" Pras'astapada divides all cognition (*buddhi*) as *vidya* (right knowledge) and *avidya* (ignorance). Under *avidya* he counts *sa@ms'aya* (doubt or uncertainty), *viparyaya* (illusion or error), *anadhyavasaya* (want of definite knowledge, thus when a man who had never seen a mango, sees it for the first time, he wonders what it may be) and *svapna* (dream). Right knowledge (*vidya*) is of four kinds, perception, inference, memory and the supernatural knowledge of the sages (*ar@sa*). Interpreting the *Vais'e@sika sutras* I.i. 3, VI. i. 1, and VI. i. 3, to mean that the validity of the Vedas depends upon the trustworthy character of their author, he does not consider scriptures as valid in themselves. Their validity is only derived by inference from the trustworthy character of their author. *Arthapatti* (implication) and *anupalabdhi* (non-perception) are also classed as inference and *upamana* (analogy) and *aitihya* (tradition) are regarded as being the same as faith in trustworthy persons and hence cases of inference.]

333

Nyaya adds a fourth, *upamana* (analogy). The principle on which the four-fold division of prama@nas depends is that the causal collocation which generates the knowledge as well as the nature or characteristic kind of knowledge in each of the four cases is different. The same thing which appears to us as the object of our perception, may become the object of inference or s'abda (testimony), but the manner or mode of manifestation of knowledge being different in each case, and the manner or conditions producing knowledge being different in each case, it is to be admitted that inference and s'abda are different prama@nas, though they point to the same object indicated by the perception. Nyaya thus objects to the incorporation of s'abda (testimony) or upamana within inference, on the ground that since the mode of production of knowledge is different, these are to be held as different prama@nas [Footnote ref 1].

Perception (Pratyak@sa).

The naiyayikas admitted only the five cognitive senses which they believed to be composed of one or other of the five elements. These senses could each come in contact with the special characteristic of that element of which they were composed. Thus the ear could perceive sound, because sound was the attribute of akas'a, of which the auditory sense, the ear, was made up. The eye could send forth rays to receive the colour, etc., of things. Thus the cognitive senses can only manifest their specific objects by going over to them and thereby coming in contact with them. The cognitive senses (*vak, pani, pada, payu, and upastha*) recognized in Sa@mkhya as separate senses are not recognized here as such for the functions of these so-called senses are discharged by the general motor functions of the body.

Page 306

Perception is defined as that right knowledge generated by the contact of the senses with the object, devoid of doubt and error not associated with any other simultaneous sound cognition (such

[Footnote 1:

Samagribhedai phalabhedacca prama@nabheda@h
Anye eva hi samagriphale pratyak@sali@ngayo@h
Anye eva ca samagriphale s'abdopamanayo@h. Nyayamanjari, p. 33.]

334

as the name of the object as heard from a person uttering it, just at the time when the object is seen) or name association, and determinate [Footnote ref 1]. If when we see a cow, a man says here is a cow, the knowledge of the sound as associated with the percept cannot be counted as perception but as sound-knowledge (*s'abda-prama@na*). That right knowledge which is generated directly by the contact of the senses with the object is said to be the product of the perceptual process. Perception may be divided as indeterminate (*nirvikalpa*) and (*savikalpa*) determinate. Indeterminate perception is that in which the thing is taken at the very first moment of perception in which it appears without any association with name. Determinate perception takes place after the indeterminate stage is just passed; it reveals things as being endowed with all characteristics and qualities and names just as we find in all our concrete experience. Indeterminate perception reveals the things with their characteristics and universals, but at this stage there being no association of name it is more or less indistinct. When once the names are connected with the percept it forms the determinate perception of a thing called *savikalpa-pratyak@sa*. If at the time of having the perception of a thing of which the name is not known to me anybody utters its name then the hearing of that should be regarded as a separate auditory name perception. Only that product is said to constitute *nirvikalpa* perception which results from the perceiving process of the contact of the senses with the object. Of this *nirvikalpa* (indeterminate) perception it is held by the later *naiyayikas* that we are not conscious of it directly, but yet it has to be admitted as a necessary first stage without which the determinate consciousness could not arise. The indeterminate perception is regarded as the first stage in the process of perception. At the second stage it joins the other conditions of perception in producing the determinate perception. The contact of the sense with the object is regarded as being of six kinds: (1) contact with the *dravya* (thing) called *sa@myoga*, (2) contact with the *gu@nas* (qualities) through the thing (*sa@myukta-samavaya*) in which they inhere in *samavaya* (inseparable) relation, (3) contact with the *gu@nas* (such as colour etc.) in

the generic character as universals of those qualities, *e.g.* colourness (*rupatva*), which inhere in the *gu@nas* in the *samavaya* relation.

Page 307

[Footnote 1: Ganges'a, a later naiyayika of great reputation, describes perception as immediate awareness (*pratyak@sasya sak@satkaritvam lak@sa@nam*).]

335

This species of contact is called *sa@myukta-samaveta-samavaya*, for the eye is in contact with the thing, in the thing the colour is in *samavaya* relation, and in the specific colour there is the colour universal or the generic character of colour in *samavaya* relation. (4) There is another kind of contact called *samavaya* by which sounds are said to be perceived by the ear. The auditory sense is *akas'a* and the sound exists in *akas'a* in the *samavaya* relation, and thus the auditory sense can perceive sound in a peculiar kind of contact called *samaveta-samavaya*. (5) The generic character of sound as the universal of sound (*s'abdatva*) is perceived by the kind of contact known as *samaveta-samavaya*. (6) There is another kind of contact by which negation (*abhava*) is perceived, namely *sa@myukta vis'e@sa@na* (as qualifying contact). This is so called because the eye perceives only the empty space which is qualified by the absence of an object and through it the negation. Thus I see that there is no jug here on the ground. My eye in this case is in touch with the ground and the absence of the jug is only a kind of quality of the ground which is perceived along with the perception of the empty ground. It will thus be seen that Nyaya admits not only the substances and qualities but all kinds of relations as real and existing and as being directly apprehended by perception (so far as they are directly presented).

The most important thing about the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika theory of perception is this that the whole process beginning from the contact of the sense with the object to the distinct and clear perception of the thing, sometimes involving the appreciation of its usefulness or harmfulness, is regarded as the process of perception and its result perception. The self, the mind, the senses and the objects are the main factors by the particular kinds of contact between which perceptual knowledge is produced. All knowledge is indeed *arthaprakas'a*, revelation of objects, and it is called perception when the sense factors are the instruments of its production and the knowledge produced is of the objects with which the senses are in contact. The contact of the senses with the objects is not in any sense metaphorical but actual. Not only in the case of touch and taste are the senses in contact with the objects, but in the cases of sight, hearing and smell as well. The senses according to Nyaya-Vais'e@sika are material and we have seen that the system does not admit of any other kind of transcendental (*atindriya*) power (*s'akti*) than that of actual vibratory

336

Page 308

movement which is within the purview of sense-cognition [Footnote ref 1]. The production of knowledge is thus no transcendental occurrence, but is one which is similar to the effects produced by the conglomeration and movements of physical causes. When I perceive an orange, my visual or the tactual sense is in touch not only with its specific colour, or hardness, but also with the universals associated with them in a relation of inherence and also with the object itself of which the colour *etc.* are predicated. The result of this sense-contact at the first stage is called *alocanajnana* (sense-cognition) and as a result of that there is roused the memory of its previous taste and a sense of pleasurable character (*sukhasadhanatvasm@rti*) and as a result of that I perceive the orange before me to have a certain pleasure-giving character [Footnote ref 2]. It is urged that this appreciation of the orange as a pleasurable object should also be regarded as a direct result of perception through the action of the memory operating as a concomitant cause (*sahakari*). I perceive the orange with the eye and understand the pleasure it will give, by the mind, and thereupon understand by the mind that it is a pleasurable object. So though this perception results immediately by the operation of the mind, yet since it could only happen in association with sense-contact, it must be considered as a subsidiary effect of sense-contact and hence regarded as visual perception. Whatever may be the successive intermediary processes, if the knowledge is a result of sense-contact and if it appertains to the object with which the sense is in contact, we should regard it as a result of the perceptual process. Sense-contact with the object is thus the primary and indispensable condition of all perceptions and not only can the senses be in contact with the objects, their qualities, and the universals associated with them but also with negation. A perception is erroneous when it presents an object in a character which it does not possess (*atasmi@mstaditi*) and right knowledge (*prama*) is that which presents an object with a character which it really has

[Footnote 1:

*Na khalvatindriya s'aktirasmabhirupagamyate
yaya saha na karyasya sambandhajnanasambhava@h.*

Nyayamanjari_, p. 69.]

[Footnote 2:

*Sukhadi manasa buddhva kapitthadi ca cak@su@sa tasya karanata tatra
manasaivavagamyate... ..Sambandhagraha@nakale
yattatkapitthadivi@sayamak@sajam jnanam tadupadeyadijnanaphalamiti
bha@syak@rtas'cetasi sthitam sukhasadhanatvajnanamupadeyajnanam.*

Nyayamanjari_, pp. 69-70; see also pp. 66-71.]

337

Page 309

(*tadvati tatprakaranubhava*) [Footnote ref 1]. In all cases of perceptual illusion the sense is in real contact with the right object, but it is only on account of the presence of certain other conditions that it is associated with wrong characteristics or misapprehended as a different object. Thus when the sun's rays are perceived in a desert and misapprehended as a stream, at the first indeterminate stage the visual sense is in real contact with the rays and thus far there is no illusion so far as the contact with a real object is concerned, but at the second determinate stage it is owing to the similarity of certain of its characteristics with those of a stream that it is misapprehended as a stream [Footnote ref 2]. Jayanta observes that on account of the presence of the defect of the organs or the rousing of the memory of similar objects, the object with which the sense is in contact hides its own characteristics and appears with the characteristics of other objects and this is what is meant by illusion [Footnote ref 3]. In the case of mental delusions however there is no sense-contact with any object and the rousing of irrelevant memories is sufficient to produce illusory notions [Footnote ref 4]. This doctrine of illusion is known as *viparitakhyati* or *anyathakhyati*. What existed in the mind appeared as the object before us (*h@rdaye parisphurato'rthasya bahiravabhasanam*) [Footnote ref 5]. Later Vais'e@sika as interpreted by Pras'astapada and S'ridhara is in full agreement with Nyaya in this doctrine of illusion (*bhrama* or as Vais'e@sika calls it *viparyaya*) that the object of illusion is always the right thing with which the sense is in contact and that the illusion consists in the imposition of wrong characteristics [Footnote ref 6].

I have pointed out above that Nyaya divided perception into two classes as *nirvikalpa* (indeterminate) and *savikalpa* (determinate) according as it is an earlier or a later stage. Vacaspati says, that at the first stage perception reveals an object as a particular; the perception of an orange at this *avikalpika* or *nirvikalpika* stage gives us indeed all its colour, form, and also the universal of orangeness associated with it, but it does not reveal

[Footnote 1: See Udyotakara's *Nyayavarttika*, p. 37, and Ga@nges'a's *Tattvacintama@ni*, p. 401, *Bibliotheca Indica*.]

[Footnote 2: "*Indriye@nalocya maricin uccavacamuccalato nirvikalpena g@rhitva pas'cattatropaghatado@sat viparyyeti, savikalpako'sya pratyayo bhranto jayate tasmadvijnanasya uvabhicaro narthasya*, Vacaspati's *Tatparyatika*," p. 87.]

[Footnote 3: *Nyayamanjari*, p. 88.]

[Footnote 4: *Ibid.* pp. 89 and 184.]

[Footnote 5: *Ibid.* p. 184.]

[Footnote 6: *Nyayakandali*, pp. 177-181, “*S’uktisa@myuktenendriye@na
do@sasahakarina rajatasa@mskarasacivena sad@rs’yamanurundhata
s’uktikavi@sayo rajatadhyavasaya@h k@rta@h.*”]

Page 310

338

it in a subject-predicate relation as when I say “this is an orange.” The avikalpika stage thus reveals the universal associated with the particular, but as there is no association of name at this stage, the universal and the particular are taken in one sweep and not as terms of relation as subject and predicate or substance and attribute (*jatyadisvarupavagahi na tu jatyadina@m mitho vis’e@sa@navis’e@syabhavavagahiti yavat*) [Footnote ref 1]. He thinks that such a stage, when the object is only seen but not associated with name or a subject-predicate relation, can be distinguished in perception not only in the case of infants or dumb persons that do not know the names of things, but also in the case of all ordinary persons, for the association of the names and relations could be distinguished as occurring at a succeeding stage [Footnote ref 2]. S’ridhara, in explaining the Vais’e@sika view, seems to be largely in agreement with the above view of Vacaspati. Thus S’ridhara says that in the nirvikalpa stage not only the universals were perceived but the differences as well. But as at this stage there is no memory of other things, there is no manifest differentiation and unification such as can only result by comparison. But the differences and the universals as they are in the thing are perceived, only they are not consciously ordered as “different from this” or “similar to this,” which can only take place at the savikalpa stage [Footnote ref 3]. Vacaspati did not bring in the question of comparison with others, but had only spoken of the determinate notion of the thing in definite subject-predicate relation in association with names. The later Nyaya writers however, following Ga@nges’a, hold an altogether different opinion on the subject. With them nirvikalpa knowledge means the knowledge of mere predication without any association with the subject or the thing to which the predicate refers. But such a knowledge is never testified by experience. The nirvikalpa stage is thus a logical stage in the development of perceptual cognition and not a psychological stage. They would

[Footnote 1: *Tatparya@tika*, p. 81, also *ibid.* p. 91, “*prathamamalocito’rtha@h samanyavis’e@savan.*”]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p.84, “*tasmdvvyutpannasyapi namadheyasmara@naya purvame@sitavyo vinaiva namadheyamarthapratyaya@h.*”]

[Footnote 3: *Nyayakandali*, p. 189 ff., “*ata@h savikalpakamicchata nirvikalpakamapye@sitavyam, tacca na samanyamatram g@rh@nati bhedasyapi pratibhasanat napi svalak@sa@namatram samanyakarasyapi sa@mvedanat vyaktyantaradars’ane pratisandhanacca, kintu samanya@m vis’e@sancobhayamapi g@rh@nati yadi paramida@m samanyamayam vis’e@sa@h ityeva@m vivicya na*”]

*pratyeti vastvantaranusandhanavirahat, pi@ndantaranuv@rttigraha@naddhi
samanya@m vivicyate, vyav@rttigraha@nadvis'e@soyamiti viveka@h."]*

Page 311

339

not like to dispense with it for they think that it is impossible to have the knowledge of a thing as qualified by a predicate or a quality, without previously knowing the quality or the predicate (*vis'i@s@tavais'i@styajnanam prati hi vis'e@sa@natavacchedakaprakara@m jnana@m kara@na@m*) [Footnote ref 1]. So, before any determinate knowledge such as "I see a cow," "this is a cow" or "a cow" can arise it must be preceded by an indeterminate stage presenting only the indeterminate, unrelated, predicative quality as *nirvikalpa*, unconnected with universality or any other relations (*jatyadiyojanarahita@m vais'i@s@tyanavagahi ni@sprakarakam nirvikalpaka@m*) [Footnote ref 2]. But this stage is never psychologically experienced (*atindriya*) and it is only a logical necessity arising out of their synthetic conception of a proposition as being the relationing of a predicate with a subject. Thus Vis'vanatha says in his *Siddhantamuktavali*, "the cognition which does not involve relationing cannot be perceptual for the perception is of the form 'I know the jug'; here the knowledge is related to the self, the knower, the jug again is related to knowledge and the definite content of jugness is related to the jug. It is this content which forms the predicative quality (*vis'e@sa@natavacchedaka*) of the predicate 'jug' which is related to knowledge. We cannot therefore have the knowledge of the jug without having the knowledge of the predicative quality, the content [Footnote ref 3]." But in order that the knowledge of the jug could be rendered possible, there must be a stage at which the universal or the pure predication should be known and this is the *nirvikalpa* stage, the admission of which though not testified by experience is after all logically indispensably necessary. In the proposition "It is a cow," the cow is an universal, and this must be intuited directly before it could be related to the particular with which it is associated.

But both the old and the new schools of Nyaya and Vais'e@sika admitted the validity of the *savikalpa* perception which the Buddhists denied. Things are not of the nature of momentary particulars, but they are endowed with class-characters or universals and thus our knowledge of universals as revealed by the perception of objects is not erroneous and is directly produced by objects. The Buddhists hold that the error of *savikalpa* perception consists in the attribution of *jati* (universal), *gu@na* (quality),

[Footnote 1: *Tattvacintama@ni* p. 812.]

[Footnote 2: *Ibid.* p. 809.]

[Footnote 3: *Siddhantamuktavali* on *Bha@sapariccheda karika*, 58.]

Page 312

kriya (action), nama (name), and dravya (substance) to things [Footnote ref 1]. The universal and that of which the universal is predicated are not different but are the same identical entity. Thus the predication of an universal in the savikalpa perception involves the false creation of a difference where there was none. So also the quality is not different from the substance and to speak of a thing as qualified is thus an error similar to the former. The same remark applies to action, for motion is not something different from that which moves. But name is completely different from the thing and yet the name and the thing are identified, and again the percept “man with a stick” is regarded as if it was a single thing or substance, though “man” and “stick” are altogether different and there is no unity between them. Now as regards the first three objections it is a question of the difference of the Nyaya ontological position with that of the Buddhists, for we know that Nyaya and Vais'e@sika believe jati, gu@na and kriya to be different from substance and therefore the predicating of them of substance as different categories related to it at the determinate stage of perception cannot be regarded as erroneous. As to the fourth objection Vacaspati replies that the memory of the name of the thing roused by its sight cannot make the perception erroneous. The fact that memory operates cannot in any way vitiate perception. The fact that name is not associated until the second stage through the joint action of memory is easily explained, for the operation of memory was necessary in order to bring about the association. But so long as it is borne in mind that the name is not identical with the thing but is only associated with it as being the same as was previously acquired, there cannot be any objection to the association of the name. But the Buddhists further object that there is no reason why one should identify a thing seen at the present moment as being that which was seen before, for this identity is never the object of visual perception. To this Vacaspati says that through the help of memory or past impressions (*sa@mskara*) this can be considered as being directly the object of perception, for whatever may be the concomitant causes when the main cause of sense-contact is

[Footnote 1: *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 93-100, “*Panca caite kalpana bhavanti jaticakalpana, gu@nakalpana, kriyakalpana, namakalpana dravyakalpana ceti, tas'ca kvacidabhede'pi bhedakalpanat kvacicca bhede'pyabhedakalpanat kalpana ucyante.*” See Dharmakirti's theory of Perception, pp. 151-4. See also pp. 409-410 of this book.]

Page 313

present, this perception of identity should be regarded as an effect of it. But the Buddhists still emphasize the point that an object of past experience refers to a past time and place and is not experienced now and cannot therefore be identified with an object which is experienced at the present moment. It has to be admitted that Vacaspati's answer is not very satisfactory for it leads ultimately to the testimony of direct perception which was challenged by the Buddhists [Footnote ref 1]. It is easy to see that early Nyaya-Vais'e@sika could not dismiss the savikalpa perception as invalid for it was the same as the nirvikalpa and differed from it only in this, that a name was associated with the thing of perception at this stage. As it admits a gradual development of perception as the progressive effects of causal operations continued through the contacts of the mind with the self and the object under the influence of various intellectual (e.g. memory) and physical (e.g. light rays) concomitant causes, it does not, like Vedanta, require that right perception should only give knowledge which was not previously acquired. The variation as well as production of knowledge in the soul depends upon the variety of causal collocations.

Mind according to Nyaya is regarded as a separate sense and can come in contact with pleasure, pain, desire, antipathy and will. The later Nyaya writers speak of three other kinds of contact of a transcendental nature called *samanyalak@sa@na*, *jnanalak@sa@na* and *yogaja* (miraculous). The contact *samanyalak@sa@na* is that by virtue of which by coming in contact with a particular we are transcendently (*alaukika*) in contact with all the particulars (in a general way) of which the corresponding universal may be predicated. Thus when I see smoke and through it my sense is in contact with the universal associated with smoke my visual sense is in transcendental contact with all smoke in general. *Jnanalak@sa@na* contact is that by virtue of which we can associate the perceptions of other senses when perceiving by any one sense. Thus when we are looking at a piece of sandal wood our visual sense is in touch with its colour only, but still we perceive it to be fragrant without any direct contact of the object with the organ of smell. The sort of transcendental contact (*alaukika sannikar@sa*) by virtue of which this is rendered

[Footnote 1: *Tatparya@tika*, pp. 88-95.]

possible is called *jnanalak@sa@na*. But the knowledge acquired by these two contacts is not counted as perception [Footnote ref 1].

Page 314

Pleasures and pains (*sukha* and *du@hkha*) are held by Nyaya to be different from knowledge (*jnana*). For knowledge interprets, conceives or illumines things, but *sukha etc.* are never found to appear as behaving in that character. On the other hand we feel that we grasp them after having some knowledge. They cannot be self-revealing, for even knowledge is not so; if it were so, then that experience which generates *sukha* in one should have generated the same kind of feeling in others, or in other words it should have manifested its nature as *sukha* to all; and this does not happen, for the same thing which generates *sukha* in one might not do so in others. Moreover even admitting for argument's sake that it is knowledge itself that appears as pleasure and pain, it is evident that there must be some differences between the pleasurable and painful experiences that make them so different, and this difference is due to the fact that knowledge in one case was associated with *sukha* and in another case with *du@hkha*. This shows that *sukha* and *du@hkha* are not themselves knowledge. Such is the course of things that *sukha* and *du@hkha* are generated by the collocation of certain conditions, and are manifested through or in association with other objects either in direct perception or in memory. They are thus the qualities which are generated in the self as a result of causal operation. It should however be remembered that merit and demerit act as concomitant causes in their production.

The yogins are believed to have the *pratyak@sa* of the most distant things beyond our senses; they can acquire this power by gradually increasing their powers of concentration and perceive the subtlest and most distant objects directly by their mind. Even we ourselves may at some time have the notions of future events which come to be true, e.g. sometimes I may have the intuition that "To-morrow my brother will come,"

[Footnote 1: *Siddhantamuktavali* on *Karika* 63 and 64. We must remember that Ga@nges'a discarded the definition of perception as given in the *Nyaya sutra* which we have discussed above, and held that perception should be defined as that cognition which has the special class-character of direct apprehension. He thinks that the old definition of perception as the cognition generated by sense-contact involves a vicious circle (*Tattvacintama@ni*, pp. 538-546). Sense-contact is still regarded by him as the cause of perception, but it should not be included in the definition. He agrees to the six kinds of contact described first by Udyotakara as mentioned above.]

Page 315

and this may happen to be true. This is called *pratibhanajnana*, which is also to be regarded as a *pratyak@sa* directly by the mind. This is of course different from the other form of perception called *manasa-pratyak@sa*, by which memories of past perceptions by other senses are associated with a percept visualized at the present moment; thus we see a rose and perceive that it is fragrant; the fragrance is not perceived by the eye, but the *manas* perceives it directly and associates the visual percept with it. According to Vedanta this acquired perception is only a case of inference. The *pratibha-pratyak@sa* however is that which is with reference to the happening of a future event. When a cognition is produced, it is produced only as an objective cognition, *e.g.* This is a pot, but after this it is again related to the self by the mind as “I know this pot.” This is effected by the mind again coming in contact for re-perception of the cognition which had already been generated in the soul. This second re-perception is called *anuvyavasaya*, and all practical work can proceed as a result of this *anuvyavasaya* [Footnote ref. I].

Inference.

Inference (*anumana*) is the second means of proof (*prama@na*) and the most valuable contribution that Nyaya has made has been on this subject. It consists in making an assertion about a thing on the strength of the mark or *linga* which is associated with it, as when finding smoke rising from a hill we remember that since smoke cannot be without fire, there must also be fire in yonder hill. In an example like this smoke is technically called *linga*, or *hetu*. That about which the assertion has been made (the hill in this example) is called *pak@sa*, and the term “fire” is called *sadhya*. To make a correct inference it is necessary that the *hetu* or *linga* must be present in the *pak@sa*,

[Footnote 1: This later Nyaya doctrine that the cognition of self in association with cognition is produced at a later moment must be contrasted with the *triputipratyak@sa* doctrine of Prabhakara, which holds that the object, knower and knowledge are all given simultaneously in knowledge. Vyavasaya (determinate cognition), according to Ga@nges'a, gives us only the cognition of the object, but the cognition that I am aware of this object or cognition is a different functioning succeeding the former one and is called *anu* (after) *vyavasaya* (cognition), “*idamaha@m janamiti vyavasaye na bhasate taddhakendriyasannikar@sabhavat kintvida@mvi@sayakajnanatvavis'i@s@tasya jnanasya vais'i@styamatmani bhasate; na ca svaprakas'e vyavasaya tad@rs'a@m svasya vais'i@s@tya@m bhasitumarhati, purva@m vis'e@sa@nasya tasyajnanat, tasmadidamaha@m janamiti na vyavasaya@h kintu anuvyavasayah.*” Tattvacintama@ni_, p. 795.]

Page 316

and in all other known objects similar to the pak@sa in having the sadhya in it (sapak@sa-satta), i.e., which are known to possess the sadhya (possessing fire in the present example). The linga must not be present in any such object as does not possess the sadhya (vipak@sa-vyav@rtti absent from vipak@sa or that which does not possess the sadhya). The inferred assertion should not be such that it is invalidated by direct perception {pratyak@sa} or the testimony of the s'astra (abadhita-vi@sayatva). The linga should not be such that by it an inference in the opposite way could also be possible (asat-pratipak@sa). The violation of any one of these conditions would spoil the certitude of the hetu as determining the inference, and thus would only make the hetu fallacious, or what is technically called hetvabhasa or seeming hetu by which no correct inference could be made. Thus the inference that sound is eternal because it is visible is fallacious, for visibility is a quality which sound (here the pak@sa) does not possess [Footnote ref 1]. This hetvabhasa is technically called *asiddha-hetu*. Again, hetvabhasa of the second type, technically called *viruddha-hetu*, may be exemplified in the case that sound is eternal, since it is created; the hetu "being created" is present in the opposite of sadhya {vipak@sa}, namely non-eternality, for we know that non-eternality is a quality which belongs to all created things. A fallacy of the third type, technically called *anaikantika-hetu*, is found in the case that sound is eternal, since it is an object of knowledge. Now "being an object of knowledge" (*prameyatva*) is here the hetu, but it is present in things eternal (i.e. things possessing sadhya), as well as in things that are not eternal (i.e. which do not possess the sadhya), and therefore the concomitance of the hetu with the sadhya is not absolute (*anaikantika*). A fallacy of the fourth type, technically called *kalatyayapadi@s@ta*, may be found in the example—fire is not hot, since it is created like a jug, etc. Here pratyak@sa shows that fire is hot, and hence the hetu is fallacious. The fifth fallacy, called *prakara@nasama*, is to be found in cases where opposite hetus are available at the same time for opposite conclusions, e.g. sound like a jug is non-eternal,

[Footnote 1: It should be borne in mind that Nyaya did not believe in the doctrine of the eternality of sound, which the Mima@msa did. Eternality of sound meant with Mima@msa the theory that sounds existed as eternal indestructible entities, and they were only manifested in our ears under certain conditions, e.g. the stroke of a drum or a particular kind of movement of the vocal muscles.]

since no eternal qualities are found in it, and sound like akas'a is eternal, since no non-eternal qualities are found in it.

Page 317

The Buddhists held in answer to the objections raised against inference by the Carvakas, that inferential arguments are valid, because they are arguments on the principle of the uniformity of nature in two relations, viz. *tadatmya* (essential identity) and *tadutpatti* (succession in a relation of cause and effect). *Tadatmya* is a relation of genus and species and not of causation; thus we know that all pines are trees, and infer that this is a tree since it is a pine; tree and pine are related to each other as genus and species, and the co-inherence of the generic qualities of a tree with the specific characters of a pine tree may be viewed as a relation of essential identity (*tadatmya*). The relation of *tadutpatti* is that of uniformity of succession of cause and effect, e.g. of smoke to fire.

Nyaya holds that inference is made because of the invariable association (*niyama*) of the *li@nga* or *hetu* (the concomitance of which with the *sadhya* has been safeguarded by the five conditions noted above) with the *sadhya*, and not because of such specific relations as *tadatmya* or *tadutpatti*. If it is held that the inference that it is a tree because it is a pine is due to the essential identity of tree and pine, then the opposite argument that it is a pine because it is a tree ought to be valid as well; for if it were a case of identity it ought to be the same both ways. If in answer to this it is said that the characteristics of a pine are associated with those of a tree and not those of a tree with those of a pine, then certainly the argument is not due to essential identity, but to the invariable association of the *li@nga* (mark) with the *li@ngin* (the possessor of *li@nga*), otherwise called *niyama*. The argument from *tadutpatti* (association as cause and effect) is also really due to invariable association, for it explains the case of the inference of the type of cause and effect as well as of other types of inference, where the association as cause and effect is not available (e.g. from sunset the rise of stars is inferred). Thus it is that the invariable concomitance of the *li@nga* with the *li@ngin*, as safeguarded by the conditions noted above, is what leads us to make a valid inference [Footnote ref 1].

We perceived in many cases that a *li@nga* (e.g. smoke) was associated with a *li@ngin* (fire), and had thence formed the notion

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari* on anumana.]

that wherever there was smoke there was fire. Now when we perceived that there was smoke in yonder hill, we remembered the concomitance (*vyapti*) of smoke and fire which we had observed before, and then since there was smoke in the hill, which was

known to us to be inseparably connected with fire, we concluded that there was fire in the hill. The discovery of the li@nga (smoke) in the hill as

Page 318

associated with the memory of its concomitance with fire (*t@rtiya-li@nga-paramars'a*) is thus the cause (*anumitikara@na_* or *anumana*) of the inference (*anumiti*). The concomitance of smoke with fire is technically called *vyapti*. When this refers to the concomitance of cases containing smoke with those having fire, it is called *bahirvyapti*; and when it refers to the conviction of the concomitance of smoke with fire, without any relation to the circumstances under which the concomitance was observed, it is called *antarvyapti*. The Buddhists since they did not admit the notions of generality, etc. preferred *antarvyapti* view of concomitance to *bahirvyapti* as a means of inference [Footnote ref 1].

Now the question arises that since the validity of an inference will depend mainly on the validity of the concomitance of sign (*hetu*) with the signate (*sadhya*), how are we to assure ourselves in each case that the process of ascertaining the concomitance (*vyaptigraha*) had been correct, and the observation of concomitance had been valid. The Mima@msa school held, as we shall see in the next chapter, that if we had no knowledge of any such case in which there was smoke but no fire, and if in all the cases I knew I had perceived that wherever there was smoke there was fire, I could enunciate the concomitance of smoke with fire. But Nyaya holds that it is not enough that in all cases where there is smoke there should be fire, but it is necessary that in all those cases where there is no fire there should not be any smoke, *i.e.* not only every case of the existence of smoke should be a case of the existence of fire, but every case of absence of fire should be a case of absence of smoke. The former is technically called *anvayavyapti* and the latter *vyatirekavyapti*. But even this is not enough. Thus there may have been an ass sitting, in a hundred cases where I had seen smoke, and there might have been a hundred cases where there was neither ass nor smoke, but it cannot be asserted from it that there is any relation of concomitance,

[Footnote 1: See *Antarvyaptisamarthana*, by Ratnakaras'anti in the *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*, *Bibliotheca Indica*, 1910.]

347

or of cause and effect between the ass and the smoke. It may be that one might never have observed smoke without an antecedent ass, or an ass without the smoke following it, but even that is not enough. If it were such that we had so experienced in a very large number of cases that the introduction of the ass produced the smoke, and that even when all the antecedents remained the same, the disappearance of the ass was

immediately followed by the disappearance of smoke (*yasmin sati bhavanam yato vina na bhavanam iti bhuyodars'ana@m*, *Nyayamanjari*, p. 122), then only could we say that there was any relation

Page 319

of concomitance (*vyapti*) between the ass and the smoke [Footnote ref 1]. But of course it might be that what we concluded to be the *hetu* by the above observations of *anvaya-vyatireka* might not be a real *hetu*, and there might be some other condition (*upadhi*) associated with the *hetu* which was the real *hetu*. Thus we know that fire in green wood (*ardrendhana*) produced smoke, but one might doubt that it was not the fire in the green wood that produced smoke, but there was some hidden demon who did it. But there would be no end of such doubts, and if we indulged in them, all our work endeavour and practical activities would have to be dispensed with (*vyaghata*). Thus such doubts as lead us to the suspension of all work should not disturb or unsettle the notion of *vyapti* or concomitance at which we had arrived by careful observation and consideration [Footnote ref 2]. The Buddhists and the *naiyayikas* generally agreed as to the method of forming the notion of concomitance or *vyapti* (*vyaptigraha*), but the former tried to assert that the validity of such a concomitance always depended on a relation of cause and effect or of identity of essence, whereas *Nyaya* held that neither the relations of cause and effect, nor that of essential identity of genus and species, exhausted the field of inference, and there was quite a number of other types of inference which could not be brought under either of them (e.g. the rise of the moon and the tide of the ocean). A natural fixed order that certain things happening other things would happen could certainly exist, even without the supposition of an identity of essence.

But sometimes it happens that different kinds of causes often have the same kind of effect, and in such cases it is difficult to

[Footnote 1: See *Tatparya@tika* on *anumana* and *vyaptigraha*.]

[Footnote 2: *Tatparya@tika* on *vyaptigraha*, and *Tattvacintama@ni* of Ga@nges'a on *vyaptigraha*.]

348

infer the particular cause from the effect. *Nyaya* holds however that though different causes are often found to produce the same effect, yet there must be some difference between one effect and another. If each effect is taken by itself with its other attendant circumstances and peculiarities, it will be found that it may then be possible to distinguish it from similar other effects. Thus a flood in the street may be due either to a heavy downpour of rain immediately before, or to the rise in the water of the river close by, but if observed carefully the flooding of the street due to rain will be found to have

such special traits that it could be distinguished from a similar flooding due to the rise of water in the river. Thus from the flooding of the street of a special type, as demonstrated by its other attendant circumstances, the special manner in which the water flows by small

Page 320

rivulets or in sheets, will enable us to infer that the flood was due to rains and not to the rise of water in the river. Thus we see that Nyaya relied on empirical induction based on uniform and uninterrupted agreement in nature, whereas the Buddhists assumed a *priori* principles of causality or identity of essence. It may not be out of place here to mention that in later Nyaya works great emphasis is laid on the necessity of getting ourselves assured that there was no such *upadhi* (condition) associated with the *hetu* on account of which the concomitance happened, but that the *hetu* was unconditionally associated with the *sadhya* in a relation of inseparable concomitance. Thus all fire does not produce smoke; fire must be associated with green wood in order to produce smoke. Green wood is thus the necessary condition (*upadhi*) without which, no smoke could be produced. It is on account of this condition that fire is associated with smoke; and so we cannot say that there is smoke because there is fire. But in the concomitance of smoke with fire there is no condition, and so in every case of smoke there is fire. In order to be assured of the validity of *vyapti*, it is necessary that we must be assured that there should be nothing associated with the *hetu* which conditioned the concomitance, and this must be settled by wide experience (*bhuyodars'ana*).

Pras'astapada in defining inference as the "knowledge of that (e.g. fire) associated with the reason (e.g. smoke) by the sight of the reason" described a valid reason (*li@nga*) as that which is connected with the object of inference (*anumeya*) and which exists wherever the object of inference exists and is absent in all cases

349

where it does not exist. This is indeed the same as the Nyaya qualifications of *pak@sasattva*, *sapak@sasattva* and *vipak@sasattva* of a valid reason (*hetu*). Pras'astapada further quotes a verse to say that this is the same as what Kas'yapa (believed to be the family name of Ka@nada) said. Ka@nada says that we can infer a cause from the effect, the effect from the cause, or we can infer one thing by another when they are mutually connected, or in opposition or in a relation of inherence (IX. ii. 1 and III. i. 9). We can infer by a reason because it is duly associated (*prasiddhipurvakatva*) with the object of inference. What this association was according to Ka@nada can also be understood for he tells us (III. i. 15) that where there is no proper association, the reason (*hetu*) is either non-existent in the object to be inferred or it has no concomitance with it (*aprasiddha*) or it has a doubtful existence (*sandigdha*). Thus if I say this ass is a horse because it has horns it is fallacious, for neither the horse nor the ass has horns. Again if I say it is a cow because it has horns, it is fallacious, for there is no concomitance between horns and a cow, and though a cow may have a horn, all that have horns are not cows. The

Page 321

first fallacy is a combination of pak@sasattva and sapak@sasattva, for not only the present pak@sa (the ass) had no horns, but no horses had any horns, and the second is a case of vipak@sasattva, for those which are not cows (e.g. buffaloes) have also horns. Thus, it seems that when Pras'astapada says that he is giving us the view of Ka@nada he is faithful to it. Pras'astapada says that wherever there is smoke there is fire, if there is no fire there is no smoke. When one knows this concomitance and unerringly perceives the smoke, he remembers the concomitance and feels certain that there is fire. But with regard to Ka@nada's enumeration of types of inference such as "a cause is inferred from its effect, or an effect from the cause," etc., Pras'astapada holds that these are not the only types of inference, but are only some examples for showing the general nature of inference. Inference merely shows a connection such that from this that can be inferred. He then divides inference into two classes, d@r@s@ta (from the experienced characteristics of one member of a class to another member of the same class), and samanyato d@r@s@ta. D@r@s@ta (perceived resemblance) is that where the previously known case and the inferred case is exactly of the same class. Thus as an example of it we can point out that by perceiving that only a cow has a hanging mass of flesh on its neck (*sasna*), I can whenever I see the same hanging

350

mass of flesh at the neck of an animal infer that it is a cow. But when on the strength of a common quality the inference is extended to a different class of objects, it is called samanyato d@r@s@ta. Thus on perceiving that the work of the peasants is rewarded with a good harvest I may infer that the work of the priests, namely the performance of sacrifices, will also be rewarded with the objects for which they are performed (i.e. the attainment of heaven). When the conclusion, to which one has arrived (*svanis'citartha*) is expressed in five premisses for convincing others who are either in doubt, or in error or are simply ignorant, then the inference is called parathanumana. We know that the distinction of svarthanumana (inference for oneself) and parathanumana (inference for others) was made by the Jains and Buddhists. Pras'astapada does not make a sharp distinction of two classes of inference, but he seems to mean that what one infers, it can be conveyed to others by means of five premisses in which case it is called parathanumana. But this need not be considered as an entirely new innovation of Pras'astapada, for in IX. 2, Ka@nada himself definitely alludes to this distinction (*asyeda@m karyyakara@nasambandhas'cavayavadbhavati*). The five premisses which are called in Nyaya *pratijna*, *hetu d@r@s@tanta*, *upanaya*, and *nigamana* are called in Vais'e@sika *pratijna*, *apades'a*, *nidars'ana*, *anusandhana*, and *pratyamnaya*. Ka@nada however does not mention the name of any of

Page 322

these premisses excepting the second “apades’a.” Pratijna is of course the same as we have in Nyaya, and the term nidars’ana is very similar to Nyaya d@r@s@tanta, but the last two are entirely different. Nidars’ana may be of two kinds, (1) agreement in presence (e.g. that which has motion is a substance as is seen in the case of an arrow), (2) agreement in absence (e.g. what is not a substance has no motion as is seen in the case of the universal being [Footnote ref 1]). He also points out cases of the fallacy of the example

{Footnote 1: Dr Vidyabhu@sa@na says that “An example before the time of Dignaga served as a mere familiar case which was cited to help the understanding of the listener, e.g. The hill is fiery; because it has smoke; like a kitchen (example). Asa@nga made the example more serviceable to reasoning, but Dignaga converted it into a universal proposition, that is a proposition expressive of the universal or inseparable connection between the middle term and the major term, e.g. The hill is fiery; because it has smoke; all that has smoke is fiery as a kitchen” (*Indian Logic*, pp. 95, 96). It is of course true that Vatsyayana had an imperfect example as “like a kitchen” (*s’abda@h utpatvidharmakatvadanuya@h sthalyadivat*, l.i. 36), but Pras’astapada has it in the proper form. Whether Pras’astapada borrowed it from Dig@nnaga or Dig@nnaga from Pras’astapada cannot be easily settled.]

351

(*nidars’anabhasa*). Pras’astapada’s contribution thus seems to consist of the enumeration of the five premisses and the fallacy of the nidars’ana, but the names of the last two premisses are so different from what are current in other systems that it is reasonable to suppose that he collected them from some other traditional Vais’e@sika work which is now lost to us. It however definitely indicates that the study of the problem of inference was being pursued in Vais’e@sika circles independently of Nyaya. There is no reason however to suppose that Pras’astapada borrowed anything from Di@nnaga as Professor Stcherbatsky or Keith supposes, for, as I have shown above, most of Pras’astapada’s apparent innovations are all definitely alluded to by Ka@nada himself, and Professor Keith has not discussed this alternative. On the question of the fallacies of nidars’ana, unless it is definitely proved that Di@nnaga preceded Pras’astapada, there is no reason whatever to suppose that the latter borrowed it from the former [Footnote ref 1].

The nature and ascertainment of concomitance is the most important part of inference. Vatsyayana says that an inference can be made by the sight of the li@nga (reason or middle) through the memory of the connection between the middle and the major

previously perceived. Udyotakara raises the question whether it is the present perception of the middle or the memory of the connection of the middle with the major

Page 323

that should be regarded as leading to inference. His answer is that both these lead to inference, but that which immediately leads to inference is *li@ngaparamars'a*, i.e. the present perception of the middle in the minor associated with the memory of its connection with the major, for inference does not immediately follow the memory of the connection, but the present perception of the middle associated with the memory of the connection (*sm@rtyanug@rhito li@ngaparamars'o*). But he is silent with regard to the nature of concomitance. Udyotakara's criticisms of *Di@nnaga* as shown by Vacaspati have no reference to this point. The doctrine of *tadatmya* and *tadutpatti* was therefore in all probability a new contribution to Buddhist logic by Dharmakirti. Dharmakirti's contention was that the root principle of the connection between the middle and the major was that the former was either identical in essence with the latter or its effect and that unless this was grasped a mere collection of positive or negative instances will not give us

[Footnote 1: Pras'astapada's *bha@sya* with *Nyayakandali*, pp. 200-255.]

352

the desired connection [Footnote ref 1]. Vacaspati in his refutation of this view says that the cause-effect relation cannot be determined as a separate relation. If causality means invariable immediate antecedence such that there being fire there is smoke and there being no fire there is no smoke, then it cannot be ascertained with perfect satisfaction, for there is no proof that in each case the smoke was caused by fire and not by an invisible demon. Unless it can be ascertained that there was no invisible element associated, it cannot be said that the smoke was immediately preceded by fire and fire alone. Again accepting for the sake of argument that causality can be determined, then also cause is known to precede the effect and therefore the perception of smoke can only lead us to infer the presence of fire at a preceding time and not contemporaneously with it. Moreover there are many cases where inference is possible, but there is no relation of cause and effect or of identity of essence (e.g. the sunrise of this morning by the sunrise of yesterday morning). In the case of identity of essence (*tadatmya* as in the case of the pine and the tree) also there cannot be any inference, for one thing has to be inferred by another, but if they are identical there cannot be any inference. The nature of concomitance therefore cannot be described in either of these ways. Some things (e.g. smoke) are naturally connected with some other things (e.g. fire) and when such is the case, though we may not know any further about the nature of this connection, we may infer the latter from the former and not vice versa, for fire is connected with smoke only under certain conditions (e.g. green wood). It may be

Page 324

argued that there may always be certain unknown conditions which may vitiate the validity of inference. To this Vacaspati's answer is that if even after observing a large number of cases and careful search such conditions (*upadhi*) cannot be discovered, we have to take it for granted that they do not exist and that there is a natural connection between the middle and the major. The later Buddhists introduced the method of *Pancakara@ni* in order to determine effectively the causal relation. These five conditions determining the causal relation are (1) neither the cause nor the effect is perceived, (2) the cause is perceived, (3) in immediate succession the effect is perceived, (4) the cause disappears, (5) in

[Footnote 1: *Karyyakara@nubhavadva svabhavadva niyamakat avinabhavaniamo' dars'ananna na dars'anat. Tatparya@tika*, p. 105.]

353

immediate succession the effect disappears. But this method cannot guarantee the infallibility of the determination of cause and effect relation; and if by the assumption of a cause-effect relation no higher degree of certainty is available, it is better to accept a natural relation without limiting it to a cause-effect relation [Footnote ref 1].

In early Nyaya books three kinds of inference are described, namely *purvavat*, *s'e@savat*, and *samanyato-d@r@s@ta*. *Purvavat* is the inference of effects from causes, e.g. that of impending rain from heavy dark clouds; *s'e@savat* is the inference of causes from effects, e.g. that of rain from the rise of water in the river; *samanyato-d@r@s@ta* refers to the inference in all cases other than those of cause and effect, e.g. the inference of the sour taste of the tamarind from its form and colour. *Nyayamanjari* mentions another form of *anumana*, namely *paris'e@samana* (*reductio ad absurdum*), which consists in asserting anything (e.g. consciousness) of any other thing (e.g. *atman*), because it was already definitely found out that consciousness was not produced in any other part of man. Since consciousness could not belong to anything else, it must belong to soul of necessity. In spite of these variant forms they are all however of one kind, namely that of the inference of the probandum (*sadhya*) by virtue of the unconditional and invariable concomitance of the *hetu*, called the *vyapti-niyama*. In the new school of Nyaya (*Navya-Nyaya*) a formal distinction of three kinds of inference occupies an important place, namely *anvayavyatireki*, *kevalanvayi*, and *kevalavyatireki*. *Anvayavyatireki* is that inference where the *vyapti* has been observed by a combination of a large number of instances of agreement in presence and agreement in absence, as in the case of the concomitance of smoke and fire (wherever

there is smoke there is fire (*anvaya*), and where there is no fire, there is no smoke (*vyatireka*)).

Page 325

An inference could be for one's own self (*svarthanumana*) or for the sake of convincing others (*pararthanumana*). In the latter case, when it was necessary that an inference should be put explicitly in an unambiguous manner, live propositions (*avayavas*) were regarded as necessary, namely *pratijna* (e.g. the hill is fiery), *hetu* (since it has smoke), *udaharana* (where there is smoke there is fire, as in the kitchen), *upanaya* (this hill has smoke), *nigamana* (therefore it has got

[Footnote 1: Vatsyayana's *bhasya*, Udyotakara's *Varttika* and *Tatparyya*, l.i. 5.]

354

fire). *Kevalanvayi* is that type of inference, the *vyapti* of which could not be based on any negative instance, as in the case "this object has a name, since it is an object of knowledge (*ida'm, vacyam prameyatvat*).” Now no such case is known which is not an object of knowledge; we cannot therefore know of any case where there was no object of knowledge (*prameyatva*) and no name (*vacyatva*); the *vyapti* here has therefore to be based necessarily on cases of agreement—wherever there is *prameyatva* or an object of knowledge, there is *vacyatva* or name. The third form of *kevalavyatireki* is that where positive instances in agreement cannot be found, such as in the case of the inference that earth differs from other elements in possessing the specific quality of smell, since all that does not differ from other elements is not earth, such as water; here it is evident that there cannot be any positive instance of agreement and the concomitance has to be taken from negative instances. There is only one instance, which is exactly the proposition of our inference—earth differs from other elements, since it has the special qualities of earth. This inference could be of use only in those cases where we had to infer anything by reason of such special traits of it as was possessed by it and it alone.

Upamana and S'abda.

The third *pramana*, which is admitted by Nyaya and not by *Vaisesika*, is *upamana*, and consists in associating a thing unknown before with its name by virtue of its similarity with some other known thing. Thus a man of the city who has never seen a wild ox (*gavaya*) goes to the forest, asks a forester—"what is *gavaya*?" and the forester replies—"oh, you do not know it, it is just like a cow"; after hearing this from the forester he travels on, and on seeing a *gavaya* and finding it to be similar to a cow he forms the opinion that this is a *gavaya*. This knowing an hitherto unknown thing by virtue of its similarity to a known thing is called *upamana*. If some forester had pointed out a *gavaya* to a man of the city and had told him that it was called a *gavaya*, then also the

man would have known the animal by the name gavaya, but then this would have been due to testimony (*s'abda-prama@na*). *The knowledge is said to be generated by the upamana process when the association of the unknown animal with its name is made by the observer*

Page 326

355

on the strength of the experience of the similarity of the unknown animal to a known one. The naiyayikas are thorough realists, and as such they do not regard the observation of similarity as being due to any subjective process of the mind. Similarity is indeed perceived by the visual sense but yet the association of the name in accordance with the perception of similarity and the instruction received is a separate act and is called *upamana* [Footnote ref 1].

S'abda-prama@na or testimony is the right knowledge which we derive from the utterances of infallible and absolutely truthful persons. All knowledge derived from the Vedas is valid, for the Vedas were uttered by Is'vara himself. The Vedas give us right knowledge not of itself, but because they came out as the utterances of the infallible Is'vara. The Vais'e@sikas did not admit s'abda as a separate prama@na, but they sought to establish the validity of testimony (s'abda) on the strength of inference (*anumiti*) on the ground of its being the utterance of an infallible person. But as I have said before, this explanation is hardly corroborated by the Vais'e@sika sutras, which tacitly admit the validity of the scriptures on its own authority. But anyhow this was how Vais'e@sika was interpreted in later times.

Negation in Nyaya-Vais'e@sika.

The problem of negation or non-existence (*abhava*) is of great interest in Indian philosophy. In this section we can describe its nature only from the point of view of perceptibility. Kumarila [Footnote ref 2]

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari* on upamana. The oldest Nyaya view was that the instruction given by the forester by virtue of which the association of the name "wild ox" to the strange animal was possible was itself "upamana." When Pras'astapada held that upamana should be treated as a case of testimony (*aptavacana*), he had probably this interpretation in view. But Udyotakara and Vacaspati hold that it was not by the instruction alone of the forester that the association of the name "wild ox" was made, but there was the perception of similarity, and the memory of the instruction of the forester too. So it is the perception of similarity with the other two factors as accessories that lead us to this association called upamana. What Vatsyaya@na meant is not very clear, but Di@nnaga supposes that according to him the result of upamana was the knowledge of similarity or the knowledge of a thing having similarity. Vacaspati of course holds that he has correctly interpreted Vatsyaya@na's intention. It is however definite that upamana means the associating of a name to a new object

(*samakhyasambandhapratipattirupamanartha@h*, Vatsyaya@na). Jayanta points out that it is the preception of similarity which directly leads to the association of the name and hence the instruction of the forester cannot be regarded as the direct cause and consequently it cannot be classed under testimony (*s'abda*). See Pras'astapada and *Nyayakandali*, pp. 220-22, Vatsyaya@na, Udyotakara, Vacaspati and Jayanta on *Upamana*.]

Page 327

[Footnote 2: See Kumarila's treatment of *abhava* in the *S'lokavarttika*, pp. 473-492.]

356

and his followers, whose philosophy we shall deal with in the next chapter, hold that negation (*abhava*) appears as an intuition (*manam*) with reference to the object negated where there are no means of ordinary cognition (*prama@na*) leading to prove the existence (*satparicchedakam*) of that thing. They held that the notion "it is not existent" cannot be due to perception, for there is no contact here with sense and object. It is true indeed that when we turn our eyes (e.g. in the case of the perception of the non-existence of a jug) to the ground, we see both the ground and the non-existence of a jug, and when we shut them we can see neither the jug nor the ground, and therefore it could be urged that if we called the ground visually perceptible, we could say the same with regard to the non-existence of the jug. But even then since in the case of the perception of the jug there is sense-contact, which is absent in the other case, we could never say that both are grasped by perception. We see the ground and remember the jug (which is absent) and thus in the mind rises the notion of non-existence which has no reference at all to visual perception. A man may be sitting in a place where there were no tigers, but he might not then be aware of their non-existence at the time, since he did not think of them, but when later on he is asked in the evening if there were any tigers at the place where he was sitting in the morning, he then thinks and becomes aware of the non-existence of tigers there in the morning, even without perceiving the place and without any operation of the memory of the non-existence of tigers. There is no question of there being any inference in the rise of our notion of non-existence, for it is not preceded by any notion of concomitance of any kind, and neither the ground nor the non-perception of the jug could be regarded as a reason (*li@nga*), for the non-perception of the jug is related to the jug and not to the negation of the jug, and no concomitance is known between the non-perception of the jug and its non-existence, and when the question of the concomitance of non-perception with non-existence is brought in, the same difficulty about the notion of non-existence (*abhava*) which was sought to be explained will recur again. Negation is therefore to be admitted as cognized by a separate and independent process of knowledge. Nyaya however says that the perception of non-existence (e.g. there is no jug here) is a unitary perception of one whole, just as any perception of positive existence (e.g.

357

Page 328

there is a jug on the ground) is. Both the knowledge of the ground as well as the knowledge of the non-existence of the jug arise there by the same kind of action of the visual organ, and there is therefore no reason why the knowledge of the ground should be said to be due to perception, whereas the knowledge of the negation of the jug on the ground should be said to be due to a separate process of knowledge. The non-existence of the jug is taken in the same act as the ground is perceived. The principle that in order to perceive a thing one should have sense-contact with it, applies only to positive existents and not to negation or non-existence. Negation or non-existence can be cognized even without any sense-contact. Non-existence is not a positive substance, and hence there cannot be any question here of sense-contact. It may be urged that if no sense-contact is required in apprehending negation, one could as well apprehend negation or non-existence of other places which are far away from him. To this the reply is that to apprehend negation it is necessary that the place where it exists must be perceived. We know a thing and its quality to be different, and yet the quality can only be taken in association with the thing and it is so in this case as well. We can apprehend non-existence only through the apprehension of its locus. In the case when non-existence is said to be apprehended later on it is really no later apprehension of non-existence but a memory of non-existence (e.g. of jug) perceived before along with the perception of the locus of non-existence (e.g. ground). Negation or non-existence (*abhava*) can thus, according to Nyaya, generate its cognition just as any positive existence can do. Negation is not mere negativity or mere vacuous absence, but is what generates the cognition “is not,” as position (*bhava*) is what generates the cognition “it is.”

The Buddhists deny the existence of negation. They hold that when a negation is apprehended, it is apprehended with specific time and space conditions (e.g. this is not here now); but in spite of such an apprehension, we could never think that negation could thus be associated with them in any relation. There is also no relation between the negation and its *pratiyogi* (thing negated—e.g. jug in the negation of jug), for when there is the *pratiyogi* there is no negation, and when there is the negation there is no *pratiyogi*. There is not even the relation of opposition (*virodha*), for we could have admitted it, if

358

the negation of the jug existed before and opposed the jug, for how can the negation of the jug oppose the jug, without effecting anything at all? Again, it may be asked whether negation is to be regarded as a positive being or becoming or of the nature of not becoming or non-being. In the first alternative it will be like any other positive existents, and in the second case it will be permanent and eternal,

Page 329

and it cannot be related to this or that particular negation. There are however many kinds of non-perception, e.g. (1) *svabhavanupalabdhi* (natural non-perception—there is no jug because none is perceived); (2) *kara@nanupalabdhi* (non-perception of cause—there is no smoke here, since there is no fire); (3) *vyapakanupalabdhi* (non-perception of the species—there is no pine here, since there is no tree); (4) *karyanupalabdhi* (non-perception of effects—there are not the causes of smoke here, since there is no smoke); (5) *svabhavaviruddhopalabdhi* (perception of contradictory natures—there is no cold touch here because of fire); (6) *viruddhakaryopalabdhi* (perception of contradictory effects—there is no cold touch here because of smoke); (7) *virudhavyaptopalabdhi* (opposite concomitance—past is not of necessity destructible, since it depends on other causes); (8) *karyaviruddhopalabdhi* (opposition of effects—there is not here the causes which can give cold since there is fire); (9) *vyapakaviruddhopalabdhi* (opposite concomitants—there is no touch of snow here, because of fire); (10) *kara@naviruddhopalabdhi* (opposite causes—there is no shivering through cold here, since he is near the fire); (11) *kara@naviruddhakaryopalabdhi* (effects of opposite causes—this place is not occupied by men of shivering sensations for it is full of smoke [Footnote ref 1]).

There is no doubt that in the above ways we speak of negation, but that does not prove that there is any reason for the cognition of negation (*hetunabhavasamvida@h*). All that we can say is this that there are certain situations which justify the use (*yogyata*) of negative appellations. But this situation or *yogyata* is positive in character. What we all speak of in ordinary usage as non-perception is of the nature of perception of some sort. Perception of negation thus does not prove the existence of negation, but only shows that there are certain positive perceptions which are only interpreted in that way. It is the positive perception of the ground where the visible jug is absent that

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayabindu*, p. 11, and *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 53-7.]

359

leads us to speak of having perceived the negation of the jug (*anupalambha@h abhava@m vyavaharayati*) [Footnote ref 1].

The Nyaya reply against this is that the perception of positive existents is as much a fact as the perception of negation, and we have no right to say that the former alone is valid. It is said that the non-perception of jug on the ground is but the perception of the

ground without the jug. But is this being without the jug identical with the ground or different? If identical then it is the same as the ground, and we shall expect to have it even when the jug is there. If different then the quarrel is only over the name, for whatever you may call it, it is admitted to be

Page 330

a distinct category. If some difference is noted between the ground with the jug, and the ground without it, then call it “ground, without the jugness” or “the negation of jug,” it does not matter much, for a distinct category has anyhow been admitted. Negation is apprehended by perception as much as any positive existent is; the nature of the objects of perception only are different; just as even in the perception of positive sense-objects there are such diversities as colour, taste, *etc.* The relation of negation with space and time with which it appears associated is the relation that subsists between the qualified and the quality (*vis’e@sya vis’e@sa@na*). The relation between the negation and its pratiyogi is one of opposition, in the sense that where the one is the other is not. The *Vais’e@sika sutra* (IX. i. 6) seems to take abhava in a similar way as Kumarila the Mima@msist does, though the commentators have tried to explain it away [Footnote ref 2]. In *Vais’e@sika* the four kinds of negation are enumerated as (1) *pragabhava* (the negation preceding the production of an object—e.g. of the jug before it is made by the potter); (2) *dhva@msabhava* (the negation following the destruction of an object—as of the jug after it is destroyed by the stroke of a stick); (3) *anyonyabhava* (mutual negation—e.g. in the cow there is the negation of the horse and

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayabindu@tika*, pp. 34 ff., and also *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 48-63.]

[Footnote 2 Pras’astapada says that as the production of an effect is the sign of the existence of the cause, so the non-production of it is the sign of its non-existence, S’ridbara in commenting upon it says that the non-preception of a sensible object is the sign (*li@nga*) of its non-existence. But evidently he is not satisfied with the view for he says that non-existence is also directly perceived by the senses (*bhavavad abhavo’pindriyagraha@nayogyah*) and that there is an actual sense-contact with non-existence which is the collocating cause of the preception of non-existence (*abhavendriyasannikar@so’pi abhavagraha@nasamagri*), *Nyayakandali_*, pp. 225-30.]

360

in the horse that of the cow); (4) *atyantabhava* (a negation which always exists—e.g. even when there is a jug here, its negation in other places is not destroyed) [Footnote ref 1].

The necessity of the Acquirement of debating devices for the seeker of Salvation.

It is probable that the Nyaya philosophy arose in an atmosphere of continued disputes and debates; as a consequence of this we find here many terms related to debates

which we do not notice in any other system of Indian philosophy. These are *tarka*, *nir@naya*, *vada*, *jalpa*, *vita@n@da*, *hetvabhasa*, *chala*, *jati* and *nigrahasthana*.

Page 331

Tarka means deliberation on an unknown thing to discern its real nature; it thus consists of seeking reasons in favour of some supposition to the exclusion of other suppositions; it is not inference, but merely an oscillation of the mind to come to a right conclusion. When there is doubt (*sa@ms'aya*) about the specific nature of anything we have to take to tarka. Nir@naya means the conclusion to which we arrive as a result of tarka. When two opposite parties dispute over their respective theses, such as the doctrines that there is or is not an atman, in which each of them tries to prove his own thesis with reasons, each of the theses is called a *vada*. Jalpa means a dispute in which the disputants give wrangling rejoinders in order to defeat their respective opponents. A jalpa is called a *vita@n@da* when it is only a destructive criticism which seeks to refute the opponent's doctrine without seeking to establish or formulate any new doctrine. Hetvabhasas are those which appear as hetus but are really not so. Nyaya sutras enumerate five fallacies (*hetvabhasas*) of the middle (hetu): *savyabhicara* (erratic), *viruddha* (contradictory), *prakara@nasama* (tautology), *saddhyasama* (unproved reason) and *kalatita* (inopportune). Savyabhicara is that where the same reason may prove opposite conclusions (e.g. sound is eternal because it is intangible like the atoms which are eternal, and sound is non-eternal because it is intangible like cognitions which are non-eternal); viruddha is that where the reason opposes the premiss to be proved (e.g. a jug is eternal, because it is produced); prakara@nasama is that

[Footnote 1: The doctrine of negation, its function and value with reference to diverse logical problems, have many diverse aspects, and it is impossible to do them justice in a small section like this.]

361

where the reason repeats the thesis to be proved in another form (e.g. sound is non-eternal because it has not the quality of eternality); sadhyasama is that where the reason itself requires to be proved (e.g. shadow is a substance because it has motion, but it remains to be proved whether shadows have motion or not); kalatita is a false analogy where the reason fails because it does not tally with the example in point of time. Thus one may argue that sound is eternal because it is the result of contact (stick and the drum) like colour which is also a result of contact of light and the object and is eternal. Here the fallacy lies in this, that colour is simultaneous with the contact of light which shows what was already there and only manifested by the light, whereas in the case of sound it is produced immediately after the contact of the stick and drum and is hence a product and hence non-eternal. The later Nyaya works divide savyabhicara into three classes, (1) sadhara@na

Page 332

or common (e.g. the mountain is fiery because it is an object of knowledge, but even a lake which is opposed to fire is also an object of knowledge), (2) *asadhara@na* or too restricted (e.g. sound is eternal because it has the nature of sound; this cannot be a reason for the nature of sound exists only in the sound and nowhere else), and (3) *anupasa@mharin* or unsubsuming (e.g. everything is non-eternal, because they are all objects of knowledge; here the fallacy lies in this, that no instance can be found which is not an object of knowledge and an opposite conclusion may also be drawn). The fallacy *satpratipak@sa* is that in which there is a contrary reason which may prove the opposite conclusion (e.g. sound is eternal because it is audible, sound is non-eternal because it is an effect). The fallacy *asiddha* (unreal) is of three kinds (i) *as'rayasiddha* (the lotus of the sky is fragrant because it is like other lotuses; now there cannot be any lotus in the sky), (2) *svarupasiddha* (sound is a quality because it is visible; but sound has no visibility), (3) *vyapyatvasiddha* is that where the concomitance between the middle and the consequence is not invariable and inevitable; there is smoke in the hill because there is fire; but there may be fire without the smoke as in a red hot iron ball, it is only green-wood fire that is invariably associated with smoke. The fallacy *badhita* is that which pretends to prove a thesis which is against direct experience, e.g. fire is not hot because it is a substance. We have already enumerated the fallacies counted by Vais'e@sika. Contrary to Nyaya practice

362

Pras'astapada counts the fallacies of the example. Di@nnaga also counted fallacies of example (e.g. sound is eternal, because it is incorporeal, that which is incorporeal is eternal as the atoms; but atoms are not incorporeal) and Dharmakirti counted also the fallacies of the *pak@sa* (minor); but Nyaya rightly considers that the fallacies of the middle if avoided will completely safeguard inference and that these are mere repetitions. Chala means the intentional misinterpretation of the opponent's arguments for the purpose of defeating him. Jati consists in the drawing of contradictory conclusions, the raising of false issues or the like with the deliberate intention of defeating an opponent. Nigrahasthana means the exposure of the opponent's argument as involving self-contradiction, inconsistency or the like, by which his defeat is conclusively proved before the people to the glory of the victorious opponent. As to the utility of the description of so many debating tricks by which an opponent might be defeated in a metaphysical work, the aim of which ought to be to direct the ways that lead to emancipation, it is said by Jayanta in his *Nyayamanjari* that these had to be resorted to as a protective measure against arrogant disputants who often tried to humiliate a teacher before

Page 333

his pupils. If the teacher could not silence the opponent, the faith of the pupils in him would be shaken and great disorder would follow, and it was therefore deemed necessary that he who was plodding onward for the attainment of mok@sa should acquire these devices for the protection of his own faith and that of his pupils. A knowledge of these has therefore been enjoined in the Nyaya sutra as being necessary for the attainment of salvation [Footnote ref I].

The doctrine of Soul.

Dhurttā Carvakas denied the existence of soul and regarded consciousness and life as products of bodily changes; there were other Carvakas called Sus'ik@sita Carvakas who admitted the existence of soul but thought that it was destroyed at death. The Buddhists also denied the existence of any permanent self. The naiyayikas ascertained all the categories of metaphysics mainly by such inference as was corroborated by experience. They argued that since consciousness, pleasures, pains, willing, *etc.* could not belong to our body or the senses, there must be

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 586-659, and *Tarkikarak@sa* of Varadaraja and *Niska@n@taka* of Mallinatha, pp. 185 ff.]

363

some entity to which they belonged; the existence of the self is not proved according to Nyaya merely by the notion of our self-consciousness, as in the case of Mima@msa, for Nyaya holds that we cannot depend upon such a perception, for it may be erroneous. It often happens that I say that I am white or I am black, but it is evident that such a perception cannot be relied upon, for the self cannot have any colour. So we cannot safely depend on our self-consciousness as upon the inference that the self has to be admitted as that entity to which consciousness, emotion, *etc.* adhere when they are produced as a result of collocations. Never has the production of atman been experienced, nor has it been found to suffer any destruction like the body, so the soul must be eternal. It is not located in any part of the body, but is all-pervading, *i.e.* exists at the same time in all places (*vibhu*), and does not travel with the body but exists everywhere at the same time. But though atman is thus disconnected from the body, yet its actions are seen in the body because it is with the help of the collocation of bodily limbs, *etc.* that action in the self can be manifested or produced. It is unconscious in itself and acquires consciousness as a result of suitable collocations [Footnote ref I].

Even at birth children show signs of pleasure by their different facial features, and this could not be due to anything else than the memory of the past experiences in past lives of pleasures and pains. Moreover the inequalities in the distribution of pleasures and pains and of successes and failures prove that these must be due to the different kinds of good and bad action that men performed in their past lives. Since the inequality of the world must have some reasons behind it, it is better to admit karma as the determining factor than to leave it to irresponsible chance.

Page 334

Is'vara and Salvation.

Nyaya seeks to establish the existence of Is'vara on the basis of inference. We know that the Jains, the Sa@mkhya and the Buddhists did not believe in the existence of Is'vara and offered many antitheistic arguments. Nyaya wanted to refute these and prove the existence of Is'vara by an inference of the samanyato-d@r@s@ta type.

[Footnote 1: _Jnanasamavayanibandhanamevatmanas'cetayit@rtvam_, &c. See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 432 ff.]

364

The Jains and other atheists held that though things in the world have production and decay, the world as a whole was never produced, and it was never therefore an effect. In contrast to this view the Nyaya holds that the world as a whole is also an effect like any other effect. Many geological changes and landslips occur, and from these destructive operations proceeding in nature it may be assumed that this world is not eternal but a result of production. But even if this is not admitted by the atheists they can in no way deny the arrangement and order of the universe. But they would argue that there was certainly a difference between the order and arrangement of human productions (e.g. a jug) and the order and arrangement of the universe; and therefore from the order and arrangement(*sannives'a-vis'i@s@tata*) of the universe it could not be argued that the universe was produced by a creator; for, it is from the sort of order and arrangement that is found in human productions that a creator or producer could be inferred. To this, Nyaya answers that the concomitance is to be taken between the "order and arrangement" in a general sense and "the existence of a creator" and not with specific cases of "order and arrangement," for each specific case may have some such peculiarity in which it differs from similar other specific cases; thus the fire in the kitchen is not the same kind of fire as we find in a forest fire, but yet we are to disregard the specific individual peculiarities of fire in each case and consider the concomitance of fire in general with smoke in general. So here, we have to consider the concomitance of "order and arrangement" in general with "the existence of a creator," and thus though the order and arrangement of the world may be different from the order and arrangement of things produced by man, yet an inference from it for the existence of a creator would not be inadmissible. The objection that even now we see many effects (e.g. trees) which are daily shooting forth from the ground without any creator being found to produce them, does not hold, for it can never be proved that the plants are not actually created by a creator. The inference therefore stands that the world has a creator, since it is an effect and has order and arrangement in its construction.

Everything that is an effect and has an order and arrangement has a creator, like the jug. The world is an effect and has order and arrangement and has therefore a creator. Just as the potter knows all the purposes of the jug that he makes,

Page 335

365

so Is'vara knows all the purposes of this wide universe and is thus omniscient. He knows all things always and therefore does not require memory; all things are perceived by him directly without any intervention of any internal sense such as *manas*, etc. He is always happy. His will is eternal, and in accordance with the karma of men the same will produces dissolution, creates, or protects the world, in the order by which each man reaps the results of his own deeds. As our self which is in itself bodiless can by its will produce changes in our body and through it in the external world, so Is'vara also can by his will create the universe though he has no body. Some, however, say that if any association of body with Is'vara is indispensable for our conception of him, the atoms may as well be regarded as his body, so that just as by the will of our self changes and movement of our body take place, so also by his will changes and movements are produced in the atoms [Footnote ref I].

The *naiyayikas* in common with most other systems of Indian philosophy believed that the world was full of sorrow and that the small bits of pleasure only served to intensify the force of sorrow. To a wise person therefore everything is sorrow (*sarva@m du@hkha@m vivekina@h*); the wise therefore is never attached to the so-called pleasures of life which only lead us to further sorrows.

The bondage of the world is due to false knowledge (*mithyajnana*) which consists in thinking as my own self that which is not my self, namely body, senses, *manas*, feelings and knowledge; when once the true knowledge of the six *padarthas* and as *Nyaya* says, of the proofs (*prama@na*), the objects of knowledge (*prameya*), and of the other logical categories of inference is attained, false knowledge is destroyed. False knowledge can be removed by constant thinking of its opposite (*pratipak@sabhavana*), namely the true estimates of things. Thus when any pleasure attracts us, we are to think that this is in reality but pain, and thus the right knowledge about it will dawn and it will never attract us again. Thus it is that with the destruction of false knowledge our attachment or antipathy to things and ignorance about them (collectively called *do@sa*, cf. the *kles'a* of *Patanjali*) are also destroyed.

With the destruction of attachment actions (*prav@rtti*) for the

[Footnote:1: See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 190-204, _ Is'varanumana_ of Raghunatha S'iro@ma@ni and Udayana's *Kusumanjali*.]

366

Page 336

fulfilment of desires cease and with it rebirth ceases and with it sorrow ceases. Without false knowledge and attachment, actions cannot produce the bondage of karma that leads to the production of body and its experiences. With the cessation of sorrow there is emancipation in which the self is divested of all its qualities (consciousness, feeling, willing, *etc.*) and remains in its own inert state. The state of mukti according to Nyaya-Vais'e@sika is neither a state of pure knowledge nor of bliss but a state of perfect qualiti@lessness, in which the self remains in itself in its own purity. It is the negative state of absolute painlessness in mukti that is sometimes spoken of as being a state of absolute happiness (*ananda*), though really speaking the state of mukti can never be a state of happiness. It is a passive state of self in its original and natural purity unassociated with pleasure, pain, knowledge, willing, *etc.* [Footnote ref 1].

[Footnote 1: *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 499-533.]

CHAPTER IX

MIMA@MSA PHILOSOPHY [Footnote ref 1]

A Comparative Review.

The Nyaya-Vais'e@sika philosophy looked at experience from a purely common sense point of view and did not work with any such monistic tendency that the ultimate conceptions of our common sense experience should be considered as coming out of an original universal (e.g. prak@rti of the Sam@khyā). Space, time, the four elements, soul, *etc.* convey the impression that they are substantive entities or substances. What is perceived of the material things as qualities such as colour, taste, *etc.* is regarded as so many entities which have distinct and separate existence but which manifest themselves in connection with the substances. So also karma or action is supposed to be a separate entity, and even the class notions are perceived as separate entities inhering in substances. Knowledge (*jnana*) which illuminates all things is regarded only as a quality belonging to soul, just as there are other qualities of material objects. Causation is viewed merely as the collocation of conditions. The genesis of knowledge is also viewed as similar in nature to the production of any other physical event. Thus just as by the collocation of certain physical circumstances a jug and its qualities are produced, so by the combination and respective contacts of the soul, mind, sense, and the objects of sense, knowledge (*jnana*) is produced. Soul with Nyaya is an inert unconscious entity in which knowledge, *etc.* inhere. The relation between a substance and its quality, action, class notion, *etc.* has also to be admitted as a separate entity, as

without it the different entities being without any principle of relation would naturally fail to give us a philosophic construction.

Page 337

Sa@mkhya had conceived of a principle which consisted of an infinite number of reals of three different types, which by their combination were conceived to be able to produce all substances, qualities, actions, *etc.* No difference was acknowledged to exist between substances, qualities and actions, and it was conceived

[Footnote 1: On the meaning of the word Mima@msa see Chapter IV.]

368

that these were but so many aspects of a combination of the three types of reals in different proportions. The reals contained within them the rudiments of all developments of matter, knowledge, willing, feelings, *etc.* As combinations of reals changed incessantly and new phenomena of matter and mind were manifested, collocations did not bring about any new thing but brought about a phenomenon which was already there in its causes in another form. What we call knowledge or thought ordinarily, is with them merely a form of subtle illuminating matter stuff. Sa@mkhya holds however that there is a transcendent entity as pure consciousness and that by some kind of transcendent reflection or contact this pure consciousness transforms the bare translucent thought-matter into conscious thought or experience of a person.

But this hypothesis of a pure self, as essentially distinct and separate from knowledge as ordinarily understood, can hardly be demonstrated in our common sense experience; and this has been pointed out by the Nyaya school in a very strong and emphatic manner. Even Sa@mkhya did not try to prove that the existence of its transcendent puru@sa could be demonstrated in experience, and it had to attempt to support its hypothesis of the existence of a transcendent self on the ground of the need of a permanent entity as a fixed object, to which the passing states of knowledge could cling, and on grounds of moral struggle towards virtue and emancipation. Sa@mkhya had first supposed knowledge to be merely a combination of changing reals, and then had as a matter of necessity to admit a fixed principle as puru@sa (pure transcendent consciousness). The self is thus here in some sense an object of inference to fill up the gap left by the inadequate analysis of consciousness (*buddhi*) as being non-intelligent and incessantly changing.

Nyaya fared no better, for it also had to demonstrate self on the ground that since knowledge existed it was a quality, and therefore must inhere in some substance. This hypothesis is again based upon another uncritical assumption that substances and attributes were entirely separate, and that it was the nature of the latter to inhere in the former, and also that knowledge was a quality requiring (similarly with other attributes) a

substance in which to inhere. None of them could take their stand upon the self-conscious nature of our ordinary thought and draw their conclusions on the strength of the direct evidence of this self-conscious



Page 338

369

thought. Of course it is true that Sa@mkhya had approached nearer to this view than Nyaya, but it had separated the content of knowledge and its essence so irrevocably that it threatened to break the integrity of thought in a manner quite unwarranted by common sense experience, which does not seem to reveal this dual element in thought. Anyhow the unification of the content of thought and its essence had to be made, and this could not be done except by what may be regarded as a makeshift—a transcendent illusion running on from beginningless time. These difficulties occurred because Sa@mkhya soared to a region which was not directly illuminated by the light of common sense experience. The Nyaya position is of course much worse as a metaphysical solution, for it did not indeed try to solve anything, but only gave us a schedule of inferential results which could not be tested by experience, and which were based ultimately on a one-sided and uncritical assumption. It is an uncritical common sense experience that substances are different from qualities and actions, and that the latter inhere in the former. To base the whole of metaphysics on such a tender and fragile experience is, to say the least, building on a weak foundation. It was necessary that the importance of the self-revealing thought must be brought to the forefront, its evidence should be collected and trusted, and an account of experience should be given according to its verdict. No construction of metaphysics can ever satisfy us which ignores the direct immediate convictions of self-conscious thought. It is a relief to find that a movement of philosophy in this direction is ushered in by the Mima@msa system. The *Mima@msa sutras* were written by Jaimini and the commentary (*bha@sya*) on it was written by S'abara. But the systematic elaboration of it was made by Kumarila, who preceded the great S'a@nkaracarya, and a disciple of Kumarila, Prabhakara.

The Mima@msa Literature.

It is difficult to say how the sacrificial system of worship grew in India in the Brahma@nas. This system once set up gradually began to develop into a net-work of elaborate rituals, the details of which were probably taken note of by the priests. As some generations passed and the sacrifices spread over larger tracts of India and grew up into more and more elaborate details, the old rules and regulations began to be collected probably as tradition

370

had it, and this it seems gave rise to the sm@rti literature. Discussions and doubts became more common about the many intricacies of the sacrificial rituals, and regular rational enquiries into them were begun in different circles by different scholars and priests. These represent the beginnings of Mima@msa (lit. attempts at rational enquiry), and it is probable that there were different schools of this thought. That Jaimini's *Mima@msa sutras* (which are with us the foundations of Mima@msa)

Page 339

are only a comprehensive and systematic compilation of one school is evident from the references he gives to the views in different matters of other preceding writers who dealt with the subject. These works are not available now, and we cannot say how much of what Jaimini has written is his original work and how much of it borrowed. But it may be said with some degree of confidence that it was deemed so masterly a work at least of one school that it has survived all other attempts that were made before him. Jaimini's *Mima@msa sutras* were probably written about 200 B.C. and are now the ground work of the Mima@msa system. Commentaries were written on it by various persons such as Bhart@rmitra (alluded to in *Nyayaratnakara* verse 10 of *S'lokavarttika*), Bhavadasa { _Pratijnasutra_ 63}, Hari and Upavar@sa (mentioned in *S'astradipika*). It is probable that at least some of these preceded S'abara, the writer of the famous commentary known as the *S'abara-bha@sya*. It is difficult to say anything about the time in which he flourished. Dr Ga@nganatha Jha would have him about 57 B.C. on the evidence of a current verse which speaks of King Vikramaditya as being the son of S'abarasvamin by a K@sattriya wife. This bha@sya of S'abara is the basis of the later Mima@msa works. It was commented upon by an unknown person alluded to as Varttikakara by Prabhakara and merely referred to as "yathahu@h" (as they say) by Kumarila. Dr Ga@nganatha Jha says that Prabhakara's commentary *B@rhati* on the *S'abara-bha@sya* was based upon the work of this Varttikakara. This *B@rhati* of Prabhakara had another commentary on it—_@Rjuvimala_ by S'alikanatha Mis'ra, who also wrote a compendium on the Prabhakara interpretation of Mima@msa called *Prakara@napancika*. Tradition says that Prabhakara (often referred to as Nibandhakara), whose views are often alluded to as "gurumata," was a pupil of Kumarila. Kumarila Bha@t@ta, who is traditionally believed to be the senior contemporary of S'a@nkara (788 A.D.), wrote his celebrated independent

371

exposition of S'abara's bha@sya in three parts known as *S'lokavarttika* (dealing only with the philosophical portion of S'abara's work as contained in the first chapter of the first book known as Tarkapada), *Tantravarttika* (dealing with the remaining three chapters of the first book, the second and the third book) and _@Tup@tika_ (containing brief notes on the remaining nine books) [Footnote ref 1]. Kumarila is referred to by his later followers as Bha@t@ta, Bha@t@tapada, and Varttikakara. The next great Mima@msa scholar and follower of Kumarila was Ma@n@dana Mis'ra, the author of *Vidhiviveka*, *Mima@msanukrama@ni* and the commentator of *Tantravarttika*, who became later on converted by S'a@nkara to Vedantism. Parthasarathi Mis'ra (about ninth century A.D.) wrote his *S'astradipika*, *Tantraratna*, and *Nyayaratnamala* following

Page 340

the footprints of Kumarila. Amongst the numerous other followers of Kumarila, the names of Sucarita Mis'ra the author of *Kas'ika* and Somes'vara the author of *Nyayasudha* deserve special notice. Ramak@r@s@na Bha@t@ta wrote an excellent commentary on the *Tarkapada* of S'astradipika called the *Yuktisnehapura@ni-siddhanta-candrika* and Somanatha wrote his *Mayukhamalika* on the remaining chapters of S'astradipika. Other important current Mima@msa works which deserve notice are such as *Nyayamalavistara* of Madhava, *Subodhini*, *Mima@msabalaprakas'a* of S'a@nkara Bha@t@ta, *Nyayaka@nika* of Vacaspati Mis'ra, *Mima@msaparibha@sa* by K@r@s@nayajvan, *Mima@msanyayaprakas'a* by Anantadeva, *Gaga Bha@t@ta's Bha@t@tacintama@ni*, etc. Most of the books mentioned here have been consulted in the writing of this chapter. The importance of the Mima@msa literature for a Hindu is indeed great. For not only are all Vedic duties to be performed according to its maxims, but even the sm@rti literatures which regulate the daily duties, ceremonials and rituals of Hindus even at the present day are all guided and explained by them. The legal side of the sm@rtis consisting of inheritance, proprietary rights, adoption, etc. which guide Hindu civil life even under the British administration is explained according to the Mima@msa maxims. Its relations to the Vedanta philosophy will be briefly indicated in the next chapter. Its relations with Nyaya-Vais'e@sika have also been pointed out in various places of this chapter. The views of the two schools of Mima@msa as propounded by Prabhakara and Kumarila on all the important topics have

[Footnote 1: Mahamahopadhyaya Haraprasada S'astri says, in his introduction to *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*, that "Kumarila preceded Sa@nkara by two generations."]

372

also been pointed out. Prabhakara's views however could not win many followers in later times, but while living it is said that he was regarded by Kumarila as a very strong rival [Footnote ref 1]. Hardly any new contribution has been made to the Mima@msa philosophy after Kumarila and Prabhakara. The *Mima@msa sutras* deal mostly with the principles of the interpretation of the Vedic texts in connection with sacrifices, and very little of philosophy can be gleaned out of them. S'abara's contributions are also slight and vague. Varttikakara's views also can only be gathered from the references to them by Kumarila and Prabhakara. What we know of Mima@msa philosophy consists of their views and theirs alone. It did not develop any further after them. Works written on the subject in later times were but of a purely expository nature. I do not know of any work on Mima@msa written in English except the excellent one by Dr Ga@nganatha Jha on the Prabhakara Mima@msa to which I have frequently referred.

Page 341

The Parata@h-prama@nya doctrine of Nyaya and the Svata@h-prama@nya doctrine of Mima@msa.

The doctrine of the self-validity of knowledge (*svata@h-prama@nya*) forms the cornerstone on which the whole structure of the Mima@msa philosophy is based. Validity means the certitude of truth. The Mima@msa philosophy asserts that all knowledge excepting the action of remembering (*sm@rti*) or memory is valid in itself, for it itself certifies its own truth, and neither depends on any other extraneous condition nor on any other knowledge for its validity. But Nyaya holds that this self-validity of knowledge is a question which requires an explanation. It is true that under certain conditions a piece of knowledge is produced in us, but what is meant by saying that this knowledge is a proof of its own truth? When we perceive anything as blue, it is the direct result of visual contact, and this visual contact cannot certify that the knowledge generated is true, as the visual contact is not in any touch with the knowledge

[Footnote 1: There is a story that Kumarila, not being able to convert Prabhakara, his own pupil, to his views, attempted a trick and pretended that he was dead. His disciples then asked Prabhakara whether his burial rites should be performed according to Kumarila's views or Prabhakara's. Prabhakara said that his own views were erroneous, but these were held by him only to rouse up Kumarila's pointed attacks, whereas Kumarila's views were the right ones. Kumarila then rose up and said that Prabhakara was defeated, but the latter said he was not defeated so long as he was alive. But this has of course no historic value.]

373

it has conditioned. Moreover, knowledge is a mental affair and how can it certify the objective truth of its representation? In other words, how can my perception "a blue thing" guarantee that what is subjectively perceived as blue is really so objectively as well? After my perception of anything as blue we do not have any such perception that what I have perceived as blue is really so. So this so-called self-validity of knowledge cannot be testified or justified by any perception. We can only be certain that knowledge has been produced by the perceptual act, but there is nothing in this knowledge or its revelation of its object from which we can infer that the perception is also objectively valid or true. If the production of any knowledge should certify its validity then there would be no invalidity, no illusory knowledge, and following our perception of even a mirage we should never come to grief. But we are disappointed often in our perceptions, and this proves that when we practically follow the directions of our perception we are undecided as to its validity, which can only be ascertained by the

correspondence of the perception with what we find later on in practical experience.
Again, every

Page 342

piece of knowledge is the result of certain causal collocations, and as such depends upon them for its production, and hence cannot be said to rise without depending on anything else. It is meaningless to speak of the validity of knowledge, for validity always refers to objective realization of our desires and attempts proceeding in accordance with our knowledge. People only declare their knowledge invalid when proceeding practically in accordance with it they are disappointed. The perception of a mirage is called invalid when proceeding in accordance with our perception we do not find anything that can serve the purposes of water (e.g. drinking, bathing). The validity or truth of knowledge is thus the attainment by practical experience of the object and the fulfilment of all our purposes from it (*arthakriyajnana* or *phalajnana*) just as perception or knowledge represented them to the perceiver. There is thus no self-validity of knowledge (*svata@h-prama@nya*), but validity is ascertained by *sa@mvada* or agreement with the objective facts of experience [Footnote ref I].

It is easy to see that this Nyaya objection is based on the supposition that knowledge is generated by certain objective collocations of conditions, and that knowledge so produced can

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari*, pp. 160-173.]

374

only be tested by its agreement with objective facts. But this theory of knowledge is merely an hypothesis; for it can never be experienced that knowledge is the product of any collocations; we have a perception and immediately we become aware of certain objective things; knowledge reveals to us the facts of the objective world and this is experienced by us always. But that the objective world generates knowledge in us is only an hypothesis which can hardly be demonstrated by experience. It is the supreme prerogative of knowledge that it reveals all other things. It is not a phenomenon like any other phenomenon of the world. When we say that knowledge has been produced in us by the external collocations, we just take a perverse point of view which is unwarranted by experience; knowledge only photographs the objective phenomena for us; but there is nothing to show that knowledge has been generated by these phenomena. This is only a theory which applies the ordinary conceptions of causation to knowledge and this is evidently unwarrantable. Knowledge is not like any other phenomena for it stands above them and interprets or illumines them all. There can be no validity in things, for truth applies to knowledge and knowledge alone. What we call agreement with facts by

practical experience is but the agreement of previous knowledge with later knowledge; for objective facts never come to us directly, they are always taken on the evidence of knowledge, and they have no other certainty than what is bestowed

Page 343

on them by knowledge. There arise indeed different kinds of knowledge revealing different things, but these latter do not on that account generate the former, for this is never experienced; we are never aware of any objective fact before it is revealed by knowledge. Why knowledge makes different kinds of revelations is indeed more than we can say, for experience only shows that knowledge reveals objective facts and not why it does so. The rise of knowledge is never perceived by us to be dependent on any objective fact, for all objective facts are dependent on it for its revelation or illumination. This is what is said to be the self-validity (*svata@h-prama@ya*) of knowledge in its production (*utpatti*). As soon as knowledge is produced, objects are revealed to us; there is no intermediate link between the rise of knowledge and the revelation of objects on which knowledge depends for producing its action of revealing or illuminating them. Thus knowledge is not only independent

375

of anything else in its own rise but in its own action as well (*svakaryakara@ne svata@h prama@nya@m jnanasya*). Whenever there is any knowledge it carries with it the impression that it is certain and valid, and we are naturally thus prompted to work (*prav@rtti*) according to its direction. There is no indecision in our mind at the time of the rise of knowledge as to the correctness of knowledge; but just as knowledge rises, it carries with it the certainty of its revelation, presence, or action. But in cases of illusory perception other perceptions or cognitions dawn which carry with them the notion that our original knowledge was not valid. Thus though the invalidity of any knowledge may appear to us by later experience, and in accordance with which we reject our former knowledge, yet when the knowledge first revealed itself to us it carried with it the conviction of certainty which goaded us on to work according to its indication. Whenever a man works according to his knowledge, he does so with the conviction that his knowledge is valid, and not in a passive or uncertain temper of mind. This is what *Mima@msa* means when it says that the validity of knowledge appears immediately with its rise, though its invalidity may be derived from later experience or some other data (*jnanasya pra@ma@nyam svata@h aprama@nya@m parata@h*). Knowledge attained is proved invalid when later on a contradictory experience (*badhakajnana*) comes in or when our organs etc. are known to be faulty and defective (*kara@nado@sajnana*). *It is from these that knowledge appearing as valid is invalidated; when we take all necessary care to look for these and yet find them not, we must think that they do not exist. Thus the validity of knowledge certified at the moment of its production need not be doubted unnecessarily when even after enquiry we do not find any defect in sense or any contradiction in later experience. All knowledge except memory is thus regarded as valid independently by itself as a general rule, unless it is invalidated later on. Memory is excluded because the phenomenon of memory depends upon a previous experience, and its existing latent impressions, and cannot thus be regarded as arising independently by itself.*

Page 344

The place of sense organs in perception.

We have just said that knowledge arises by itself and that it could not have been generated by sense-contact. If this be so, the diversity of perceptions is however left unexplained. But in

376

face of the Nyaya philosophy explaining all perceptions on the ground of diverse sense-contact the Mima@msa probably could not afford to remain silent on such an important point. It therefore accepted the Nyaya view of sense-contact as a condition of knowledge with slight modifications, and yet held their doctrine of svata@h-prama@nya. It does not appear to have been conscious of a conflict between these two different principles of the production of knowledge. Evidently the point of view from which it looked at it was that the fact that there were the senses and contacts of them with the objects, or such special capacities in them by virtue of which the things could be perceived, was with us a matter of inference. Their actions in producing the knowledge are never experienced at the time of the rise of knowledge, but when the knowledge arises we argue that such and such senses must have acted. The only case where knowledge is found to be dependent on anything else seems to be the case where one knowledge is found to depend on a previous experience or knowledge as in the case of memory. In other cases the dependence of the rise of knowledge on anything else cannot be felt, for the physical collocations conditioning knowledge are not felt to be operating before the rise of knowledge, and these are only inferred later on in accordance with the nature and characteristic of knowledge. We always have our first start in knowledge which is directly experienced from which we may proceed later on to the operation and nature of objective facts in relation to it. Thus it is that though contact of the senses with the objects may later on be imagined to be the conditioning factor, yet the rise of knowledge as well as our notion of its validity strikes us as original, underived, immediate, and first-hand.

Prabhakara gives us a sketch as to how the existence of the senses may be inferred. Thus our cognitions of objects are phenomena which are not all the same, and do not happen always in the same manner, for these vary differently at different moments; the cognitions of course take place in the soul which may thus be regarded as the material cause (*samavayikara@na*); but there must be some such movements or other specific associations (*asamavayikara@na*) which render the production of this or that specific cognition possible. The immaterial causes subsist either in the cause of the material cause (e.g. in the case of the colouring of a white piece of cloth, the colour of the yarns which

377

Page 345

is the cause of the colour in the cloth subsists in the yarns which form the material cause of the cloth) or in the material cause itself (e.g. in the case of a new form of smell being produced in a substance by fire-contact, this contact, which is the immaterial cause of the smell, subsists in that substance itself which is put in the fire and in which the smell is produced). The soul is eternal and has no other cause, and it has to be assumed that the immaterial cause required for the rise of a cognition must inhere in the soul, and hence must be a quality. Then again accepting the Nyaya conclusions we know that the rise of qualities in an eternal thing can only take place by contact with some other substances. Now cognition being a quality which the soul acquires would naturally require the contact of such substances. Since there is nothing to show that such substances inhere in other substances they are also to be taken as eternal. There are three eternal substances, time, space, and atoms. But time and space being all-pervasive the soul is always in contact with them. Contact with these therefore cannot explain the occasional rise of different cognitions. This contact must then be of some kind of atom which resides in the body ensouled by the cognizing soul. This atom may be called *manas* (mind). This *manas* alone by itself brings about cognitions, pleasure, pain, desire, aversion, effort, *etc.* The *manas* however by itself is found to be devoid of any such qualities as colour, smell, *etc.*, and as such cannot lead the soul to experience or cognize these qualities; hence it stands in need of such other organs as may be characterized by these qualities; for the cognition of colour, the mind will need the aid of an organ of which colour is the characteristic quality; for the cognition of smell, an organ having the odorous characteristic and so on with touch, taste, vision. Now we know that the organ which has colour for its distinctive feature must be one composed of *tejas* or light, as colour is a feature of light, and this proves the existence of the organ, the eye—for the cognition of colour; in a similar manner the existence of the earthly organ (organ of smell), the aqueous organ (organ of taste), the *akas'ic* organ (organ of sound) and the airy organ (organ of touch) may be demonstrated. But without *manas* none of these organs is found to be effective. Four necessary contacts have to be admitted, (1) of the sense organs with the object, (2) of the sense organs with the qualities of the object, (3) of the *manas*

378

with the sense organs, and (4) of the *manas* with the soul. The objects of perception are of three kinds, (1) substances, (2) qualities, (3) *jati* or class. The material substances are tangible objects of earth, fire, water, air in large dimensions (for in their fine atomic states they cannot be perceived). The qualities are colour, taste, smell, touch, number, dimension, separateness, conjunction, disjunction, priority, posteriority, pleasure, pain, desire, aversion, and effort [Footnote ref I].

Page 346

It may not be out of place here to mention in conclusion that Kumarila Bha@t@ta was rather undecided as to the nature of the senses or of their contact with the objects. Thus he says that the senses may be conceived either as certain functions or activities, or as entities having the capacity of revealing things without coming into actual contact with them, or that they might be entities which actually come in contact with their objects [Footnote ref 2], and he prefers this last view as being more satisfactory.

Indeterminate and determinate perception.

There are two kinds of perception in two stages, the first stage is called *nirvikalpa* (indeterminate) and the second *savikalpa* (determinate). The *nirvikalpa* perception of a thing is its perception at the first moment of the association of the senses and their objects. Thus Kumarila says that the cognition that appears first is a mere *alocana* or simple perception, called non-determinate pertaining to the object itself pure and simple, and resembling the cognitions that the new-born infant has of things around himself. In this cognition neither the genus nor the differentia is presented to consciousness; all that is present there is the individual wherein these two subsist. This view of indeterminate perception may seem in some sense to resemble the Buddhist view which defines it as being merely the specific individuality (*svalak@sa@na*) and regards it as being the only valid element in perception, whereas all the rest are conceived as being imaginary

[Footnote 1: See *Prakara@napancika*, pp. 53 etc., and Dr Ga@nganatha Jha's *Prabhakaramima@msa*, pp. 35 etc.]

[Footnote 2: *S'lokavarttika*, see *Pratyak@sasutra*, 40 etc., and *Nyayaratnakara* on it. It may be noted in this connection that Sa@mkhya-Yoga did not think like Nyaya that the senses actually went out to meet the objects (*prapyakaritva*) but held that there was a special kind of functioning (*v@rtti*) by virtue of which the senses could grasp even such distant objects as the sun and the stars. It is the functioning of the sense that reached the objects. The nature of the *v@rtti* is not further clearly explained and Parthasarathi objects to it as being almost a different category (*tattvantara*).]

379

impositions. But both Kumarila and Prabhakara think that both the genus and the differentia are perceived in the indeterminate stage, but these do not manifest themselves to us only because we do not remember the other things in relation to which, or in contrast to which, the percept has to show its character as genus or

differentia; a thing can be cognized as an “individual” only in comparison with other things from which it differs in certain well-defined characters; and it can be apprehended as belonging to a class only when it is found to possess

Page 347

certain characteristic features in common with some other things; so we see that as other things are not presented to consciousness through memory, the percept at the indeterminate stage cannot be fully apprehended as an individual belonging to a class, though the data constituting the characteristic of the thing as a genus and its differentia are perceived at the indeterminate stage [Footnote ref 1]. So long as other things are not remembered these data cannot manifest themselves properly, and hence the perception of the thing remains indeterminate at the first stage of perception. At the second stage the self by its past impressions brings the present perception in relation to past ones and realizes its character as involving universal and particular. It is thus apparent that the difference between the indeterminate and the determinate perception is this, that in the latter case memory of other things creeps in, but this association of memory in the determinate perception refers to those other objects of memory and not to the percept. It is also held that though the determinate perception is based upon the indeterminate one, yet since the former also apprehends certain such factors as did not enter into the indeterminate perception, it is to be regarded as a valid cognition. Kumarila also agrees with Prabhakara in holding both the indeterminate and the determinate perception valid [Footnote ref 2].

Some Ontological Problems connected with the
Doctrine of Perception.

The perception of the class (*jati*) of a percept in relation to other things may thus be regarded in the main as a difference between determinate and indeterminate perceptions. The problems of *jati* and *avayavavayavi* (part and whole notion) were

[Footnote 1: Compare this with the Vais'e@sika view as interpreted by S'ridhara.]

[Footnote 2: See *Prakara@napancika* and *S'astradipika*.]

380

the subjects of hot dispute in Indian philosophy. Before entering into discussion about *jati*, Prabhakara first introduced the problem of *avayava* (part) and *avayavi* (whole). He argues as an exponent of *svata@h-prama@nyavada* that the proof of the true existence of anything must ultimately rest on our own consciousness, and what is distinctly recognized in consciousness must be admitted to have its existence established. Following this canon Prabhakara says that gross objects as a whole exist, since they

are so perceived. The subtle atoms are the material cause and their connection (*sa@myoga*) is the immaterial cause (*asamavayikara@na*), and it is the latter which renders the whole altogether different from the parts of which it is composed; and it is not necessary that all the parts should be perceived before the whole is perceived. Kumarila holds that it is due to the point of view from which we

Page 348

look at a thing that we call it a separate whole or only a conglomeration of parts. In reality they are identical, but when we lay stress on the notion of parts, the thing appears to be a conglomeration of them, and when we look at it from the point of view of the unity appearing as a whole, the thing appears to be a whole of which there are parts (see *S'lokavarttika*, *Vanavada*) [Footnote ref 1].

Jati, though incorporating the idea of having many units within one, is different from the conception of whole in this, that it resides in its entirety in each individual constituting that jati (vyas'ajyv@rtti),

[Footnote 1: According to Sa@mkhya-Yoga a thing is regarded as the unity of the universal and the particular (*samanyavis'esasamudayo dravyam*, *Vyasabhasya*, III. 44), for there is no other separate entity which is different from them both in which they would inhere as Nyaya holds. Conglomerations can be of two kinds, namely those in which the parts exist at a distance from one another (e.g. a forest), and those in which they exist close together (*mrantara hi tadavayavah*), and it is this latter combination (*ayutasiddhavadaya*) which is called a dravya, but here also there is no separate whole distinct from the parts; it is the parts connected in a particular way and having no perceptible space between them that is called a thing or a whole. The Buddhists as Panditas'oka has shown did not believe in any whole (*avayavi*), it is the atoms which in connection with one another appeared as a whole occupying space (*paramanava eva hi pararupades'apariharenotpannah parasparasahita avabhasamana desavitanavanto bhavanti*). The whole is thus a mere appearance and not a reality (see *Avayavinirakarana*, *Six Buddhist Nyaya Tracts*). Nyaya however held that the atoms were partless (*niravayava*) and hence it would be wrong to say that when we see an object we see the atoms. The existence of a whole as different from the parts which belong to it is directly experienced and there is no valid reason against it:

“adustakaranodbhutamanavirbhutabadhakam
asandigdhanca vijnanam katham mithyeti kathyate.”

Nyayamanjari, pp. 550 ff.]

381

but the establishment of the existence of wholes refutes the argument that jati should be denied, because it involves the conception of a whole (class) consisting of many parts

(individuals). The class character or jati exists because it is distinctly perceived by us in the individuals included in any particular class. It is eternal in the sense that it continues to exist in other individuals, even when one of the individuals ceases to exist. When a new individual of that class (e g. cow class) comes into being, a new relation of inherence is generated by which the individual is brought into relation with the class-character existing

Page 349

in other individuals, for inherence (*samavaya*) according to Prabhakara is not an eternal entity but an entity which is both produced and not produced according as the thing in which it exists is non-eternal or eternal, and it is not regarded as one as Nyaya holds, but as many, according as there is the infinite number of things in which it exists. When any individual is destroyed, the class-character does not go elsewhere, nor subsist in that individual, nor is itself destroyed, but it is only the inherence of class-character with that individual that ceases to exist. With the destruction of an individual or its production it is a new relation of inherence that is destroyed or produced. But the class-character or *jati* has no separate existence apart from the individuals as Nyaya supposes. Apprehension of *jati* is essentially the apprehension of the class-character of a thing in relation to other similar things of that class by the perception of the common characteristics. But Prabhakara would not admit the existence of a highest genus *satta* (being) as acknowledged by Nyaya. He argues that the existence of class-character is apprehended because we find that the individuals of a class possess some common characteristic possessed by all the heterogeneous and disparate things of the world as can give rise to the conception of a separate *jati* as *satta*, as demanded by the *naiyayikas*. That all things are said to be *sat* (existing) is more or less a word or a name without the corresponding apprehension of a common quality. Our experience always gives us concrete existing individuals, but we can never experience such a highest genus as pure existence or being, as it has no concrete form which may be perceived. When we speak of a thing as *sat*, we do not mean that it is possessed of any such class-characters as *satta* (being); what we mean is simply that the individual has its specific existence or *svarupasatta*.

382

Thus the Nyaya view of perception as taking only the thing in its pure being apart from qualities, etc, (*sanmatra-vi@sayam pratyak@sa@m*) is made untenable by Prabhakara, as according to him the thing is perceived direct with all its qualities. According to Kumarila however *jati* is not something different from the individuals comprehended by it and it is directly perceived. Kumarila's view of *jati* is thus similar to that held by *Sa@mkhya*, namely that when we look at an individual from one point of view (*jati* as identical with the individual), it is the individual that lays its stress upon our consciousness and the notion of *jati* becomes latent, but when we look at it from another point of view (the individual as identical with *jati*) it is the *jati* which presents itself to consciousness, and the aspect as individual becomes latent. The apprehension as *jati* or as individual is thus only a matter of different points of view or angles of vision from which we look at a thing. Quite in harmony with the conception of *jati*, Kumarila holds that the relation of inherence is not anything which is distinct from the things themselves in which it is supposed to exist, but only a particular aspect or phase of the things themselves (*S'lokavarttika*, *Pratyak@sasutra*, 149, 150, *abhedat samavayo'stu*

svarupam dharmadharmi@no@h), Kumarila agrees with Prabhakara that jati is perceived by the senses (*tatraikabuddhinirgrahya jatirindriyagocara*).

Page 350

It is not out of place to mention that on the evidence of Prabhakara we find that the category of vis'e@sa admitted by the Ka@nada school is not accepted as a separate category by the Mima@msa on the ground that the differentiation of eternal things from one another, for which the category of vis'e@sa is admitted, may very well be effected on the basis of the ordinary qualities of these things. The quality of p@rthaktva or specific differences in atoms, as inferred by the difference of things they constitute, can very well serve the purposes of vis'e@sa.

The nature of knowledge.

All knowledge involves the knower, the known object, and the knowledge at the same identical moment. All knowledge whether perceptual, inferential or of any other kind must necessarily reveal the self or the knower directly. Thus as in all knowledge the self is directly and immediately perceived, all knowledge may be regarded as perception from the point of view of self. The division

383

of the prama@nas as pratyak@sa (perception), anumana (inference), etc. is from the point of view of the objects of knowledge with reference to the varying modes in which they are brought within the purview of knowledge. The self itself however has no illumining or revealing powers, for then even in deep sleep we could have knowledge, for the self is present even then, as is proved by the remembrance of dreams. It is knowledge (sa@mvid) that reveals by its very appearance both the self, the knower, and the objects. It is generally argued against the self-illuminative character of knowledge that all cognitions are of the forms of the objects they are said to reveal; and if they have the same form we may rather say that they have the same identical reality too. The Mima@msa answer to these objections is this, that if the cognition and the cognized were not different from one another, they could not have been felt as such, and we could not have felt that it is by cognition that we apprehend the cognized objects. The cognition (sa@mvedana) of a person simply means that such a special kind of quality (dharma) has been manifested in the self by virtue of which his active operation with reference to a certain object is favoured or determined, and the object of cognition is that with reference to which the active operation of the self has been induced. Cognitions are not indeed absolutely formless, for they have the cognitional character by which things are illumined and manifested. Cognition has no other character than this, that it illumines and reveals objects. The things only are believed to have forms and only such forms as knowledge reveal to us about them. Even the dream cognition is with reference to objects that were perceived previously, and of which the impressions were left in the mind and were aroused by the unseen agency (ad@r@s@ta). Dream cognition is thus only a kind of remembrance of that which was previously experienced. Only such of the impressions of cognized objects are roused in dreams as can beget just that amount of pleasurable or painful experience, in

accordance with the operation of ad@r@s@ta, as the person deserves to have in accordance with his previous merit or demerit.

Page 351

The Prabhakara Mima@msa, in refuting the arguments of those who hold that our cognitions of objects are themselves cognized by some other cognition, says that this is not possible, since we do not experience any such double cognition and also because it would lead us to a *regressus ad infinitum*, for if a second cognition

384

is necessary to interpret the first, then that would require a third and so on. If a cognition could be the object of another cognition, then it could not be self-valid. The cognition is not of course unknown to us, but that is of course because it is self-cognized, and reveals itself to us the moment it reveals its objects. From the illumination of objects also we can infer the presence of this self-cognizing knowledge. But it is only its presence that is inferred and not the cognition itself, for inference can only indicate the presence of an object and not in the form in which it can be apprehended by perception (*pratyak@sa*). Prabhakara draws a subtle distinction between perceptuality (*sa@mvedyatva*) and being object of knowledge (*prameyatva*). A thing can only be apprehended (*sa@mvedyate*) by perception, whereas inference can only indicate the presence of an object without apprehending the object itself. Our cognition cannot be apprehended by any other cognition. Inference can only indicate the presence or existence of knowledge but cannot apprehend the cognition itself [Footnote ref 1].

Kumarila also agrees with Prabhakara in holding that perception is never the object of another perception and that it ends in the direct apprehensibility of the object of perception. But he says that every perception involves a relationship between the perceiver and the perceived, wherein the perceiver behaves as the agent whose activity in grasping the object is known as cognition. This is indeed different from the Prabhakara view, that in one manifestation of knowledge the knower, the known, and the knowledge, are simultaneously illuminated (the doctrine of *tripu@tipratyak@sa*) [Footnote ref 2].

The Psychology of Illusion.

The question however arises that if all apprehensions are valid, how are we to account for illusory perceptions which cannot be regarded as valid? The problem of illusory perception and its psychology is a very favourite topic of discussion in Indian philosophy. Omitting the theory of illusion of the Jains called *satkhyati* which we have described before, and of the Vedantists, which we shall describe in the next chapter, there are three different theories of illusion, viz. (1) *atmakhyati*, (2) *viparitakhyati* or *anyathakhyati*, and (3) *akhyati* of the Mima@msa school. The

[Footnote 1: See *Prabhakaramima@msa*, by Dr Ga@nganatha Jha.]

[Footnote 2: *loc. cit.* pp. 26-28.]

Page 352

385

viparitakhyati or anyathakhyati theory of illusion is accepted by the Nyaya, Vais'e@sika and the Yoga, the akhyati theory by Mima@msa and Sa@mkhya and the atmakhyati by the Buddhists.

The commonest example of illusion in Indian philosophy is the illusory appearance of a piece of broken conch-shell as a piece of silver. That such an illusion occurs is a fact which is experienced by all and agreed to by all. The differences of view are with regard to its cause or its psychology. The idealistic Buddhists who deny the existence of the external world and think that there are only the forms of knowledge, generated by the accumulated karma of past lives, hold that just as in the case of a correct perception, so also in the case of illusory perception it is the flow of knowledge which must be held responsible. The flow of knowledge on account of the peculiarities of its own collocating conditions generates sometimes what we call right perception and sometimes wrong perception or illusion. On this view nothing depends upon the so-called external data. For they do not exist, and even if they did exist, why should the same data sometimes bring about the right perception and sometimes the illusion? The flow of knowledge creates both the percept and the perceiver and unites them. This is true both in the case of correct perception and illusory perception. Nyaya objects to the above view, and says that, if knowledge irrespective of any external condition imposes upon itself the knower and the illusory percept, then the perception ought to be of the form "I am silver" and not "this is silver." Moreover this theory stands refuted, as it is based upon a false hypothesis that it is the inner knowledge which appears as coming from outside and that the external as such does not exist.

The viparitakhyati or the anyathakhyati theory supposes that the illusion takes place because on account of malobservation we do not note the peculiar traits of the conch-shell as distinguished from the silver, and at the same time by the glow *etc.* of the conch-shell unconsciously the silver which I had seen elsewhere is remembered and the object before me is taken as silver. In illusion the object before us with which our eye is associated is not conch-shell, for the traits peculiar to it not being grasped, it is merely an object. The silver is not utterly non-existent, for it exists elsewhere and it is the memory of it as experienced before that creates confusion and leads us to think of the conch-shell as silver. This school agrees with the akhyati school that the fact

386

that I remember silver is not taken note of at the time of illusion. But it holds that the mere non-distinction is not enough to account for the phenomenon of illusion, for there is a definite positive aspect associated with it, *viz.* the false identification of silver (seen elsewhere) with the conch-shell before us.

Page 353

The akhyati theory of Mima@msa holds that since the special peculiarities of the conch-shell are not noticed, it is erroneous to say that we identify or cognize positively the conch-shell as the silver (perceived elsewhere), for the conch-shell is not cognized at all. What happens here is simply this, that only the features common to conch-shell and silver being noticed, the perceiver fails to apprehend the difference between these two things, and this gives rise to the cognition of silver. Owing to a certain weakness of the mind the remembrance of silver roused by the common features of the conch-shell and silver is not apprehended, and the fact that it is only a memory of silver seen in some past time that has appeared before him is not perceived; and it is as a result of this non-apprehension of the difference between the silver remembered and the present conch-shell that the illusion takes place. Thus, though the illusory perception partakes of a dual character of remembrance and apprehension, and as such is different from the ordinary valid perception (which is wholly a matter of direct apprehension) of real silver before us, yet as the difference between the remembrance of silver and the sight of the present object is not apprehended, the illusory perception appears at the moment of its production to be as valid as a real valid perception. Both give rise to the same kind of activity on the part of the agent, for in illusory perception the perceiver would be as eager to stoop and pick up the thing as in the case of a real perception. Kumarila agrees with this view as expounded by Prabhakara, and further says that the illusory judgment is as valid to the cognizer at the time that he has the cognition as any real judgment could be. If subsequent experience rejects it, that does not matter, for it is admitted in Mima@msa that when later experience finds out the defects of any perception it can invalidate the original perception which was self-valid at the time of its production [Footnote Ref. 1]. It is easy to see that the Mima@msa had to adopt this view of illusion to maintain the doctrine that all cognition at the moment of its production is valid. The akhyati theory

[Footnote 1: See *Prakara@napancika*, *S'astradipika*, and *S'lokavarttika*, sutra 2.]

387

tries to establish the view that the illusion is not due to any positive wrong knowledge, but to a mere negative factor of non-apprehension due to certain weakness of mind. So it is that though illusion is the result, yet the cognition so far as it is cognition, is made up of two elements, the present perception and memory, both of which are true so far as they are individually present to us, and the cognition itself has all the characteristics of any other valid knowledge, for the mark of the validity of a cognition is its power to prompt us to action. In doubtful cognitions also, as in the case "Is this a post or a man?" what is actually perceived is some tall object and thus far it is valid too. But when this

perception gives rise to two different kinds of remembrance (of the pillar and the man), doubt comes in. So the element of apprehension involved in doubtful cognitions should be regarded as self-valid as any other cognition.

Page 354

Inference.

S'abara says that when a certain fixed or permanent relation has been known to exist between two things, we can have the idea of one thing when the other one is perceived, and this kind of knowledge is called inference. Kumarila on the basis of this tries to show that inference is only possible when we notice that in a large number of cases two things (e.g. smoke and fire) subsist together in a third thing (e.g. kitchen, etc.) in some independent relation, *i.e.* when their coexistence does not depend upon any other eliminable condition or factor. It is also necessary that the two things (smoke and fire) coexisting in a third thing should be so experienced that all cases of the existence of one thing should also be cases involving the existence of the other, but the cases of the existence of one thing (e.g. fire), though including all the cases of the existence of the other (smoke), may have yet a more extensive sphere where the latter (smoke) may not exist. When once a permanent relation, whether it be a case of coexistence (as in the case of the contiguity of the constellation of K@rttika with Rohi@ni, where, by the rise of the former the early rise of the latter may be inferred), or a case of identity (as in the relation between a genus and its species), or a case of cause and effect or otherwise between two things and a third thing which had been apprehended in a large number of cases, is perceived, they fuse together in the mind as forming

388

one whole, and as a result of that when the existence of the one (e.g. smoke) in a thing (hill) is noticed, we can infer the existence of the thing (hill) with its counterpart (fire). In all such cases the thing (e.g. fire) which has a sphere extending beyond that in which the other (e.g. smoke) can exist is called *gamya* or *vyapaka* and the other (e.g. smoke) *vyapya* or *gamaka* and it is only by the presence of gamaka in a thing (e.g. hill, the pak@sa) that the other counterpart the gamya (fire) may be inferred. The general proposition, universal coexistence of the gamaka with the gamya (e.g. wherever there is smoke there is fire) cannot be the cause of inference, for it is itself a case of inference. Inference involves the memory of a permanent relation subsisting between two things (e.g. smoke and fire) in a third thing (e.g. kitchen); but the third thing is remembered only in a general way that the coexisting things must have a place where they are found associated. It is by virtue of such a memory that the direct perception of a basis (e.g. hill) with the gamaka thing (e.g. smoke) in it would naturally bring to my mind that the same basis (hill) must contain the gamya (*i.e.* fire) also. Every case of inference thus proceeds directly from a perception and not from any universal general proposition. Kumarila holds that the inference gives us the minor as associated with the major and not of the major alone, *i.e.* of the

Page 355

fiery mountain and not of fire. Thus inference gives us a new knowledge, for though it was known in a general way that the possessor of smoke is the possessor of fire, yet the case of the mountain was not anticipated and the inference of the fiery mountain is thus a distinctly new knowledge (*des'akaladhikyadyuktamag@rhitagrahitvam anumantasya*, *Nyayaratnakara*, p. 363) [Footnote ref 1]. It should also be noted that in forming the notion of the permanent relation between two things, a third thing in which these two subsist is always remembered and for the conception of this permanent relation it is enough that in the large number of cases where the concomitance was noted there was no knowledge of any case where the concomitance failed, and it is not indispensable that the negative instances in which the absence of the gamya or vyapaka was marked by an

[Footnote 1: It is important to note that it is not unlikely that Kumarila was indebted to Di@nnaga for this; for Di@nnaga's main contention is that "it is not fire, nor the connection between it and the hill, but it is the fiery hill that is inferred" for otherwise inference would give us no new knowledge see Vidyabhu@sa@na's *Indian Logic*, p. 87 and *Tatparya@tika*, p. 120.]

389

absence of the gamaka or vyapya, should also be noted, for a knowledge of such a negative relation is not indispensable for the forming of the notion of the permanent relation [Footnote ref 1]. The experience of a large number of particular cases in which any two things were found to coexist together in another thing in some relation associated with the non-perception of any case of failure creates an expectancy in us of inferring the presence of the gamya in that thing in which the gamaka is perceived to exist in exactly the same relation [Footnote ref 2]. In those cases where the circle of the existence of the gamya coincides with the circle of the existence of the gamaka, each of them becomes a gamaka for the other. It is clear that this form of inference not only includes all cases of cause and effect, of genus and species but also all cases of coexistence as well.

The question arises that if no inference is possible without a memory of the permanent relation, is not the self-validity of inference destroyed on that account, for memory is not regarded as self-valid. To this Kumarila's answer is that memory is not invalid, but it has not the status of pramana, as it does not bring to us a new knowledge. But inference involves the acquirement of a new knowledge in this, that though the coexistence of two things in another was known in a number of cases, yet in the present case a new case of the existence of the gamya in a thing is known from the perception of the existence of

the gamaka and this knowledge is gained by a means which is not perception, for it is only the gamaka that is seen and not the gamya. If the gamya is also seen it is no inference at all.

Page 356

As regards the number of propositions necessary for the explicit statement of the process of inference for convincing others (*pararthanumana*) both Kumarila and Prabhakara hold that three premisses are quite sufficient for inference. Thus the first three premisses *pratijna*, *hetu* and *d@rstanta* may quite serve the purpose of an *anumana*.

There are two kinds of *anumana* according to Kumarila *viz.* *pratyak@satod@rstasambandha* and *samanyatod@r@s@tasambandha*. The former is that kind of inference where the permanent

[Footnote 1: Kumarila strongly opposes a Buddhist view that concomitance (*vyapti*) is ascertained only by the negative instances and not by the positive ones.]

[Footnote 2: "*tasmadanavagate'pi sarvatranvaye sarvatas'ca vyatireke bahus'ah sahyavagamamatradeva vyabhicaradars'anasanathanuma notpattira@ngikartavya@h.*" *Nyayaratnakara*, p. 288.]

390

relation between two concrete things, as in the case of smoke and fire, has been noticed. The latter is that kind of inference where the permanent relation is observed not between two concrete things but between two general notions, as in the case of movement and change of place, e.g. the perceived cases where there is change of place there is also motion involved with it; so from the change of place of the sun its motion is inferred and it is held that this general notion is directly perceived like all universals [Footnote ref 1].

Prabhakara recognizes the need of forming the notion of the permanent relation, but he does not lay any stress on the fact that this permanent relation between two things (fire and smoke) is taken in connection with a third thing in which they both subsist. He says that the notion of the permanent relation between two things is the main point, whereas in all other associations of time and place the things in which these two subsist together are taken only as adjuncts to qualify the two things (e.g. fire and smoke). It is also necessary to recognize the fact that though the concomitance of smoke in fire is only conditional, the concomitance of the fire in smoke is unconditional and absolute [Footnote ref 2]. When such a conviction is firmly rooted in the mind that the concept of the presence of smoke involves the concept of the presence of fire, the inference of fire is made as soon as any smoke is seen. Prabhakara counts separately the fallacies of the minor (*pak@sabhasa*), of the enunciation (*pratijnabhasa*) and of the example

(*d@r@s@tantabhasa*) along with the fallacies of the middle and this seems to indicate that the Mima@msa logic was not altogether free from Buddhist influence. The cognition of smoke includes within itself the cognition of fire also, and thus there would be nothing left unknown to be cognized by the inferential cognition. But this objection has little force with Prabhakara, for he does not admit that a prama@na should necessarily bring us any new knowledge, for prama@na is simply defined as “apprehension.” So though the inferential cognition always pertains to things already known it is yet regarded by him as a prama@na, since it is in any case no doubt an apprehension.

Page 357

[Footnote 1: See *S'lokavarttika*, *Nyayaratnakara*, *S'astradipika*, *Yuktisnehapura@ni*, *Siddhantacandrika* on anumana.]

[Footnote 2: On the subject of the means of assuring oneself that there is no condition (*upadhi*) which may vitiate the inference, Prabhakara has nothing new to tell us. He says that where even after careful enquiry in a large number of cases the condition cannot be discovered we must say that it does not exist (*prayatnenanvi@syama@ne aupadhikatvanavagamat*, see *Prakara@napancika*, p. 71).]

391

Upamana, Arthapatti.

Analogy (*upamana*) is accepted by Mima@msa in a sense which is different from that in which Nyaya took it. The man who has seen a cow (*go*) goes to the forest and sees a wild ox (*gavaya*), and apprehends the similarity of the *gavaya* with the *go*, and then cognizes the similarity of the *go* (which is not within the limits of his perception then) with the *gavaya*. The cognition of this similarity of the *gavaya* in the *go*, as it follows directly from the perception of the similarity of the *go* in the *gavaya*, is called *upamana* (analogy). It is regarded as a separate *prama@na*, because by it we can apprehend the similarity existing in a thing which is not perceived at the moment. It is not mere remembrance, for at the time the *go* was seen the *gavaya* was not seen, and hence the similarity also was not seen, and what was not seen could not be remembered. The difference of Prabhakara and Kumarila on this point is that while the latter regards similarity as only a quality consisting in the fact of more than one object having the same set of qualities, the former regards it as a distinct category.

Arthapatti (implication) is a new *prama@na* which is admitted by the Mima@msa. Thus when we know that a person Devadatta is alive and perceive that he is not in the house, we cannot reconcile these two facts, viz. his remaining alive and his not being in the house without presuming his existence somewhere outside the house, and this method of cognizing the existence of Devadatta outside the house is called *arthapatti* (presumption or implication).

The exact psychological analysis of the mind in this *arthapatti* cognition is a matter on which Prabhakara and Kumarila disagree. Prabhakara holds that when a man knows that Devadatta habitually resides in his house but yet does not find him there, his knowledge that Devadatta is living (though acquired previously by some other means of proof) is made doubtful, and the cause of this doubt is that he does not find Devadatta

at his house. The absence of Devadatta from the house is not the cause of implication, but it throws into doubt the very existence of Devadatta, and thus forces us to imagine that Devadatta must remain somewhere outside. That can only be found by implication, without the hypothesis of which the doubt cannot be removed. The mere absence of Devadatta from the house is not enough for

Page 358

392

making the presumption that he is outside the house, for he might also be dead. But I know that Devadatta was living and also that he was not at home; this perception of his absence from home creates a doubt as regards my first knowledge that he is living, and it is for the removal of this doubt that there creeps in the presumption that he must be living somewhere else. The perception of the absence of Devadatta through the intermediate link of a doubt passes into the notion of a presumption that he must then remain somewhere else. In inference there is no element of doubt, for it is only when the smoke is perceived to exist beyond the least element of doubt that the inference of the fire is possible, but in presumption the perceived non-existence in the house leads to the presumption of an external existence only when it has thrown the fact of the man's being alive into doubt and uncertainty [Footnote ref 1].

Kumarila however objects to this explanation of Prabhakara, and says that if the fact that Devadatta is living is made doubtful by the absence of Devadatta at his house, then the doubt may as well be removed by the supposition that Devadatta is dead, for it does not follow that the doubt with regard to the life of Devadatta should necessarily be resolved by the supposition of his being outside the house. Doubt can only be removed when the cause or the root of doubt is removed, and it does not follow that because Devadatta is not in the house therefore he is living. If it was already known that Devadatta was living and his absence from the house creates the doubt, how then can the very fact which created the doubt remove the doubt? The cause of doubt cannot be the cause of its removal too. The real procedure of the presumption is quite the other way. The doubt about the life of Devadatta being removed by previous knowledge or by some other means, we may presume that he must be outside the house when he is found absent from the house. So there cannot be any doubt about the life of Devadatta. It is the certainty of his life associated with the perception of his absence from the house that leads us to the presumption of his external existence. There is an opposition between the life of Devadatta and his absence from the house, and the mind cannot come to rest without the presumption of his external existence. The mind oscillates between two contradictory poles both of which it accepts but

[Footnote 1: See *Prakara@napancika*, pp. 113-115.]

393

cannot reconcile, and as a result of that finds an outlet and a reconciliation in the presumption that the existence of Devadatta must be found outside the house.

Page 359

Well then, if that be so, inference may as well be interpreted as presumption. For if we say that we know that wherever there is smoke there is fire, and then perceive that there is smoke in the hill, but no fire, then the existence of the smoke becomes irreconcilable, or the universal proposition of the concomitance of smoke with fire becomes false, and hence the presumption that there is fire in the hill. This would have been all right if the universal concomitance of smoke with fire could be known otherwise than by inference. But this is not so, for the concomitance was seen only in individual cases, and from that came the inference that wherever there is smoke there is fire. It cannot be said that the concomitance perceived in individual cases suffered any contradiction without the presumption of the universal proposition (wherever there is smoke there is fire); thus arthapatti is of no avail here and inference has to be accepted. Now when it is proved that there are cases where the purpose of inference cannot be served by arthapatti, the validity of inference as a means of proof becomes established. That being done we admit that the knowledge of the fire in the hill may come to us either by inference or by arthapatti.

So inference also cannot serve the purpose of arthapatti, for in inference also it is the hetu (reason) which is known first, and later on from that the sadhya (what is to be proved); both of them however cannot be apprehended at the same moment, and it is exactly this that distinguishes arthapatti from anumana. For arthapatti takes place where, without the presumption of Devadatta's external existence, the absence from the house of Devadatta who is living cannot be comprehended. If Devadatta is living he must exist inside or outside the house. The mind cannot swallow a contradiction, and hence without presuming the external existence of Devadatta even the perceived non-existence cannot be comprehended. It is thus that the contradiction is resolved by presuming his existence outside the house. Arthapatti is thus the result of arthanupapatti or the contradiction of the present perception with a previously acquired certain knowledge.

It is by this arthapattipramana that we have to admit that there is a special potency in seeds by which they produce the

394

shoots, and that a special potency is believed to exist in sacrifices by which these can lead the sacrificer to Heaven or some such beneficent state of existence.

S'abda pramaṇa.

S'abda or word is regarded as a separate means of proof by most of the recognized Indian systems of thought excepting the Jaina, Buddhist, Carvaka and Vaiśeṣika. A discussion on this topic however has but little philosophical value and I have therefore omitted to give any attention to it in connection with the Nyaya, and the Saṃkhya-

Yoga systems. The validity and authority of the Vedas were acknowledged by all Hindu writers and they had wordy battles over

Page 360

it with the Buddhists who denied it. Some sought to establish this authority on the supposition that they were the word of God, while others, particularly the Mimamsists strove to prove that they were not written by anyone, and had no beginning in time nor end and were eternal. Their authority was not derived from the authority of any trustworthy person or God. Their words are valid in themselves. Evidently a discussion on these matters has but little value with us, though it was a very favourite theme of debate in the old days of India. It was in fact the most important subject for Mimamsa, for the *Mimamsa sutras* were written for the purpose of laying down canons for a right interpretation of the Vedas. The slight extent to which it has dealt with its own epistemological doctrines has been due solely to their laying the foundation of its structure of interpretative maxims, and not to writing philosophy for its own sake. It does not dwell so much upon salvation as other systems do, but seeks to serve as a rational compendium of maxims with the help of which the Vedas may be rightly understood and the sacrifices rightly performed. But a brief examination of the doctrine of word (*s'abda*) as a means of proof cannot be dispensed with in connection with Mimamsa as it is its very soul.

S'abda (word) as a *pramana* means the knowledge that we get about things (not within the purview of our perception) from relevant sentences by understanding the meaning of the words of which they are made up. These sentences may be of two kinds, viz. those uttered by men and those which belong to the Vedas. The first becomes a valid means of knowledge when it is not

395

uttered by untrustworthy persons and the second is valid in itself. The meanings of words are of course known to us before, and cannot therefore be counted as a means of proof; but the meanings of sentences involving a knowledge of the relations of words cannot be known by any other acknowledged means of proof, and it is for this that we have to accept *s'abda* as a separate means of proof. Even if it is admitted that the validity of any sentence may be inferred on the ground of its being uttered by a trustworthy person, yet that would not explain how we understand the meanings of sentences, for when even the name or person of a writer or speaker is not known, we have no difficulty in understanding the meaning of any sentence.

Prabhakara thinks that all sounds are in the form of letters, or are understandable as combinations of letters. The constituent letters of a word however cannot yield any meaning, and are thus to be regarded as elements of auditory perception which serve as a means for understanding the meaning of a word. The reason of our apprehension of the meaning of any word is to be found in a separate potency existing in the letters by which the denotation of the word may be comprehended. The perception of each letter-sound

Page 361

vanishes the moment it is uttered, but leaves behind an impression which combines with the impressions of the successively dying perceptions of letters, and this brings about the whole word which contains the potency of bringing about the comprehension of a certain meaning. If even on hearing a word the meaning cannot be comprehended, it has to be admitted that the hearer lacks certain auxiliaries necessary for the purpose. As the potency of the word originates from the separate potencies of the letters, it has to be admitted that the latter is the direct cause of verbal cognition. Both Prabhakara and Kumarila agree on this point.

Another peculiar doctrine expounded here is that all words have natural denotative powers by which they themselves out of their own nature refer to certain objects irrespective of their comprehension or non-comprehension by the hearer. The hearer will not understand the meaning unless it is known to him that the word in question is expressive of such and such a meaning, but the word was all along competent to denote that meaning and it is the hearer's knowledge of that fact that helps him to

396

understand the meaning of a word. Mimamsa does not think that the association of a particular meaning with a word is due to conventions among people who introduce and give meanings to the words [Footnote ref 1]. Words are thus acknowledged to be denotative of themselves. It is only about proper names that convention is admitted to be the cause of denotation. It is easy to see the bearing of this doctrine on the self-validity of the Vedic commandments, by the performance of which such results would arise as could not have been predicted by any other person. Again all words are believed to be eternally existent; but though they are ever present some manifestive agency is required by which they are manifested to us. This manifestive agency consists of the effort put forth by the man who pronounces the word. Nyaya thinks that this effort of pronouncing is the cause that produces the word while Mimam@sa thinks that it only manifests to the hearer the ever-existing word.

The process by which according to Prabhakara the meanings of words are acquired maybe exemplified thus: a senior commands a junior to bring a cow and to bind a horse, and the child on noticing the action of the junior in obedience to the senior's commands comes to understand the meaning of "cow" and "horse." Thus according to him the meanings of words can only be known from words occurring in injunctive sentences; he deduces from this the conclusion that words must denote things only as related to the other factors of the injunction (*anvitabhidhana vada*), and no word can be comprehended as having any denotation when taken apart from such a sentence. This doctrine holds that each word yields its meaning only as being generally related to other factors or only as a part of an injunctive sentence, thus the word *gam* accusative case

Page 362

of *go* (cow) means that it is intended that something is to be done with the cow or the bovine genus, and it appears only as connected with a specific kind of action, viz. bringing in the sentence *gam anaya*—bring the cow. Kumarila however thinks that words independently express separate meanings which are subsequently combined into a sentence expressing one connected idea (*abhihitānvayavada*). Thus in *gam anaya*, according to Kumarila, *gam* means the bovine class in the accusative character and *anaya* independently means

[Footnote 1: According to Nyaya God created all words and associated them with their meanings.]

397

bring; these two are then combined into the meaning “bring the cow.” But on the former theory the word *gam* means that it is connected with some kind of action, and the particular sentence only shows what the special kind of action is, as in the above sentence it appears as associated with bringing, but it cannot have any meaning separately by itself. This theory of Kumarila which is also the Nyaya theory is called *abhihitānvayavada* [Footnote ref 1].

Lastly according to Prabhakara it is only the Veda that can be called *s’abda-pramāṇa*, and only those sentences of it which contain injunctions (such as, perform this sacrifice in this way with these things). In all other cases the validity of words is only inferred on the ground of the trustworthy character of the speaker. But Kumarila considers the words of all trustworthy persons as *s’abda-pramāṇa*.

The *Pramāṇa* of Non-perception (*anupalabdhi*).

In addition to the above *pramāṇas* Kumarila admits a fifth kind of *pramāṇa*, viz. *anupalabdhi* for the perception of the non-existence of a thing. Kumarila argues that the non-existence of a thing (e.g. there is no jug in this room) cannot be perceived by the senses, for there is nothing with which the senses could come into contact in order to perceive the non-existence. Some people prefer to explain this non-perception as a case of *anumāna*. They say that wherever there is the existence of a visible object there is the vision of it by a perceiver. When there is no vision of a visible object, there is no existence of it also. But it is easy to see that such an inference presupposes the perception of want of vision and want of existence, but how these non-perceptions are to be accounted for is exactly the point to be solved. How can the perception of want of

vision or want of existence be grasped? It is for this that we have to admit a separate mode of prama@na namely anupalabdhi.

All things exist in places either in a positive (*sadrupa*) or in a negative relation (*asadrupa*), and it is only in the former case

Page 363

[Footnote 1: See *Prabhakaramima@msa* by Dr Ga@nganatha Jha and S.N. Dasgupta's *Study of Patanjali*, appendix. It may be noted in this connection that Mima@msa did not favour the Spho@ta doctrine of sound which consists in the belief that apart from the momentary sounds of letters composing a word, there was a complete word form which was manifested (spho@ta) but not created by the passing sounds of the syllables. The work of the syllable sounds is only to project this word manifestation. See Vacaspati's *Tattvabindu*, *S'lokavarttika* and *Prakara@napancika*. For the doctrine of anvita@bhidhana see Sahkanatha's *Vakyarthamat@rkav@rtti*.]

398

that they come within the purview of the senses, while in the latter case the perception of the negative existence can only be had by a separate mode of the movement of the mind which we designate as a separate prama@na as anupalabdhi. Prabhakara holds that non-perception of a visible object in a place is only the perception of the empty place, and that therefore there is no need of admitting a separate prama@na as anupalabdhi. For what is meant by empty space? If it is necessary that for the perception of the non-existence of jug there should be absolutely empty space before us, then if the place be occupied by a stone we ought not to perceive the non-existence of the jug, inasmuch as the place is not absolutely empty. If empty space is defined as that which is not associated with the jug, then the category of negation is practically admitted as a separate entity. If the perception of empty space is defined as the perception of space at the moment which we associated with a want of knowledge about the jug, then also want of knowledge as a separate entity has to be accepted, which amounts to the same thing as the admission of the want or negation of the jug. Whatever attempt may be made to explain the notion of negation by any positive conception, it will at best be an attempt to shift negation from the objective field to knowledge, or in other words to substitute for the place of the external absence of a thing an associated want of knowledge about the thing (in spite of its being a visible object) and this naturally ends in failure, for negation as a separate category has to be admitted either in the field of knowledge or in the external world. Negation or abhava as a separate category has anyhow to be admitted. It is said that at the first moment only the ground is seen without any knowledge of the jug or its negation, and then at the next moment comes the comprehension of the non-existence of the jug. But this also means that the moment of the perception of the ground is associated with the want of knowledge of the jug or its negation. But this comes to the same thing as the admission of negation as a separate category, for what other meaning can there be in the perception of "only the ground" if it is not meant that it (the perception of the ground) is associated with or qualified by the want of knowledge of the jug? For the perception of

the ground cannot generate the notion of the non-existence of the jug, since even where there is a jug the ground is perceived. The qualifying phrase that “only the ground is perceived” becomes

Page 364

399

meaningless, if things whose presence is excluded are not specified as negative conditions qualifying the perception of the ground. And this would require that we had already the notion of negation in us, which appeared to us of itself in a special manner unaccountable by other means of proof. It should also be noted that non-perception of a sensible object generates the notion of negation immediately and not through other negations, and this is true not only of things of the present moment but also of the memory of past perceptions of non-existence, as when we remember that there was no jug here. Anupalabdhi is thus a separate prama@na by which the absence or want of a sensible object—the negation of a thing—can be comprehended.

Self, Salvation, God.

Mima@msa has to accept the existence of soul, for without it who would perform the Vedic commandments, and what would be the meaning of those Vedic texts which speak of men as performing sacrifices and going to Heaven thereby? The soul is thus regarded as something entirely distinct from the body, the sense organs, and buddhi; it is eternal, omnipresent, and many, one in each body. Prabhakara thinks that it is manifested to us in all cognitions. Indeed he makes this also a proof for the existence of self as a separate entity from the body, for had it not been so, why should we have the notion of self-persistence in all our cognitions—even in those where there is no perception of the body? Kumarila however differs from Prabhakara about this analysis of the consciousness of self in our cognitions, and says that even though we may not have any notion of the parts of our body or their specific combination, yet the notion of ourselves as embodied beings always appears in all our cognitions. Moreover in our cognitions of external objects we are not always conscious of the self as the knower; so it is not correct to say that self is different from the body on the ground that the consciousness of self is present in all our cognitions, and that the body is not cognized in many of our cognitions. But the true reason for admitting that the self is different from the body is this, that movement or willing, knowledge, pleasure, pain, *etc.*, cannot be attributed to the body, for though the body exists at death these cannot then be found. So it has to be admitted that they must belong to some other entity owing to the association with which the body appears

400

to be endowed with movement *etc.* Moreover knowledge, feeling, *etc.* though apparent to the perceiver, are not yet perceived by others as other qualities of the body, as colour *etc.*, are perceived by other men. It is a general law of causation that the qualities of the constituent elements (in the cause) impart themselves to the effect, but the earth atoms of which the body is made up do not contain the qualities of knowledge *etc.*, and this also

Page 365

corroborates the inference of a separate entity as the vehicle of knowledge etc. The objection is sometimes raised that if the soul is omnipresent how can it be called an agent or a mover? But Mima@msa does not admit that movement means atomic motion, for the principle of movement is the energy which moves the atoms, and this is possessed by the omnipresent soul. It is by the energy imparted by it to the body that the latter moves. So it is that though the soul does not move it is called an agent on account of the fact that it causes the movement of the body. The self must also be understood as being different from the senses, for even when one loses some of the senses he continues to perceive his self all the same as persisting all through.

The question now arises, how is self cognized? Prabhakara holds that the self as cognizer is never cognized apart from the cognized object, nor is the object ever cognized without the cognizer entering into the cognition as a necessary factor. Both the self and the object shine forth in the self-luminous knowledge in what we have already described as tripu@ti-pratyak@sa (perception as three-together). It is not the soul which is self-illuminated but knowledge; so it is knowledge which illumines both the self and the object in one operation. But just as in the case of a man who walks, the action of walking rests upon the walker, yet he is regarded as the agent of the work and not as the object, so in the case of the operation of knowledge, though it affects the self, yet it appears as the agent and not as the object. Cognition is not soul, but the soul is manifested in cognition as its substratum, and appears in it as the cognitive element "I" which is inseparable from all cognitions. In deep sleep therefore when no object is cognized the self also is not cognized.

Kumarila however thinks that the soul which is distinct from the body is perceived by a mental perception (*manasa-pratyak@sa* as the substratum of the notion of "I," or in other words the self perceives itself by mental perception, and the perception of its

401

own nature shines forth in consciousness as the "I." The objection that the self cannot itself be both subject and object to its own operation does not hold, for it applies equally to Prabhakara's theory in which knowledge reveals the self as its object and yet considers it as the subject of the operation. The analogy of linguistic usage that though the walking affects the walker yet he is the agent, cannot be regarded as an escape from this charge, for the usage of language is not philosophical analysis. Though at the time of the cognition of objects the self is cognized, yet it does not appear as the knower of the knowledge of objects, but reveals itself as an object of a separate mental perception which is distinct from the knowledge of objects. The self is no doubt known as the substratum of "I," but the knowledge of this self does not reveal itself

Page 366

necessarily with the cognition of objects, nor does the self show itself as the knower of all knowledge of objects, but the self is apprehended by a separate mental intuition which we represent as the “I.” The self does not reveal itself as the knower but as an object of a separate intuitive process of the mind. This is indeed different from Prabhakara’s analysis, who regarded the cognition of self as inseparable from the object-cognition, both being the result of the illumination of knowledge. Kumarila agrees with Prabhakara however in holding that soul is not self-illuminating (*svayamprakas’a*), for then even in deep sleep the soul should have manifested itself; but there is no such manifestation then, and the state of deep sleep appears as an unconscious state. There is also no bliss in deep sleep, for had it been so people would not have regretted that they had missed sensual enjoyments by untimely sleep. The expression that “I slept in bliss” signifies only that no misery was felt. Moreover the opposite representation of the deep sleep state is also found when a man on rising from sleep says “I slept so long without knowing anything not even my own self.” The self is not atomic, since we can simultaneously feel a sensation in the head as well as in the leg. The Jaina theory that it is of the size of the body which contracts and expands according to the body it occupies is unacceptable. It is better therefore that the soul should be regarded as all-pervading as described in the Vedas. This self must also be different in different persons for otherwise their individual experiences of objects and of pleasure and pain cannot be explained [Footnote ref 1].

[Footnote 1: See *S’lokavarttika*, *atmavada S’astra-dipika*, *atmavada* and *mok@savada*.]

402

Kumarila considered the self to be merely the potency of knowledge (*jnanas’akti*) [Footnote ref 1]. Cognitions of things were generated by the activity of the manas and the other senses. This self itself can only be cognized by mental perception, Or at the time of salvation there being none of the senses nor the manas the self remains in pure existence as the potency of knowledge without any actual expression or manifestation. So the state of salvation is the state in which the self remains devoid of any of its characteristic qualities such as pleasure, pain, knowledge, willing, *etc.*, for the self itself is not knowledge nor is it bliss or ananda as Vedanta supposes; but these are generated in it by its energy and the operation of the senses. The self being divested of all its senses at that time, remains as a mere potency of the energy of knowledge, a mere existence. This view of salvation is accepted in the main by Prabhakara also.

Page 367

Salvation is brought about when a man enjoys and suffers the fruits of his good and bad actions and thereby exhausts them and stops the further generation of new effects by refraining from the performance of *kamya-karmas* (sacrifices *etc.* performed for the attainment of certain beneficent results) and guarantees himself against the evil effects of sin by assiduously performing the *nitya-karmas* (such as the *sandhya* prayers *etc.*, by the performance of which there is no benefit but the non-performance of which produces sins). This state is characterized by the dissolution of the body and the non-production of any further body or rebirth.

Mima@msa does not admit the existence of any God as the creator and destroyer of the universe. Though the universe is made up of parts, yet there is no reason to suppose that the universe had ever any beginning in time, or that any God created it. Every day animals and men are coming into being by the action of the parents without the operation of any God. Neither is it necessary as Nyaya supposes that *dharma* and *adharma* should have a supervisor, for these belong to the performer and

[Footnote 1: It may be mentioned in this connection that unlike Nyaya Mima@msa did not consider all activity as being only of the nature of molecular vibration (*parispanda*). It admitted the existence of energy (*s'akti*) as a separate category which manifested itself in actual movements. The self being considered as a *s'akti* can move the body and yet remain unmoved itself. Manifestation of action only means the relationing of the energy with a thing. Nyaya strongly opposes this doctrine of a non-sensible (*atindriya*) energy and seeks to explain all action by actual molecular motion.]

403

no one can have any knowledge of them. Moreover there cannot be any contact (*sa@myoga*) or inherence (*samavaya*) of *dharma* and *adharma* with God that he might supervise them; he cannot have any tools or body wherewith to fashion the world like the carpenter. Moreover he could have no motive to create the world either as a merciful or as a cruel act. For when in the beginning there were no beings towards whom should he be actuated with a feeling of mercy? Moreover he would himself require a creator to create him. So there is no God, no creator, no creation, no dissolution or *pralaya*. The world has ever been running the same, without any new creation or dissolution, *s@r@s@ti* or *pralaya*.

Mima@msa as philosophy and Mima@msa as ritualism.

Page 368

From what we have said before it will be easy to see that Mima@msa agrees in the main with Vais'e@sika about the existence of the categories of things such as the five elements, the qualities, rupa, rasa, *etc.* Kumarila's differences on the points of jati, samavaya, *etc.* and Prabhakara's peculiarities have also been mentioned before. On some of these points it appears that Kumarila was influenced by Sa@mkhya thought rather than by Nyaya. Sa@mkhya and Vais'e@sika are the only Hindu systems which have tried to construct a physics as a part of their metaphysics; other systems have generally followed them or have differed from them only on minor matters. The physics of Prabhakara and Kumarila have thus but little importance, as they agree in general with the Vais'e@sika view. In fact they were justified in not laying any special stress on this part, because for the performance of sacrifices the common-sense view of Nyaya-Vais'e@sika about the world was most suitable.

The main difference of Mima@msa with Nyaya consists of the theory of knowledge. The former was required to prove that the Veda was self-valid and that it did not derive its validity from God, and also that it was not necessary to test its validity by any other means. To do this it began by trying to establish the self-validity of all knowledge. This would secure for the Veda the advantage that as soon as its orders or injunctions were communicated to us they would appear to us as valid knowledge, and there being nothing to contradict them later on there would be nothing in the world which could render the Vedic injunctions

404

invalid. The other prama@nas such as perception, inference, *etc.* were described, firstly to indicate that they could not show to us how dharma could be acquired, for dharma was not an existing thing which could be perceived by the other prama@nas, but a thing which could only be produced by acting according to the injunctions of the Vedas. For the knowledge of dharma and adharma therefore the s'abdaprama@na of the Veda was our only source. Secondly it was necessary that we should have a knowledge of the different means of cognition, as without them it would be difficult to discuss and verify the meanings of debatable Vedic sentences. The doctrine of creation and dissolution which is recognized by all other Hindu systems could not be acknowledged by the Mima@msa as it would have endangered the eternality of the Vedas. Even God had to be dispensed with on that account.

The Veda is defined as the collection of Mantras and Brahma@nas (also called the *vidhis* or injunctive sentences). There are three classes of injunctions (1) apurva-vidhi, (2) niyama-vidhi, and (3) parisa@nkhya-vidhi. Apurva-vidhi is an order which enjoins something not otherwise known, *e.g.* the grains should be washed (we could not know that this part of the duty was necessary for the sacrifice except by the above injunction).

Page 369

Niyama-vidhi is that where when a thing could have been done in a number of ways, an order is made by the Veda which restricts us to following some definite alternative (e.g. though the chaff from the corn could be separated even by the nails, the order that "corn should be threshed" restricts us to the alternative of threshing as the only course acceptable for the sacrifice). In the niyama-vidhi that which is ordered is already known as possible but only as an alternative, and the vidhi insists upon one of these methods as the only one. In apurva-vidhi the thing to be done would have remained undone and unknown had it not been for the vidhi. In parisa@nkhya-vidhi all that is enjoined is already known but not necessarily as possible alternatives. A certain mantra "I take up the rein" (*imam ag@rbhna@m ras'ana@m*) which could be used in a number of cases should not however be used at the time of holding the reins of an ass.

There are three main principles of interpreting the Vedic sentences. (1) When some sentences are such that connectively they yield a meaning but not individually, then they should be

405

taken together connectively as a whole. (2) If the separate sentences can however yield meanings separately by themselves they should not be connected together. (3) In the case of certain sentences which are incomplete suitable words from the context of immediately preceding sentences are to be supplied.

The vidhis properly interpreted are the main source of dharma. The mantras which are generally hymns in praise of some deities or powers are to be taken as being for the specification of the deity to whom the libation is to be offered. It should be remembered that as dharma can only be acquired by following the injunctions of the Vedas they should all be interpreted as giving us injunctions. Anything therefore found in the Vedas which cannot be connected with the injunctive orders as forming part of them is to be regarded as untrustworthy or at best inexpressive. Thus it is that those sentences in the Vedas which describe existing things merely or praise some deed of injunction (called the *arthavadas*) should be interpreted as forming part of a vidhi-vakya (injunction) or be rejected altogether. Even those expressions which give reasons for the performance of certain actions are to be treated as mere arthavadas and interpreted as praising injunctions. For Vedas have value only as mandates by the performance of which dharma may be acquired.

When a sacrifice is performed according to the injunctions of the Vedas, a capacity which did not exist before and whose existence is proved by the authority of the scriptures is generated either in the action or in the agent. This capacity or positive force called *apurva* produces in time the beneficent results of the sacrifice (e.g. leads

the performer to Heaven). This apurva is like a potency or faculty in the agent which abides in him until the desired results follow [Footnote ref 1].

Page 370

It is needless to dilate upon these, for the voluminous works of S'abara and Kumarila make an elaborate research into the nature of sacrifices, rituals, and other relevant matters in great detail, which anyhow can have but little interest for a student of philosophy.

[Footnote 1: See Dr Ga@nganatha Jha's *Prabhakaramima@msa* and Madhava's *Nyayamalavistara*.]

406

CHAPTER X

THE S'A@NKARA SCHOOL OF VEDANTA

Comprehension of the philosophical Issues more essential than the Dialectic of controversy.

Prama@na in Sanskrit signifies the means and the movement by which knowledge is acquired, *pramata* means the subject or the knower who cognizes, *prama* the result of *prama@na*—right knowledge, *prameya* the object of knowledge, and *prama@nya* the validity of knowledge acquired. The validity of knowledge is sometimes used in the sense of the faithfulness of knowledge to its object, and sometimes in the sense of an inner notion of validity in the mind of the subject—the knower (that his perceptions are true), which moves him to work in accordance with his perceptions to adapt himself to his environment for the attainment of pleasurable and the avoidance of painful things. The question wherein consists the *prama@nya* of knowledge has not only an epistemological and psychological bearing but a metaphysical one also. It contains on one side a theory of knowledge based on an analysis of psychological experience, and on the other indicates a metaphysical situation consistent with the theory of knowledge. All the different schools tried to justify a theory of knowledge by an appeal to the analysis and interpretation of experience which the others sometimes ignored or sometimes regarded as unimportant. The thinkers of different schools were accustomed often to meet together and defeat one another in actual debates, and the result of these debates was frequently very important in determining the prestige of any school of thought. If a Buddhist for example could defeat a great Nyaya or Mima@msa thinker in a great public debate attended by many learned scholars from different parts of the country, his fame at once spread all over the country and he could probably secure a large number of followers on the spot. Extensive tours of disputation were

often undertaken by great masters all over the country for the purpose of defeating the teachers of the opposite schools and of securing adherents to their own. These debates were therefore not generally conducted merely in a passionless philosophical

407

Page 371

mood with the object of arriving at the truth but in order to inflict a defeat on opponents and to establish the ascendancy of some particular school of thought. It was often a sense of personal victory and of the victory of the school of thought to which the debater adhered that led him to pursue the debate. Advanced Sanskrit philosophical works give us a picture of the attitude of mind of these debaters and we find that most of these debates attempt to criticize the different schools of thinkers by exposing their inconsistencies and self-contradictions by close dialectical reasoning, anticipating the answers of the opponent, asking him to define his statements, and ultimately proving that his theory was inconsistent, led to contradictions, and was opposed to the testimony of experience. In reading an advanced work on Indian philosophy in the original, a student has to pass through an interminable series of dialectic arguments, and negative criticisms (to thwart opponents) sometimes called *vita@n@da*, before he can come to the root of the quarrel, the real philosophical divergence. All the resources of the arts of controversy find full play for silencing the opponent before the final philosophical answer is given. But to a modern student of philosophy, who belongs to no party and is consequently indifferent to the respective victory of either side, the most important thing is the comprehension of the different aspects from which the problem of the theory of knowledge and its associated metaphysical theory was looked at by the philosophers, and also a clear understanding of the deficiency of each view, the value of the mutual criticisms, the speculations on the experience of each school, their analysis, and their net contribution to philosophy. With Vedanta we come to an end of the present volume, and it may not be out of place here to make a brief survey of the main conflicting theories from the point of view of the theory of knowledge, in order to indicate the position of the Vedanta of the S'a@nkara school in the field of Indian philosophy so far as we have traversed it. I shall therefore now try to lay before my readers the solution of the theory of knowledge (*prama@navada*) reached by some of the main schools of thought. Their relations to the solution offered by the S'a@nkara Vedanta will also be dealt with, as we shall attempt to sketch the views of the Vedanta later on in this chapter.

408

The philosophical situation. A Review.

Before dealing with the Vedanta system it seems advisable to review the general attitude of the schools already discussed to the main philosophical and epistemological questions which determine the position of the Vedanta as taught by S'a@nkara and his school.

Page 372

The Sautrantika Buddhist says that in all his affairs man is concerned with the fulfilment of his ends and desires (*puru@sadrta*). This however cannot be done without right knowledge (*samyagjnana*) which rightly represents things to men. Knowledge is said to be right when we can get things just as we perceived them. So far as mere representation or illumination of objects is concerned, it is a patent fact that we all have knowledge, and therefore this does not deserve criticism or examination. Our enquiry about knowledge is thus restricted to its aspect of later verification or contradiction in experience, for we are all concerned to know how far our perceptions of things which invariably precede all our actions can be trusted as rightly indicating what we want to get in our practical experience (*arthapradpakatva*). The perception is right (*abhranta* non-illusory) when following its representation we can get in the external world such things as were represented by it (*sa@mvadakatva*). That perception alone can be right which is generated by the object and not merely supplied by our imagination. When I say “this is the cow I had seen,” what I see is the object with the brown colour, horns, feet, etc., but the fact that this is called cow, or that this is existing from a past time, is not perceived by the visual sense, as this is not generated by the visual object. For all things are momentary, and that which I see now never existed before so as to be invested with this or that permanent name. This association of name and permanence to objects perceived is called *kaipana* or *abhilapa*. Our perception is correct only so far as it is without the *abhilapa* association (*kalpanapo@dha*), for though this is taken as a part of our perceptual experience it is not derived from the object, and hence its association with the object is an evident error. The object as unassociated with name—the *nirvikalpa*—is thus what is perceived. As a result of the *pratyak@sa* the *manovijnana* or thought and mental perception of pleasure and pain is also determined. At one moment perception reveals the object as an

409

object of knowledge (*grahya*), and by the fact of the rise of such a percept, at another moment it appears as a thing realizable or attainable in the external world. The special features of the object undefinable in themselves as being what they are in themselves (*svalak@sa@na*) are what is actually perceived (*pratyak@savi@saya*) [Footnote ref 1]. The *prama@naphala* (result of perception) is the

[Footnote 1: There is a difference of opinion about the meaning of the word “*svalak@sa@na*” of Dharmakirti between my esteemed friend Professor Stcherbatsky of Petrograd and myself. He maintains that Dharmakirti held that the content of the presentative element at the moment of perception was almost totally

Page 373

empty. Thus he writes to me, “According to your interpretation svalak@sa@na mean, —the object (or idea with Vijñanavadin) *from which everything past and everything future has been eliminated*, this I do not deny at all. But I maintain that if everything past and future has been taken away, what remains? *The present* and the present is a k@sa@na i.e. nothing.... The reverse of k@sa@na is a k@sa@nasamtana or simply sa@mtana and in every sa@mtana there is a synthesis ekibhava of moments past and future, produced by the intellect (buddhi = nis’caya = kalpana = adhyavasaya)...There is in the perception of a jug *something* (a k@sa@na of sense knowledge) which we must distinguish from the *idea* of a jug (which is always a sa@mtana, always vikalpita), and if you take the idea away in a strict unconditional sense, no knowledge remains: k@sanasya jñanena prapayitumas’akyatvat. This is absolutely the Kantian teaching about *Synthesis of Apprehension*. Accordingly pratyak@sa is a *transcendental* source of knowledge, because practically speaking it gives no knowledge at all. This prama@na is *asatkālpa*. Kant says that without the elements of intuition (= sense-knowledge = pratyak@sa = kalpanapo@dha) our cognitions would be empty and without the elements of intellect (kalpana = buddhi = synthesis = ekibhava) they would be blind. Empirically both are always combined. This is exactly the theory of Dharmakīrti. He is a Vijñanavādi as I understand, because he maintains the cognizability of ideas (vijñana) alone, but the reality is an incognizable foundation of our knowledge; he admits, it is bahya, it is artha, it is arthakriyak@sa@na = svalak@sa@na; that is the reason for which he sometimes is called Sautrāntika and this school is sometimes called Sautrānta-vijñanavāda, as opposed to the Vijñanavāda of As’vaghosha and Āryasāṅga, which had no elaborate theory of cognition. If the jug as it exists in our representation were the svalak@sa@na and paramarthasat, what would remain of Vijñanavāda? But there is the perception of the jug as opposed to the *pure idea* of a jug (s’uddha kalpana), an element of reality, the sensational k@sa@na, which is communicated to us by sense knowledge. Kant’s ‘thing in itself’ is also a k@sa@na and also an element of sense knowledge of pure sense as opposed to pure reason, Dharmakīrti has also s’uddha kalpana and s’uddham pratyak@sam. ...And very interesting is the opposition between pratyak@sa and anumana, the first moves from k@sa@na to sa@mtana and the second from sa@mtana to k@sa@na, that is the reason that although bhranta the anumana is nevertheless prama@na because through it we indirectly also reach k@sa@na, the arthakriyak@sa@na. It is bhranta directly and prama@na indirectly; pratyak@sa is prama@na directly and bhranta (asatkālpa) indirectly... ” So far as the passages to which Professor Stcherbatsky refers are concerned, I am in full agreement with

Page 374

him. But I think that he pushes the interpretation too far on Kantian lines. When I perceive “this is blue,” the perception consists of two parts, the actual presentative element of sense-knowledge (*svalak@sa@na*) and the affirmation (*nis’caya*). So far we are in complete agreement. But Professor Stcherbatsky says that this sense-knowledge is a *k@sa@na* (moment) and is nothing. I also hold that it is a *k@sa@na*, but it is nothing only in the sense that it is not the same as the notion involving affirmation such as “this is blue.” The affirmative process occurring at the succeeding moments is determined by the presentative element of the first moment (*pratyak@sabalotpanna* N.T., p. 20) but this presentative element divested from the product of the affirmative process of the succeeding moments is not characterless, though we cannot express its character; as soon as we try to express it, names and other ideas consisting of affirmation are associated and these did not form a part of the presentative element. Its own character is said to be its own specific nature (*svalak@sa@na*). But what is this specific nature? Dharmakirti’s answer on this point is that by specific nature he means those specific characteristics of the object which appear clear when the object is near and hazy when it is at a distance (*yasyarthasya sannidhanasannidhanabkyaṃ jñānapratibhasabhedastat svalak@sa@nam* N., p. 1 and N.T., p. 16). Sense-knowledge thus gives us the specific characteristics of the object, and this has the same form as the object itself; it is the appearance of the “blue” in its specific character in the mind and when this is associated by the affirmative or ideational process, the result is the concept or idea “this is blue” (*nilasarupa@m pratyak@samanubhuyamana@m nilabodharupamavasthapyate ... nilasarupyamasya prama@nam nilavikalpanarupa@m tvasya prama@naphalam*, N.T.p. 22). At the first moment there is the appearance of the blue (*nilanirbhasa@m hi vijñānam*, N.T. 19) and this is direct acquaintance (*yatkincit arthasya sak@satkarijñānam tatpratyak@samucyate*, N.T. 7) and this is real (*paramarthasat*) and valid. This blue sensation is different from the idea “this is blue” (*nilabodha*, N.T. 22) which is the result of the former (*prama@naphala*) through the association of the affirmative process (*adhyavasaya*) and is regarded as invalid for it contains elements other than what were presented to the sense and is a *vikalpapratyaya*. In my opinion *svalak@sa@na* therefore means pure sensation of the moment presenting the specific features of the object and with Dharmakirti this is the only thing which is valid in perception and *vikalpapratyaya* or *pramanaphala* is the idea or concept which follows it. But though the latter is a product of the former, yet, being the construction of succeeding moments, it cannot give us the pure stage of the first moment of sensation-presentation (*k@sa@nasya prapayitumas’akyatvat*, N.T. 16). N.T. = *Nyayabindu@tika*, N = *Nyayabindu* (Peterson’s edition).]

Page 375

410

ideational concept and power that such knowledge has of showing the means which being followed the thing can be got (*yena k@rtena artha@h prapito bhavati*). Prama@na then is the similarity of the knowledge with the object by which it is generated, by which we assure ourselves that this is our knowledge of the object as it is perceived, and are thus led to attain it by practical experience. Yet this later stage is prama@naphala and not prama@na which consists merely in the vision of the thing (devoid of other associations), and which determines the attitude of the perceiver towards the perceived object. The prama@na therefore only refers to the newly-acquired knowledge (*anadhigatadhigant@r*) as this is of use to the perceiver in determining his relations with the objective world. This account of perception leaves out the real epistemological question as to how the knowledge is generated by the external world, or what it is in itself. It only looks to the correctness or faithfulness of the perception to the object and its value for us in the practical realization of our ends. The question of the relation of the external world with knowledge as determining the latter is regarded as unimportant.

411

The Yogacaras or idealistic Buddhists take their cue from the above-mentioned Sautrantika Buddhists, and say that since we can come into touch with knowledge and knowledge alone, what is the use of admitting an external world of objects as the data of sensation determining our knowledge? You say that sensations are copies of the external world, but why should you say that they copy, and not that they alone exist? We never come into touch with objects in themselves; these can only be grasped by us simultaneously with knowledge of them, they must therefore be the same as knowledge (*sahopalambhaniyamat abhedo nilataddhiyo@h*); for it is in and through knowledge that external objects can appear to us, and without knowledge we are not in touch with the so-called external objects. So it is knowledge which is self-apparent in itself, that projects itself in such a manner as to appear as referring to other external objects. We all acknowledge that in dreams there are no external objects, but even there we have knowledge. The question why then if there are no external objects, there should be so much diversity in the forms of knowledge, is not better solved by the assumption of an external world; for in such an assumption, the external objects have to be admitted as possessing the infinitely diverse powers of diversely affecting and determining our knowledge; that being so, it may rather be said that in the beginningless series of flowing knowledge, preceding knowledge-moments by virtue of their inherent specific qualities determine the succeeding knowledge-moments. Thus knowledge alone exists; the projection of an external world is an illusion of knowledge brought about by beginningless potencies of desire (*vasana*)

Page 376

associated with it. The preceding knowledge determines the succeeding one and that another and so on. Knowledge, pleasure, pain, *etc.* are not qualities requiring a permanent entity as soul in which they may inhere, but are the various forms in which knowledge appears. Even the cognition, "I perceive a blue thing," is but a form of knowledge, and this is often erroneously interpreted as referring to a permanent knower. Though the cognitions are all passing and momentary, yet so long as the series continues to be the same, as in the case of one person, say Devadatta, the phenomena of memory, recognition, *etc.* can happen in the succeeding moments, for these are evidently illusory cognitions, so far as they refer to the permanence of the objects

412

believed to have been perceived before, for things or knowledge-moments, whatever they may be, are destroyed the next moment after their birth. There is no permanent entity as perceiver or knower, but the knowledge-moments are at once the knowledge, the knower and the known. This thoroughgoing idealism brushes off all references to an objective field of experience, interprets the verdict of knowledge as involving a knower and the known as mere illusory appearance, and considers the flow of knowledge as a self-determining series in successive objective forms as the only truth. The Hindu schools of thought, Nyaya, Sa@mkhya, and the Mima@msa, accept the duality of soul and matter, and attempt to explain the relation between the two. With the Hindu writers it was not the practical utility of knowledge that was the only important thing, but the nature of knowledge and the manner in which it came into being were also enquired after and considered important.

Prama@na is defined by Nyaya as the collocation of instruments by which unerring and indubitable knowledge comes into being. The collocation of instruments which brings about definite knowledge consists partly of consciousness (*bodha*) and partly of material factors (*bodhabodhasvabhava*). Thus in perception the proper contact of the visual sense with the object (e.g. jug) first brings about a non-intelligent, non-apprehensible indeterminate consciousness (*nirvikalpa*) as the jugness (*gha@tatva*) and this later on combining with the remaining other collocations of sense-contact *etc.* produces the determinate consciousness: this is a jug. The existence of this indeterminate state of consciousness as a factor in bringing about the determinate consciousness, cannot of course be perceived, but its existence can be inferred from the fact that if the perceiver were not already in possession of the qualifying factor (*vis'e@sanajnana* as jugness) he could not have comprehended the qualified object (*vis'i@s@tabuddhi*) the jug (i.e. the object which possesses jugness). In inference (*anuma@na*) knowledge of the li@nga takes part, and in upamana the sight of similarity with other material conglomerations. In the case of the Buddhists knowledge itself was regarded as prama@na; even by those who admitted the existence of the objective world, right knowledge was called

prama@na, because it was of the same form as the external objects it represented, and it was by the form of the knowledge (e.g. blue) that we could apprehend that the

Page 377

413

external object was also blue. Knowledge does not determine the external world but simply enforces our convictions about the external world. So far as knowledge leads us to form our convictions of the external world it is *prama@na*, and so far as it determines our attitude towards the external world it is *prama@naphala*. The question how knowledge is generated had little importance with them, but how with knowledge we could form convictions of the external world was the most important thing. Knowledge was called *prama@na*, because it was the means by which we could form convictions (*adhyavasaya*) about the external world. Nyaya sought to answer the question how knowledge was generated in us, but could not understand that knowledge was not a mere phenomenon like any other objective phenomenon, but thought that though as a *gu@na* (quality) it was external like other *gu@nas*, yet it was associated with our self as a result of collocations like any other happening in the material world. *Prama@na* does not necessarily bring to us new knowledge (*anadhigatadhi-gant@r*) as the Buddhists demanded, but whensoever there were collocations of *prama@na*, knowledge was produced, no matter whether the object was previously unknown or known. Even the knowledge of known things may be repeated if there be suitable collocations. Knowledge like any other physical effect is produced whenever the cause of it namely the *prama@na* collocation is present. Categories which are merely mental such as class (*samanya*), inherence (*samavaya*), *etc.*, were considered as having as much independent existence as the atoms of the four elements. The phenomenon of the rise of knowledge in the soul was thus conceived to be as much a phenomenon as the turning of the colour of the jug by fire from black to red. The element of indeterminate consciousness was believed to be combining with the sense contact, the object, *etc.* to produce the determinate consciousness. There was no other subtler form of movement than the molecular. Such a movement brought about by a certain collocation of things ended in a certain result (*phala*). Jnana (knowledge) was thus the result of certain united collocations (*samagri*) and their movements (e.g. contact of manas with soul, of manas with the senses, of the senses with the object, *etc.*). This confusion renders it impossible to understand the real philosophical distinction between knowledge and an external event of the objective world. Nyaya thus fails to explain the cause

414

of the origin of knowledge, and its true relations with the objective world. Pleasure, pain, willing, *etc.* were regarded as qualities which belonged to the soul, and the soul itself was regarded as a qualityless entity which could not be apprehended directly but was inferred as that in which the qualities of jnana, sukha (pleasure), *etc.* inhered. Qualities had independent existence as much as substances, but

Page 378

when any new substances were produced, the qualities rushed forward and inhered in them. It is very probable that in Nyaya the cultivation of the art of inference was originally pre-eminent and metaphysics was deduced later by an application of the inferential method which gave the introspective method but little scope for its application, so that inference came in to explain even perception (e.g. this is a jug since it has jugness) and the testimony of personal psychological experience was taken only as a supplement to corroborate the results arrived at by inference and was not used to criticize it [Footnote ref 1].

Sa@mkhya understood the difference between knowledge and material events. But so far as knowledge consisted in being the copy of external things, it could not be absolutely different from the objects themselves; it was even then an invisible translucent sort of thing, devoid of weight and grossness such as the external objects possessed. But the fact that it copies those gross objects makes it evident that knowledge had essentially the same substances though in a subtler form as that of which the objects were made. But though the matter of knowledge, which assumed the form of the objects with which it came in touch, was probably thus a subtler combination of the same elementary substances of which matter was made up, yet there was in it another element, viz. intelligence, which at once distinguished it as utterly different from material combinations. This element of intelligence is indeed different from the substances or content of the knowledge itself, for the element of intelligence is like a stationary light, "the self," which illuminates the crowding, bustling knowledge which is incessantly changing its form in accordance with the objects with which it comes in touch. This light of intelligence is the same that finds its manifestation in consciousness as the "I," the changeless entity amidst all the fluctuations of the changeful procession of knowledge. How this element of light which is foreign to the substance of knowledge

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamanjari* on prama@na.]

415

relates itself to knowledge, and how knowledge itself takes it up into itself and appears as conscious, is the most difficult point of the Sa@mkhya epistemology and metaphysics. The substance of knowledge copies the external world, and this copy-shape of knowledge is again intelligized by the pure intelligence (*purusa*) when it appears as conscious. The forming of the buddhi-shape of knowledge is thus the prama@na (instrument and process of knowledge) and the validity or invalidity of any of

these shapes is criticized by the later shapes of knowledge and not by the external objects (*svata@h-prama@nya* and *svata@h-aprama@nya*). The *prama@na* however can lead to a *prama* or right knowledge only when it is intelligized by the *puru@sa*.

Page 379

The puru@sa comes in touch with buddhi not by the ordinary means of physical contact but by what may be called an inexplicable transcendental contact. It is the transcendental influence of puru@sa that sets in motion the original prak@rti in Sa@mkhya metaphysics, and it is the same transcendent touch (call it yogyata according to Vacaspati or samyoga according to Bhik@su) of the transcendent entity of puru@sa that transforms the non-intelligent states of buddhi into consciousness. The Vijñānavādin Buddhist did not make any distinction between the pure consciousness and its forms (*ākāra*) and did not therefore agree that the *ākāra* of knowledge was due to its copying the objects. Sa@mkhya was however a realist who admitted the external world and regarded the forms as all due to copying, all stamped as such upon a translucent substance (*sattva*) which could assume the shape of the objects. But Sa@mkhya was also transcendentalist in this, that it did not think like Nyaya that the *ākāra* of knowledge was all that knowledge had to show; it held that there was a transcendent element which shone forth in knowledge and made it conscious. With Nyaya there was no distinction between the shaped buddhi and the intelligence, and that being so consciousness was almost like a physical event. With Sa@mkhya however so far as the content and the shape manifested in consciousness were concerned it was indeed a physical event, but so far as the pure intelligizing element of consciousness was concerned it was a wholly transcendent affair beyond the scope and province of physics. The rise of consciousness was thus at once both transcendent and physical.

The Mima@msist Prabhakara agreed with Nyaya in general as regards the way in which the objective world and sense contact

416

induced knowledge in us. But it regarded knowledge as a unique phenomenon which at once revealed itself, the knower and the known. We are not concerned with physical collocations, for whatever these may be it is knowledge which reveals things—the direct apprehension that should be called the prama@na. Prama@na in this sense is the same as pramiti or prama, the phenomenon of apprehension. Prama@na may also indeed mean the collocations so far as they induce the prama. For prama or right knowledge is never produced, it always exists, but it manifests itself differently under different circumstances. The validity of knowledge means the conviction or the specific attitude that is generated in us with reference to the objective world. This validity is manifested with the rise of knowledge, and it does not await the verdict of any later experience in the objective field (*sa@mvadin*). Knowledge as *nirvikalpa* (indeterminate) means the whole knowledge of the object and not merely a non-sensible hypothetical indeterminate class-notion as Nyaya holds. The *savikalpa* (determinate) knowledge only re-establishes the knowledge thus formed by relating it with other objects as represented by memory [Footnote ref 1].

Page 380

Prabhakara rejected the Sa@mkhya conception of a dual element in consciousness as involving a transcendent intelligence (*cit*) and a material part, the buddhi; but it regarded consciousness as an unique thing which by itself in one flash represented both the knower and the known. The validity of knowledge did not depend upon its faithfulness in reproducing or indicating (*pradars'akatva*) external objects, but upon the force that all direct apprehension (*anubhuti*) has of prompting us to action in the external world; knowledge is thus a complete and independent unit in all its self-revealing aspects. But what the knowledge was in itself apart from its self-revealing character Prabhakara did not enquire.

Kumarila declared that jnana (knowledge) was a movement brought about by the activity of the self which resulted in producing consciousness (*jnatata*) of objective things. Jnana itself cannot be perceived, but can only be inferred as the movement necessary for producing the jnatata or consciousness of things. Movement with Kumarila was not a mere atomic vibration, but was a non-sensuous transcendent operation of which vibration

[Footnote 1: Sa@mkhya considered nirvikalpa as the dim knowledge of the first moment of consciousness, which, when it became clear at the next moment, was called savikalpa.]

417

was sometimes the result. Jnana was a movement and not the result of causal operation as Nyaya supposed. Nyaya would not also admit any movement on the part of the self, but it would hold that when the self is possessed of certain qualities, such as desire, etc., it becomes an instrument for the accomplishment of a physical movement. Kumarila accords the same self-validity to knowledge that Prabhakara gives. Later knowledge by experience is not endowed with any special quality which should decide as to the validity of the knowledge of the previous movement. For what is called sa@mvadi or later testimony of experience is but later knowledge and nothing more [Footnote ref 1]. The self is not revealed in the knowledge of external objects, but we can know it by a mental perception of self-consciousness. It is the movement of this self in presence of certain collocating circumstances leading to cognition of things that is called jnana [Footnote ref 2]. Here Kumarila distinguishes knowledge as movement from knowledge as objective consciousness. Knowledge as movement was beyond sense perception and could only be inferred.

Page 381

The idealistic tendency of Vijñānavāda Buddhism, Sāṃkhya, and Mīmāṃsā was manifest in its attempt at establishing the unique character of knowledge as being that with which alone we are in touch. But Vijñānavāda denied the external world, and thereby did violence to the testimony of knowledge. Sāṃkhya admitted the external world but created a gulf between the content of knowledge and pure intelligence; Prabhakara ignored this difference, and was satisfied with the introspective assertion that knowledge was such a unique thing that it revealed with itself, the knower and the known, Kumārila however admitted a transcendent element of movement as being the cause of our objective consciousness, but regarded this as being separate from self. But the question remained unsolved as to why, in spite of the unique character of knowledge, knowledge could relate itself to the world of objects, how far the world of external objects or of knowledge could be regarded as absolutely true. Hitherto judgments were only relative, either referring to one's being prompted to the objective world, to the faithfulness of the representation of objects, the suitability of fulfilling our requirements, or to verification by later

[Footnote 1: See *Nyāyaratnamāla*, svataḥ-pramāṇya-nirṇaya.]

[Footnote 2: See *Nyāyamanjari* on Pramāṇa, *S'lokavarttika* on Pratyakṣa, and Gāga Bhāṭṭa's *Bhāṭṭatācintamāṇi* on Pratyakṣa.]

418

uncontradicted experience. But no enquiry was made whether any absolute judgments about the ultimate truth of knowledge and matter could be made at all. That which appeared was regarded as the real. But the question was not asked, whether there was anything which could be regarded as absolute truth, the basis of all appearance, and the unchangeable, reality. This philosophical enquiry had the most wonderful charm for the Hindu mind.

Vedānta Literature.

It is difficult to ascertain the time when the *Brahma-sūtras* were written, but since they contain a refutation of almost all the other Indian systems, even of the Sūnyavāda Buddhism (of course according to Sāṅkara's interpretation), they cannot have been written very early. I think it may not be far from the truth in supposing that they were written some time in the second century B.C. About the period 780 A.D. Gauḍapāda revived the monistic teaching of the Upaniṣads by his commentary on the Māṇḍūkya Upaniṣad in verse called *Māṇḍūkyakārika*. His disciple Govinda

was the teacher of S'a@nkara (788—820 A.D.). S'a@nkara's commentary on the *Brahma-sutras* is the root from which sprang forth a host of commentaries and studies on Vedantism of great originality, vigour, and philosophic insight. Thus Anandagiri, a disciple of S'a@nkara, wrote a commentary called *Nyayanir@naya*, and Govindananda

Page 382

wrote another commentary named *Ratna-prabha*. Vacaspati Mis'ra, who flourished about 841 A.D., wrote another commentary on it called the *Bhamati*. Amalananda (1247—1260 A.D.) wrote his *Kalpataru* on it, and Apyayadik@sitā (1550 A.D.) son of Ra@ngarajadhvarindra of Kanci wrote his *Kalpataruparimala* on the *Kalpataru*. Another disciple of S'a@nkara, Padmapada, also called Sanandana, wrote a commentary on it known as *Pancapadika*. From the manner in which the book is begun one would expect that it was to be a running commentary on the whole of S'a@nkara's bhasya, but it ends abruptly at the end of the fourth sutra. Madhava (1350), in his *S'a@nkaravijaya*, recites an interesting story about it. He says that Sures'vara received S'a@nkara's permission to write a varttika on the bhasya. But other pupils objected to S'a@nkara that since Sures'vara was formerly a great Mima@msist (Ma@n@dana Misra was called Sures'vara after his conversion to Vedantism) he was not competent to write

419

a good *varttika* on the bha@sya. Sures'vara, disappointed, wrote a treatise called *Nai@skarmyasiddhi*. Padmapada wrote a @tika but this was burnt in his uncle's house. S'a@nkara, who had once seen it, recited it from memory and Padmapada wrote it down. Prakas'atman (1200) wrote a commentary on Padmapada's *Pancapadika* known as *Pancapadikavivara@na*. Akha@n@dananda wrote his *Tattvadipana*, and the famous N@rsi@mhas'rama Muni (1500) wrote his *Vivara@nabhavaprakas'ika* on it. Amalananda and Vidyasagara also wrote commentaries on *Pancapadika*, named *Pancapadikadarpa@na* and *Pancapadika@tika* respectively, but the *Pancapadikavivara@na* had by far the greatest reputation. Vidyara@nya who is generally identified by some with Madhava (1350) wrote his famous work *Vivara@naprameyasa@mgraha* [Footnote ref 1], elaborating the ideas of *Pancapadikavivara@na*; Vidyara@nya wrote also another excellent work named *Jivanmuktiviveka* on the Vedanta doctrine of emancipation. Sures'vara's (800 A.D.) excellent work *Nai@skarmyasiddhi* is probably the earliest independent treatise on S'a@nkara's philosophy as expressed in his bha@sya. It has been commented upon by Jnanottama Mis'ra. Vidyara@nya also wrote another work of great merit known as *Pancadas'i*, which is a very popular and illuminating treatise in verse on Vedanta. Another important work written in verse on the main teachings of S'a@nkara's bha@sya is *Sa@mk@sepas'ariraka*, written by Sarvajnatma Muni (900 A.D.). This has also been commented upon by Ramatirtha. S'rihar@sa (1190 A.D.) wrote his *Kha@n@danakha@n@dakhadya*, the most celebrated work on the Vedanta dialectic. Citsukha, who probably flourished shortly after S'rihar@sa, wrote a commentary on it, and also wrote an independent work on Vedanta dialectic known as *Tattvadipika* which has also a commentary called *Nayanaprasadini*

Page 383

written by Pratyagrupa. S'a@nkara Mis'ra and Raghunatha also wrote commentaries on *Kha@n@danakha@n@dakhadya*. A work on Vedanta epistemology and the principal topics of Vedanta of great originality and merit known as *Vedantaparibha@sa* was written by Dharmarajadhvarindra (about 1550A.D.). His son Ramak@r@snadhvarin wrote his *S'ikhama@ni* on it and Amaradasa his *Ma@niprabha*. The *Vedantaparibha@sa* with these two commentaries forms an excellent exposition of some of the fundamental principles of Vedanta. Another work of supreme importance

[Footnote 1: See Narasi@mhacarya's article in the *Indian Antiquary*, 1916.]

420

(though probably the last great work on Vedanta) is the *Advaitasiddhi* of Madhusudana Sarasvati who followed Dharmarajadhvarindra. This has three commentaries known as *Gau@dabrahmanandi*, *Vi@t@thales'opadhyayi* and *Siddhivyakhya*. Sadananda Vyasa wrote also a summary of it known as *Advaitasiddhisiddhantasara*. Sadananda wrote also an excellent elementary work named *Vedantasara* which has also two commentaries *Subodhini* and *Vidvanmanoranjini*. The *Advaitabrahmasiddhi* of Sadananda Yati though much inferior to *Advaitasiddhi* is important, as it touches on many points of Vedanta interest which are not dealt with in other Vedanta works. The *Nyayamakaranda* of Anandabodha Bha@t@tarakacaryya treats of the doctrines of illusion very well, as also some other important points of Vedanta interest. *Vedantasiddhantamuktavali* of Prakas'ananda discusses many of the subtle points regarding the nature of ajnana and its relations to cit, the doctrine of *d@r@stis@r@stivada*, etc., with great clearness. *Siddhantales'a by Apyayadik@sita* is very important as a summary of the divergent views of different writers on many points of interest. *Vedantatattvadipika* and *Siddhantatattva* are also good as well as deep in their general summary of the Vedanta system. *Bhedadhikkara* of Nrsi@mhas'rama Muni also is to be regarded as an important work on the Vedanta dialectic.

The above is only a list of some of the most important Vedanta works on which the present chapter has been based.

Vedanta in Gau@dapada.

It is useless I think to attempt to bring out the meaning of the Vedanta thought as contained in the *Brahma-sutras* without making any reference to the commentary of S'a@nkara or any other commentator. There is reason to believe that the *Brahma-sutras* were first commented upon by some Vai@s@nava writers who held some form

of modified dualism [Footnote ref 1]. There have been more than a half dozen Vai@s@nava commentators of the *Brahma-sutras* who not only differed from S'a@nkara's interpretation, but also differed largely amongst themselves in accordance with the different degrees of stress they laid on the different aspects of their dualistic creeds. Every one of them claimed that his interpretation was the only one that was faithful to the sutras and to

Page 384

[Footnote 1: This point will be dealt with in the 2nd volume, when I shall deal with the systems expounded by the Vai@s@nava commentators of the *Brahma-sutras*.]

421

the Upani@sads. Should I attempt to give an interpretation myself and claim that to be the right one, it would be only just one additional view. But however that may be, I am myself inclined to believe that the dualistic interpretations of the *Brahma-sutras* were probably more faithful to the sutras than the interpretations of S'ankara.

The *S'rimadbhagavadgita*, which itself was a work of the Ekanti (singularistic) Vai@s@navas, mentions the *Brahma-sutras* as having the same purport as its own, giving cogent reasons [Footnote ref 1]. Professor Jacobi in discussing the date of the philosophical sutras of the Hindus has shown that the references to Buddhism found in the *Brahma-sutras* are not with regard to the Vijnana-vada of Vasubandhu, but with regard to the S'unyavada, but he regards the composition of the *Brahma-sutras* to be later than Nagarjuna. I agree with the late Dr S.C. Vidyabhu@shana in holding that both the Yogacara system and the system of Nagarjuna evolved from the *Prajnaparamita* [Footnote ref 2]. Nagarjuna's merit consisted in the dialectical form of his arguments in support of S'unyavada; but so far as the essentials of S'unyavada are concerned I believe that the Tathata philosophy of As'vagho@sa and the philosophy of the *Prajnaparamita* contained no less. There is no reason to suppose that the works of Nagarjuna were better known to the Hindu writers than the *Mahayana sutras*. Even in such later times as that of Vacaspati Mis'ra, we find him quoting a passage of the *S'alistambha sutra* to give an account of the Buddhist doctrine of pratityasamutpada [Footnote ref 3]. We could interpret any reference to S'unyavada as pointing to Nagarjuna only if his special phraseology or dialectical methods were referred to in any way. On the other hand, the reference in the *Bhagavadgita* to the *Brahma-sutras* clearly points out a date prior to that of Nagarjuna; though we may be slow to believe such an early date as has been assigned to the *Bhagavadgita* by Telang, yet I suppose that its date could safely be placed so far back as the first half of the first century B.C. or the last part of the second century B.C. The *Brahma-sutras* could thus be placed slightly earlier than the date of the *Bhagavadgita*.

[Footnote 1: “Brahmasutrapadais’caiva hetumadbhirvinis’cita@h” *Bhagavadgita*. The proofs in support of the view that the *Bhagavadgita* is a Vai@s@nava work will be discussed in the 2nd volume of the present work in the section on *Bhagavadgita* and its philosophy.]

Page 385

[Footnote 2: *Indian Antiquary*, 1915.]

[Footnote 3: See Vacaspati Mis'ra's *Bhamati* on S'a@nkara's bhasya on *Brahma-sutra*, II. ii.]

422

I do not know of any evidence that would come in conflict with this supposition. The fact that we do not know of any Hindu writer who held such monistic views as Gau@dapada or S'a@nkara, and who interpreted the *Brahma-sutras* in accordance with those monistic ideas, when combined with the fact that the dualists had been writing commentaries on the *Brahma-sutras*, goes to show that the *Brahma-sutras* were originally regarded as an authoritative work of the dualists. This also explains the fact that the *Bhagavadgita*, the canonical work of the Ekanti Vai@s@navas, should refer to it. I do not know of any Hindu writer previous to Gau@dapada who attempted to give an exposition of the monistic doctrine (apart from the Upani@sads), either by writing a commentary as did S'a@nkara, or by writing an independent work as did Gau@dapada. I am inclined to think therefore that as the pure monism of the Upani@sads was not worked out in a coherent manner for the formation of a monistic system, it was dealt with by people who had sympathies with some form of dualism which was already developing in the later days of the Upani@sads, as evidenced by the dualistic tendencies of such Upani@sads as the S'vetas'vatara, and the like. The epic S'a@mkhya was also the result of this dualistic development.

It seems that Badaraya@na, the writer of the *Brahma-sutras*, was probably more a theist, than an absolutist like his commentator S'a@nkara. Gau@dapada seems to be the most important man, after the Upani@sad sages, who revived the monistic tendencies of the Upani@sads in a bold and clear form and tried to formulate them in a systematic manner. It seems very significant that no other karikas on the Upani@sads were interpreted, except the *Man@dukyakarika* by Gau@dapada, who did not himself make any reference to any other writer of the monistic school, not even Badaraya@na. S'a@nkara himself makes the confession that the absolutist (*advaita*) creed was recovered from the Vedas by Gau@dapada. Thus at the conclusion of his commentary on Gau@dapada's karika, he says that "he adores by falling at the feet of that great guru (teacher) the adored of his adored, who on finding all the people sinking in the ocean made dreadful by the crocodiles of rebirth, out of kindness for all people, by churning the great ocean of the Veda by his great churning rod of wisdom recovered what lay deep in the heart of the Veda, and is hardly attainable even by the immortal

423

Page 386

gods [Footnote ref 1].” It seems particularly significant that S’a@nkara should credit Gau@dapada and not Badaraya@na with recovering the Upani@sad creed. Gau@dapada was the teacher of Govinda, the teacher of S’a@nkara; but he was probably living when S’a@nkara was a student, for S’a@nkara says that he was directly influenced by his great wisdom, and also speaks of the learning, self-control and modesty of the other pupils of Gau@dapada [Footnote ref 2]. There is some dispute about the date of S’a@nkara, but accepting the date proposed by Bha@n@darkar, Pa@thak and Deussen, we may consider it to be 788 A.D. [Footnote ref 3], and suppose that in order to be able to teach S’a@nkara, Gau@dapada must have been living till at least 800 A.D.

Gau@dapada thus flourished after all the great Buddhist teachers As’vaghosa, Nagarjuna, Asa@nga and Vasubandhu; and I believe that there is sufficient evidence in his karikas for thinking that he was possibly himself a Buddhist, and considered that the teachings of the Upani@sads tallied with those of Buddha. Thus at the beginning of the fourth chapter of his karikas he says that he adores that great man (*dvipadam varam*) who by knowledge as wide as the sky realized (*sambuddha*) that all appearances (*dharma*) were like the vacuous sky (*gaganopamam* [Footnote ref 4]. He then goes on to say that he adores him who has dictated (*des’ita*) that the touch of untouch (*aspars’ayoga*—probably referring to Nirva@na) was the good that produced happiness to all beings, and that he was neither in disagreement with this doctrine nor found any contradiction in it (*avivada@h aviruddhas’ca*). Some disputants hold that coming into being is of existents, whereas others quarrelling with them hold that being (*jata*) is of non-existents (*abhutasya*); there are others who quarrel with them and say that neither the existents nor non-existents are liable to being and there is one non-coming-into-being (*advayamajatim*). He agrees with those who hold that there is no coming into being [Footnote ref 5]. In IV. 19 of his karika he again says that the Buddhas have shown that there was no coming into being in any way (*sarvatha Buddhairajati@h paridipita@h*).

[Footnote 1: S’a@nkara’s bha@sya on Gau@dapada’s karika, Anandas’rama edition, p. 214.]

[Footnote 2: Anandas’rama edition of S’a@nkara’s bha@sya on Gau@dapada’s karika, p. 21.]

[Footnote 3: Telang wishes to put S’a@nkara’s date somewhere in the 8th century, and Ve@nkates’vara would have him in 805 A.D.-897 A.D., as he did not believe that S’a@nkara could have lived only for 32 years. *J.R.A.S.* 1916.]

[Footnote 4: Compare *Lankavatara*, p. 29, *Katha@m ca gaganopamam*.]

[Footnote 5: Gau@dapada's *karika*, IV. 2, 4.]

424

Page 387

Again, in IV. 42 he says that it was for those realists (*vastuvadi*), who since they found things and could deal with them and were afraid of non-being, that the Buddhas had spoken of origination (*jati*). In IV. 90 he refers to *agrayana* which we know to be a name of *Mahayana*. Again, in IV. 98 and 99 he says that all appearances are pure and vacuous by nature. These the Buddhas, the emancipated one (*mukta*) and the leaders know first. It was not said by the Buddha that all appearances (*dharma*) were knowledge. He then closes the karikas with an adoration which in all probability also refers to the Buddha [Footnote ref 1].

Gau@dapada's work is divided into four chapters: (i) Agama (scripture), (2) Vaitathya (unreality), (3) Advaita (unity), (4) Alatas'anti (the extinction of the burning coal). The first chapter is more in the way of explaining the Ma@n@dukya Upani@sad by virtue of which the entire work is known as Ma@n@dukyakarika. The second, third, and fourth chapters are the constructive parts of Gau@dapada's work, not particularly connected with the Ma@n@dukya Upani@sad.

In the first chapter Gau@dapada begins with the three apparent manifestations of the self: (1) as the experiencer of the external world while we are awake (*vis'va* or *vais'vanara atma*), (2) as the experiencer in the dream state (*taijasa atma*), (3) as the experiencer in deep sleep (*su@supti*), called the *prajna* when there is no determinate knowledge, but pure consciousness and pure bliss (*ananda*). He who knows these three as one is never attached to his experiences. Gau@dapada then enumerates some theories of creation: some think that the world has proceeded as a creation from the pra@na (vital activity), others consider creation as an expansion (*vibhuti*) of that cause from which it has proceeded; others imagine that creation is like dream (*svapna*) and magic (*maya*); others, that creation proceeds simply by the will of the Lord; others that it proceeds from time; others that it is for the enjoyment of the Lord (*bhogartham*) or for his play only (*kri@dartham*), for such is the nature (*svabhava*) of the Lord, that he creates, but he cannot have any longing, as all his desires are in a state of fulfilment.

[Footnote 1: Gau@dapada's karika IV. 100. In my translation I have not followed S'a@nkara, for he has I think tried his level best to explain away even the most obvious references to Buddha and Buddhism in Gau@dapada's karika. I have, therefore, drawn my meaning directly as Gau@dapada's karikas seemed to indicate. I have followed the same principle in giving the short exposition of Gau@dapada's philosophy below.]



Page 388

Gau@dapada does not indicate his preference one way or the other, but describes the fourth state of the self as unseen (*ad@r@s@ta*), unrelationable (*avyavaharyam*), ungraspable (*agrahyam*), indefinable (*alak@sa@na*), unthinkable (*acintyam*), unspeakable (*avyapades'ya*), the essence as oneness with the self (*ekatmapratyayasara*), as the extinction of the appearance (*prapancopas'ama*), the quiescent (*s'antam*), the good (*s'ivam*), the one (*advaita*) [Footnote ref 1]. The world-appearance (*prapanca*) would have ceased if it had existed, but all this duality is mere maya (magic or illusion), the one is the ultimately real (*paramarthata@h*). In the second chapter Gau@dapada says that what is meant by calling the world a dream is that all existence is unreal. That which neither exists in the beginning nor in the end cannot be said to exist in the present. Being like unreal it appears as real. The appearance has a beginning and an end and is therefore false. In dreams things are imagined internally, and in the experience that we have when we are awake things are imagined as if existing outside, but both of them are but illusory creations of the self. What is perceived in the mind is perceived as existing at the moment of perception only; external objects are supposed to have two moments of existence (namely before they are perceived, and when they begin to be perceived), but this is all mere imagination. That which is unmanifested in the mind and that which appears as distinct and manifest outside are all imaginary productions in association with the sense faculties. There is first the imagination of a perceiver or soul (*jiva*) and then along with it the imaginary creations of diverse inner states and the external world. Just as in darkness the rope is imagined to be a snake, so the self is also imagined by its own illusion in diverse forms. There is neither any production nor any destruction (*na nirodho, na cotpatti@h*), there is no one who is enchained, no one who is striving, no one who wants to be released [Footnote ref 2]. Imagination finds itself realized in the non-existent existents and also in the sense

[Footnote 1: Compare in Nagarjuna's first karika the idea of *prapancopas'amam s'ivam*. *Anirodhamanutpadamanucchedamas'as'vatam anekarthamananarthamanagamamanirgamam ya@h pratityasamutpadam prapancopas'amam s'ivam des'ayamava sambuddhastam vande vadatamvaram*. Compare also Nagarjuna's Chapter on *Nirva@naparik@sa*, *Purvopalambhopas'ama@h prapancopas'ama@h s'iva@h na kvacit kasyacit kas'cit dharmmo buddhenades'ita@h*. So far as I know the Buddhists were the first to use the words *prapancopas'aman s'ivam*.]

[Footnote 2: Compare Nagarjuna's k@arika, "anirodhamanutpadam" in *Madhyamikav@rtti*, B.T.S., p. 3.]

Page 389

of unity; all imagination either as the many or the one (*advaya*) is false; it is only the oneness (*advayata*) that is good. There is no many, nor are things different or non-different (*na nanedam ...na p@rthag nap@rthak*) [Footnote ref 1]. The sages who have transcended attachment, fear, and anger and have gone beyond the depths of the Vedas have perceived it as the imaginationless cessation of all appearance (*nirvikalpa@h prapancopas'ama@h_*), the one [Footnote ref 2].

In the third chapter Gau@dapada says that truth is like the void(*akas'a*) which is falsely conceived as taking part in birth and death, coming and going and as existing in all bodies; but howsoever it be conceived, it is all the while not different from *akas'a*. All things that appear as compounded are but dreams (*svapna*) and *maya* (magic). Duality is a distinction imposed upon the one (*advaita*) by *maya*. The truth is immortal, it cannot therefore by its own nature suffer change. It has no birth. All birth and death, all this manifold is but the result of an imposition of *maya* upon it [Footnote ref 3]. One mind appears as many in the dream, as also in the waking state one appears as many, but when the mind activity of the *Togins* (sages) is stopped arises this fearless state, the extinction of all sorrow, final cessation. Thinking everything to be misery (*du@hkham sarvam anusm@rtya*) one should stop all desires and enjoyments, and thinking that nothing has any birth he should not see any production at all. He should awaken the mind (*citta*) into its final dissolution (*laya*) and pacify it when distracted; he should not move it towards diverse objects when it stops. He should not taste any pleasure (*sukham*) and by wisdom remain unattached, by strong effort making it motionless and still. When he neither passes into dissolution nor into distraction; when there is no sign, no appearance that is the perfect Brahman. When there is no object of knowledge to come into being, the unproduced is then called the omniscient (*sarvajna*).

In the fourth chapter, called the *Alats'anti*, Gau@dapada further

[Footnote 1: Compare *Madhyamikakarika*, B.T.S._, p.3 *anekartham ananartham*, etc.]

[Footnote 2: Compare *Lankavatarasutra*, p.78,
Advayasamsaraparinirva@nvatsarvadharmah tasmata tarhi mahamate
S'unyatanutpadadvayani@hsvabhavalak@sa@ne yoga@h kara@niya@h; also 8,46,
Yaduta svacittavi@sayavikalpad@r@s@tyanavabodhanat vijnananam
svacittad@r@s@tyamatranavatare@na mahamate valaprthagjana@h
bhavabhavasvabhavaparamarthad@r@s@tidvayvadino bhavanti.]

[Footnote 3: Compare Nagarjuna's *karika*, B.T.S. p. 196, *Akas'am s'as'as'@r@nganca bandhyaya@h putra eva ca asantas'cabhivyajyante tathabhavena kalpana*, with

Gau@dapada's karika, III. 28, *Asato mayaya janma tatvato naiva jayate bandhyaputro na tattvena mayaya vapi jayate.*]

Page 390

427

describes this final state [Footnote ref 1]. All the dharmas (appearances) are without death or decay [Footnote: ref 2]. Gau@dapada then follows a dialectical form of argument which reminds us of Nagarjuna. Gau@dapada continues thus: Those who regard kara@na (cause) as the karyya (effect in a potential form) cannot consider the cause as truly unproduced (*aja*), for it suffers production; how can it be called eternal and yet changing? If it is said that things come into being from that which has no production, there is no example with which such a case may be illustrated. Nor can we consider that anything is born from that which has itself suffered production. How again can one come to a right conclusion about the *regressus ad infinitum* of cause and effect (*hetu* and *phala*)? Without reference to the effect there is no cause, and without reference to cause there is no effect. Nothing is born either by itself or through others; call it either being, non-being, or being-non-being, nothing suffers any birth, neither the cause nor the effect is produced out of its own nature (*svabhavatah*), and thus that which has no beginning anywhere cannot be said to have a production. All experience (*prajnapti*) is dependent on reasons, for otherwise both would vanish, and there would be none of the afflictions (*sa@mkles'a*) that we suffer. When we look at all things in a connected manner they seem to be dependent, but when we look at them from the point of view of reality or truth the reasons cease to be reasons. The mind (*citta*) does not come in touch with objects and thereby manifest them, for since things do not exist they are not different from their manifestations in knowledge. It is not in any particular case that the mind produces the manifestations of objects while they do not exist so that it could be said to be an error, for in present, past, and future the mind never comes in touch with objects which only appear by reason of their diverse manifestations. Therefore neither the mind nor the objects seen by it are ever produced. Those who perceive them to suffer production are really traversing the reason of vacuity (*khe*), for all production is but false imposition on the vacuity. Since the unborn is perceived as being born, the essence then is the absence of

[Footnote 1: The very name Alata@santi is absolutely Buddhistic. Compare Nagarjuna's karika, *B.T.S.*, p. 206, where he quotes a verse from the *S'ataka*.]

[Footnote 2: The use of the word dharma in the sense of appearance or entity is peculiarly Buddhistic. The Hindu sense is that given by Jaimini, "Codanalak@sa@nah arthah, dharmah." Dharma is determined by the injunctions of the Vedas.]

428

Page 391

production, for it being of the nature of absence of production it could never change its nature. Everything has a beginning and an end and is therefore false. The existence of all things is like a magical or illusory elephant (*mayahasti*) and exists only as far as it merely appears or is related to experience. There is thus the appearance of production, movement and things, but the one knowledge (*vijnana*) is the unborn, unmoved, the unthingness (*avastutva*), the cessation (*s'antam*). As the movement of burning charcoal is perceived as straight or curved, so it is the movement (*spandita*) of consciousness that appears as the perceiving and the perceived. All the attributes (e.g. straight or curved) are imposed upon the charcoal fire, though in reality it does not possess them; so also all the appearances are imposed upon consciousness, though in reality they do not possess them. We could never indicate any kind of causal relation between the consciousness and its appearance, which are therefore to be demonstrated as unthinkable (*acintya*). A thing (*dravya*) is the cause of a thing (*dravya*), and that which is not a thing may be the cause of that which is not a thing, but all the appearances are neither things nor those which are not things, so neither are appearances produced from the mind (*citta*) nor is the mind produced by appearances. So long as one thinks of cause and effect he has to suffer the cycle of existence (*sa@msara*), but when that notion ceases there is no *sa@msara*. All things are regarded as being produced from a relative point of view only (*sa@mv@rti*), there is therefore nothing permanent (*s'as'vata*). Again, no existent things are produced, hence there cannot be any destruction (*uccheda*). Appearances (*dharma*) are produced only apparently, not in reality; their coming into being is like *maya*, and that *maya* again does not exist. All appearances are like shoots of magic coming out of seeds of magic and are not therefore neither eternal nor destructible. As in dreams, or in magic, men are born and die, so are all appearances. That which appears as existing from an imaginary relative point of view (*kalpita sa@mv@rti*) is not so in reality (*para-martha*), for the existence depending on others, as shown in all relative appearance, is after all not a real existence. That things exist, do not exist, do exist and not exist, and neither exist nor not exist; that they are moving or steady, or none of those, are but thoughts with which fools are deluded.

Page 392

It is so obvious that these doctrines are borrowed from the Madhyamika doctrines, as found in the Nagarjuna's karikas and the Vijnanavada doctrines, as found in *La@nkavatara*, that it is needless to attempt to prove it, Gau@dapada assimilated all the Buddhist S'unyavada and Vijnanavada teachings, and thought that these held good of the ultimate truth preached by the Upani@sads. It is immaterial whether he was a Hindu or a Buddhist, so long as we are sure that he had the highest respect for the Buddha and for the teachings which he believed to be his. Gau@dapada took the smallest Upani@sads to comment upon, probably because he wished to give his opinions unrestricted by the textual limitations of the bigger ones. His main emphasis is on the truth that he realized to be perfect. He only incidentally suggested that the great Buddhist truth of indefinable and unspeakable vijnana or vacuity would hold good of the highest atman of the Upani@sads, and thus laid the foundation of a revival of the Upani@sad studies on Buddhist lines. How far the Upani@sads guaranteed in detail the truth of Gau@dapada's views it was left for his disciple, the great S'a@nkara, to examine and explain.

Vedanta and S'a@nkara (788-820 A.D.).

Vedanta philosophy is the philosophy which claims to be the exposition of the philosophy taught in the Upani@sads and summarized in the *Brahma-sutras* of Badarayana. The Upani@sads form the last part of the Veda literature, and its philosophy is therefore also called sometimes the Uttara-Mima@msa or the Mimamsa (decision) of the later part of the Vedas as distinguished from the Mima@msa of the previous part of the Vedas and the Brahma@nas as incorporated in the *Purvamima@msa sutras* of Jaimini. Though these *Brahma-sutras* were differently interpreted by different exponents, the views expressed in the earliest commentary on them now available, written by S'a@nkaracarya, have attained wonderful celebrity, both on account of the subtle and deep ideas it contains, and also on account of the association of the illustrious personality of S'a@nkara. So great is the influence of the philosophy propounded by S'a@nkara and elaborated by his illustrious followers, that whenever we speak of the Vedanta philosophy we mean the philosophy that was propounded by S'a@nkara. If other expositions are intended the names of the exponents have to be mentioned (e.g. Ramanuja-mata, Vallabha-mata, etc.), In this

430

chapter we shall limit ourselves to the exposition of the Vedanta philosophy as elaborated by S'a@nkara and his followers. In S'a@nkara's work (the commentaries on the *Brahma-sutra* and the ten Upani@sads) many ideas have been briefly incorporated which as found in S'a@nkara do not appear to be sufficiently clear, but are more intelligible as elaborated by his followers. It is therefore better to take up the Vedanta system, not as we find it in S'a@nkara, but as elaborated by his followers, all of whom openly declare that they are true to their master's philosophy.

Page 393

For the other Hindu systems of thought, the sutras (*Jaimini sutra*, *Nyaya sutra*, etc.) are the only original treatises, and no foundation other than these is available. In the case of the Vedanta however the original source is the Upani@sads, and the sutras are but an extremely condensed summary in a systematic form. S'a@nkara did not claim to be the inventor or expounder of an original system, but interpreted the sutras and the Upani@sads in order to show that there existed a connected and systematic philosophy in the Upani@sads which was also enunciated in the sutras of Badaraya@na. The Upani@sads were a part of the Vedas and were thus regarded as infallible by the Hindus. If S'a@nkara could only show that his exposition of them was the right one, then his philosophy being founded upon the highest authority would be accepted by all Hindus. The most formidable opponents in the way of accomplishing his task were the Mima@msists, who held that the Vedas did not preach any philosophy, for whatever there was in the Vedas was to be interpreted as issuing commands to us for performing this or that action. They held that if the Upani@sads spoke of Brahman and demonstrated the nature of its pure essence, these were mere exaggerations intended to put the commandment of performing some kind of worship of Brahman into a more attractive form. S'a@nkara could not deny that the purport of the Vedas as found in the Brahma@nas was explicitly of a mandatory nature as declared by the Mima@msa, but he sought to prove that such could not be the purport of the Upani@sads, which spoke of the truest and the highest knowledge of the Absolute by which the wise could attain salvation. He said that in the karmak@n@da—the (sacrificial injunctions) Brahma@nas of the Vedas—the purport of the Vedas was certainly of a mandatory nature, as it was intended for ordinary people who were anxious for this or that pleasure,

431

and were never actuated by any desire of knowing the absolute truth, but the Upani@sads, which were intended for the wise who had controlled their senses and become disinclined to all earthly joys, demonstrated the one Absolute, Unchangeable, Brahman as the only Truth of the universe. The two parts of the Vedas were intended for two classes of persons. S'a@nkara thus did not begin by formulating a philosophy of his own by logical and psychological analysis, induction, and deduction. He tried to show by textual comparison of the different Upani@sads, and by reference to the content of passages in the Upani@sads, that they were concerned in demonstrating the nature of Brahman (as he understood it) as their ultimate end. He had thus to show that the uncontradicted testimony of all the Upani@sads was in favour of the view which he held. He had to explain all doubtful and apparently conflicting texts, and also to show that none of the texts referred to the doctrines of mahat, prak@rti, etc. of the Sa@mkhya. He had also to interpret

Page 394

the few scattered ideas about physics, cosmology, eschatology, etc. that are found in the Upani@sads consistently with the Brahman philosophy. In order to show that the philosophy of the Upani@sads as he expounded it was a consistent system, he had to remove all the objections that his opponents could make regarding the Brahman philosophy, to criticize the philosophies of all other schools, to prove them to be self-contradictory, and to show that any interpretation of the Upani@sads, other than that which he gave, was inconsistent and wrong. This he did not only in his bhasya on the *Brahma-sutras* but also in his commentaries on the Upani@sads. Logic with him had a subordinate place, as its main value for us was the aid which it lent to consistent interpretations of the purport of the Upani@sad texts, and to persuading the mind to accept the uncontradicted testimony of the Upani@sads as the absolute truth. His disciples followed him in all, and moreover showed in great detail that the Brahman philosophy was never contradicted either in perceptual experience or in rational thought, and that all the realistic categories which Nyaya and other systems had put forth were self-contradictory and erroneous. They also supplemented his philosophy by constructing a Vedanta epistemology, and by rethinking elaborately the relation of the maya, the Brahman, and the world of appearance and other relevant topics. Many problems of great philosophical interest which

432

had been left out or slightly touched by S'a@nkara were discussed fully by his followers. But it should always be remembered that philosophical reasonings and criticisms are always to be taken as but aids for convincing our intellect and strengthening our faith in the truth revealed in the Upani@sads. The true work of logic is to adapt the mind to accept them. Logic used for upsetting the instructions of the Upani@sads is logic gone astray. Many lives of S'a@nkaracarya were written in Sanskrit such as the *S'a@nkaradigvijaya*, *S'a@nkara-vijaya-vilasa*, *S'a@nkara-jaya*, etc. It is regarded as almost certain that he was born between 700 and 800 A.D. in the Malabar country in the Deccan. His father S'ivaguru was a Yajurvedi Brahmin of the Taittiriya branch. Many miracles are related of S'a@nkara, and he is believed to have been the incarnation of S'iva. He turned ascetic in his eighth year and became the disciple of Govinda, a renowned sage then residing in a mountain cell on the banks of the Nabuda. He then came over to Benares and thence went to Badarikas'rama. It is said that he wrote his illustrious bha@sya on the *Brahma-sutra* in his twelfth year. Later on he also wrote his commentaries on ten Upani@sads. He returned to Benares, and from this time forth he decided to travel all over India in order to defeat the adherents of other schools of thought in open debate. It is said that he first went to meet Kumarila, but Kumarila was then at the point of death, and he advised him to meet Kumarila's disciple. He defeated Ma@n@dana and converted him into an ascetic follower of his own. He then travelled in various places, and defeating his opponents everywhere he

established his Vedanta philosophy, which from that time forth acquired a dominant influence in moulding the religious life of India.

Page 395

S'a@nkara carried on the work of his teacher Gaudapada and by writing commentaries on the ten Upani@sads and the *Brahma-sutras* tried to prove, that the absolutist creed was the one which was intended to be preached in the Upani@sads and the *Brahma-sutras* [Footnote: 1]. Throughout his commentary on the *Brahma-sutras*, there is ample evidence that he was contending against some other rival interpretations of a dualistic tendency which held that the Upani@sads partly favoured the Sa@mkhya cosmology

[Footnote 1: The main works of S'a@nkara are his commentaries (bha@sya) on the ten Upani@sads (Is'a, Kena, Katha, Pras'na, Mu@ndaka, Ma@n@dukya, Aitareya, Taittiriya, B@rhudara@nyaka, and Chandogya), and on the *Brahma-sutra*.]

433

of the existence of prak@rti. That these were actual textual interpretations of the *Brahma-sutras* is proved by the fact that S'a@nkara in some places tries to show that these textual constructions were faulty [Footnote ref 1]. In one place he says that others (referring according to Vacaspati to the Mima@msa) and some of us (referring probably to those who interpreted the sutras and the Upani@sads from the Vedanta point of view) think that the soul is permanent. It is to refute all those who were opposed to the right doctrine of perceiving everything as the unity of the self (*atmaikatva*) that this S'ariraka commentary of mine is being attempted [Footnote ref 2]. Ramanuja, in the introductory portion of his bha@sya on the *Brahma-sutra*, says that the views of Bodhayana who wrote an elaborate commentary on the *Brahma-sutra* were summarized by previous teachers, and that he was following this Bodhayana bha@sya in writing his commentary. In the *Vedarthasa@mgraha* of Ramanuja mention is made of Bodhayana, Tanka, Guhadeva, Kapardin, Bharuci as Vedantic authorities, and Dravi@dacaryya is referred to as the "bha@syakara" commentator. In Chandogya III. x. 4, where the Upani@sad cosmology appeared to be different from the Vi@s@nupurana cosmology, S'a@nkara refers to an explanation offered on the point by one whom he calls "acaryya" (*atrokta@h pariharah acaryyaih*) and Anandagiri says that "acaryya" there refers to Dravi@dacaryya. This Dravi@dacaryya is known to us from Ramanuja's statement as being a commentator of the dualistic school, and we have evidence here that he had written a commentary on the Chandogya Upani@sad.

A study of the extant commentaries on the *Brahma-sutras* of Badaraya@na by the adherents of different schools of thought leaves us convinced that these sutras were regarded by all as condensations of the teachings of the Upani@sads. The differences of opinion were with regard to the meaning of these sutras and the Upani@sad texts to which references were made by them in each particular case. The *Brahma-sutra* is

divided into four adhyayas or books, and each of these is divided into four chapters or padas. Each of these contains a number of topics of discussion (*adhikarana*) which are composed of a number of sutras, which raise the point at issue, the points that lead to doubt and uncertainty, and the considerations that should lead one to favour

Page 396

[Footnote 1: See note on p. 432.]

[Footnote 2: S'a@nkara's bha@sya on the *Brahma-sutras*, I. iii. 19.]

434

a particular conclusion. As explained by S'a@nkara, most of these sutras except the first four and the first two chapters of the second book are devoted to the textual interpretations of the Upani@sad passages. S'a@nkara's method of explaining the absolutist Vedanta creed does not consist in proving the Vedanta to be a consistent system of metaphysics, complete in all parts, but in so interpreting the Upani@sad texts as to show that they all agree in holding the Brahman to be the self and that alone to be the only truth. In Chapter I of Book II S'a@nkara tries to answer some of the objections that may be made from the Sa@mkhya point of view against his absolutist creed and to show that some apparent difficulties of the absolutist doctrine did not present any real difficulty. In Chapter II of Book II he tries to refute the Sa@mkhya, Yoga, Nyaya-Vais'e@sika, the Buddhist, Jaina, Bhagavata and S'aiva systems of thought. These two chapters and his commentaries on the first four sutras contain the main points of his system. The rest of the work is mainly occupied in showing that the conclusion of the sutras was always in strict agreement with the Upani@sad doctrines. Reason with S'a@nkara never occupied the premier position; its value was considered only secondary, only so far as it helped one to the right understanding of the revealed scriptures, the Upani@sads. The ultimate truth cannot be known by reason alone. What one debater shows to be reasonable a more expert debater shows to be false, and what he shows to be right is again proved to be false by another debater. So there is no final certainty to which we can arrive by logic and argument alone. The ultimate truth can thus only be found in the Upani@sads; reason, discrimination and judgment are all to be used only with a view to the discovery of the real purport of the Upani@sads. From his own position S'a@nkara was not thus bound to vindicate the position of the Vedanta as a thoroughly rational system of metaphysics. For its truth did not depend on its rationality but on the authority of the Upani@sads. But what was true could not contradict experience. If therefore S'a@nkara's interpretation of the Upani@sads was true, then it would not contradict experience. S'a@nkara was therefore bound to show that his interpretation was rational and did not contradict experience. If he could show that his interpretation was the only interpretation that was faithful to the Upani@sads, and that its apparent contradictions with experience could in some way be explained,

435

he considered that he had nothing more to do. He was not writing a philosophy in the modern sense of the term, but giving us the whole truth as taught and revealed in the Upani@sads and not simply a system spun by a clever thinker, which may erroneously appear to be quite reasonable, Ultimate validity does not belong to reason but to the scriptures.

Page 397

He started with the premise that whatever may be the reason it is a fact that all experience starts and moves in an error which identifies the self with the body, the senses, or the objects of the senses. All cognitive acts presuppose this illusory identification, for without it the pure self can never behave as a phenomenal knower or perceiver, and without such a perceiver there would be no cognitive act. S'a@nkara does not try to prove philosophically the existence of the pure self as distinct from all other things, for he is satisfied in showing that the Upani@sads describe the pure self unattached to any kind of impurity as the ultimate truth. This with him is a matter to which no exception can be taken, for it is so revealed in the Upani@sads. This point being granted, the next point is that our experience is always based upon an identification of the self with the body, the senses, *etc.* and the imposition of all phenomenal qualities of pleasure, pain, *etc.* upon the self; and this with S'a@nkara is a beginningless illusion. All this had been said by Gau@dapada. S'a@nkara accepted Gau@dapada's conclusions, but did not develop his dialectic for a positive proof of his thesis. He made use of the dialectic only for the refutation of other systems of thought. This being done he thought that he had nothing more to do than to show that his idea was in agreement with the teachings of the Upani@sads. He showed that the Upani@sads held that the pure self as pure being, pure intelligence and pure bliss was the ultimate truth. This being accepted the world as it appears could not be real. It must be a mere magic show of illusion or *maya*. S'a@nkara never tries to prove that the world is *maya*, but accepts it as indisputable. For, if the self is what is ultimately real, the necessary conclusion is that all else is mere illusion or *maya*. He had thus to quarrel on one side with the Mima@msa realists and on the other with the Sa@mkhya realists, both of whom accepted the validity of the scriptures, but interpreted them in their own way. The Mima@msists held that everything that is said in the Vedas is to be interpreted as requiring us to perform particular kinds of action,

436

or to desist from doing certain other kinds. This would mean that the Upani@sads being a part of the Veda should also be interpreted as containing injunctions for the performance of certain kinds of actions. The description of Brahman in the Upani@sads does not therefore represent a simple statement of the nature of Brahman, but it implies that the Brahman should be meditated upon as possessing the particular nature described there, *i.e.* Brahman should be meditated upon as being an entity which possesses a nature which is identical with our self; such a procedure would then lead to beneficial results to the man who so meditates. S'a@nkara could not agree to such a view. For his main point was that the Upani@sads revealed the highest truth as the

Page 398

Brahman. No meditation or worship or action of any kind was required; but one reached absolute wisdom and emancipation when the truth dawned on him that the Brahman or self was the ultimate reality. The teachings of the other parts of the Vedas, the *karmakaṇḍa* (those dealing with the injunctions relating to the performance of duties and actions), were intended for inferior types of aspirants, whereas the teachings of the *Upaniṣads*, the *jñānaṇḍa* (those which declare the nature of ultimate truth and reality), were intended only for superior aspirants who had transcended the limits of sacrificial duties and actions, and who had no desire for any earthly blessing or for any heavenly joy. Throughout his commentary on the *Bhagavadgita* S'aṅkara tried to demonstrate that those who should follow the injunctions of the Veda and perform Vedic deeds, such as sacrifices, *etc.*, belonged to a lower order. So long as they remained in that order they had no right to follow the higher teachings of the *Upaniṣads*. They were but *karmins* (performers of scriptural duties). When they succeeded in purging their minds of all desires which led them to the performance of the Vedic injunctions, the field of *karmamarga* (the path of duties), and wanted to know the truth alone, they entered the *jñanamarga* (the way of wisdom) and had no duties to perform. The study of Vedānta was thus reserved for advanced persons who were no longer inclined to the ordinary joys of life but wanted complete emancipation. The qualifications necessary for a man intending to study the Vedānta are (1) discerning knowledge about what is eternal and what is transitory (*nityanityavastuviveka*), (2) disinclination to the enjoyment of the pleasures of this world or of

437

the after world (*ihamutraphalabhogaviraga*), (3) attainment of peace, self-restraint, renunciation, patience, deep concentration and faith (*s'amadamadisadhanasampat*) and desire for salvation (*mumukṣutva*). The person who had these qualifications should study the *Upaniṣads*, and as soon as he became convinced of the truth about the identity of the self and the Brahman he attained emancipation. When once a man realized that the self alone was the reality and all else was *maya*, all injunctions ceased to have any force with him. Thus, the path of duties (*karma*) and the path of wisdom (*jñana*) were intended for different classes of persons or *adhikarins*. There could be no joint performance of Vedic duties and the seeking of the highest truth as taught in the *Upaniṣads* (*jñana-karma-samuccayabhavaḥ*). As against the dualists he tried to show that the *Upaniṣads* never favoured any kind of dualistic interpretations. The main difference between the Vedānta as expounded by Gauḍapada and as explained by S'aṅkara consists in this, that S'aṅkara tried as best he could to dissociate the distinctive Buddhist traits found in the exposition of the former and to formulate

Page 399

the philosophy as a direct interpretation of the older Upani@sad texts. In this he achieved remarkable success. He was no doubt regarded by some as a hidden Buddhist (*pracchanna Bauddha*), but his influence on Hindu thought and religion became so great that he was regarded in later times as being almost a divine person or an incarnation. His immediate disciples, the disciples of his disciples, and those who adhered to his doctrine in the succeeding generations, tried to build a rational basis for his system in a much stronger way than S'a@nkara did. Our treatment of S'a@nkara's philosophy has been based on the interpretations of Vedanta thought, as offered by these followers of S'a@nkara. These interpretations are nowhere in conflict with S'a@nkara's doctrines, but the questions and problems which S'a@nkara did not raise have been raised and discussed by his followers, and without these one could not treat Vedanta as a complete and coherent system of metaphysics. As these will be discussed in the later sections, we may close this with a short description of some of the main features of the Vedanta thought as explained by S'a@nkara.

Brahman according to S'a@nkara is "the cause from which (proceeds) the origin or subsistence and dissolution of this world which is extended in names and forms, which includes many

438

agents and enjoyers, which contains the fruit of works specially determined according to space, time, and cause, a world which is formed after an arrangement inconceivable even by the (imagination of the) mind [Footnote ref 1]." The reasons that S'a@nkara adduces for the existence of Brahman may be considered to be threefold: (1) The world must have been produced as the modification of something, but in the Upani@sads all other things have been spoken of as having been originated from something other than Brahman, so Brahman is the cause from which the world has sprung into being, but we could not think that Brahman itself originated from something else, for then we should have a *regressus ad infinitum* (*anavastha*). (2) The world is so orderly that it could not have come forth from a non-intelligent source. The intelligent source then from which this world has come into being is Brahman. (3) This Brahman is the immediate consciousness (*sak@si*) which shines as the self, as well as through the objects of cognition which the self knows. It is thus the essence of us all, the self, and hence it remains undenied even when one tries to deny it, for even in the denial it shows itself forth. It is the self of us all and is hence ever present to us in all our cognitions.

Brahman according to S'a@nkara is the identity of pure intelligence, pure being, and pure blessedness. Brahman is the self of us all. So long as we are in our ordinary waking life, we are identifying the self with thousands of illusory things, with all that we call "I" or mine, but when in dreamless sleep we are absolutely without any touch of these phenomenal notions the nature of our true state as pure blessedness is partially

realized. The individual self as it appears is but an appearance only, while the real truth is the true self which is one for all, as pure intelligence, pure blessedness, and pure being.

Page 400

All creation is illusory maya. But accepting it as maya, it may be conceived that God (Is'vara) created the world as a mere sport; from the true point of view there is no Is'vara who creates the world, but in the sense in which the world exists, and we all exist as separate individuals, we can affirm the existence of Is'vara, as engaged in creating and maintaining the world. In reality all creation is illusory and so the creator also is illusory. Brahman, the self, is at once the material cause (upadana-kara@na) as well as the efficient cause (nimitta-kara@na) of the world.

[Footnote 1: S'a@nkara's commentary, l.i. 2. See also Deussen's *System of the Vedanta*.]

439

There is no difference between the cause and the effect, and the effect is but an illusory imposition on the cause—a mere illusion of name and form. We may mould clay into plates and jugs and call them by so many different names, but it cannot be admitted that they are by that fact anything more than clay; their transformations as plates and jugs are only appearances of name and form (*namarupa*). This world, inasmuch as it is but an effect imposed upon the Brahman, is only phenomenally existent (*vyavaharika*) as mere objects of name and form (*namarupa*), but the cause, the Brahman, is alone the true reality(*paramarthika*) [Footnote ref 1].

The main idea of the Vedanta philosophy.

The main idea of the advaita (non-dualistic) Vedanta philosophy as taught by the @S'a@kara school is this, that the ultimate and absolute truth is the self, which is one, though appearing as many in different individuals. The world also as apart from us the individuals has no reality and has no other truth to show than this self. All other events, mental or physical, are but passing appearances, while the only absolute and unchangeable truth underlying them all is the self. While other systems investigated the pramanas only to examine how far they could determine the objective truth of things or our attitude in practical life towards them, Vedanta sought to reach beneath the surface of appearances, and enquired after the final and ultimate truth underlying the microcosm and the macrocosm, the subject and the object. The famous instruction of @S'vetaketu, the most important Vedanta text (mahavakya) says, "That art thou, O S'vetaketu." This comprehension of my self as the ultimate truth is the highest knowledge, for when this knowledge is once produced, our cognition of world-appearances will automatically cease. Unless the mind is chastened and purged of all passions and desires, the soul cannot comprehend this truth; but when this is once

done, and the soul is anxious for salvation by a knowledge of the highest truth, the preceptor instructs him, "That art thou." At once he becomes the truth itself, which is at once identical with pure bliss and pure intelligence; all ordinary notions and cognitions of diversity and of the

Page 401

[Footnote 1: All that is important in S'a@nkara's commentary of the *Brahma-sutras* has been excellently systematized by Deussen in his *System of the Vedanta*; it is therefore unnecessary for me to give any long account of this part. Most of what follows has been taken from the writings of his followers.]

440

many cease; there is no duality, no notion of mine and thine; the vast illusion of this world process is extinct in him, and he shines forth as the one, the truth, the Brahman. All Hindu systems believed that when man attained salvation, he became divested of all world-consciousness, or of all consciousness of himself and his interests, and was thus reduced to his own original purity untouched by all sensations, perceptions, feelings and willing, but there the idea was this that when man had no bonds of karma and no desire and attachment with the world and had known the nature of his self as absolutely free and unattached to the world and his own psychosis, he became emancipated from the world and all his connections with the world ceased, though the world continued as ever the same with others. The external world was a reality with them; the unreality or illusion consisted in want of true knowledge about the real nature of the self, on account of which the self foolishly identified itself with world-experiences, worldly joys and world-events, and performed good and bad works accordingly. The force of accumulated karmas led him to undergo the experiences brought about by them. While reaping the fruits of past karmas he, as ignorant as ever of his own self, worked again under the delusion of a false relationship between himself and the world, and so the world process ran on. Mufti (salvation) meant the dissociation of the self from the subjective psychosis and the world. This condition of the pure state of self was regarded as an unconscious one by Nyaya-Vais'e@sika and Mima@msa, and as a state of pure intelligence by Sa@mkhya and Yoga. But with Vedanta the case is different, for it held that the world as such has no real existence at all, but is only an illusory imagination which lasts till the moment when true knowledge is acquired. As soon as we come to know that the one truth is the self, the Brahman, all our illusory perceptions representing the world as a field of experience cease. This happens not because the connections of the self with the world cease, but because the appearance of the world process does not represent the ultimate and highest truth about it. All our notions about the abiding diversified world (lasting though they may be from beginningless time) are false in the sense that they do not represent the real truth about it. We not only do not know what we ourselves really are, but do not also know what the world about us is. We take our ordinary experiences of the world as representing

Page 402

441

it correctly, and proceed on our career of daily activity. It is no doubt true that these experiences show us an established order having its own laws, but this does not represent the real truth. They are true only in a relative sense, so long as they appear to be so; for the moment the real truth about them and the self is comprehended all world-appearances become unreal, and that one truth, the Brahman, pure being, bliss, intelligence, shines forth as the absolute—the only truth in world and man. The world-appearance as experienced by us is thus often likened to the illusory perception of silver in a conch-shell; for the moment the perception appears to be true and the man runs to pick it up, as if the conch-shell were a real piece of silver; but as soon as he finds out the truth that this is only a piece of conch-shell, he turns his back on it and is no longer deluded by the appearance or again attracted towards it. The illusion of silver is inexplicable in itself, for it was true for all purposes so long as it persisted, but when true knowledge was acquired, it forthwith vanished. This world-appearance will also vanish when the true knowledge of reality dawns. When false knowledge is once found to be false it cannot return again. The Upani@sads tell us that he who sees the many here is doomed. The one, the Brahman, alone is true; all else is but delusion of name and form. Other systems believed that even after emancipation, the world would continue as it is, that there was nothing illusory in it, but I could not have any knowledge of it because of the absence of the instruments by the processes of which knowledge was generated. The Sa@mkhya puru@sa cannot know the world when the buddhi-stuff is dissociated from it and merged in the prak@rti, the Mima@msa and the Nyaya soul is also incapable of knowing the world after emancipation, as it is then dissociated from manas. But the Vedanta position is quite distinct here. We cannot know the world, for when the right knowledge dawns, the perception of this world-appearance proves itself to be false to the person who has witnessed the truth, the Brahman. An illusion cannot last when the truth is known; what is truth is known to us, but what is illusion is undemonstrable, unspeakable, and indefinite. The illusion runs on from beginningless time; we do not know how it is related to truth, the Brahman, but we know that when the truth is once known the false knowledge of this

442

world-appearance disappears once for all. No intermediate link is necessary to effect it, no mechanical dissociation of buddhi or manas, but just as by finding out the glittering piece to be a conch-shell the illusory perception of silver is destroyed, so this illusory perception of world-appearance is also destroyed by a true knowledge of the reality, the Brahman. The Upani@sads held that reality or truth was one, and there was “no many” anywhere, and S’ankara explained it by adding that the “many”

Page 403

was merely an illusion, and hence did not exist in reality and was bound to disappear when the truth was known. The world-appearance is maya (illusion). This is what S'ankara emphasizes in expounding his constructive system of the Upaniṣad doctrine. The question is sometimes asked, how the maya becomes associated with Brahman. But Vedanta thinks this question illegitimate, for this association did not begin in time either with reference to the cosmos or with reference to individual persons. In fact there is no real association, for the creation of illusion does not affect the unchangeable truth. Maya or illusion is no real entity, it is only false knowledge (*avidya*) that makes the appearance, which vanishes when the reality is grasped and found. Maya or *avidya* has an apparent existence only so long as it lasts, but the moment the truth is known it is dissolved. It is not a real entity in association with which a real world-appearance has been brought into permanent existence, for it only has existence so long as we are deluded by it (*pratitika-satta*). Maya therefore is a category which baffles the ordinary logical division of existence and non-existence and the principle of excluded middle. For the maya can neither be said to be "is" nor "is not" (*tattvanyatvabhyam anirvacaniya*). It cannot be said that such a logical category does not exist, for all our dream and illusory cognitions demonstrate it to us. They exist as they are perceived, but they do not exist since they have no other independent existence than the fact of their perception. If it has any creative function, that function is as illusive as its own nature, for the creation only lasts so long as the error lasts. Brahman, the truth, is not in any way sullied or affected by association with maya, for there can be no association of the real with the empty, the maya, the illusory. It is no real association but a mere appearance.

443

In what sense is the world-appearance false?

The world is said to be false—a mere product of maya. The falsehood of this world-appearance has been explained as involved in the category of the indefinite which is neither *sat* "is" nor *asat* "is not." Here the opposition of the "is" and "is not" is solved by the category of time. The world-appearance is "is not," since it does not continue to manifest itself in all times, and has its manifestation up to the moment that the right knowledge dawns. It is not therefore "is not" in the sense that a "castle in the air" or a hare's horn is "is not," for these are called *tuccha*, the absolutely non-existent. The world-appearance is said to be "is" or existing, since it appears to be so for the time the state of ignorance persists in us. Since it exists for a time it is *sat* (is), but since it does not exist for all times it is *asat* (is not). This is the appearance, the falsehood of the world-appearance (*jagat-prapanca*) that it is neither *sat*

Page 404

nor *asat* in an absolute sense. Or rather it may also be said in another way that the falsehood of the world-appearance consists in this, that though it appears to be the reality or an expression or manifestation of the reality, the being, *sat*, yet when the reality is once rightly comprehended, it will be manifest that the world never existed, does not exist, and will never exist again. This is just what we find in an illusory perception; when once the truth is found out that it is a conch-shell, we say that the silver, though it appeared at the time of illusory perception to be what we saw before us as “this” (this is silver), yet it never existed before, does not now exist, and will never exist again. In the case of the illusory perception of silver, the “this” (pointing to a thing before me) appeared as silver; in the case of the world-appearance, it is the being (*sat*), the Brahman, that appears as the world; but as in the case when the “this” before us is found to be a piece of conch-shell, the silver is at once dismissed as having had no existence in the “this” before us, so when the Brahman, the being, the reality, is once directly realized, the conviction comes that the world never existed. The negation of the world-appearance however has no separate existence other than the comprehension of the identity of the real. The fact that the real is realized is the same as that the world-appearance is negated. The negation here involved refers both to the thing negated (the world-appearance) and the

444

negation itself, and hence it cannot be contended that when the conviction of the negation of the world is also regarded as false (for if the negation is not false then it remains as an entity different from Brahman and hence the unqualified monism fails), then this reinstates the reality of the world-appearance; for negation of the world-appearance is as much false as the world-appearance itself, and hence on the realization of the truth the negative thesis, that the world-appearance does not exist, includes the negation also as a manifestation of world-appearance, and hence the only thing left is the realized identity of the truth, the being. The peculiarity of this illusion of world-appearance is this, that it appears as consistent with or inlaid in the being (*sat*) though it is not there. This of course is dissolved when right knowledge dawns. This indeed brings home to us the truth that the world-appearance is an appearance which is different from what we know as real (*sadvilak@sa@na*); for the real is known to us as that which is proved by the *prama@nas*, and which will never again be falsified by later experience or other means of proof. A thing is said to be true only so long as it is not contradicted; but since at the dawn of right knowledge this world-appearance will be found to be false and non-existing, it cannot be regarded as real [Footnote ref I]. Thus Brahman alone is true, and the world-appearance is false;

Page 405

falsehood and truth are not contrary entities such that the negation or the falsehood of falsehood will mean truth. The world-appearance is a whole and in referring to it the negation refers also to itself as a part of the world-appearance and hence not only is the positive world-appearance false, but the falsehood itself is also false; when the world-appearance is contradicted at the dawn of right knowledge, the falsehood itself is also contradicted.

Brahman differs from all other things in this that it is self-luminous (*svaprakas'a*) and has no form; it cannot therefore be the object of any other consciousness that grasps it. All other things, ideas, emotions, *etc.*, in contrast to it are called *d@rs'ya* (objects of consciousness), while it is the *dra@s@ta* (the pure consciousness comprehending all objects). As soon as anything is comprehended as an expression of a mental state (*v@rtti*), it is said to have a form and it becomes *d@rs'ya*, and this is the characteristic of all objects of consciousness that they cannot reveal themselves apart from being manifested as objects of consciousness through a mental state.

[Footnote 1: See *Advaitasiddhi*, *Mithyatvanirukti*.]

445

Brahman also, so long as it is understood as a meaning of the Upani@sad text, is not in its true nature; it is only when it shines forth as apart from the associations of any form that it is *svaprakas'a* and *dra@s@ta*. The knowledge of the pure Brahman is devoid of any form or mode. The notion of *d@rs'yatva* (objectivity) carries with it also the notion of *ja@datva* (materiality) or its nature as non-consciousness (*ajnanatva*) and non-selfness (*anatmatva*) which consists in the want of self-luminosity of objects of consciousness. The relation of consciousness (*jnana*) to its objects cannot be regarded as real but as mere illusory impositions, for as we shall see later, it is not possible to determine the relation between knowledge and its forms. Just as the silver-appearance of the conch-shell is not its own natural appearance, so the forms in which consciousness shows itself are not its own natural essence. In the state of emancipation when supreme bliss (*ananda*) shines forth, the *ananda* is not an object or form of the illuminating consciousness, but it is the illumination itself. Whenever there is a form associated with consciousness, it is an extraneous illusory imposition on the pure consciousness. These forms are different from the essence of consciousness, not only in this that they depend on consciousness for their expression and are themselves but objects of consciousness, but also in this that they are all finite determinations

(*paricchinna*), whereas consciousness, the abiding essence, is everywhere present without any limit whatsoever. The forms of the object such as cow, jug, *etc.*

Page 406

are limited in themselves in what they are, but through them all the pure being runs by virtue of which we say that the cow is, the jug is, the pot is. Apart from this pure being running through all the individual appearances, there is no other class (*jati*) such as cowness or jugness, but it is on this pure being that different individual forms are illusorily imposed (*gha@tadikam sadarthekalpitaṁ, pratyekam tadanubiddhatvena pra@tiyamanatvat*). So this world-appearance which is essentially different from the Brahman, the being which forms the material cause on which it is imposed, is false (*upadanani@s@thaiyaniabh avapratyogitvalak@sa@namithyatvasiddhi@h —as Citsukha has it*).

The nature of the world-appearance, phenomena.

The world-appearance is not however so illusory as the perception of silver in the conch-shell, for the latter type of worldly illusions is called *pratibhasika*, as they are contradicted by other

446

later experiences, whereas the illusion of world-appearance is never contradicted in this worldly stage and is thus called *vyavaharika* (from *vyavahara*, practice, *i.e.* that on which is based all our practical movements). So long as the right knowledge of the Brahman as the only reality does not dawn, the world-appearance runs on in an orderly manner uncontradicted by the accumulated experience of all men, and as such it must be held to be true. It is only because there comes such a stage in which the world-appearance ceases to manifest itself that we have to say that from the ultimate and absolute point of view the world-appearance is false and unreal. As against this doctrine of the Vedānta it is sometimes asked how, as we see the reality (*sattva*) before us, we can deny that it has truth. To this the Vedānta answers that the notion of reality cannot be derived from the senses, nor can it be defined as that which is the content of right knowledge, for we cannot have any conception of right knowledge without a conception of reality, and no conception of reality without a conception of right knowledge. The conception of reality comprehends within it the notions of unalterability, absoluteness, and independence, which cannot be had directly from experience, as this gives only an appearance but cannot certify its truth. Judged from this point of view it will be evident that the true reality in all our experience is the one self-luminous flash of consciousness which is all through identical with itself in all its manifestations of appearance. Our present experience of the world-appearance cannot in any way guarantee that it will not be contradicted at some later stage. What really persists in all experience is the being (*sat*) and not its forms. This being that is associated with all our experience is not a universal genus nor merely the individual appearance of the moment, but it is the being, the truth which forms the substratum of all objective events and appearances

Page 407

(*ekenaiva sarvanugatena sarvatra satpratiti@h*). Things are not existent because they possess the genus of being (*sat*) as Nyaya supposes, but they are so because they are themselves but appearance imposed on one identical being as the basis and ground of all experience. Being is thus said to be the basis (*adhi@s@thana*) on which the illusions appear. This being is not different with different things but one in all appearances. Our perceptions of the world-appearance could have been taken as a guarantee of their reality, if the reality which is supposed of them

447

could be perceived by the senses, and if inference and s'ruti (scriptures) did not point the other way. Perception can of course invalidate inference, but it can do so only when its own validity has been ascertained in an undoubted and uncontested manner. But this is not the case with our perceptions of the world-appearance, for our present perceptions cannot prove that these will never be contradicted in future, and inference and s'ruti are also against it. The mere fact that I perceive the world-appearance cannot prove that what I perceive is true or real, if it is contradicted by inference. We all perceive the sun to be small, but our perception in this case is contradicted by inference and we have hence to admit that our perceptions are erroneous. We depend (*upajivya*) indeed for all our transactions on perception, but such dependence cannot prove that that on which we depend is absolutely valid. Validity or reality can only be ascertained by proper examination and enquiry (*parik@sa*), which may convince us that there is no error in it. True it is that by the universal testimony of our contemporaries and by the practical fruition and realization of our endeavours in the external world, it is proved beyond doubt that the world-appearance before us is a reality. But this sort of examination and enquiry cannot prove to us with any degree of satisfaction that the world-appearance will never be contradicted at any time or at any stage. The Vedanta also admits that our examination and enquiry prove to us that the world-appearance now exists as it appears; it only denies that it cannot continue to exist for all times, and a time will come when to the emancipated person the world-appearance will cease to exist. The experience, observation, and practical utility of the objects as perceived by us cannot prove to us that these will never be contradicted at any future time. Our perception of the world-appearance cannot therefore disprove the Vedanta inference that the world-appearance is false, and it will demonstrate itself to be so at the time when the right knowledge of Brahman as one dawns in us. The testimony of the Upani@sads also contradicts the perception which grasps the world-appearance in its manifold aspect.

Moreover we are led to think that the world-appearance is false, for it is not possible for us to discover any true relation between the consciousness (*d@rk*) and the objects of consciousness (*d@rs'ya*). Consciousness must be admitted to have some kind of

Page 408

448

connection with the objects which it illumines, for had it not been so there could be any knowledge at any time irrespective of its connections with the objects. But it is not possible to imagine any kind of connection between consciousness and its objects, for it can neither be contact (*sa@myoga*) nor inherence (*samavaya*); and apart from these two kinds of connections we know of no other. We say that things are the objects of our consciousness, but what is meant by it is indeed difficult to define. It cannot be that objectivity of consciousness means that a special effect like the *jnatata* of *Mima@msa* is produced upon the object, for such an effect is not admissible or perceivable in any way; nor can objectivity also mean any practical purpose (of being useful to us) associated with the object as Prabhakara thinks, for there are many things which are the objects of our consciousness but not considered as useful (e.g. the sky). Objectivity also cannot mean that the thing is the object of the thought-movement (*jnana-kara@na*) involved in knowledge, for this can only be with reference to objects present to the perceiver, and cannot apply to objects of past time about which one may be conscious, for if the thing is not present how can it be made an object of thought-movement? Objectivity further cannot mean that the things project their own forms on the knowledge and are hence called objects, for though this may apply in the case of perception, it cannot be true of inference, where the object of consciousness is far away and does not mould consciousness after its own form. Thus in whatever way we may try to conceive manifold things existing separately and becoming objects of consciousness we fail. We have also seen that it is difficult to conceive of any kind of relation subsisting between objects and consciousness, and hence it has to be admitted that the imposition of the world-appearance is after all nothing but illusory.

Now though all things are but illusory impositions on consciousness yet for the illumination of specific objects it is admitted even by Vedanta that this can only take place through specific sense-contact and particular mental states (*v@rtti*) or modes; but if that be so why not rather admit that this can take place even on the assumption of the absolute reality of the manifold external world without? The answer that the Vedanta gives to such a question is this, that the phenomenon of illumination has not to undergo any gradual process, for it is the work of one

449

flash like the work of the light of a lamp in removing darkness; so it is not possible that the external reality should have to pass through any process before consciousness could arise; what happens is simply this, that the reality (*sat*) which subsists in all things as the same identical one reveals the object as soon as its veil is removed by association with the *v@rtti* (mental mould or state). It is

Page 409

like a light which directly and immediately illuminates everything with which it comes into relation. Such an illumination of objects by its underlying reality would have been continuous if there were no veils or covers, but that is not so as the reality is hidden by the veil of *ajnana* (nescience). This veil is removed as soon as the light of consciousness shines through a mental mould or *v@rtti*, and as soon as it is removed the thing shines forth. Even before the formation of the *v@rtti* the illusory impositions on the reality had still been continuing objectively, but it could not be revealed as it was hidden by *ajnana* which is removed by the action of the corresponding *v@rtti*; and as soon as the veil is removed the thing shines forth in its true light. The action of the senses, eye, *etc.* serves but to modify the *v@rtti* of the mind, and the *v@rtti* of the mind once formed, the corresponding *ajnana* veil which was covering the corresponding specific part of the world-appearance is removed, and the illumination of the object which was already present, being divested of the veil, shows itself forth. The illusory creations were there, but they could not be manifested on account of the veil of nescience. As soon as the veil is removed by the action of the *v@rtti* the light of reality shows the corresponding illusory creations. So consciousness in itself is the ever-shining light of reality which is never generated but ever exists; errors of perception (e.g. silver in the conch-shell) take place not because the *do@sa* consisting of the defect of the eye, the glaze of the object and such other elements that contributed to the illusion, generated the knowledge, but because it generated a wrong *v@rtti*. It is because of the generation of the wrong *v@rtti* that the manifestation is illusory. In the illusion "this is silver" as when we mistake the conch-shell for the silver, it is the *cit*, consciousness or reality as underlying the object represented to us by "this" or "*idam*" that is the basis (*adhi@s@thana*) of the illusion of silver. The cause of error is our nescience or non-cognition (*ajnana*) of it in the form of the conch-shell, whereas the right knowledge is the cognition of it as conch-shell. The

450

basis is not in the content of my knowledge as manifested in my mental state (*v@rtti*), so that the illusion is not of the form that the "knowledge is silver" but of "this is silver." Objective phenomena as such have reality as their basis, whereas the expression of illumination of them as states of knowledge is made through the *cit* being manifested through the mental mould or states. Without the *v@rtti* there is no illuminating knowledge. Phenomenal creations are there in the world moving about as shadowy forms on the unchangeable basis of one *cit* or reality, but this basis, this light of reality, can only manifest these forms when the veil of nescience covering them is temporarily removed by their coming in touch with

Page 410

a mental mould or mind-modification (*v@rtti*). It is sometimes said that since all illumination of knowledge must be through the mental states there is no other entity of pure consciousness apart from what is manifested through the states. This Vedanta does not admit, for it holds that it is necessary that before the operation of the mental states can begin to interpret reality, reality must already be there and this reality is nothing but pure consciousness. Had there been no reality apart from the manifesting states of knowledge, the validity of knowledge would also cease; so it has to be admitted that there is the one eternal self-luminous reality untouched by the characteristics of the mental states, which are material and suffer origination and destruction. It is this self-luminous consciousness that seems to assume diverse forms in connection with diverse kinds of associations or limitations (*upadhi*). It manifests *ajnana* (nescience) and hence does not by itself remove the *ajnana*, except when it is reflected through any specific kind of *v@rtti*. There is of course no difference, no inner and outer varieties between the reality, the pure consciousness which is the essence, the basis and the ground of all phenomenal appearances of the objective world, and the consciousness that manifests itself through the mental states. There is only one identical pure consciousness or reality, which is at once the basis of the phenomena as well, is their interpreter by a reflection through the mental states or *v@rttis*.

The phenomena or objects called the *drs'ya* can only be determined in their various forms and manifestations but not as to their ultimate reality; there is no existence as an entity of any relation such as *sa@myoga* (contact) or *samavaya* (inherence)

451

between them and the pure consciousness called the *d@rk*; for the truth is this, that the *d@rk* (perceiver) and the *d@rs'ya* (perceived) have one identical reality; the forms of phenomena are but illusory creations on it.

It is sometimes objected that in the ordinary psychological illusion such as "this is silver," the knowledge of "this" as a thing is only of a general and indefinite nature, for it is perceived as a thing but its special characteristics as a conch-shell are not noticed, and thus the illusion is possible. But in Brahman or pure consciousness there are neither definite nor indefinite characteristics of any kind, and hence it cannot be the ground of any illusion as the piece of conch-shell perceived indefinitely as a mere "this" can be. The answer of Vedanta is that when the Brahman stands as the ground (*adhi@s@thana*) of the world-appearance its characteristic as *sat* or real only is manifested, whereas its special character as pure and infinite bliss is never noticed; or rather it may be said that the illusion of world-appearance is possible because the Brahman in its true and correct nature is never revealed to us in our objective consciousness; when

Page 411

I say “the jug is,” the “isness,” or “being,” does not shine in its purity, but only as a characteristic of the jug-form, and this is the root of the illusion. In all our experiences only the aspect of Brahman as real shines forth in association with the manifold objects, and therefore the Brahman in its true nature being unknown the illusion is made possible. It is again objected that since the world-appearance can serve all practical purposes, it must be considered as real and not illusory. But the Vedanta points out that even by illusory perceptions practical effects are seen to take place; the illusory perception of a snake in a rope causes all the fear that a real snake could do; even in dreams we feel happy and sad, and dreams may be so bad as to affect or incapacitate the actual physical functions and organs of a man. So it is that the past impressions imbedded in us continuing from beginningless time are sufficient to account for our illusory notions, just as the impressions produced in actual waking life account for the dream creations. According to the good or bad deeds that a man has done in previous lives and according to the impressions or potencies (*sa@mskara*) of his past lives each man has a particular kind of world-experience for himself and the impressions of one cannot affect the formation of the illusory experience of the other. But

452

the experience of the world-appearance is not wholly a subjective creation for each individual, for even before his cognition the phenomena of world-appearance were running in some unknowable state of existence (*svena adhyastasya sa@mskarasya viyadadyadhyasajanakatvopapatte@h tatpratityabhavapi tadadhyasasya purvam sattvat k@rtsnasyapi vyavaharikapadarthasya ajnatasattvabhyupagamat*). It is again sometimes objected that illusion is produced by malobserved similarity between the ground (*adhi@s@thana*) and the illusory notion as silver in “this is silver,” but no such similarity is found between the Brahman and the world-appearance. To this Vedanta says that similarity is not an indispensable factor in the production of an illusion (e.g. when a white conch is perceived as yellow owing to the defect of the eye through the influence of bile or *pitta*). Similarity helps the production of illusion by rousing up the potencies of past impressions or memories; but this rousing of past memories may as well be done by *ad@r@s@ta*—the unseen power of our past good or bad deeds. In ordinary illusion some defect is necessary but the illusion of this world-appearance is beginningless, and hence it awaits no other *do@sa* (defect) than the *avidya* (nescience) which constitutes the appearance. Here *avidya* is the only *do@sa* and Brahman is the only *adhi@s@thana* or ground. Had there not been the Brahman, the self-luminous as the *adhi@s@thana*, the illusory creations could not have been manifested at all. The cause of the direct perception of illusion is the direct but indefinite perception of the *adhi@s@thana*.

Page 412

Hence where the adhi@s@thana is hidden by the veil of avidya, the association with mental states becomes necessary for removing the veil and manifesting thereby the self-luminous adhi@s@thana. As soon as the adhi@s@thana, the ground, the reality, the blissful self-luminous Brahman is completely realized the illusions disappear. The disappearance of the phenomena means nothing more than the realization of the self-luminous Brahman.

The Definition of Ajnana (nescience).

Ajnana the cause of all illusions is defined as that which is beginningless, yet positive and removable by knowledge (*anadibhavarupatve sati jnananivartyatvam*). Though it manifests itself in all ordinary things (veiled by it before they become objects of perception) which have a beginning in time, yet it itself has no beginning, for it is associated with the pure consciousness which

453

is beginningless. Again though it has been described as positive (*bhavarupa*) it can very well constitute the essence of negation (*abhava*) too, for the positivity (*bhavatva*) does not mean here the opposite of *abhava* (negation) but notes merely its difference from *abhava* (*abhava-vilak@sa@natvamatram vivak@sitam*). Ajnana is not a positive entity (*bhava*) like any other positive entity, but it is called positive simply because it is not a mere negation (*abhava*). It is a category which is believed neither to be positive in the ordinary sense nor negative, but a third one which is different both from position as well as from negation. It is sometimes objected that ajnana is a mere illusory imagination of the moment caused by defect (*do@sa*) and hence it cannot be beginningless (*anadi*); but Vedanta holds that the fact that it is an imagination or rather imposition, does not necessarily mean that it is merely a temporary notion produced by the defects; for it could have been said to be a temporary product of the moment if the ground as well as the illusory creation associated with it came into being for the moment, but this is not the case here, as the cit, the ground of illusion, is ever-present and the ajnana therefore being ever associated with it is also beginningless. The ajnana is the indefinite which is veiling everything, and as such is different from the definite or the positive and the negative. Though it is beginningless yet it can be removed by knowledge, for to have a beginning or not to have it does not in any way determine whether the thing is subject to dissolution or not for the dissolution of a thing depends upon the presence of the thing which can cause it; and it is a fact that when knowledge comes the illusion is destroyed; it does not matter whether the cause which produced the illusion was beginningless or not. Some Vedantists however define ajnana as the substance constituting illusion, and say that though it is not a positive entity yet it may be regarded as forming the substance

Page 413

of the illusion; it is not necessary that only a positive entity should be the matter of any thing, for what is necessary for the notion of a material cause (*upadana*) is this, that it should continue or persist as the same in all changes of effects. It is not true that only what is positive can persist in and through the effects which are produced in the time process. Illusion is unreal and it is not unnatural that the ajnana which also is unreal should be the cause of it.

454

Ajnana established by Perception and Inference.

Ajnana defined as the indefinite which is neither positive nor negative is also directly experienced by us in such perceptions as "I do not know, or I do not know myself or anybody else," or "I do not know what you say," or more particularly "I had been sleeping so long happily and did not know anything." Such perceptions point to an object which has no definite characteristics, and which cannot properly be said to be either positive or negative. It may be objected that the perception "I do not know" is not the perception of the indefinite, the ajnana, but merely the negation of knowledge. To this Vedanta says that had it been the perception of a negation merely, then the negation must have been associated with the specific object to which it applied. A negation must imply the thing negated; in fact negation generally appears as a substantive with the object of negation as a qualifying character specifying the nature of the negation. But the perception "I do not know or I had no knowledge" does not involve the negation of any particular knowledge of any specific object, but the knowledge of an indefinite objectless ignorance. Such an indefinite ajnana is positive in the sense that it is certainly not negative, but this positive indefinite is not positive in the same sense in which other definite entities are called positive, for it is merely the characterless, passive indefinite showing itself in our experience. If negation meant only a general negation, and if the perception of negation meant in each case the perception of a general negation, then even where there is a jug on the ground, one should perceive the negation of the jug on the ground, for the general negation in relation to other things is there. Thus negation of a thing cannot mean the general notion of the negation of all specific things; similarly a general negation without any specific object to which it might apply cannot manifest itself to consciousness; the notion of a general negation of knowledge is thus opposed to any and every knowledge, so that if the latter is present the former cannot be, but the perception "I do not know" can persist, even though many individual objects be known to us. Thus instead of saying that the perception of "I do not know" is the perception of a special kind of negation, it is rather better to say that it is the perception of a different category namely the indefinite, the ajnana. It is our common experience

Page 414

455

that after experiencing the indefinite (*ajnana*) of a specific type we launch forth in our endeavours to remove it. So it has to be admitted that the perception of the indefinite is different from the perception of mere negation. The character of our perceiving consciousness (*sak@si*) is such that both the root *ajnana* as well as its diverse forms with reference to particular objects as represented in mental states (*v@rtti-jnana*), are comprehended by it. Of course when the *v@rtti* *ajnana* about a thing as in ordinary perceptions of objects comes in, the *ajnana* with regard to it is temporarily removed, for the *v@rtti* *ajnana* is opposed to the *ajnana*. But so far as our own perceiving consciousness (*sak@si-caitanya*) is conceived it can comprehend both the *ajnana* and the *jnana* (knowledge) of things. It is thus often said that all things show themselves to the perceiving consciousness either as known or as unknown. Thus the perceiving consciousness comprehends all positives either as indefinite *ajnana* or as states of knowledge or as specific kinds of *ajnana* or ignorance, but it is unable to comprehend a negation, for negation (*abhava*) is not a perception, but merely the absence of perception (*anupalabhi*). Thus when I say I do not know this, I perceive the indefinite in consciousness with reference to that thing, and this is not the perception of a negation of the thing. An objection is sometimes raised from the Nyaya point of view that since without the knowledge of a qualification (*vis'e@sana*) the qualified thing (*vis'i@s@ta*) cannot be known, the indefinite about an object cannot be present in consciousness without the object being known first. To this Vedanta replies that the maxim that the qualification must be known before the qualified thing is known is groundless, for we can as well perceive the thing first and then its qualification. It is not out of place here to say that negation is not a separate entity, but is only a peculiar mode of the manifestation of the positive. Even the *naiyayikas* would agree that in the expression "there is no negation of a jug here," no separate negation can be accepted, for the jug is already present before us. As there are distinctions and differences in positive entities by illusory impositions, so negations are also distinguished by similar illusory impositions and appear as the negation of jug, negation of cloth, etc.; so all distinctions between negations are unnecessary, and it may be accepted that negation like position is one which appears as many on account of illusory distinctions and impositions. Thus the

456

content of negation being itself positive, there is no reason to object that such perceptions as "I do not know" refer to the perception of an indefinite *ajnana* in consciousness. So also the perception "I do not know what you say" is not the perception of negation, for this would require that the hearer should know first what was said by the speaker, and if this is so then it is impossible to say "I do not know what you say."

Page 415

So also the cognition “I was sleeping long and did not know anything” has to be admitted as referring to the perception of the indefinite during sleep. It is not true as some say that during sleep there is no perception, but what appears to the awakened man as “I did not know anything so long” is only an inference; for, it is not possible to infer from the pleasant and active state of the senses in the awakened state that the activity had ceased in the sleep state and that since he had no object of knowledge then, he could not know anything; for there is no invariable concomitance between the pleasant and active state of the senses and the absence of objects of knowledge in the immediately preceding state. During sleep there is a mental state of the form of the indefinite, and during the awakened state it is by the impression (*sa@mskara*) of the aforesaid mental state of *ajnana* that one remembers that state and says that “I did not perceive anything so long.” The indefinite (*ajnana*) perceived in consciousness is more fundamental and general than the mere negation of knowledge (*jnanabhava*) and the two are so connected that though the latter may not be felt, yet it can be inferred from the perception of the indefinite. The indefinite though not definite is thus a positive content different from negation and is perceived as such in direct and immediate consciousness both in the awakened state as well as in the sleeping state.

The presence of this *ajnana* may also be inferred from the manner in which knowledge of objects is revealed in consciousness, as this always takes place in bringing a thing into consciousness which was not known or rather known as indefinite before we say “I did not know it before, but I know it now.” My present knowledge of the thing thus involves the removal of an indefinite which was veiling it before and positing it in consciousness, just as the first streak of light in utter darkness manifests itself by removing the darkness[Footnote ref 1]. Apart from such an inference its existence

[Footnote 1: See *Pancapadikavivara@na*, *Tattvadipana*, and *Advaitasiddhi*.]

is also indicated by the fact that the infinite bliss of Brahman does not show itself in its complete and limitless aspect. If there was no *ajnana* to obstruct, it would surely have manifested itself in its fullness. Again had it not been for this *ajnana* there would have been no illusion. It is the *ajnana* that constitutes the substance of the illusion; for there is nothing else that can be regarded as constituting its substance; certainly Brahman could not, as it is unchangeable. This *ajnana* is manifested by the perceiving consciousness (*sak@si*) and not by the pure consciousness. The perceiving consciousness is nothing but pure intelligence which reflects itself in the states of *avidya* (ignorance).

Page 416

Locus and Object of Ajnana, Aha@mkara, and Anta@hkara@na.

This ajnana rests on the pure *cit* or intelligence. This cit or Brahman is of the nature of pure illumination, but yet it is not opposed to the ajnana or the indefinite. The cit becomes opposed to the ajnana and destroys it only when it is reflected through the mental states (*v@rtti*). The ajnana thus rests on the pure cit and not on the cit as associated with such illusory impositions as go to produce the notion of ego “*aham*” or the individual soul. Vacaspati Mis’ra however holds that the ajnana does not rest on the pure cit but on the *jiva* (individual soul). Madhava reconciles this view of Vacaspati with the above view, and says that the ajnana may be regarded as resting on the *jiva* or individual soul from this point of view that the obstruction of the pure cit is with reference to the *jiva* (*Cinmatras’ritam ajnanam jivapak@sapatitvat jivas’ritam ucyate Vivara@naprameya*, p. 48). The feeling “I do not know” seems however to indicate that the ajnana is with reference to the perceiving self in association with its feeling as ego or “I”; but this is not so; such an appearance however is caused on account of the close association of ajnana with *anta@hkara@na* (mind) both of which are in essence the same (see *Vivara@naprarneyasa@mgraha*, p. 48).

The ajnana however does not only rest on the cit, but it has the cit as its visaya or object too, *i.e.* its manifestations are with reference to the self-luminous cit. The self-luminous cit is thus the entity on which the veiling action of the ajnana is noticed; the veiling action is manifested not by destroying the self-luminous character, nor by stopping a future course of luminous career on the part of the cit, nor by stopping its relations with the *vi@saya*,

458

but by causing such an appearance that the self-luminous cit seems so to behave that we seem to think that it is not or it does not shine (*nasti na prakas’ate iti vyavahara@h*) or rather there is no appearance of its shining or luminosity. To say that Brahman is hidden by the ajnana means nothing more than this, that it is such {*_tadyogyata_*} that the ajnana can so relate itself with it that it appears to be hidden as in the state of deep sleep and other states of ajnana-consciousness in experience. Ajnana is thus considered to have both its locus and object in the pure cit. It is opposed to the states of consciousness, for these at once dispel it. The action of this *ajn@ana* is thus on the light of the reality which it obstructs for us, so long as the obstruction is not dissolved by the states of consciousness. This obstruction of the cit is not only with regard to its character as pure limitless consciousness but also with regard to its character as pure and infinite bliss; so it is that though we do not experience the indefinite in our pleasurable feelings, yet its presence as obstructing the pure

Page 417

cit is indicated by the fact that the full infinite bliss constituting the essence of Brahman is obstructed; and as a result of that there is only an incomplete manifestation of the bliss in our phenomenal experiences of pleasure. The ajnana is one, but it seems to obstruct the pure cit in various aspects or modes, with regard to which it may be said that the ajnana has many states as constituting the individual experiences of the indefinite with reference to the diverse individual objects of experience. These states of ajnana are technically called tulajnana or avasthajnana. Any state of consciousness (v@rttijnana) removes a manifestation of the ajnana as tulajnana and reveals itself as the knowledge of an object.

The most important action of this ajnana as obstructing the pure cit, and as creating an illusory phenomenon is demonstrated in the notion of the ego or aha@mkara. This notion of aha@mkara is a union of the true self, the pure consciousness and other associations, such as the body, the continued past experiences, *etc.*; it is the self-luminous characterless Brahman that is found obstructed in the notion of the ego as the repository of a thousand limitations, characters, and associations. This illusory creation of the notion of the ego runs on from beginningless time, each set of previous false impositions determining the succeeding set of impositions and so on. This blending of the unreal associations held up in the mind (*anta@hkara@na*) with the real, the false with

459

the true, that is at the root of illusion. It is the anta@hkara@na taken as the self-luminous self that reflects itself in the cit as the notion of the ego. Just as when we say that the iron ball (red hot) burns, there are two entities of the ball and the fire fused into one, so, here also when I say "I perceive", there are two distinct elements of the self, as consciousness and the mind or antahkarana fused into one. The part or aspect associated with sorrow, materiality, and changefulness represents the anta@hkara@na, whereas that which appears as the unchangeable perceiving consciousness is the self. Thus the notion of ego contains two parts, one real and other unreal.

We remember that this is distinctly that which Prabhakara sought to repudiate. Prabhakara did not consider the self to be self-luminous, and held that such is the threefold nature of thought (*tripu@ti*), that it at once reveals the knowledge, the object of knowledge, and the self. He further said, that the analogy of the red-hot iron ball did not hold, for the iron ball and the fire are separately experienced, but the self and the anta@hkara@na are never separately experienced, and we can never say that these two are really different, and only have an illusory appearance of a seeming unity. Perception (*anubhava*) is like a light which illuminates both the object and the self, and like it does not require the assistance

Page 418

of anything else for the fulfilment of its purpose. But the Vedanta objects to this saying that according to Prabhakara's supposition, it is impossible to discover any relation between the self and the knowledge. If knowledge can be regarded as revealing itself, the self may as well be held to be self-luminous; the self and the knowledge are indeed one and the same. Kumarila thinks this thought (*anubhava*), to be a movement, Nyaya and Prabhakara as a quality of the self [Footnote ref 1]. But if it was a movement like other movements, it could not affect itself as illumination. If it were a substance and atomic in size, it would only manifest a small portion of a thing, if all pervasive, then it would illuminate everything, if of medium size, it would depend on its parts for its own

[Footnote 1: According to Nyaya the *atman* is conscious only through association with consciousness, but it is not consciousness(*cit*). Consciousness is associated with it only as a result of suitable collocations. Thus, *Nyayamanjari* in refuting the doctrine of self-luminosity {*_svaprakas'a_*} says (p.432)

sacetanas'cita yogattadyogena vina ja@da@h
narthavabhasadanyaddhi caitanya@m nama manma@he.]

460

constitution and not on the self. If it is regarded as a quality of the self as the light is of the lamp, then also it has necessarily to be supposed that it was produced by the self, for from what else could it be produced? Thus it is to be admitted that the self, the *atman*, is the self-luminous entity. No one doubts any of his knowledge, whether it is he who sees or anybody else. The self is thus the same as *vijnana*, the pure consciousness, which is always of itself self-luminous [Footnote ref 1].

Again, though consciousness is continuous in all stages, waking or sleeping, yet *aha@mkara* is absent during deep sleep. It is true that on waking from deep sleep one feels "I slept happily and did not know anything"; yet what happens is this, that during deep sleep the *anta@hkara@na* and the *aha@mkara* are altogether submerged in the *ajnana*, and there are only the *ajnana* and the self; on waking, this *aha@mkara* as a state of *anta@hkar@na* is again generated, and then it associates the perception of the *ajnana* in the sleep and originates the perception "I did not know anything." This *aha@mkara* which is a mode (*v@rtti*) of the *anta@hkara@na* is thus constituted by *avidya*, and is manifested as *jnanas'akti* (power of knowledge) and *kriyas'akti* (power of work). This *kriyas'akti* of the *aha@mkara* is illusorily imposed upon the self, and as a result of that the self appears to be an active agent in knowing and willing. The *aha@mkara* itself is regarded, as we have already seen, as a mode or *v@rtti* of the

anta@hkara@na, and as such the aha@mkara of a past period can now be associated;
but even then

Page 419

the v@rtti of anta@hkara@na, aha@mkara, may be regarded as only the active side or aspect of the anta@hkara@na. The same anta@hkara@na is called manas in its capacity as doubt buddhi in its capacity as achieving certainty of knowledge, and citta in its capacity as remembering [Footnote ref 2]. When the pure cit shines forth in association with this anta@hkara@na, it is called a jiva. It is clear from the above account that the ajnana is not a mere nothing, but is the principle of the phenomena. But it cannot stand alone, without the principle of the real to support it (*as'raya*); its own nature as the ajnana or indefinite is perceived directly by the pure consciousness; its movements as originating the phenomena remain indefinite in themselves, the real as underlying

[Footnote 1: See *Nyayamakaranda*, pp. 130-140, *Citshkha* and *Vivara@naprameyasa@mgraha*, pp. 53-58.]

[Footnote 2: See *Vedanta-paribha@sa*, p. 88, Bombay edition.]

461

these phenomenal movements can only manifest itself through these which hide it, when corresponding states arise in the anta@hkara@na, and the light of the real shines forth through these states. The anta@hkara@na of which aha@mkara is a moment, is itself a beginningless system of ajnana-phenomena containing within it the associations and impressions of past phenomena as merit, demerit, instincts, *etc.* from a beginningless time when the jiva or individual soul began his career.

Anirvacyavada and the Vedanta Dialectic.

We have already seen that the indefinite ajnana could be experienced in direct perception and according to Vedanta there are only two categories. The category of the real, the self-luminous Brahman, and the category of the indefinite. The latter has for its ground the world-appearance, and is the principle by which the one unchangeable Brahman is falsely manifested in all the diversity of the manifold world. But this indefinite which is different from the category of the positive and the negative, has only a relative existence and will ultimately vanish, when the true knowledge of the Brahman dawns. Nothing however can be known about the nature of this indefinite except its character as indefinite. That all the phenomena of the world, the fixed order of events, the infinite variety of world-forms and names, all these are originated by this avidya, ajnana or maya is indeed hardly comprehensible. If it is indefinite nescience, how can all these well-defined forms of world-existence come out of it? It is said to exist only

relatively, and to have only a temporary existence beside the permanent infinite reality. To take such a principle and to derive from it the mind, matter, and indeed everything else except the pure self-luminous Brahman, would hardly appeal to our reason. If this system of world-order were

Page 420

only seeming appearance, with no other element of truth in it except pure being, then it would be indefensible in the light of reason. It has been proved that whatever notions we have about the objective world are all self-contradictory, and thus groundless and false. If they have all proceeded from the indefinite they must show this character when exposed to discerning criticism. All categories have to be shown to be so hopelessly confused and to be without any conceivable notion that though apparent before us yet they crumble into indefiniteness as soon as they are

462

examined, and one cannot make such assertion about them as that they are or that they are not. Such negative criticisms of our fundamental notions about the world-order were undertaken by S'rihar@sa and his commentator and follower Citsukha. It is impossible within the limits of this chapter, to give a complete account of their criticisms of our various notions of reality. I shall give here, only one example.

Let us take the examination of the notion of difference (*bheda*) from *Kha@n@danakha@n@dakhadya*. Four explanations are possible about the notion of difference: (1) the difference may be perceived as appearing in its own characteristics in our experience (*svarupa-bheda*) as Prabhakara thinks; (2) the difference between two things is nothing but the absence of one in the other (*anyonyabhava*), as some Naiyayikas and Bha@t@tas think; (3) difference means divergence of characteristics (*vaidharmya*) as the Vais'e@sikas speak of it; (4) difference may be a separate quality in itself like the p@rthaktva quality of Nyaya. Taking the first alternative, we see that it is said that the jug and the cloth represent in themselves, by their very form and existence, their mutual difference from each other. But if by perceiving the cloth we only perceive its difference from the jug as the characteristic of the cloth, then the jug also must have penetrated into the form of the cloth, otherwise how could we perceive in the cloth its characteristics as the difference from the jug? *i.e.* if difference is a thing which can be directly perceived by the senses, then as difference would naturally mean difference from something else, it is expected that something else such as jug, *etc.* from which the difference is perceived, must also be perceived directly in the perception of the cloth. But if the perception of "difference" between two things has penetrated together in the same identical perception, then the self-contradiction becomes apparent. Difference as an entity is not what we perceive in the cloth, for difference means difference from something else, and if that thing from which the difference is perceived is not perceived, then how can the difference as an entity be perceived? If it is said that the cloth itself represents its difference from the jug, and that this is indicated by the jug, then we may ask, what is the nature of the jug? If the difference from the cloth is the very nature of the jug, then the cloth itself is also involved in the nature of the jug. If it is said that

Page 421

463

the jug only indicates a term from which difference is intended to be conveyed, then that also becomes impossible, for how can we imagine that there is a term which is independent of any association of its difference from other things, and is yet a term which establishes the notion of difference? If it is a term of difference, it cannot be independent of its relation to other things from which it is differentiated. If its difference from the cloth is a quality of the jug, then also the old difficulty comes in, for its difference from the cloth would involve the cloth also in itself; and if the cloth is involved in the nature of the jug as its quality, then by the same manner the jug would also be the character of the cloth, and hence not difference but identity results. Moreover, if a cloth is perceived as a character of the jug, the two will appear to be hanging one over the other, but this is never so experienced by us. Moreover, it is difficult to ascertain if qualities have any relation with things; if they have not, then absence of relation being the same everywhere, everything might be the quality of everything. If there is a relation between these two, then that relation would require another relation to relate itself with that relation, and that would again require another relation and that another, and so on. Again, it may be said that when the jug, *etc.* are seen without reference to other things, they appear as jug, *etc.*, but when they are viewed with reference to cloth, *etc.* they appear as difference. But this cannot be so, for the perception as jug is entirely different from the perception of difference. It should also be noted that the notion of difference is also different from the notions of both the jug and the cloth. It is one thing to say that there are jug and cloth, and quite another thing to say that the jug is different from the cloth. Thus a jug cannot appear as difference, though it may be viewed with reference to cloth. The notion of a jug does not require the notions of other things for its manifestation. Moreover, when I say the jug is different from the cloth, I never mean that difference is an entity which is the same as the jug or the cloth; what I mean is that the difference of the cloth from the jug has its limits in the jug, and not merely that the notion of cloth has a reference to jug. This shows that difference cannot be the characteristic nature of the thing perceived.

Again, in the second alternative where difference of two

463

things is defined as the absence of each thing in the other, we find that if difference in jug and cloth means that the jug is not in the cloth or that cloth is not in jug, then also the same difficulty arises; for when I say that the absence or negation of jug in the cloth is its difference from the jug, then also the residence of the absence of jug in the cloth would require that the jug also resides in the cloth, and

Page 422

this would reduce difference to identity. If it is said that the absence of jug in the cloth is not a separate thing, but is rather the identical cloth itself, then also their difference as mutual exclusion cannot be explained. If this mutual negation (*anyonyabhava*) is explained as the mere absence of jugness in the cloth and of clothness in the jug, then also a difficulty arises; for there is no such quality in jugness or clothness that they may be mutually excluded; and there is no such quality in them that they can be treated as identical, and so when it is said that there is no jugness in cloth we might as well say that there is no clothness in cloth, for clothness and jugness are one and the same, and hence absence of jugness in the cloth would amount to the absence of clothness in the cloth which is self-contradictory. Taking again the third alternative we see that if difference means divergence of characteristics (*vaidharmya*), then the question arises whether the *vaidharmya* or divergence as existing in jug has such a divergence as can distinguish it from the divergence existing in the cloth; if the answer is in the affirmative then we require a series of endless *vaidharmyas* progressing *ad infinitum*. If the answer is in the negative then there being no divergence between the two divergences they become identical, and hence divergence of characteristics as such ceases to exist. If it is said that the natural forms of things are difference in themselves, for each of them excludes the other, then apart from the differences—the natural forms—the things are reduced to formlessness (*ni@hsvarupata*). If natural forms (*svarupa*) mean special natural forms (*svarupa-vis'e@sa*) then as the special natural forms or characteristics only represent difference, the natural forms of the things as apart from the special ones would appear to be identical. So also it may be proved that there is no such quality as p@rthaktva (separateness) which can explain differences of things, for there also the questions would arise as to whether separateness exists in different things or similar ones or whether separateness is identical with the thing in which it exists or not, and so forth.

465

The earliest beginnings of this method of subtle analysis and dialectic in Indian philosophy are found in the opening chapters of *Kathavatthu*. In the great *Mahabha@sya* on Pa@nini by Patanjali also we find some traces of it. But Nagarjuna was the man who took it up in right earnest and systematically cultivated it in all its subtle and abstruse issues and counter-issues in order to prove that everything that appeared as a fixed order or system was non-existent, for all were unspeakable, indescribable and self-contradictory, and thus everything being discarded there was only the void (*s'unya*). S'a@nkara partially utilized this method in his refutations of Nyaya and the Buddhist systems; but S'rihar@sa

Page 423

again revived and developed it in a striking manner, and after having criticized the most important notions and concepts of our everyday life, which are often backed by the Nyaya system, sought to prove that nothing in the world can be defined, and that we cannot ascertain whether a thing is or is not. The refutations of all possible definitions that the Nyaya could give necessarily led to the conclusion that the things sought to be defined did not exist though they appeared to do so; the Vedantic contention was that this is exactly as it should be, for the indefinite ajnana produces only appearances which when exposed to reason show that no consistent notions of them can be formed, or in other words the world-appearance, the phenomena of maya or ajnana, are indefinable or anirvacaniya. This great work of S'rihar@sa was followed by *Tattvadipika* of Citsukha, in which he generally followed S'rihar@sa and sometimes supplemented him with the addition of criticisms of certain new concepts. The method of Vedanta thus followed on one side the method of S'unyavada in annulling all the concepts of world-appearance and on the other Vijnanavada Buddhism in proving the self-illuminating character of knowledge and ultimately established the self as the only self-luminous ultimate reality.

The Theory of Causation.

The Vedanta philosophy looked at the constantly changing phenomena of the world-appearance and sought to discover the root whence proceeded the endless series of events and effects. The theory that effects were altogether new productions caused by the invariable unconditional and immediately preceding antecedents, as well as the theory that it was the cause which evolved

466

and by its transformations produced the effect, are considered insufficient to explain the problem which the Vedanta had before it. Certain collocations invariably and unconditionally preceded certain effects, but this cannot explain how the previous set of phenomena could be regarded as producing the succeeding set. In fact the concept of causation and production had in it something quite undefinable and inexplicable. Our enquiry after the cause is an enquiry after a more fundamental and primary form of the truth of a thing than what appears at the present moment when we wished to know what was the cause of the jug, what we sought was a simpler form of which the effect was only a more complex form of manifestation, what is the ground, the root, out of which the effect has come forth? If apart from such an enquiry we take the pictorial representation of the causal phenomena in which some collocations being invariably present at an antecedent point of time, the effect springs forth into being, we find that we are just where we were before, and are unable to penetrate into the logic of the affair. The Nyaya definition of cause and effect may be of use to us in a general way in associating certain groups of things of a particular

Page 424

kind with certain other phenomena happening at a succeeding moment as being relevant pairs of which one being present the other also has a probability of being present, but can do nothing more than this. It does not answer our question as to the nature of cause. Antecedence in time is regarded in this view as an indispensable condition for the cause. But time, according to Nyaya, is one continuous entity; succession of time can only be conceived as antecedence and consequence of phenomena, and these again involve succession; thus the notions of succession of time and of the antecedence and consequence of time being mutually dependent upon each other (*anyonyas'raya*) neither of these can be conceived independently. Another important condition is invariability. But what does that mean? If it means invariable antecedence, then even an ass which is invariably present as an antecedent to the smoke rising from the washerman's house, must be regarded as the cause of the smoke [Footnote ref 1]. If it means such an antecedence as contributes to the happening of the effect, it becomes again difficult to understand anything about its contributing

[Footnote 1: Asses are used in carrying soiled linen in India. Asses are always present when water is boiled for washing in the laundry.]

467

to the effect, for the only intelligible thing is the antecedence and nothing more. If invariability means the existence of that at the presence of which the effect comes into being, then also it fails, for there may be the seed but no shoot, for the mere presence of the seed will not suffice to produce the effect, the shoot. If it is said that a cause can produce an effect only when it is associated with its accessory factors, then also the question remains the same, for we have not understood what is meant by cause. Again when the same effect is often seen to be produced by a plurality of causes, the cause cannot be defined as that which happening the effect happens and failing the effect fails. It cannot also be said that in spite of the plurality of causes, each particular cause is so associated with its own particular kind of effect that from a special kind of cause we can without fail get a special kind of effect (cf. Vatsyayana and *Nyayamanjari*), for out of the same clay different effects come forth namely the jug, the plate, etc. Again if cause is defined as the collocation of factors, then the question arises as to what is meant by this collocation; does it mean the factors themselves or something else above them? On the former supposition the scattered factors being always present in the universe there should always be the effect; if it means something else above the specific factors, then that something always existing, there should always be the effect. Nor can collocation (*samagri*) be defined as the last movement of

Page 425

the causes immediately succeeding which the effect comes into being, for the relation of movement with the collocating cause is incomprehensible. Moreover if movement is defined as that which produces the effect, the very conception of causation which was required to be proved is taken for granted. The idea of necessity involved in the causal conception that a cause is that which must produce its effect is also equally undefinable, inexplicable, and logically inconceivable. Thus in whatsoever way we may seek to find out the real nature of the causal principle from the interminable series of cause-effect phenomena we fail. All the characteristics of the effects are indescribable and indefinable *ajnana* of *maya*, and in whatever way we may try to conceive these phenomena in themselves or in relation to one another we fail, for they are all carved out of the indefinite and are illogical and illusory, and some day will vanish for ever. The true cause is thus the pure being, the reality which is unshakable in itself, the ground upon

468

which all appearances being imposed they appear as real. The true cause is thus the unchangeable being which persists through all experience, and the effect-phenomena are but impositions upon it of *ajnana* or *avidya*. It is thus the clay, the permanent, that is regarded as the cause of all clay-phenomena as jug, plates, etc. All the various modes in which the clay appears are mere appearances, unreal, indefinable and so illusory. The one truth is the clay. So in all world-phenomena the one truth is being, the Brahman, and all the phenomena that are being imposed on it are but illusory forms and names. This is what is called the *satkaryavada* or more properly the *satkara@navada* of the Vedanta, that the cause alone is true and ever existing, and phenomena in themselves are false. There is only this much truth in them, that all are imposed on the reality or being which alone is true. This appearance of the one cause the being, as the unreal many of the phenomena is what is called the *vivarttavada* as distinguished from the *sa@mkhyayogapari@namavada*, in which the effect is regarded as the real development of the cause in its potential state. When the effect has a different kind of being from the cause it is called *vivartta* but when the effect has the same kind of being as the cause it is called *pari@nama* (*kara@nasvalak@sa@nanyathabhava@h pari@nama@h tadvilak@sa@no vivartta@h* or *vastunastatsamattako'nyathabhava@h pari@nama@h tadvil@samastattaka@h vivartta@h*). Vedanta has as much to object against the Nyaya as against the *pari@nama* theory of causation of the *Sa@mkhya*; for movement, development, form, potentiality, and actuality—all these are indefinable and inconceivable in the light of reason; they cannot explain causation but only restate things and phenomena as they appear in the world. In reality however though phenomena are not identical with the cause, they can never be defined except in terms of the cause (*Tadabhedam vinaiva tadvyatireke@na durvacam karyam vivartta@h*).

Page 426

This being the relation of cause and effect or Brahman and the world, the different followers of S'a@nkara Vedanta in explaining the cause of the world-appearance sometimes lay stress on the maya, ajnana or avidya, sometimes on the Brahman, and sometimes on them both. Thus Sarvaj@natmamuni, the writer of *Sa@nk@sepa-s'ariraka* and his followers think that the pure Brahman should be regarded as the causal substance (*upadana*) of the world-appearance, whereas Prakas'atman Akhan@dananda, and

469

Madhava hold that Brahman in association with maya, *i.e.* the maya-reflected form of Brahman as Is'vara should be regarded as the cause of the world-appearance. The world-appearance is an evolution or pari@nama of the maya as located in Is'vara, whereas Is'vara (God) is the vivartta causal matter. Others however make a distinction between maya as the cosmical factor of illusion and avidya as the manifestation of the same entity in the individual or jiva. They hold that though the world-appearance may be said to be produced by the maya yet the mind *etc.* associated with the individual are produced by the avidya with the jiva or the individual as the causal matter (*upadana*). Others hold that since it is the individual to whom both Is'vara and the world-appearance are manifested, it is better rather to think that these are all manifestations of the jiva in association with his avidya or ajnana. Others however hold that since in the world-appearance we find in one aspect pure being and in another materiality *etc.*, both Brahman and maya are to be regarded as the cause, Brahman as the permanent causal matter, upadana and maya as the entity evolving in pari@nama. Vacaspati Mis'ra thinks that Brahman is the permanent cause of the world-appearance through maya as associated with jiva. Maya is thus only a sahakari or instrument as it were, by which the one Brahman appears in the eye of the jiva as the manifold world of appearance. Prakas'ananda holds however in his *Siddhanta Muktavali* that Brahman itself is pure and absolutely unaffected even as illusory appearance, and is not even the causal matter of the world-appearance. Everything that we see in the phenomenal world, the whole field of world-appearance, is the product of maya, which is both the instrumental and the upadana (causal matter) of the world-illusion. But whatever these divergences of view may be, it is clear that they do not in any way affect the principal Vedanta text that the only unchangeable cause is the Brahman, whereas all else, the effect-phenomena, have only a temporary existence as indefinable illusion. The word maya was used in the @Rg-Veda in the sense of supernatural power and wonderful skill, and the idea of an inherent mystery underlying it was gradually emphasized in the Atharva Veda, and it began to be used in the sense of magic or illusion. In the B@rhadara@nyaka, Pras'na, and Svetas'vatara Upani@sads the word means magic. It is not out of place here to mention that in the older Upani@sads

Page 427

470

the word *maya* occurs only once in the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka* and once only in the *Pras'na*. In early Pali Buddhist writings it occurs only in the sense of deception or deceitful conduct. *Buddhaghosa* uses it in the sense of magical power. In *Nagarjuna* and the *Lankavatara* it has acquired the sense of illusion. In *S'āṅkara* the word *maya* is used in the sense of illusion, both as a principle of creation as a *s'akti* (power) or accessory cause, and as the phenomenal creation itself, as the illusion of world-appearance.

It may also be mentioned here that *Gauḍapada* the teacher of *S'āṅkara*'s teacher *Govinda* worked out a system with the help of the *maya* doctrine. The *Upaniṣads* are permeated with the spirit of an earnest enquiry after absolute truth. They do not pay any attention towards explaining the world-appearance or enquiring into its relations with absolute truth. *Gauḍapada* asserts clearly and probably for the first time among Hindu thinkers, that the world does not exist in reality, that it is *maya*, and not reality. When the highest truth is realized *maya* is not removed, for it is not a thing, but the whole world-illusion is dissolved into its own airy nothing never to recur again. It was *Gauḍapada* who compared the world-appearance with dream appearances, and held that objects seen in the waking world are unreal, because they are capable of being seen like objects seen in a dream, which are false and unreal. The *atman* says *Gauḍapada* is at once the cognizer and the cognized, the world subsists in the *atman* through *maya*. As *atman* alone is real and all duality an illusion, it necessarily follows that all experience is also illusory. *S'āṅkara* expounded this doctrine in his elaborate commentaries on the *Upaniṣads* and the *Brahma-sutra*, but he seems to me to have done little more than making explicit the doctrine of *maya*. Some of his followers however examined and thought over the concept of *maya* and brought out in bold relief its character as the indefinable thereby substantially contributing to the development of the *Vedānta* philosophy.

Vedānta theory of Perception and Inference [Footnote ref 1].

Pramāṇa is the means that leads to right knowledge. If memory is intended to be excluded from the definition then

[Footnote 1: *Dharmarajadhvarindra* and his son *Ramakṛṣṇa* worked out a complete scheme of the theory of *Vedāntic* perception and inference. This is in complete agreement with the general *Vedānta* metaphysics. The early *Vedantists* were more interested in demonstrating the illusory nature of the world of appearance, and did

not work out a logical theory. It may be incidentally mentioned that in the theory of inference as worked out by Dharmarajadhvarindra he was largely indebted to the Mimam@sa school of thought. In recognizing arthapatti, upamana s'abda and anupalabdhi also Dharmarajadhvarindra accepted the Mimam@sa view. The Vedantins, previous to Dharmarajadhvarindra, had also tacitly followed the Mimam@sa in these matters.]

Page 428

471

prama@na is to be defined as the means that leads to such right knowledge as has not already been acquired. Right knowledge (*prama*) in Vedanta is the knowledge of an object which has not been found contradicted (*abadhitharthavi@sayajnanatva*). Except when specially expressed otherwise, prama is generally considered as being excludent of memory and applies to previously unacquired (*anadhigata*) and uncontradicted knowledge. Objections are sometimes raised that when we are looking at a thing for a few minutes, the perception of the thing in all the successive moments after the first refers to the image of the thing acquired in the previous moments. To this the reply is that the Vedanta considers that so long as a different mental state does not arise, any mental state is not to be considered as momentary but as remaining ever the same. So long as we continue to perceive one thing there is no reason to suppose that there has been a series of mental states. So there is no question as to the knowledge of the succeeding moments being referred to the knowledge of the preceding moments, for so long as any mental state has any one thing for its object it is to be considered as having remained unchanged all through the series of moments. There is of course this difference between the same percept of a previous and a later moment following in succession, that fresh elements of time are being perceived as prior and later, though the content of the mental state so far as the object is concerned remains unchanged. This time element is perceived by the senses though the content of the mental state may remain undisturbed. When I see the same book for two seconds, my mental state representing the book is not changed every second, and hence there can be no *such supposition* that I am having separate mental states in succession each of which is a repetition of the previous one, for so long as the general content of the mental state remains the same there is no reason for supposing that there has been any change in the mental state. The mental state thus remains the same so long as the content is not changed, but though it remains the same it can note the change in the time elements as extraneous

472

addition. All our uncontradicted knowledge of the objects of the external world should be regarded as right knowledge until the absolute is realized.

When the anta@hkara@na (mind) comes in contact with the external objects through the senses and becomes transformed as it were into their forms, it is said that the anta@hkara@na has been transformed into a state (*v@rtti*) [Footnote 1]. As soon as the anta@hkara@na has assumed the shape or form of the object of its knowledge, the ignorance (*ajnana*) with reference to that object is removed, and thereupon the steady light of the pure consciousness (*cit*) shows the object which was so long hidden by ignorance. The appearance or the perception of an object is thus

Page 429

the self-shining of the cit through a v@rtti of a form resembling an object of knowledge. This therefore pre-supposes that by the action of ajnana, pure consciousness or being is in a state of diverse kinds of modifications. In spite of the cit underlying all this diversified objective world which is but the transformation of ignorance (ajnana), the former cannot manifest itself by itself, for the creations being of ignorance they are but sustained by modifications of ignorance. The diversified objects of the world are but transformations of the principle of ajnana which is neither real nor unreal. It is the nature of ajnana that it veils its own creations. Thus on each of the objects created by the ajnana by its creating (*vik@sepa*) capacity there is a veil by its veiling (*avara@na*) capacity. But when any object comes in direct touch with *anta@hkara@na* through the senses the *anta@hkara@na* becomes transformed into the form of the object, and this leads to the removal of the veil on that particular ajnana form—the object, and as the self-shining cit is shining through the particular ajnana state, we have what is called the perception of the thing. Though there is in reality no such distinction as the inner and the outer yet the ajnana has created such illusory distinctions as individual souls and the external world of objects the distinctions of time, space,

[Footnote 1: Vedanta does not regard manas (mind) as a sense (indriya). The same *anta@hkara@na*, according to its diverse functions, is called manas, buddhi, *aha@mkara*, and *citta*. In its functions as doubt it is called manas, as originating definite cognitions it is called buddhi. As presenting the notion of an ego in consciousness *aha@mkara*, and as producing memory *citta*. These four represent the different modifications or states (v@rtti) of the same entity (which in itself is but a special kind of modification of ajnana as *anta@hkara@na*).]

473

etc. and veiled these forms. Perception leads to the temporary and the partial breaking of the veil over specific ajnana forms so that there is a temporary union of the cit as underlying the subject and the object through the broken veil. Perception on the subjective side is thus defined as the union or undifferentiation (*abheda*) of the subjective consciousness with the objective consciousness comprehending the sensible objects through the specific mental states (*tattadindriyayogyavi@sayavacchinnacaitanyabhinnatvam tattadakaravi@sayavacchinnajnanasya tattadams'e pratyak@satvam*). This union in perception means that the objective has at that moment no separate existence from the subjective consciousness of the perceiver. The consciousness manifesting through the *anta@hkara@na* is called *jivasak@si*.

Page 430

Inference (*anumana*), according to Vedanta, is made by our notion of concomitance (*vyaptijnana*) between two things, acting through specific past impressions (*sa@mskara*). Thus when I see smoke on a hill, my previous notion of the concomitance of smoke with fire becomes roused as a subconscious impression, and I infer that there is fire on the hill. My knowledge of the hill and the smoke is by direct perception. The notion of concomitance revived in the subconscious only establishes the connection between the smoke and the fire. The notion of concomitance is generated by the perception of two things together, when no case of the failure of concomitance is known (*vyabhicarajnana*) regarding the subject. The notion of concomitance being altogether subjective, the Vedantist does not emphasize the necessity of perceiving the concomitance in a large number of cases (*bhuyodars'anam sak@rddars'anam veti vis'e@so nadara@niya@h*). Vedanta is not anxious to establish any material validity for the inference, but only subjective and formal validity. A single perception of concomitance may in certain cases generate the notion of the concomitance of one thing with another when no contradictory instance is known. It is immaterial with the Vedanta whether this concomitance is experienced in one case or in hundreds of cases. The method of agreement in presence is the only form of concomitance (*anvayavyapti*) that the Vedanta allows. So the Vedanta discards all the other kinds of inference that Nyaya supported, viz. *anvayavyatireki* (by joining agreement in presence with agreement in absence), *kevalanvayi* (by universal agreement where no test could be applied of agreement in absence) and

474

kevalavyatireki (by universal agreement in absence). Vedanta advocates three premisses, viz. (1) *pratijna* (the hill is fiery); (2) *hetu* (because it has smoke) and (3) *d@rs@tanta* (as in the kitchen) instead of the five propositions that Nyaya maintained [Footnote ref 1]. Since one case of concomitance is regarded by Vedanta as being sufficient for making an inference it holds that seeing the one case of appearance (silver in the conch-shell) to be false, we can infer that all things (except Brahman) are false (*Brahmabhinnam sarvam mithya Brahmabhinnatvat yedevam tadevam yatha s'uktirupyam*). First premiss (*pratijna*) all else excepting Brahman is false; second premiss (*hetu*) since all is different from Brahman; third premiss (*dr@s@tanta*) whatever is so is so as the silver in the conch [Footnote ref 2].

Atman, Jiva, Is'vara, Ekajivavada and D@r@s@tis@r@s@tivada.

Page 431

We have many times spoken of truth or reality as self-luminous (*svayamprakas'a*). *But what does this mean? Vedanta defines it as that which is never the object of a knowing act but is yet immediate and direct with us (avedyatte sati aparoksavyavaharayogyatvam_)*. Self-luminosity thus means the capacity of being ever present in all our acts of consciousness without in any way being an object of consciousness. Whenever anything is described as an object of consciousness, its character as constituting its knowability is a quality, which may or may not be present in it, or may be present at one time and absent at another. This makes it dependent on some other such entity which can produce it or manifest it. Pure consciousness differs from all its objects in this that it is never dependent on anything else for its manifestation, but manifests all other objects such as the jug, the cloth, *etc.* If consciousness should require another consciousness to manifest it, then that might again require another, and that another, and so on *ad infinitum (anavastha)*. If consciousness did not manifest itself at the time of the object-manifestation, then even on seeing or knowing a thing one might doubt if he had seen or known it. It is thus to be admitted that consciousness (*anubhuti*) manifests itself and thereby maintains the appearance

[Footnote 1: Vedanta would have either pratijna, hetu and udaharana, or udahara@na, upanaya and nigamana, and not all the five of Nyaya, viz. pratijna, hetu, udahara@na, upanaya and nigamana.]

[Footnote 2: Vedantic notions of the pramana of upamana, arthapatti, s'abda and anupalabdhi, being similar to the mimam@sa view, do not require to be treated here separately.]

475

of all our world experience. This goes directly against the jnatata theory of Kumarila that consciousness was not immediate but was only inferable from the manifesting quality (*jnatata*) of objects when they are known in consciousness.

Now Vedanta says that this self-luminous pure consciousness is the same as the self. For it is only self which is not the object of any knowledge and is yet immediate and ever present in consciousness. No one doubts about his own self, because it is of itself manifested along with all states of knowledge. The self itself is the revealer of all objects of knowledge, but is never itself the object of knowledge, for what appears as the perceiving of self as object of knowledge is but association comprehended under the term aha@mkara (ego). The real self is identical with the pure manifesting unity of

all consciousness. This real self called the atman is not the same as the jiva or individual soul, which passes through the diverse experiences of worldly life. Is'vara also must be distinguished from this highest atman or Brahman. We have already seen that many Vedantists draw a distinction

Page 432

between maya and avidya. Maya is that aspect of ajnana by which only the best attributes are projected, whereas avidya is that aspect by which impure qualities are projected. In the former aspect the functions are more of a creative, generative (*vik@sepa*) type, whereas in the latter veiling (*avara@na*) characteristics are most prominent. The relation of the cit or pure intelligence, the highest self, with maya and avidya (also called ajnana) was believed respectively to explain the phenomenal Is'vara and the phenomenal jiva or individual. This relation is conceived in two ways, namely as upadhi or pratibimba, and avaccheda. The conception of pratibimba or reflection is like the reflection of the sun in the water where the image, though it has the same brilliance as the sun, yet undergoes the effect of the impurity and movements of the water. The sun remains ever the same in its purity untouched by the impurities from which the image sun suffers. The sun may be the same but it may be reflected in different kinds of water and yield different kinds of images possessing different characteristics and changes which though unreal yet phenomenally have all the appearance of reality. The other conception of the relation is that when we speak of akas'a (space) in the jug or of akas'a in the room. The akas'a in reality does not suffer

476

any modification in being within the jug or within the room. In reality it is all-pervasive and is neither limited (*avachinna*) within the jug or the room, but is yet conceived as being limited by the jug or by the room. So long as the jug remains, the akas'a limited within it will remain as separate from the akas'a limited within the room.

Of the Vedantists who accept the reflection analogy the followers of N@rsi@mhas'rama think that when the pure cit is reflected in the maya, Is'vara is phenomenally produced, and when in the avidya the individual or jiva. Sarvajnatma however does not distinguish between the maya and the avidya, and thinks that when the cit is reflected in the avidya in its total aspect as cause, we get Is'vara, and when reflected in the anta@hkara@na—a product of the avidya—we have jiva or individual soul.

Jiva or individual means the self in association with the ego and other personal experiences, *i.e.* phenomenal self, which feels, suffers and is affected by world-experiences. In jiva also three stages are distinguished; thus when during deep sleep the anta@hkara@na is submerged, the self perceives merely the ajnana and the jiva in this state is called prajna or anandamaya. In the dream-state the self is in association with a subtle body and is called tajasa. In the awakened state the self as associated with a subtle and gross body is called vis'va. So also the self in its pure state is called Brahman, when associated with maya it is called Is'vara, when associated with the fine subtle element of matter as controlling them, it is called hira@nyagarbha; when with the gross elements as the ruler or controller of them it is called vira@t puru@sa.

Page 433

The jiva in itself as limited by its avidya is often spoken of as paramarthika (real), when manifested through the sense and the ego in the waking states as vyavaharika (phenomenal), and when in the dream states as dream-self, pratibha@sika (illusory).

Prakas'atma and his followers think that since ajnana is one there cannot be two separate reflections such as jiva and Is'vara; but it is better to admit that jiva is the image of Is'vara in the ajnana. The totality of Brahma-cit in association with maya is Is'vara, and this when again reflected through the ajnana gives us the jiva. The manifestation of the jiva is in the anta@hkara@na as states of knowledge. The jiva thus in reality is Is'vara and apart from jiva and Is'vara there is no other separate existence of

477

Brahma-caitanya. Jiva being the image of Is'vara is thus dependent on him, but when the limitations of jiva are removed by right knowledge, the jiva is the same Brahman it always was.

Those who prefer to conceive the relation as being of the avaccheda type hold that reflection (pratibimba) is only possible of things which have colour, and therefore jiva is cit limited (avacchinna) by the anta@hkara@na (mind). Is'vara is that which is beyond it; the diversity of anta@hkara@nas accounts for the diversity of the jivas. It is easy however to see that these discussions are not of much fruit from the point of view of philosophy in determining or comprehending the relation of Is'vara and jiva. In the Vedanta system Is'vara has but little importance, for he is but a phenomenal being; he may be better, purer, and much more powerful than we, but yet he is as much phenomenal as any of us. The highest truth is the self, the reality, the Brahman, and both jiva and Is'vara are but illusory impositions on it. Some Vedantists hold that there is but one jiva and one body, and that all the world as well as all the jivas in it are merely his imaginings. These dream jivas and the dream world will continue so long as that super-jiva continues to undergo his experiences; the world-appearance and all of us imaginary individuals, run our course and salvation is as much imaginary salvation as our world-experience is an imaginary experience of the imaginary jivas. The cosmic jiva is alone the awakened jiva and all the rest are but his imaginings. This is known as the doctrine of ekajiva (one-soul).

The opposite of this doctrine is the theory held by some Vedantists that there are many individuals and the world-appearance has no permanent illusion for all people, but each person creates for himself his own illusion, and there is no objective datum which forms the common ground for the illusory perception of all people; just as when ten persons see in the darkness a rope and having the illusion of a snake there, run away, and agree in their individual perceptions that they have all seen the same snake, though each really had his own illusion and there was no snake at all. According to this view the illusory perception of each happens for him subjectively and has no corresponding

objective phenomena as its ground. This must be distinguished from the normal Vedanta view which holds that objectively phenomena are also happening, but that these



Page 434

478

are illusory only in the sense that they will not last permanently and have thus only a temporary and relative existence in comparison with the truth or reality which is ever the same constant and unchangeable entity in all our perceptions and in all world-appearance. According to the other view phenomena are not objectively existent but are only subjectively imagined; so that the jug I see had no existence before I happened to have the perception that there was the jug; as soon as the jug illusion occurred to me I said that there was the jug, but it did not exist before. As soon as I had the perception there was the illusion, and there was no other reality apart from the illusion. It is therefore called the theory of *d@r@s@tis@r@s@tivada*, i.e. the theory that the subjective perception is the creating of the objects and that there are no other objective phenomena apart from subjective perceptions. In the normal Vedanta view however the objects of the world are existent as phenomena by the sense-contact with which the subjective perceptions are created. The objective phenomena in themselves are of course but modifications of *ajnana*, but still these phenomena of the *ajnana* are there as the common ground for the experience of all. This therefore has an objective epistemology whereas the *d@r@s@tis@r@s@tivada* has no proper epistemology, for the experiences of each person are determined by his own subjective *avidya* and previous impressions as modifications of the *avidya*. The *d@r@s@tis@r@s@tivada* theory approaches nearest to the *Vijnanavada* Buddhism, only with this difference that while Buddhism does not admit of any permanent being Vedanta admits the Brahman, the permanent unchangeable reality as the only truth, whereas the illusory and momentary perceptions are but impositions on it.

The mental and physical phenomena are alike in this, that both are modifications of *ajnana*. It is indeed difficult to comprehend the nature of *ajnana*, though its presence in consciousness can be perceived, and though by dialectic criticism all our most well-founded notions seem to vanish away and become self-contradictory and indefinable. Vedanta explains the reason of this difficulty as due to the fact that all these indefinable forms and names can only be experienced as modes of the real, the self-luminous. Our innate error which we continue from beginningless time consists in this, that the real in its full complete light is ever hidden from us, and the glimpse

479

that we get of it is always through manifestations of forms and names; these phenomenal forms and names are undefinable, incomprehensible, and unknowable in themselves, but under certain conditions they are manifested by the self-luminous real, and at the time they are so manifested they seem to have a positive being which is undeniable. This positive being is only the highest being, the real which appears as the being of those forms and names. A lump

Page 435

of clay may be moulded into a plate or a cup, but the plate-form or the cup-form has no existence or being apart from the being of the clay; it is the being of the clay that is imposed on the diverse forms which also then seem to have being in themselves. Our illusion thus consists in mutually misattributing the characteristics of the unreal forms—the modes of ajnana and the real being. As this illusion is the mode of all our experience and its very essence, it is indeed difficult for us to conceive of the Brahman as apart from the modes of ajnana. Moreover such is the nature of ajnanas that they are knowable only by a false identification of them with the self-luminous Brahman or atman. Being as such is the highest truth, the Brahman. The ajnana states are not non-being in the sense of nothing of pure negation (*abhava*), but in the sense that they are not being. Being that is the self-luminous illuminates non-being, the ajnana, and this illumination means nothing more than a false identification of being with non-being. The forms of ajnana if they are to be known must be associated with pure consciousness, and this association means an illusion, superimposition, and mutual misattribution. But apart from pure consciousness these cannot be manifested or known, for it is pure consciousness alone that is self-luminous. Thus when we try to know the ajnana states in themselves as apart from the atman we fail in a dilemma, for knowledge means illusory superimposition or illusion, and when it is not knowledge they evidently cannot be known. Thus apart from its being a factor in our illusory experience no other kind of its existence is known to us. If ajnana had been a non-entity altogether it could never come at all, if it were a positive entity then it would never cease to be; the ajnana thus is a mysterious category midway between being and non-being and undefinable in every way; and it is on account of this that it is called *tattvanyatvabhyam anirvacya* or undefinable and undeterminable either as real or unreal. It is real in the sense that it is

480

a necessary postulate of our phenomenal experience and unreal in its own nature, for apart from its connection with consciousness it is incomprehensible and undefinable. Its forms even while they are manifested in consciousness are self-contradictory and incomprehensible as to their real nature or mutual relation, and comprehensible only so far as they are manifested in consciousness, but apart from these no rational conception of them can be formed. Thus it is impossible to say anything about the ajnana (for no knowledge of it is possible) save so far as manifested in consciousness and depending on this the D@r@s@tis@r@s@tivadins asserted that our experience was inexplicably produced under the influence of avidya and that beyond that no objective common ground could be admitted. But though this has the general assent of Vedanta and is irrefutable in itself, still for the sake of explaining our common sense view (*pratikarmavyavasatha*) we may think that we have an objective world before us as the common field of experience. We can also imagine a scheme of things and

operations by which the phenomenon of our experience may be interpreted in the light of the Vedanta metaphysics.

Page 436

The subject can be conceived in three forms: firstly as the atman, the one highest reality, secondly as jiva or the atman as limited by its psychosis, when the psychosis is not differentiated from the atman, but atman is regarded as identical with the psychosis thus appearing as a living and knowing being, as *jivasak@si* or perceiving consciousness, or the aspect in which the jiva comprehends, knows, or experiences; thirdly the *anta@hkara@na* psychosis or mind which is an inner centre or bundle of avidya manifestations, just as the outer world objects are exterior centres of avidya phenomena or objective entities. The *anta@hkara@na* is not only the avidya capable of supplying all forms to our present experiences, but it also contains all the tendencies and modes of past impressions of experience in this life or in past lives. The *anta@hkara@na* is always turning the various avidya modes of it into the *jivasak@si* (jiva in its aspect as illuminating mental states), and these are also immediately manifested, made known, and transformed into experience. These avidya states of the *anta@hkara@na* are called its *v@rttis* or states. The specific peculiarity of the *v@rtti*ajnanas is this that only in these forms can they be superimposed upon pure consciousness, and thus be interpreted as states of consciousness and have their indefiniteness or cover removed. The

481

forms of ajnana remain as indefinite and hidden or veiled only so long as they do not come into relation to these *v@rttis* of *anta@hkara@na*, for the ajnana can be destroyed by the cit only in the form of a *v@rtti*, while in all other forms the ajnana veils the cit from manifestation. The removal of ajnana-*v@rttis* of the *anta@hkara@na* or the manifestation of *v@rtti*-jnana is nothing but this, that the *anta@hkara@na* states of avidya are the only states of ajnana which can be superimposed upon the self-luminous atman (*adhyasa*, false attribution). The objective world consists of the avidya phenomena with the self as its background. Its objectivity consists in this that avidya in this form cannot be superimposed on the self-luminous cit but exists only as veiling the cit. These avidya phenomena may be regarded as many and diverse, but in all these forms they serve only to veil the cit and are beyond consciousness. It is only when they come in contact with the avidya phenomena as *anta@hkara@na* states that they coalesce with the avidya states and render themselves objects of consciousness or have their veil of *avara@na* removed. It is thus assumed that in ordinary perceptions of objects such as jug, etc. the *anta@hkara@na* goes out of the man's body (*s'ariramadhyat*) and coming in touch with the jug becomes transformed into the same form, and as soon as this transformation takes place the cit which is always steadily shining illuminates the jug-form or the jug. The jug phenomena in the objective world could not be manifested (though these were taking place on the background of

Page 437

the same self-luminous Brahman or atman as forms of the highest truth of my subjective consciousness) because the ajnana phenomena in these forms serve to veil their illuminator, the self-luminous. It was only by coming into contact with these phenomena that the anta@hkara@na could be transformed into corresponding states and that the illumination dawned which at once revealed the anta@hkara@na states and the objects with which these states or v@rttis had coalesced. The consciousness manifested through the v@rttis alone has the power of removing the ajnana veiling the cit. Of course there are no actual distinctions of inner or outer, or the cit within me and the cit without me. These are only of appearance and due to avidya. And it is only from the point of view of appearance that we suppose that knowledge of objects can only dawn when the inner cit and the outer cit unite together through the anta@hkara@nav@rtti, which makes the external objects

482

translucent as it were by its own translucence, removes the ajnana which was veiling the external self-luminous cit and reveals the object phenomena by the very union of the cit as reflected through it and the cit as underlying the object phenomena. The pratyak@sa-prama or right knowledge by perception is the cit, the pure consciousness, reflected through the v@rtti and identical with the cit as the background of the object phenomena revealed by it. From the relative point of view we may thus distinguish three consciousnesses: (1) consciousness as the background of objective phenomena, (2) consciousness as the background of the jiva or pramata, the individual, (3) consciousness reflected in the v@rtti of the anta@hkara@na; when these three unite perception is effected.

Prama or right knowledge means in Vedanta the acquirement of such new knowledge as has not been contradicted by experience (*abadhita*). There is thus no absolute definition of truth. A knowledge acquired can be said to be true only so long as it is not contradicted. Thus the world appearance though it is very true now, may be rendered false, when this is contradicted by right knowledge of Brahman as the one reality. Thus the knowledge of the world appearance is true now, but not true absolutely. The only absolute truth is the pure consciousness which is never contradicted in any experience at any time. The truth of our world-knowledge is thus to be tested by finding out whether it will be contradicted at any stage of world experience or not. That which is not contradicted by later experience is to be regarded as true, for all world knowledge as a whole will be contradicted when Brahma-knowledge is realized.

Page 438

The inner experiences of pleasure and pain also are generated by a false identification of anta@hkara@na transformations as pleasure or pain with the self, by virtue of which are generated the perceptions, "I am happy," or "I am sorry." In continuous perception of anything for a certain time as an object or as pleasure, etc. the mental state or v@rtti is said to last in the same way all the while so long as any other new form is not taken up by the anta@hkara@na for the acquirement of any new knowledge. In such case when I infer that there is fire on the hill that I see, the hill is an object of perception, for the anta@hkara@na v@rtti is one with it, but that there is fire in it is a matter of inference, for the anta@hkara@na v@rtti cannot be in touch with the fire; so in the same experience there may be two modes of

483

mental modification, as perception in seeing the hill, and as inference in inferring the fire in the hill. In cases of acquired perception, as when on seeing sandal wood I think that it is odoriferous sandal wood, it is pure perception so far as the sandal wood is concerned, it is inference or memory so far as I assert it to be odoriferous. Vedanta does not admit the existence of the relation called *samavaya* (inherence) or *jati* (class notion); and so does not distinguish perception as a class as distinct from the other class called inference, and holds that both perception and inference are but different modes of the transformations of the anta@hkara@na reflecting the cit in the corresponding v@rttis. The perception is thus nothing but the cit manifestation in the anta@hkara@na v@rtti transformed into the form of an object with which it is in contact. Perception in its objective aspect is the identity of the cit underlying the object with the subject, and perception in the subjective aspect is regarded as the identity of the subjective cit with the objective cit. This identity of course means that through the v@rtti the same reality subsisting in the object and the subject is realized, whereas in inference the thing to be inferred, being away from contact with anta@hkara@na, has apparently a different reality from that manifested in the states of consciousness. Thus perception is regarded as the mental state representing the same identical reality in the object and the subject by anta@hkara@na contact, and it is held that the knowledge produced by words (e.g. this is the same Devadatta) referring identically to the same thing which is seen (e.g. when I see Devadatta before me another man says this is Devadatta, and the knowledge produced by "this is Devadatta" though a verbal (*s'abda*) knowledge is to be regarded as perception, for the anta@hkara@na v@rtti is the same) is to be regarded as perception or *pratyak@sa*. The content of these words (this is Devadatta) being the same as the perception, and there being no new relationing knowledge as represented in the proposition "this is Devadatta"

Page 439

involving the unity of two terms “this” and “Devadatta” with a copula, but only the indication of one whole as Devadatta under visual perception already experienced, the knowledge proceeding from “this is Devadatta” is regarded as an example of nirvikalpa knowledge. So on the occasion of the rise of Brahma-consciousness when the preceptor instructs “thou art Brahman” the knowledge proceeding from the sentence is not savikalpa, for

484

though grammatically there are two ideas and a copula, yet from the point of view of intrinsic significance (*tatparya*) one identical reality only is indicated. Vedanta does not distinguish nirvikalpa and savikalpa in visual perception, but only in s’abda perception as in cases referred to above. In all such cases the condition for nirvikalpa is that the notion conveyed by the sentence should be one whole or one identical reality, whereas in savikalpa perception we have a combination of different ideas as in the sentence, “the king’s man is coming” (*rajapuru@sa agacchati*). Here no identical reality is signified, but what is signified is the combination of two or three different concepts [Footnote ref 1].

It is not out of place to mention in this connection that Vedanta admits all the six prama@nas of Kumarila and considers like Mima@msa that all knowledge is self-valid (*svat@ah-prama@na*). But prama has not the same meaning in Vedanta as in Mima@msa. There as we remember prama meant the knowledge which goaded one to practical action and as such all knowledge was prama, until practical experience showed the course of action in accordance with which it was found to be contradicted. In Vedanta however there is no reference to action, but prama means only uncontradicted cognition. To the definition of self-validity as given by Mima@msa Vedanta adds another objective qualification, that such knowledge can have svata@h-prama@nya as is not vitiated by the presence of any do@sa (cause of error, such as defect of senses or the like). Vedanta of course does not think like Nyaya that positive conditions (e.g. correspondence, etc.) are necessary for the validity of knowledge, nor does it divest knowledge of all qualifications like the Mima@msists, for whom all knowledge is self-valid as such. It adopts a middle course and holds that absence of do@sa is a necessary condition for the self-validity of knowledge. It is clear that this is a compromise, for whenever an external condition has to be admitted, the knowledge cannot be regarded as self-valid, but Vedanta says that as it requires only a negative condition for the absence of do@sa, the objection does not apply to it, and it holds that if it depended on the presence of any positive condition for proving the validity of knowledge like the Nyaya, then only its theory of self-validity would have been damaged. But since it wants only a negative condition, no blame can be

[Footnote 1: See *Vedantaparibha@sa* and *S'ikhama@ni*.]

Page 440

485

attributed to its theory of self-validity. Vedanta was bound to follow this slippery middle course, for it could not say that the pure cit reflected in consciousness could require anything else for establishing its validity, nor could it say that all phenomenal forms of knowledge were also all valid, for then the world-appearance would come to be valid; so it held that knowledge could be regarded as valid only when there was no do@sa present; thus from the absolute point of view all world-knowledge was false and had no validity, because there was the avidya-do@sa, and in the ordinary sphere also that knowledge was valid in which there was no do@sa. Validity (prama@nya) with Mima@msa meant the capacity that knowledge has to goad us to practical action in accordance with it, but with Vedanta it meant correctness to facts and want of contradiction. The absence of do@sa being guaranteed there is nothing which can vitiate the correctness of knowledge [Footnote ref 1].

Vedanta Theory of Illusion.

We have already seen that the Mima@msists had asserted that all knowledge was true simply because it was knowledge (*yathartha@h sarve vivadaspadibhuta@h pratyaya@h pratyayatvat*). Even illusions were explained by them as being non-perception of the distinction between the thing perceived (e.g. the conch-shell), and the thing remembered (e.g. silver). But Vedanta objects to this, and asks how there can be non-distinction between a thing which is clearly perceived and a thing which is remembered? If it is said that it is merely a non-perception of the non-association (i.e. non-perception of the fact that this is not connected with silver), then also it cannot be, for then it is on either side mere negation, and negation with Mima@msa is nothing but the bare presence of the locus of negation (e.g. negation of jug on the ground is nothing but the bare presence of the ground), or in other words non-perception of the non-association of “silver” and “this” means barely and merely the “silver” and “this.” Even admitting for argument’s sake that the distinction between two things or two ideas is not perceived, yet merely from such a negative aspect no one could be tempted to move forward to action (such as stooping down to pick up a piece of illusory silver). It is positive

[Footnote 1: See *Vedantaparibha@sa*, *S’ikhama@ni*, *Ma@niprabha* and *Citsukha* on *svata@hprama@nya*.]

486



conviction or perception that can lead a man to actual practical movement. If again it is said that it is the general and imperfect perception of a thing (which has not been properly differentiated and comprehended) before me, which by the memory of silver appears to be like true silver before me and this generates the movement for picking it up, then this also is objectionable. For the appearance of the similarity with real silver

Page 441

cannot lead us to behave with the thing before me as if it were real silver. Thus I may perceive that gavaya (wild ox) is similar to cow, but despite this similarity I am not tempted to behave with the gavaya as if it were a cow. Thus in whatever way the Mima@msa position may be defined it fails [Footnote ref I]. Vedanta thinks that the illusion is not merely subjective, but that there is actually a phenomenon of illusion as there are phenomena of actual external objects; the difference in the two cases consists in this, that the illusion is generated by the do@sa or defect of the senses *etc.*, whereas the phenomena of external objects are not due to such specific do@sas. The process of illusory perception in Vedanta may be described thus. First by the contact of the senses vitiated by do@sas a mental state as “thisness” with reference to the thing before me is generated; then in the thing as “this” and in the mental state of the form of that “this” the cit is reflected. Then the avidya (nescience) associated with the cit is disturbed by the presence of the do@sa, and this disturbance along with the impression of silver remembered through similarity is transformed into the appearance of silver. There is thus an objective illusory silver appearance, as well as a similar transformation of the mental state generated by its contact with the illusory silver. These two transformations, the silver state of the mind and external phenomenal illusory silver state, are manifested by the perceiving consciousness (*sak@sicaitya*). There are thus here two phenomenal transformations, one in the avidya states forming the illusory objective silver phenomenon, and another in the anta@hkara@na-v@rtti or mind state. But in spite of there being two distinct and separate phenomena, their object being the same as the “this” in perception, we have one knowledge of illusion. The special feature of this theory of illusion is that an indefinable (*anirvacaniya-khyati*) illusory silver is created in every case where an illusory perception of silver occurs. There are three orders of reality in Vedanta, namely the

[Footnote 1: See *Vivara@na-prameya-sa@mgraha* and *Nyayamakaranda* on akhyati refutation.]

487

paramarthika or absolute, *vyavaharika* or practical ordinary experience, and *pratibhasika*, illusory. The first one represents the absolute truth; the other two are false impressions due to do@sa. The difference between *vyavaharika* and *pratibhasika* is that the do@sa of the *vyavaharika* perception is neither discovered nor removed until salvation, whereas the do@sa of the *pratibhasika* reality which occurs in many extraneous forms (such as defect of the senses, sleep, *etc.*) is perceived in the world of our ordinary experience, and thus the *pratibhasika* experience lasts for a much shorter period than the

Page 442

vyavaharika. But just as the vyavaharika world is regarded as phenomenal modifications of the ajnana, as apart from our subjective experience and even before it, so the illusion (e.g. of silver in the conch-shell) is also regarded as a modification of avidya, an undefinable creation of the object of illusion, by the agency of the do@sa. Thus in the case of the illusion of silver in the conch-shell, indefinable silver is created by the do@sa in association with the senses, which is called the creation of an indefinable (*anirvacaniya*) silver of illusion. Here the cit underlying the conch-shell remains the same but the avidya of anta@hkara@na suffers modifications (*pari@nama*) on account of do@sa, and thus gives rise to the illusory creation. The illusory silver is thus *vivartta* (appearance) from the point of view of the cit and *pari@nama* from the point of view of avidya, for the difference between *vivartta* and *pari@nama* is, that in the former the transformations have a different reality from the cause (cit is different from the appearance imposed on it), while in the latter case the transformations have the same reality as the transforming entity (appearance of silver has the same stuff as the avidya whose transformations it is). But now a difficulty arises that if the illusory perception of silver is due to a coalescing of the cit underlying the anta@hkara@na-v@rtti as modified by do@sa and the object—cit as underlying the “this” before me (in the illusion of “this is silver”), then I ought to have the experience that “I am silver” like “I am happy” and not that “this is silver”; the answer is, that as the coalescing takes place in connection with my previous notion as “this,” the form of the knowledge also is “this is silver,” whereas in the notion “I am happy,” the notion of happiness takes place in connection with a previous v@rtti of “I.” Thus though the coalescing of the two “cits” is the same in both cases, yet in one case the

488

knowledge takes the form of “I am,” and in another as “this is” according as the previous impression is “I” or “this.” In dreams also the dream perceptions are the same as the illusory perception of silver in the conch-shell. There the illusory creations are generated through the defects of sleep, and these creations are imposed upon the cit. The dream experiences cannot be regarded merely as memory-products, for the perception in dream is in the form that “I see that I ride in the air on chariots, etc.” and not that “I remember the chariots.” In the dream state all the senses are inactive, and therefore there is no separate objective cit there, but the whole dream experience with all characteristics of space, time, objects, etc. is imposed upon the cit. The objection that since the imposition is on the pure cit the imposition ought to last even in waking stages, and that the dream experiences ought to continue even in waking life, does not hold; for

Page 443

in the waking stages the *anta@hkara@na* is being constantly transformed into different states on the expiry of the defects of sleep, *etc.*, which were causing the dream cognitions. This is called *niv@rtti* (negation) as distinguished from *badha* (cessation). The illusory creation of dream experiences may still be there on the pure cit, but these cannot be experienced any longer, for there being no *do@sa* of sleep the *anta@hkara@na* is active and suffering modifications in accordance with the objects presented before us. This is what is called *niv@rtti*, for though the illusion is there I cannot experience it, whereas *badha* or cessation occurs when the illusory creation ceases, as when on finding out the real nature of the conch-shell the illusion of silver ceases, and we feel that this is not silver, this was not and will not be silver. When the conch-shell is perceived as silver, the silver is felt as a reality, but this feeling of reality was not an illusory creation, though the silver was an objective illusory creation; for the reality in the *s'ukti* (conch-shell) is transferred and felt as belonging to the illusion of silver imposed upon it. Here we see that the illusion of silver has two different kinds of illusion comprehended in it. One is the creation of an indefinable silver (*anirvacaniya-rajatotpatti*) and the other is the attribution of the reality belonging to the conch-shell to the illusory silver imposed upon it, by which we feel at the time of the illusion that it is a reality. This is no doubt the *anyathakhyati* form of illusion as advocated by Nyaya. Vedanta admits that when two things (e.g. red flower and crystal) are both present

489

before my senses, and I attribute the quality of one to the other by illusion (e.g. the illusion that the crystal is red), then the illusion is of the form of *anyathakhyati*; but if one of the things is not present before my senses and the other is, then the illusion is not of the *anyathakhyati* type, but of the *anirvacaniyakhyati* type. Vedanta could not avoid the former type of illusion, for it believed that all appearance of reality in the world-appearance was really derived from the reality of Brahman, which was self-luminous in all our experiences. The world appearance is an illusory creation, but the sense of reality that it carries with it is a misattribution (*anyathakhyati*) of the characteristic of the Brahman to it, for Brahman alone is the true and the real, which manifests itself as the reality of all our illusory world-experience, just as it is the reality of *s'ukti* that gives to the appearance of silver its reality.

Vedanta Ethics and Vedanta Emancipation.

Page 444

Vedanta says that when a duly qualified man takes to the study of Vedanta and is instructed by the preceptor—"Thou art that (Brahman)," he attains the emancipating knowledge, and the world-appearance becomes for him false and illusory. The qualifications necessary for the study of Vedanta are (1) that the person having studied all the Vedas with the proper accessories, such as grammar, lexicon etc. is in full possession of the knowledge of the Vedas, (2) that either in this life or in another, he must have performed only the obligatory Vedic duties (such as daily prayer, etc. called *nitya-karma*) and occasionally obligatory duty (such as the birth ceremony at the birth of a son, called *naimittika-karma*) and must have avoided all actions for the fulfilment of selfish desires (*kamya-karmas*, such as the performance of sacrifices for going to Heaven) and all prohibited actions (e.g. murder, etc. *ni@siddha-karma*) in such a way that his mind is purged of all good and bad actions (no karma is generated by the *nitya* and *naimittika-karma*, and as he has not performed the *kamya* and prohibited karmas, he has acquired no new karma). When he has thus properly purified his mind and is in possession of the four virtues or means of fitting the mind for Vedanta instruction (called *sadhana*) he can regard himself as properly qualified for the Vedanta instruction. These virtues are (1) knowledge of what is eternal

490

and what is transient, (2) disinclination to enjoyments of this life and of the heavenly life after death, (3) extreme distaste for all enjoyments, and anxiety for attaining the means of right knowledge, (4) control over the senses by which these are restrained from everything but that which aids the attainment of right knowledge (*dama*), (a) having restrained them, the attainment of such power that these senses may not again be tempted towards worldly enjoyments (*uparati*), (b) power of bearing extremes of heat, cold, etc., (c) employment of mind towards the attainment of right knowledge, (d) faith in the instructor and Upani@sads; (5) strong desire to attain salvation. A man possessing the above qualities should try to understand correctly the true purport of the Upani@sads (called *s'rava@na*), and by arguments in favour of the purport of the Upani@sads to strengthen his conviction as stated in the Upani@sads (called *manana*) and then by *nididhyasana* (meditation) which includes all the Yoga processes of concentration, try to realize the truth as one. Vedanta therefore in ethics covers the ground of Yoga; but while for Yoga emancipation proceeds from understanding the difference between *puru@sa* and *prak@rti*, with Vedanta salvation comes by the dawn of right knowledge that Brahman alone is the true reality, his own self [Footnote ref 1]. Mima@msa asserts that the Vedas do not declare the knowledge of one Brahman to be the supreme

Page 445

goal, but holds that all persons should act in accordance with the Vedic injunctions for the attainment of good and the removal of evil. But Vedanta holds that though the purport of the earlier Vedas is as Mimaṃsā has it, yet this is meant only for ordinary people, whereas for the elect the goal is clearly as the Upaniṣads indicate it, namely the attainment of the highest knowledge. The performance of Vedic duties is intended only for ordinary men, but yet it was believed by many (e.g. Vacaspati Miśra and his followers) that due performance of Vedic duties helped a man to acquire a great keenness for the attainment of right knowledge; others believed (e.g. Prakāśa and his followers) that it served to bring about suitable opportunities by securing good preceptors, etc. and to remove many obstacles from the way so that it became easier for a person to attain the desired right knowledge. In the acquirement of ordinary knowledge the ajñānas removed

[Footnote 1: See *Vedāntasāra* and *Advaitabrahmasiddhi*.]

491

are only smaller states of ajñāna, whereas when the Brahma-knowledge dawns the ajñāna as a whole is removed. Brahma-knowledge at the stage of its first rise is itself also a state of knowledge, but such is its special strength that when this knowledge once dawns, even the state of knowledge which at first reflects it (and which being a state is itself ajñāna modification) is destroyed by it. The state itself being destroyed, only the pure infinite and unlimited Brahman shines forth in its own true light. Thus it is said that just as fire riding on a piece of wood would burn the whole city and after that would burn the very same wood, so in the last state of mind the Brahma-knowledge would destroy all the illusory world-appearance and at last destroy even that final state [Footnote ref 1].

The mukti stage is one in which the pure light of Brahman as the identity of pure intelligence, being and complete bliss shines forth in its unique glory, and all the rest vanishes as illusory nothing. As all being of the world-appearance is but limited manifestations of that one being, so all pleasures also are but limited manifestations of that supreme bliss, a taste of which we all can get in deep dreamless sleep. The being of Brahman however is not an abstraction from all existent beings as the *satta* (being as class notion) of the naiyāyika, but the concrete, the real, which in its aspect as pure consciousness and pure bliss is always identical with itself. Being (*sat*) is pure bliss and pure consciousness. What becomes of the avidyā during mukti (emancipation) is as difficult for one to answer as the question, how the avidyā came forth and stayed during

the world-appearance. It is best to remember that the category of the indefinite avidya is indefinite as regards its origin, manifestation

Page 446

and destruction. Vedanta however believes that even when the true knowledge has once been attained, the body may last for a while, if the individual's previously ripened karmas demand it. Thus the emancipated person may walk about and behave like an ordinary sage, but yet he is emancipated and can no longer acquire any new karma. As soon as the fruits due to his ripe karmas are enjoyed and exhausted, the sage loses his body and there will never be any other birth for him, for the dawn of perfect knowledge has burnt up for him all budding karmas of beginningless previous lives, and he is no longer subject to any

[Footnote 1: _Siddhanta's_a_.]

492

of the illusions subjective or objective which could make any knowledge, action, or feeling possible for him. Such a man is called *jivanmukta*, i.e. emancipated while living. For him all world-appearance has ceased. He is the one light burning alone in himself where everything else has vanished for ever from the stage [Footnote ref 1].

Vedanta and other Indian Systems.

Vedanta is distinctly antagonistic to Nyaya, and most of its powerful dialectic criticism is generally directed against it. S'a@nkara himself had begun it by showing contradictions and inconsistencies in many of the Nyaya conceptions, such as the theory of causation, conception of the atom, the relation of samavaya, the conception of jati, etc [Footnote ref 2]. His followers carried it to still greater lengths as is fully demonstrated by the labours of S'rihar@sa, Citsukha, Madhusudana, etc. It was opposed to Mima@msa so far as this admitted the Nyaya-Vais'e@sika categories, but agreed with it generally as regards the prama@nas of anumana, upamiti, arthapatti, s'abda, and anupalabdhi. It also found a great supporter in Mima@msa with its doctrine of the self-validity and self-manifesting power of knowledge. But it differed from Mima@msa in the field of practical duties and entered into many elaborate discussions to prove that the duties of the Vedas referred only to ordinary men, whereas men of higher order had no Vedic duties to perform but were to rise above them and attain the highest knowledge, and that a man should perform the Vedic duties only so long as he was not fit for Vedanta instruction and studies.

With Sa@mkyha and Yoga the relation of Vedanta seems to be very close. We have already seen that Vedanta had accepted all the special means of self-purification, meditation, etc., that were advocated by Yoga. The main difference between Vedanta

and Sa@mkhya was this that Sa@mkhya believed, that the stuff of which the world consisted was a reality side by side with the puru@sas. In later times Vedanta had compromised so far with Sa@mkhya that it also sometimes described maya as being made up of sattva, rajas, and tamas. Vedanta also held that according to these three characteristics were formed diverse modifications

Page 447

[Footnote 1: See *Pancadas'i.*]

[Footnote 2: See S'a@nkara's refutation of Nyaya, *S'a@nkara-bha@sya*, II. ii.]

493

of the maya. Thus Is'vara is believed to possess a mind of pure sattva alone. But sattva, rajas and tamas were accepted in Vedanta in the sense of tendencies and not as reals as Sa@mkhya held it. Moreover, in spite of all modifications that maya was believed to pass through as the stuff of the world-appearance, it was indefinable and indefinite, and in its nature different from what we understand as positive or negative. It was an unsubstantial nothing, a magic entity which had its being only so long as it appeared. Prak@rti also was indefinable or rather undemonstrable as regards its own essential nature apart from its manifestation, but even then it was believed to be a combination of positive reals. It was undefinable because so long as the reals composing it did not combine, no demonstrable qualities belonged to it with which it could be defined. Maya however was undemonstrable, indefinite, and indefinable in all forms; it was a separate category of the indefinite. Sa@mkhya believed in the personal individuality of souls, while for Vedanta there was only one soul or self, which appeared as many by virtue of the maya transformations. There was an adhyasa or illusion in Sa@mkhya as well as in Vedanta; but in the former the illusion was due to a mere non-distinction between prak@rti and puru@sa or mere misattribution of characters or identities, but in Vedanta there was not only misattribution, but a false and altogether indefinable creation. Causation with Sa@mkhya meant real transformation, but with Vedanta all transformation was mere appearance. Though there were so many differences, it is however easy to see that probably at the time of the origin of the two systems during the Upani@sad period each was built up from very similar ideas which differed only in tendencies that gradually manifested themselves into the present divergences of the two systems. Though S'a@nkara laboured hard to prove that the Sa@mkhya view could not be found in the Upani@sads, we can hardly be convinced by his interpretations and arguments. The more he argues, the more we are led to suspect that the Sa@mkhya thought had its origin in the Upani@sads. Sa'a@nkara and his followers borrowed much of their dialectic form of criticism from the Buddhists. His Brahman was very much like the s'unya of Nagarjuna. It is difficult indeed to distinguish between pure being and pure non-being as a category. The debts of S'a@nkara to the self-luminosity of the Vijnanavada Buddhism

494

can hardly be overestimated. There seems to be much truth in the accusations against S'a@nkara by Vijnana Bhik@su and others that he was a hidden Buddhist himself. I am led to think that S'a@nkara's philosophy is largely a compound of Vijnanavada and S'unyavada Buddhism with the Upani@sad notion of the permanence of self superadded.